

TRANSCENDING THE NINE HEAVENS

BOOK 06

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Transcending the Nine Heavens

(傲世九重天)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Chu Yang, the Ninth Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, sacrificed almost everything he had for the sake of improving his martial arts, including the love of his life. After spending three years locating the fifth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword, he was ambushed by all sides at that very place. Mortally injured with no means of escape, Chu Yang executed a sacrificial technique by plunging the Nine Tribulations Sword into his very own heart. “With the blood of my heart, ten thousand tribulations will collapse!”

After witnessing the death of all his ambushers, Chu Yang’s vision began to darken. At a distance, moments before his death, he saw the mastermind who had plotted his downfall — Mo Tian Ji. With that, his eyes finally closed.

However, with a start, Chu Yang once again awoke to find that he had returned to when he was sixteen years of age! Furthermore, the Sword Spirit of the Nine Tribulations Sword now resided within his Dantian, the energy center of his body! From that very moment, Chu Yang would then begin to right all of his past regrets, and carve his very own legend by fulfilling his destiny as the final Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and defeating the Heavenly Devils beyond the realm of the Nine Heavens Continent.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

Editing by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501: Cruel and Ungrateful!

Mo Tian Yun had a bumpy ride the whole way. Only 70 or 80 out of 200 experts were left by the time they returned to the Mo Clan. Moreover, everyone was injured. More than 100 people had already lost their lives along the way!

After that, he was greeted by a gloomy-faced Mo Tian Ji as soon as he entered the Clan's gates.

"Mo Tian Yun, do you still have the face to come back?" Mo Tian Ji crossed his hands behind his back, and occupied a commanding position.

"What do you mean?"

"What do I mean? You ought to know that clearly! Our clan has 8 big assets. And, you have mortgaged four of them! Ha ha ha... Bravo, Mo Tian Yun. You are so courageous!" Mo Tian Ji coldly said, "Don't you realize that you have endangered the safety and security of our Mo Clan?! In fact, it has become a question of life or death for us now!"

Mo Tian Yun's complexion turned deathly pale. He retorted, "I am the future Clan Lord of the Mo Clan! Not you! What right do you have to ask me such questions?"

Mo Tian Ji sneered and replied, "You have made such a blunder, yet you still think you can become the Clan Lord in the future? Are you sleep-talking or what?"

Mo Xing Chen came from behind and said, "Tian Yun, what's the matter?"

Mo Tian Yun knelt down with a 'thud', and began to shed tears, "Your son is incompetent..." he explained everything that had happened after he said this, "This son was thinking... my Mo Clan will rise up to become the number-one clan in the Middle Three Heavens if I win! No other clan will be able to challenge us! But,

who would have thought... that such a sure-shot gamble would turn into an accident!"

Mo Xing Chen heaved a deep sigh, and slumped down in disappointment. He seemed to have aged several decades in an instant.

He still had some hope when he had heard about this incident earlier. He had thought that it was only a rumor...

However, he had no more illusions to latch onto now!

It was his eldest son – whom he had always had confidence on – who had committed such an outrageous act! He had ruined half of Mo Clan's wealth in one fell swoop!

Mo Xing Chen shot a disappointed look towards Mo Tian Yun. And, he continued to look at him like that for a long time. Then, he eventually heaved a melancholic sigh, "The elders' congress will pass a judgment on you."

Mo Tian Yun's face suddenly turned pale.

The elders' conference ensued soon afterwards, and it was even stricter on Mo Tian Yun. Mo Tian Yun was penalized for several crimes at once, and thus was removed from the position of the Young Clan Lord on the spot. He was then listed as a candidate... just like Mo Tian Ji.

This penalty was rather lenient because the Great Elder Mo Wu Xin had discriminated in Mo Tian Yun's favor. Otherwise, Mo Tian Yun would've been sentenced to death...

On the same night

The night was already deep, and dark...

Mo Tian Yun stealthily sneaked out of the place he had been confined to, and silently made his way towards Great Elder Mo Wu Xin's courtyard.

'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber' had always been safely put in

Great Elder Mo Wu Xin's residence. And, Mo Tian Yun obviously knew this fact.

Mo Tian Yun had already gone through a long and painful consideration before he had come to this decision.

He had no other way out. He would have to hand over his own life if he couldn't surrender 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber'. And, that was because he was completely broke at the moment. Forget about the minimum three-day period... six days had already passed by...

In other words, he would have to pay 4.4 billion if he were to choose to repay the debt in money at this time! One could say that the money collected after selling-off the entire Mo Clan would still fall short of meeting this target!

Mo Tian Yun looked at the wooden door at the entrance. He secretly grasped some item in his bosom. A complicated look flashed in his eyes. It was accompanied by a faint trace of anguish.

[The Great Elder has always treated me with love and care. He has always treated me like his own grandson. From infancy to adulthood... I would be fine as long as the Great Elder was around... no matter how big and how many mistakes I'd make...! It can be said that the Great Elder has himself paved the way for me to the position of the Young Clan Lord...]

[What I am going to do tonight is truly beyond unfilial, treason, and heresy...]

[But, I would certainly die if I don't do it!]

Mo Tian Yun's face was revealing the pain of contradiction. He hesitated for a long time. He had wanted to turn around and leave on several occasions. But... he eventually didn't. And, he merely stood under the starlight for a long-long time... Finally...

He lifted his hand, and knocked on the door in a gentle manner. His eyes closed as his finger knocked on the door. However, his

eyes had become ruthless by the time he opened them again. And, the look on his face had become sinister!

Knock Knock...

"Who is it?" Great Elder Mo Wu Xin's faint voice came from inside.

"Great Elder, it's Tian Yun," Mo Tian Yun respectfully replied.

"Why did you come here?" Mo Wu Xin asked in a puzzled manner, "What are you doing here at such a critical time?" It seemed like he considered this for quite a while. Then, the door finally opened with a 'creaking' sound.

Mo Tian Yun stepped inside. Then, he quickly turned around, and shut the door.

The Great Elder had always been an eccentric and reclusive person. He had never allowed any servant to be around him. And, he had always preferred being alone.

"Tian Yun, why have you come at such hour?" The oil lamp's light was calmly flickering in the room. In fact, the lone lamp seemed like a sacrificial vessel.

"I have failed to live up to the Great Elder's expectations. So, I have come to apologize in person," Mo Tian Yun respectfully knelt down.

"Sigh..." Mo Wu Xin sighed. A trace of sadness flashed on his skinny face as he said, "What you have done this time... is far beyond preposterous. It's too absurd. How could you make such a blunder? What were you thinking?"

"I made a calculation mistake." Tears started to stream down Mo Tian Yun's face as he remained kneeling on the ground. He didn't dare to raise his head...

That 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber' was mounted in an ordinary scabbard, and was currently hanging on the wall behind

Mo Wu Xin.

"You have made such a blunder that I can't help you... even if I want to. I will end up losing my position in the Mo Clan if I try." Mo Wu Xin sighed and said, "I have put all my effort into suppressing everyone's intentions to support Tian Ji for all these years. And, I've done that to support you! Even that plot of yours to deal with your younger siblings in the Lower Three Heavens... was also drafted by me!"

Mo Wu Xin gently slammed his palm on the table, and angrily said, "Your little sister – Qing Wu – had the 'Three Yin Meridians' in her body! But, they got damaged because of your conspiracy! Do you even know what the 'Three Yin Meridians' represent? They represent the addition of a powerful Emperor Level Expert to my Mo Clan in a few decades' time! At least the Emperor Level at that! Do you understand?!

"The Mo Clan has been in its most powerful and prosperous phase even though it only has three Emperor Level Experts! The ancestor has been cultivating in seclusion for many years... God knows whether he's dead or alive..."

Mo Tian Yun was sweating profusely...

Mo Wu Xin angrily brushed his beard, "You know, I feel uncomfortable in my heart every time I see that poor little girl? So, I had no alternative but to make a decision to marry her off so that I could get her out of my sight. What the eye doesn't see — the heart doesn't grieve over...

"I kept suppressing Tian Ji for so many years, and I continued to clear-away the obstacles from your path! And, you gambled away half of Mo Clan's fortunes at such a crucial juncture...?!"

Mo Wu Xin faced upwards, and heaved a deep sigh, "You have come here so late at night to make me help you. But, how do I do that?"

Mo Tian Yun burst into tears as he prostrated on the ground, "I know that I have betrayed your hopes, and let you down. I know I have hurt you, and ruined your painstaking efforts. I wish I could die to recompense you..."

"You don't need to die to recompense me." Mo Wu Xin knitted his brows in contemplation and said, "Now... stripping you of your position as the heir is only a stop-gap measure. We must wait for the right timing, and keep fostering you up until then... we will only need to use some tricks here-and-there; that's all. That shouldn't be a big task..."

He spoke this much before he suddenly frowned. A puzzled look appeared in his eyes soon after. He then scratched his head, and asked in a bewildered manner, "What's happening...?"

Mo Tian Yun panicked and asked, "Great Elders, what's wrong...?"

"Why do I feel dizzy...? Tian Yun, what's happening to me?" Mo Wu Xin shook his head. He tightly wrinkled his white brows together. Then, his body began to sway, and he nearly fell-off his chair.

However, this pitiful Mo Wu Xin still hadn't suspected Mo Tian Yun...

"Great Elder... you..." Mo Tian Yun called out in alarm.

Mo Wu Xin's body suddenly began to tremble. He somehow used his hand to support himself by holding onto the table. Then, he strenuously turned his head, and looked at Mo Tian Yun with a look of disbelief in his eye. He bitterly smiled and said, "Tian Yun... It's you... isn't it?"

There was still a hint of doubt in his voice.

The panic-stricken Mo Tian Yun slowly stood up while Mo Wu Xin was still looking at him with disbelief in his eyes. Each and every action and movement of Mo Tian Yun's had suddenly

become calm and unflustered. He patted-off the dust he had caught by kneeling on the ground. Then, he took out something from his bosom, and placed it in front of Mo Wu Xin since he was still unconvinced. This unknown object was melting, and looked like nasal mucus...

Mo Wu Xin's eyes suddenly turned lifeless when he saw it.

Mo Tian Yun serenely replied, "Great Elder, please forgive me. I didn't wish to bite the hand that fed me... But, I... had no other way."

Mo Wu Xin's eyes nearly turned stiff as he looked at Mo Tian Yun. He couldn't believe that Mo Tian Yun had turned against that one person who had always supported him unconditionally, and had tried all he could to provide full assistance!

"For... for what reason, ok?" Mo Wu Xin's lifeless eyes looked at him. His lips were quivering. His tongue had already become somewhat stiff. And, this had caused him to add that unnecessary 'ok' at the end of the interrogative sentence...

"Why? Because I want to save my life!" Mo Tian Yun looked at him with a guilty conscience. He then said in a painful voice, "Great Elder, the fact is that I don't wish to kill you. After all, you are so good to me. In fact, you have always been like that since my childhood. You are always so good to... I genuinely wish to repay you. I also want to look after you, and your needs through your old age. I wish to serve you as you enjoy your years of retirement. But, I cannot...

"And, that's because you will never allow me to take the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber'... You regard this saber as the hope of Mo Clan's rise. But, do you know that this saber is the only hope of my survival right now? "Mo Tian Yun roared in a low voice, "How will I get this saber if I don't get rid of you?"

Mo Wu Xin was stubbornly looking at Mo Tian Yun with a bleak look in his eyes. However, the look in his eyes slowly turned into a

grieving one, and it seemed as if he was slowly dying of heartbreak.

The look in his eyes was the representation of that moment of realization when one finds out that one’s lifetime-worth of hard-work and struggle has turned out to be a pile of shit on the last day of their life... that extreme despair and sense of utter failure makes one sick... and so depressed that they are only left with a desire to die!

Mo Tian Yun reached out with his hand, and took off ‘Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber’ from the wall. He held it in his hand, and slowly said, "Great Elder, you must be feeling wronged, right? Very angry...? Do you want revenge?"

He smiled softly and continued, "But, you won’t get a chance. This is ‘Seven Fragrances Paralyzing Poison’. I have spent a great price to get my hands on it.

"In fact, I was reluctant to do this because there aren’t many old dogs as loyal as you. It can be said that I am putting you down far too early... You have been my dog from my childhood. And, you have served me well up until now. However..."

Mo Tian Yun approached Mo Wu Xin’s face and whispered, "A dog will always be a dog! Emperor Level Strength... but still a dog! It will be abandoned whenever the owner wants to discard it! Because... it’s merely a dog! It can bite quite hard, but its... still just a dog! Do you understand? Old dog?"

...

Chapter 502: Worse Than A Beast!

Seven Fragrances Paralyzing Poison... his entire body had been paralyzed. Moreover, he couldn't use his 'Soul Sea Gathering Technique' since he hadn't reached the Monarch Level either. No one was an exception to this! Not even an Emperor Level Expert on the peak of ninth grade...

Mo Wu Xin's body was shivering. His body shouldn't have been able to shiver under the effect of Seven Fragrance Paralyzing Poison. But, his heart was so emotionally moved that he had managed to overpower the effects of this incredible poison.

His body had gone stiff, and he couldn't move. But, he still couldn't control his constant and instinctive trembling.

He couldn't speak. But, his eyes flashed with a trace of deep regret. He wanted to say a lot of things, but he couldn't speak at all...

He wanted to say... [You're not Mo Xing Chen's son, ah. You're my biological grandson, ah...]

[You're the son of my son Mo Xing Hai! You're the direct descendant of my bloodline...]

[I had manipulated the entire Mo Clan at the time Mo Xing Chen's wife delivered her first born son. And, I swapped their new born with you. You're not Mo Xing Chen's son. You're my grandson!]

[This old man killed many people so that you could become the Clan Lord of the Mo Clan. I drowned that new-born baby while he lived. And, I even killed your biological mother...]

[Your father Mo Xing Hai met an accident a few years ago, and he was found dead. So, only this old man knows your history and your truth, ah...]

[This old man has always been good to you. I have been good

towards you since you were very young... Do you think that there was no reason behind it? This old man is an Emperor Level Expert and a supreme elder of the Mo Clan. Why would I serve as a dog under an immature and inexperienced brat like you? Did you really think I am that cheap a person...?]

[Do you think there was no reason?!]

[Do you think there was no reason?!!]

[Do you think there was no reason?!!!]

His chest was thumping madly. He was yelling in his heart. But, those words couldn't out of his mouth.

[I planned for my whole life. I manipulated the entire Mo Clan my whole life. Who would've thought that this old man would ultimately die by the hands of his own biological grandson? Who would've thought that I would die by the hands of the grandson I've nurtured myself?]

[I took unfathomable pains for him!]

[I racked my brains for him!]

[I committed countless murders for him! They were unreasonable acts... each one of them! I became utterly heartless for him. And, I perpetrated every kind of villainy for him!]

[And, he killed me in the end!]

Mo Wu Xin suddenly felt ridiculous. This fact was extremely funny. And, it was tragic in a rather very ironic sense!

He would've laughed wildly if he could've made a sound at this moment... And, he would've laughed at his fate...

"Old dog... do you find this funny?" Mo Tian Yun fiercely looked at the expression in Mo Wu Xin's eyes. He then spoke in a low voice, "It's aggravating to see you smile!"

He then unsheathed the saber. The saber-light was magnificent and as bright as a dream. But, Mo Tian Yun's hands were

shivering. He himself didn’t know the reason behind this. Even his heart was shivering...

However, he quickly controlled this shivering of his’...

[I am an accomplished person. How can my hands tremble for this old dog? He may have done many things for me, but... an old dog is an old dog. Whether it’s an old dog... or just a dog! It’s still just a dog!]

[He is a dog!]

[That’s all he is!]

Mo Tian Yun clenched his teeth. He slashed the saber down, and the dreamy saber-light went out to stab!

And, he fiercely jabbed it in Mo Wu Xin’s heart! He exerted himself in such a way that the blade of the saber penetrated through Mo Wu Xin’s chest. In fact, a huge part of the blade came out from his back!

Mo Wu Xin’s body shook. His pupils also expanded.

He had never expected this in the wildest of his dreams. He had always acted against his conscience to secure Mo Tian Yun’s future. He had covered up Mo Tian Yun’s traps against Mo Tian Ji and Mo Qing Wu. Then, he had shamelessly snatched this saber from Mo Qing Wu. However, his own biological grandson had taken this saber at this time, and had stabbed it in his heart!

Mo Tian Yun grimly looked at the expanded pupils of Mo Wu Xin. He then coldly gritted his teeth since these pupils made him somewhat mad and confused. So, he maliciously said, "You haven’t died yet? You’re still staring at me? Do you think that you wouldn’t have to die if you continued to stare at me? Do you think that I am scared, huh?"

He had said that he wasn’t scared. But, his voice was shivering. But then, he suddenly called out in alarm and fear.

That’s because Mo Wu Xin’s ability to act had suddenly been restored when his heart was penetrated by the saber. It wasn’t known where this strength came from, but he extended his hands and grasped the saber!

His strength seemed to have restored even though he was on the verge of death.

It was as if this was the final radiance of the setting sun...

He had the full ability to terminate Mo Tian Yun’s life with his hand at this moment! After all, Mo Tian Yun wasn’t an Emperor Level Expert. And, he didn’t know the true tyranny of an Emperor Level Expert either...

However, Mo Wu Xin didn’t attack him. He merely looked at Mo Tian Yun with endless sorrow in his eyes. Blood was continuously flowing down from the corner of his mouth. He was firmly holding the saber with his hands. His hands were also bleeding unceasingly. He then said in a low and deep voice, "Tian Yun... you killed me... You killed me... You must know that... I am your grandfather... I am your grandfather! You’re my biological grandson... my own grandson ah..."

Mo Wu Xin said this in deep and low voice, and teardrops continuously streamed down from his old eyes with every blink.

"What?!" Mo Tian Yun retreated two steps, and sat down on the ground. Then, he pedaled his feet on the ground to slip backward, "What...what are you saying?"

"I am your grandfather... I am your biological grandfather!" Mo Wu Xin strenuously puffed out froths of blood. He looked at Mo Tian Yun with tears in his eyes, and spoke with a stammer, "...in those days, I..."

He stammered and unleashed the truth like thunder strikes from the sky in front of Mo Tian Yun, "...I am your grandfather... it’s the truth..."

Mo Wu Xin painfully shut his eyes, "You wanted this saber... you could've just asked... How could I say no to you? Your grandfather also... doesn't want to live... if it bears upon... your life... How could I not give up... a saber for your life...? Your grandfather... can sacrifice... so many sabers like this... for you... Anything for you..."

Mo Tian Yun had been left dumbstruck!

He could've never imagined that he had killed his biological grandfather with his own hands!

Then, he recalled everything in detail, and finally understood — why Mo Wu Xin had always supported him since his childhood? Why he had never spared an effort for his cultivation even though Mo Tian Ji wasn't inferior to him in any aspect...

Why did he go against the entire clan and supported him to be the Young Clan Lord...?

He could never understand because he always thought that he had the natural charisma of being a leader! However, he had now come to realize that it was all merely nonsense! [What leadership quality...? What aura of a ruler...? Everything has become very simple to understand... It was so simple that anyone could've understood it very easily...!]

[Because... he's my own grandfather!]

[He would always find some crafty way to help me out... even if I didn't work hard-enough...]

Mo Tian Yun saw Mo Wu Xin gasping for breath in that pool of blood... speaking while stammering... and struggling in desperation while being on the verge of death...

And, Mo Tian Yun suddenly felt a sharp pain in his heart. He felt as if a knife was being twisted in his heart...

[I wouldn't have killed you if I had known that you're my grandfather... I was worried that I would be the only suspect for

the theft if this saber was stolen… Moreover, Chu Yang and the others wouldn't have kept my secret…]

[I had no other choice but to kill you. And then, I would create a false pretense that this was the job of your enemy. And, no one would've doubted me once those rumors had spread out. Moreover, I would've shifted the blame on Mo Tian Ji since you had showed so much hatred towards him. And then, I would've been able to take the place of Clan Lord in one fell swoop…]

[Because… you had always been good to me…! So, no one would've suspected that I could've killed you!]

[I would've cried loudly! I would've cried until I had gone into trauma. I would've cried until I had lost consciousness. I would've cried until my eyes had started to bleed… I would've cried until everyone had started to feel sympathy towards me… And, my crying would've been absolutely genuine as well. In fact, that would've been a genuine sentiment…]

[You would've died, but you would've brought about a great benefit for me…! Not only would you have saved my life, but also my position… because I would've pulled out the trick that I was moved by the death of my loyal subordinate, ah…]

[I had planned everything properly!]

[But, how could I know… that the matter would turn out to be like this? You're my grandfather in reality? You're my biological grandfather? How is it possible, ah…? Why didn't tell me this before? Did you think that I would've leaked it out if you had told me?]

[I am not that foolish.]

No one had expected that things would extend to this situation… including Chu Yang even though he had forced Mo Tian Yun to take this action… Not even Mo Tian Ji who was aware of the fact that Mo Tian Yun would try to steal the saber…

Even a wise guy like Mo Tian Ji had thought, [Mo Tian Yun would think of a method to distract Mo Wu Xin. Then, he would steal the saber, and escape with it.]

Who would've imagined that Mo Tian Yun would be so vicious and merciless?! Who would have imagined that he would kill the old man? In fact, he had killed the man who had shown him kindness the size of a great mountain! He killed his biggest supporter... just for some greater interests...

He had committed such a depraved act that it was beyond anyone's expectations.

Mo Tian Yun shivered from head to foot...

Suddenly, he crazily pounced over, and went to grab the skinny shoulder of Mo Wu Xin's. Then, he gritted his teeth, "You, you, you... you old bastard! Why didn't you tell me earlier...? You, you, you... would you be in such mess right now if you had told me earlier? You, you, you... you old bastard... you old motherfu*ker... You motherfu*ker..."

Mo Wu Xin looked at him with his lifeless eyes. The expression in his eyes changed from hopeful to despair...

He had told the truth because he was facing death. And, he hadn't killed this brat because he only wanted Mo Tian Yun to call him 'grandfather'. But, he hadn't expected that this brat would become even more insane after knowing the truth. 'Old dog' had changed into 'old bastard'!

This made the sacrifices that Mo Wu Xin had made for him... unendurable!

Mo Wu Xin hoarsely smiled. Then, a strong martial energy suddenly erupted from Mo Wu Xin's body, and sent Mo Tian Yun flying. His skinny body that was lying down on the floor unexpectedly stood up.

'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' Saber was still sticking out his

chest as before.

"I was wrong..." Mo Wu Xin let out a long sigh. He extended his hand, and exerted his strength. He then pulled out the saber from his chest. It was dripping with blood. He looked at Mo Tian Yun with rigid expression in his eyes and said, "You want this saber? Come and take it!"

Mo Tian Yun looked at him in terror. He couldn't help but became scared, and drew a step back.

"Come, take it!" Mo Wu Xin sorrowfully looked at his own grandson... the grandson who had just killed him. He then said in a hissing voice, "Come, and take it!"

Mo Tian Yun gritted his teeth, and finally took a step forward.

Mo Wu Xin smiled and spoke in a hissing voice, "Not bad! That's my grandson! Take it! You must have what you deserve, right..." He threw the saber and the blood got splashed all over. After that, his body swayed as he murmured, "Dying at the hands of one's own grandson... I – Mo Wu Xin – am probably the only unfortunate man in eternity to have died this, right?"

The life in his eyes suddenly disappeared. And, his body fell down with a 'thump' sound.

Mo Tian Yun's body shivered as he caught the saber. Then, he suddenly laughed in a trembling voice. It seemed as if he was nervous. A good while passed, and he suddenly slashed the saber on Mo Wu Xin's dead body. Then, he sobbed in his heart, and cussed, "You old bastard! Old bastard! You made me commit such a great sin! You old bastard..."

There were two men's silhouettes in a shadowy area not-too-far away. These shadows were coldly looking at this scene. Their temples were throbbing in anger!

Mo Tian Ji stood in snow-white clothes in the shadow. He was apathetically looking at this scene from a distance. His vision was

ice cold. And, his eyes didn’t have the least bit of expression in them.

…

Chapter 503: Mo Clan Starts a New Day, and Lets Go Off The Past

Soon, Mo Tian Yun's state of mind became tranquil. He then plotted everything in the secrecy of his mind.

[I should be able to execute the plan I had thought in my mind since it's like this... but, I must to go back and let other people discover this dead body first...]

[Then, I will pretend to have a sorrowful appearance...]

However, he wouldn't need to pretend because he was already feeling enough pain in his heart.

Mo Tian Yun put the saber on his back. Then, he sighed and glanced at his grandfather. He then opened the door to walk out.

However, he suddenly cried out in fear as soon he opened the door. He then fell back on the floor!

Two white-haired old men stood in front of him, and they were firmly looking at him with expressions of hatred and indignation in their eyes. These old men were the Second Elder and the Third Elder of the Mo Clan. These were the other two Emperor Level Experts of the Mo Clan...

Mo Tian Ji was calmly standing behind them in a snow-white robe. And, he was calmly looking at Mo Tian Yun.

"You... you people..." Mo Tian Yun's complexion became deathly pale. He cowered-up on the floor, and struggled to move backwards.

"Little Bastard! Old Bastard!" the Second Elder inconsolably started to talk in grief and indignation, "It's hard to imagine that our Mo Clan got almost destroyed by the hands of you two bastards!"

Mo Tian Yun's face turned deathly grey. His whole body turned

ice-cold.

He knew that he was done for... through and through!

He had killed his biggest supporter with his own hands. And now, he had no one who could speak in his favor in the entire Mo Clan!

The Great Elder had been a master of all the techniques of the clan, and that man could've helped him escape to faraway places after this matter would've been exposed if Mo Tian Yun hadn't done what he had today. However, Mo Tian Yun had killed him at such a critical time...

He had dug his own grave!

Nothing could describe Mo Tian Yun's current situation better... except for these words.

People's shadows fluttered over. The other Elders of the Mo Clan, the Clan Lord Mo Xing Chen, and the others also arrived in quick succession. And, they were greatly startled when they laid eyes on this tragic scene.

The Second Elder slowly explained everything he had just heard to everyone in an ashamed and uneasy manner. It seemed as if thunderbolts had struck Mo Xing Chen. He remained standing in a daze for a long while. Then, he suddenly screamed, and vomited out blood. After that, he collapsed while looking upwards!

He had nearly forced his own biological son and biological daughter to go into impasse for this son of a bi*ch!

Mo Xing Chen's heart ached of hatred and regret. He remained unconscious...

Mo Tian Yun was chained up, and taken into custody. He was to be taken to the prison from here...

Mo Tian Yun passed through the front of Mo Tian Ji. He couldn't help but glance at Mo Tian Ji. He felt ashamed of his inferiority

when he looked at the genuine Eldest Young Master of the Clan. He forced a smile, and spoke-up in a husky voice, "You won. A bastard is a bastard. And, I am a bastard. Finally, I can't compete with you."

Mo Tian Ji insipidly looked at him and replied, "You lost... but, not because you're a bastard! But, because... you're unreasonable... and too ruthless! You had many opportunities to win, but you ruined them with your own hands."

Mo Tian Yun was forced to walk by the ones who had chained him. Yet, he did his best to turn around, "Mo Tian Ji, I beg you one thing... the mother and son..."

Mo Tian Ji callously looked at him, and replied in a calm tone, "Wouldn't he become like you... if I were to keep him alive?" He insipidly smiled, "When I – Mo Tian Ji –handle matters... I don't leave space for any future troubles. I am also ruthless, but I'm different from you. And, this is the difference between you and me."

Mo Tian Yun screamed loudly. He shivered with a rustling sound, "But, he's still a child!"

Mo Tian Ji gently waved his hand, "Take him away!"

The trace of a struggle flashed through Mo Tian Ji's eyes as he watched Mo Tian Yun shout and howl. He mumbled, "Initially... you were also an innocent child."

Then, he immediately turned around. He picked-up his unconscious father, and left while taking large steps.

The Mo Clan made an announcement the next day – [Mo Clan has disowned the Eldest Young Master Mo Tian Yun. The Clan Lord of the Mo Clan, Mo Xing Chen has resigned. Mo Tian Ji is officially the Clan Lord of the Mo Clan! He will be the thirteenth Clan Lord of the Mo Clan!]

This notice was announced to the whole world!

After that, the new Clan Lord of the Mo Clan made an announcement – [The Mo Clan will be fully reorganized from today onwards.]

[Marrying off women of the Mo Clan to form alliance will be abolished from today onwards! Child marriages wouldn't happen because their parents have become matchmakers for them. They may happen only if they have a mutual attraction towards each other.]

[Mo Qing Wu is the Young Miss of the Mo Clan. The one who would dare to disrespect her would be the enemy of the Mo Clan!]

[The Mo Clan won't tolerate any threat from today onwards!]

[The Mo Clan will cooperate with... Ji clan, Luo Clan, Dong Clan, and Gu Clan in all fields, and will have business partnerships with them!]

[And, send a letter through a falcon to Mo Qing Wu. She is the middle of a journey. Inform her that 'the saber is yours, and it will always be'!]

Mo Tian Ji carried out a ruthless and rough cleansing process of Mo Tian Yun's former forces. Mo Tian Ji was aware of the people who were loyal to Mo Tian Yun because they were loyal to the Mo Clan. And, he had been observing the ones who had only been loyal to Mo Tian Yun only. Mo Tian Ji obviously had accounts to settle with most of them.

And, this was obviously the right time to settle those accounts!

He simply had no tolerance to spare. So, Mo Tian Ji displayed an absolutely decisive stance. And, his decision of killing them left everyone to tremble...

A river of blood flowed through the Mo Clan...

Mo Tian Ji carried out the purge in the residence of maid-servants as well. Most of the maid-servants showed-off liking towards Mo Qing Wu when her Three Yin Meridians were intact,

but many of them had avoided and ignored her after the Three Yin Meridians got damaged. He meted-out uniform punishment to them… regardless of their statuses!

The two concubines of Mo Xing Chen were also included in Mo Tian Ji's blacklist. In fact, some of their relatives were a part of his list as well. So, he took action on them..

Mo Tian Ji had only one justification in his heart – [A small group of three people can turn the world around if they work wholeheartedly. But, thousands of troops and a strong foundation established in hundreds of years needs only one traitor who can make the great efforts of innumerable generations go to waste!]

[Now isn't the time to show womanly compassion!]

Two Elders objected his way of handling the matter of the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber when the elder's assembly was held. They believed, [This saber is the most treasured saber of the world. How can it be given to a crippled person?]

Mo Tian Ji didn't speak anything on this subject. He simply meted-out the death penalty since he was the Clan Lord – [Kill them without amnesty!]

His words were clear — [Our Mo Clan needs undivided attention! And, you two old bastards aren't being respectful to the Young Miss of the Clan. Calling her a 'disabled person' is greatly disrespectful! What use are you of if you disobey me like that? And, what harm is there in killing you if such is the case?]

The power and influence of the Clan Lord was in the hands of Mo Tian Ji at this time. This was his era. He had genuinely achieved this power and influence, and had gathered it in one place. The command of the Clan Lord was above everything!

The Mo Tian Ji's power left the two Emperor Level Elders terrified!

Afterwards, Mo Tian Ji issued the order — [Don't seek for

expansion. Seek for stability. This way, we would be able to build a firm foundation for the clan in the shortest period of time.]

Mo Clan started a new day, and let go off the past as a result of this.

...

Chu Yang, Mo Qing Wu, and the others were hastening-on with their journey when such a tremendous change was happening in the Mo Clan.

Chu Yang and others carried 500 kilograms of Star Iron along the whole way, and they walked for eight days. They couldn't adapt to the training for the first three days. And, they eventually sank into an extremely exhausted state on the fourth day.

They felt powerless on the fourth day. Even Chu Yang felt terrible. So, what could one say about about Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo and the others... The tiredness obviously came from the depth of their souls. It had nothing to do with their physical strength.

Chu Yang was very fierce in his heart. He had been speeding-up through the journey even if he was very exhausted. Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo vomited three times in the morning. Dong Wu Shang vomited out twice. Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang also vomited twice. In fact, they had vomited out everything in one go...

However, they felt better in the afternoon. And, they again found strength in their feet in the latter half of the afternoon. They slowly started to feel habitual of it from the fifth day. And, they felt somewhat light on the seventh day... as if the weight was nothing...

Perhaps an average person's body would've collapsed by now if they were to go through such an intense strength-training. But, Chu Yang and the others were able to go through such an intense training since they had already tempered their internal organs when they were Revered Martial Artists. Therefore, they wouldn't

be harmed in their present training as long as they would relax for a sufficient period of time.

No significant improvement had been noted so far. But, their physical resilience had been increased greatly. They could already feel a huge increment in their strength. In addition, their concentration power had also increased while they were going through the training. However, they would have to wait for half a month to put down the 500 kilograms Iron Steel. Only then would the results be visible...

Also, what was worth mentioning was... Mo Qing Wu.

Mo Qing Wu displayed rare strength through this long and difficult journey...

Chu Yang hadn't told her why he wanted her to walk. But, Mo Qing Wu gritted her teeth, and went on. In addition, she had been constantly taking out her small handkerchief to wipe Chu Yang's sweat.

The cute little girl's cheeks were bulged up. She had become so tired on the journey that her face had turned red, and she had been dripping with sweat the entire time. But, she didn't whine about it. Instead, her vision was filled with resolve – [I won't! I won't hold back Elder Brother Chu Yang!]

She hadn't spoken out these words. But, her actions were showing her extremely conscientious efforts!

She was a child of an aristocratic clan, and she was only eleven years old. In addition, this girl had inborn debility. And, there was another disastrous issue upon that – her Three Yin Meridians were damaged!

Therefore, this whole journey had been very difficult to her. In fact, these hardships were simply inadequate and inhumane.

She even fainted several times on the road. Her spiritual power had already exhausted, and her physical strength had also arrived

at its limits. And, this had caused the injuries of her Three Yin Meridians to rebound.

Chu Yang would hold her in his arms whenever this would happen. Then, Sword Spirit would use his spiritual power, and would relieve the injury of her Three Yin Meridians. The rebound of the injuries would get eased down as a result. Her injuries would erupt from time to time, but the Sword Spirit would relieve them every time. He was doing this because he intended to use the Nine Tribulation Pill at the final moment in order to get the best result...

Chu Yang felt heartache when he watched her like this, but he knew that this was necessary! [Mo Qing Wu's strength must promote.]

[I don't know what kind of powerful enemies she'd have to face in the Upper Three Heavens when we go there. It might bring another new tragedy if her strength wouldn't upgrade.]

Mostly, Mo Qing Wu would faint five times in one day. However, Chu Yang had made these exact calculations in advance. [She would hasten-on with the journey with her full strength in the beginning. The injuries of her Three Yin Meridians would be triggered within half an hour. And then, she would faint!]

However, she was soon was able to continue for one-and-half hour in one flow!

This increased to two hours soon-after. How much willpower Mo Qing Wu had, and how much patience Chu Yang had... it couldn't be described in a clear manner...

Mo Qing Wu would struggle to walk on foot every time she'd regain her consciousness. But, she was determined that she wouldn't rely on Elder Brother Chu Yang's arms. She wanted to be carried in his arms... but, she knew that Elder Brother Chu Yang was already very tired...

This little girl showed strength, cleverness, and sensibility. And, this left Gu Du Xing and others so emotional that they couldn’t bear to watch it...

The falcon came with the letter on the ninth day...

Gu Du Xing hurriedly found Chu Yang after they had taken their evening meals. His very first sentence was, "A major incident has happened in the Mo Clan!"

Chu Yang became startled.

...

Chapter 504: Crap, I Made a Fortune!

"What happened?" Chu Yang thought, [Don't tell me Mo Tian Yun took action so quickly? He went back to steal the saber so fast? And, Mo Tian Ji exploited this opportunity?]

These thoughts went through Chu Yang's head. Chu Yang hadn't thought that the matter of the Mo Clan would be so enormous that it would exceed his own expectations.

His original plan was – [To exploit the time when Mo Tian Yun would go to steal the saber. It would provoke a conflict between the Great Elder Mo Wu Xin and Mo Tian Yun. And, Mo Tian Ji would grab this opportunity. Moreover, Mo Tian Yun had almost dissipated the entire property of the Mo Clan. So, this would've been a fatal strike.]

[Of course, Mo Tian Ji would've still sent over the 'Dream of a Gentle Dance' saber. And, that's because the saber belongs to Mo Qing Wu!]

Mo Qing Wu also heard the name of the Mo Clan. And, her tender body shivered at this. She couldn't help but expose expression of fright in her eyes. And, her petite body unconsciously leant on Chu Yang.

"The Mo Clan has started a new day. Mo Tian Yun has already died. Mo Wu Xin is also dead. Mo Xing Chen has abdicated his responsibilities. Mo Tian Ji has become the thirteenth Clan Lord of the Mo Clan...!" Gu Du Xing took a breath. He tried to control the shock that he felt in his heart as he read out the contents of the letter.

The letter he had just received suddenly sent a shiver down his spine. Everything was clear until now.

That's because Gu Du Xing thoroughly understood why such tremendous changes had occurred in the Mo Clan... [The main

cause of disaster is sitting in front of me. It is my own Big Brother!]

Chu Yang had planned everything by himself. He had compelled Mo Tian Yun into a desperate situation. And, he had planned everything very vividly in his mind.

First, he effortlessly put out 300 million to show-off that he could throw away money in a casual manner. After that, he deliberately enticed the greedy heart of Mo Tian Yun. Then, he put on an indifferent appearance even though he had a large amount of money in his pocket. He was perfectly aware that Mo Tian Yun couldn't produce such a vast amount of money under such circumstances. Then, he provoked him by his words, and lured him with an easy chance to make profits. This made Mo Tian Yun mortgage the properties of his clan. Then, Mo Tian Yun stepped into tragedy that he couldn't turn his head from.

Chu Yang used unfathomable methods during the gambling, and turned around that lost battle!

Then, he relentlessly pushed-back Mo Tian Yun in order to pressure him once the gambling had come to an end. He wasn't the least bit lenient towards him. Mo Tian Yun's ego got shattered into pieces, and he was humiliated. Moreover, he was under pressure because of Young Master Yu. And, Mo Tian Yun was forced against a corner as a result...

Therefore, Mo Tian Yun was eventually left with only one hope –'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber!

However, who would've thought that Mo Tian Yun would end up treading on the path of his ruin because of this last hope that he thought he had...

The Mo Clan would certainly punish him if he were to pay-off the debt with sincerity. But, they would still have to pay-off the debts of their Young Clan Lord. The clan may have removed him from the position of the Young Clan Lord after he had made his clan lose a fortune, but the Mo Clan would've had to clench their teeth and

acknowledge this debt.

However, Chu Yang had clearly understood Mo Tian Yun's nature. [Why would I take such pains to collect the money if one saber can off-set everything...?]

Therefore, Mo Tian Yun's tragedy was inevitable...

Chu Yang's plan had basically paved a fairly spacious road which had lead Mo Tian Yun to hell. And, Mo Tian Yun had no other choice but to walk forward on that road.

But, the only somewhat-unexpected thing was that... Mo Tian Yun had walked on this road so quickly...

Chu Yang had only showed him a part of the road that could lead him to hell. But, Mo Tian Yun had unexpectedly advanced on it triumphantly, and had fallen right off the bridge...

Mo Tian Ji had explained everything concerning the Mo Clan in the letter; he hadn't concealed anything. And, the words written in that letter had exposed the frightful truth.

Mo Qing Wu listened to everything, and her entire body turned cold. She trembled and squeezed into Chu Yang's bosom. And, she still continued to shiver thereafter...

[Who could've imagined that such inhuman people were hidden in the clan where I grew up? And, I was also one of the victims of such people's acts!]

[I would still have been a victim if I hadn't been lucky and met Elder Brother Chu Yang...]

Mo Qing Wu's complexion turned deathly pale as these thoughts crossed her mind.

"This is very ruthless..." Chu Yang listened to the courses of events. He remained silent for a long while. And, he said these few words after a good while. He had never expected that Mo Tian Yun could be this insane...

"This Mo Wu Xin... was the main culprit!" Chu Yang gently snapped his fingers, and spoke in a dark mood, "This old bastard! He caused so much harm to Qing Wu... but, he has died an easy death! And, Mo Tian Yun also died in an easy way..."

"Easy?" Cold sweat seeped out from the sleeves of Ji Mo, Gu Du Xing, and others. Luo Ke Di forced a smile, "Big Brother... this is the most, most, most ruthless way to die. You could've chopped him into pieces one by one, but even such a dragged-out death wouldn't be cruel-enough in comparison to this one, ah!"

Gu Du Xing also believed the same thing, "The biological grandfather put his heart out, and fostered his grandson for a lifetime. However, his great efforts and meticulous care went in vain. Moreover, he got killed by the hands of his own biological grandson the moment he was on the verge of succeeding!

"The grandson killed his own grandfather whilst not being aware of the truth... Such a tragedy that's linked so directly with human relationships is the worst kind that exists! It's true that Mo Tian Yun deserved the most tragic end. But, he got to know the truth before he died. Perhaps... his soul will never be able to rest in peace..."

Dong Wu Shang thought for a while. Then, he deeply sighed and said, "It was certainly miserable... but, Big Brother only wanted that saber, and didn't want him to kill his own biological grandfather. That Mo Tian Yun was so crazy and ridiculous that he reacted spontaneously without giving things a thought... This wasn't Big Brother's plan in reality!"

"Such pathetic people deserve hell!" Chu Yang profoundly spoke-up, "Mo Tian Yun was unworthy of sympathy. Mo Wu Xin didn't deserve any mercy either. But, this matter teaches us about one thing. You must remember this..."

The brothers listened attentively in unison...

"No matter what time comes... no matter what impasse we find

ourselves in... we mustn't take blind risks out of desperation. We must think again and again before we act. There would always be a way to survive in the impasse — this is the rule of the world. We must be careful because the destruction that follows wouldn't be limited only to ourselves alone." Chu Yang heavily continued, "We brothers are the men of the same goal. So, a slight change can affect everything else..."

He didn't speak any further. He only sighed softly.

It was as if a flame had suddenly glinted and illuminated the dark and solemn faces of these brothers. They profoundly pondered over this point, and it seemed as if they had realized something...

Mo Qing Wu's body shuddered with a rustling sound in Chu Yang's bosom. She still hadn't emerged from the post-traumatic stress of this matter.

Chu Yang tightened his arms, and hugged her tightly. Then, he softly whispered, "Don't worry! It's in the past now."

Mo Qing Wu gently nodded. She then shrank in his bosom. She felt the powerful arms of Chu Yang, and gradually felt safe in his arms.

It was written in Mo Tian Ji's letter that 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber would always belong to her. But, Mo Qing Wu didn't feel very happy because of this. She was genuinely very fond of the saber. But, she only liked that saber because Elder Brother Chu Yang had given it to her.

And, Elder Brother Chu Yang was at her side at this time... so, it didn't matter whether she had the saber or not...

[Humph! Elder Brother Chu Yang is a lot better than that saber...]

"Big Brother, do you know that your influence has already overstepped the ordinary clans even though you've just arrived in the Middle Three Heavens?" Gu Du Xing smiled. He raised the letter in his hand and said, "Mo Tian Ji has written this letter to

me. But, it’s meant for you to read in reality.

"Mo Tian Ji’s intentions are very clear. He wants to form a strong alliance with you from here on! Therefore, he wants to work together with every clan that is related to you! He wants the same even with Luo Clan... despite the fact that they have always been their enemy. And, this is because of your influence, Big Brother." Gu Du Xing laughed out loud.

"Correct! Mo Tian Ji is the Clan Lord of the Mo Clan now. This means that he stands by our side along with the Mo Clan. The Gu Clan doesn’t have any objection either. The Second Master Ji is standing right here as well. And, there won’t be any difficulty with our Ji Clan either. Second Master Luo is here... This bastard obviously can’t represent anything. But, the Luo Clan is very unlikely to become our enemy in this regard. And, it’s the same for the Dong Clan..."

Ji Mo excitedly said, "Big Brother... is alone equal to three big clans..."

Chu Yang faintly smiled. He spoke-up in a pensive manner, "You forgot about the Huyan Clan. Young Lady Aobo is no less than us men, ah."

Ji Mo blushed. He then mischievously laughed. He then continued in an infatuated manner, "Speaking of which... Bobo will surely listen to me. She is such a tender and virtuous lady. She also reeks of a sense of security..."

Everyone moved their eyes away. Then, they laughed heartily.

Next day... early in the morning...

They hadn’t left for their journey yet. Young Clan Lord Xie Dan Qiong of the Xie Clan came to see them at a gallop. He had come to look for Chu Yang.

"Brother Chu, our Xie Clan’s place is some distance away up ahead. You might want to stay over there for two days. Let me do

the honors." Xie Dan Qiong pleasantly smiled.

Everyone understood the reason behind this hospitality. He clearly wanted to settle the debt without any delay. After all, Xie Dan Qiong was a very proud and arrogant man. So, it was very difficult for him to bear the fact that he owed someone something...

And, Xie Dan Qiong's arrival was the proof that he had already agreed to that business deal Chu Yang had previously put forward.

"Of course, I would gladly accept Brother Xie's offer!" Chu Yang gladly welcomed the offer.

[This is exactly what I wanted, ah!]

It had been quite a while since the Sword Point of the Nine Tribulation Sword had gobbled-up anything. It wanted those huge piles of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and Mysterious Yang Jade that were kept in the Nine Tribulation Space. So, it was in a confrontation with the Sword Spirit since the Sword Spirit didn't want it to plunder them. And, both parties had been in a deadlock as a result...

Xie Dan Qiong had arrived at the right moment. His arrival was like a help in the hour of need...

Xie Dan Qiong was obviously very glad as well because he had gotten a big bargain. [Twenty percent higher than the market price! This... is a huge profit, ah! I will recruit many experts using this money. My clan's influence would be enhanced very greatly, ah...]

[One gets such a charity once in a lifetime, ah... This newly rich King of Hell Chu is willing to spend money like this. How many such people can be found in the entire Middle Three Heavens? I have no time to lose since the time that passes never comes back. I must sell the stock that has been piled up in my clan this entire time...]

Xie Dan Qiong was very excited. In fact, he would've shouted out loud if it weren't to maintain secrecy, [This fool has a lot of money... come fast!]

Xie Dan Qiong was obviously unaware that Chu Yang didn't value the so-called 'gold and silver'. In fact, these golden and silver notes were inferior to toilet paper in King of Hell Chu's eyes.

The primary and most important thing in Chu Yang's life was to upgrade the strength of the Nine Tribulation Sword!

Both of them were wearing smiles on their faces, but they had dark feelings in their hearts. Both of them believed that they had landed a big bargain. But, it was hard to say which of them had actually made the bigger profit.

The welcoming ceremony conducted by the Xie Clan was so grand that it had seemed as if the God of Wealth himself had arrived. King of hell Chu enthusiastically exchanged conventional greetings at first. And, he then looked at this mountain of gold like a greedy wolf. After that, he leisurely entered the secret treasure-house of the Xie Clan that contained an inheritance of nearly a millennium...

[Crap! I made a fortune!!]

Xie Dan Qiong and Chu Yang howled like a wolf in their hearts!

...

Chapter 505: Deal! Deal! All Deals Are Finalized!

In the hall...

Gu Du Xing and the others ate and drank to their heart's content. These brothers didn't hold back to enjoy the hospitality of the Xie Clan. Instead, they gulped down a bellyful of wine and meat. In fact, they weren't even worried that Elder Brother Chu had gone alone along with Xie Dan Qiong...

Mo Qing Wu was the only one who wasn't eating much. She had only eaten a few mouthfuls. She looked in the direction in which Chu Yang had left. [Is Elder Brother Chu Yang not hungry?]

A red and energetic shadow suddenly came over along with the sounds of hurried footsteps. This individual then shouted out loud, "Luo Ke Di!"

Luo Ke Di got startled. He had just scooped up soup in his spoon. And, he spilled half of it on his lapel. [Oh shoot! Oh no! I forgot about this matter... I forgot to tell this to Big Brother.]

This person was Xie Dan Feng!

She came walking-in at a fast pace. She then put her hands on her hips and asked, "Where is that ugly man?"

"Eh?" Luo Ke Di was at a loss for words.

"That one... Didn't you say that he's your brother?" Xie Dan Feng showed an anxious appearance, "Why hasn't that bastard shown his appearance for such a long time?"

Luo Ke Di replied while stammering, "I... don't know this." He noticed that the other brothers were looking at him very curiously. So, Luo Ke Di had no other choice but to tell them what had happened on that day.

No one expected that they would hear the words 'Chu Yang's

Junior Brother Tan Tan'. They then suddenly exposed an expression that reflected their curiosity. And, they started to interrogate in a hurried and curious manner.

"Really? Does he really look ugly..."

"I have heard that he's a narcissist?"

"Is he that fu*king awesome?"

...

Luo Ke Di exposed a 'painful' expression, and it seemed as if he was trying to recollect the memories of past events. He then replied in a weak tone, "You'll understand when you see... I don't want to talk anymore. Now that I remember him... I don't feel hungry anymore..."

Xie Dan Feng laughed out loud. She didn't evade them. Instead, she sat down with them. Then, she gulped down wine, and ate meat while laughing and talking with everyone. She quickly mingled with the group.

Ji Mo secretly pondered in his heart, [This Young Miss's nature is similar to that of Bobo's. It seems that this Tan Tan is a kindred spirit like me...] Thereafter, his mood got so good that he drank-up three cups of wine in quick succession.

The clan members of the Xie Clan who were attending to the guests looked at each other in dismay. They thought, [These brothers are so careless. Their Big Brother went with our Young Master to discuss business. And, they aren't even worried...? Don't they know that Eldest Young Master Xie Dan Qiong is famous as an expert of monitory calculations...?]

They obviously didn't know that Gu Du Xing and the others were genuinely not worried...

There was no doubt that Xie Dan Qiong was an expert of monitory calculations. But, what chance did this so-called 'golden abacus' stand in front of Chu Yang?

...

"Brother Chu, look here. This is the compensation that our clan has arranged for repaying the debt of gambling." Xie Dan Qiong pointed towards a pile of rare metals, and showed them to Chu Yang. His third uncle Xie Qing Mo and his forth uncle Xie Qing Yan were standing behind him. Both of them were highly experienced businessmen. In fact, they were the ones who had arranged this. They had also arranged many auctions of rare and precious goods. And, they would obviously decide the prices of the items in these auctions as well.

Chu Yang looked at the chunks of Extraterrestrial Meteorites, Underworld Cold Iron, Star Iron, Cold Gold...

They were in great abundance, and were available in all sizes. In fact, there must've been 25 or 26 chunks of every item.

The estimated value of these items must have been more than 500 million. It seemed that Xie Clan had a good mastery of trade, and knew how to please Chu Yang. They definitely wouldn't disappoint Chu Yang.

"It's pretty good. Xie Clan is very large and influential! I want all these." Chu Yang said in a low voice, "The approximate value of these things must be 550 million taels. This should be the current market price."

Xie Qing Mo and Xie Qing Yan looked at each other as soon as Chu Yang spoke out this figure. They saw the look of affirmation in each other's eyes. [He is correct. The finalized market price of these things should be this; it can be ten million up and down! This King of Hell Chu has a very sharp vision!]

Chu Yang thought for a moment, "I promised you... 20% higher than the market price. Therefore, I will give you one-hundred million for these."

He took out golden notes worth one-hundred million as he said

this, and handed them over to Xie Dan Qiong on the spot.

Xie Dan Qiong's hands were continuously shaking, "Brother Chu, you have been grateful enough to extend the time limit. Moreover... my Xie Clan will be very ashamed to do business with you again if I sell you this stuff at this price. Please, Brother Chu Yang, keep it."

Chu Yang replied with a smile, "Brother Xie, you also know this... and I've already told you that a man never goes back on his word! Does Brother Xie think that I am a nasty man who doesn't live up to his promises?"

Xie Dan Qiong's face filled with a helpless look. He then looked towards his third uncle.

Xie Dan Mo slowly nodded and said, "The Young Clan Lord shouldn't decline since Brother Chu has such frank mindset. There will be ample time to show hospitality later..."

Xie Dan Qiong forced a smile and said, "So, I will gladly accept it in that case."

Chu Yang laughed out loud and patted his shoulder. He thought, [How would I be able to entice you further to show me more good stuff if I don't let you make a profit from the get go?] He said, "Brother Xie, no need to be so polite. I have this mindset regarding money. So, these are just a bunch of numbers and nothing more. They really don't matter to me."

The eyes of Xie Qing Mo and Xie Qing Yan lit-up when they heard these words.

Xie Dan Qiong issued an order, and called several people to come in. He ordered them to wrap the things that Chu Yang had chosen, and asked them to be sent to the camp of the Gu Clan.

"This place is quite big." Chu Yang looked at this warehouse where these rare metals were stored. Then, he insipidly said.

"Of course... as it should be." Xie Qing Mo showed a somewhat

affectionate expression. He then said, "Minister Chu, our Xie Clan has been stocking up these items for many years. We can further collaborate if Minister is interested."

Chu Yang's eyes lit-up. And, he replied in high spirits, "Really? Then, I would like to plunder a lot today. Ha ha ha..."

The nephew Xie Dan Qiong and his uncles laughed heartily as well. Xie Dan Qiong said, "If Minister Chu sees anything... and fancies it... then consider it yours!"

The four of them started to laugh heartily. All of them were extremely happy.

Chu Yang thought, [I expect that you will live up to your words. It seems that I would be returning with a load of treasures from this journey. I said that I will plunder... do you genuinely think that it will be that simple?]

Xie Qing Mo thought, [I expect that you will live up to your words. Do you think that you are going to plunder us? We are going to plunder your pocket instead...]

"Minister Chu, please come here. Please!" Xie Qing Mo politely pulled Chu Yang and brought him over to the front of a thick shelf, "Minister Chu, look at this item. What do you think about it?"

"Seems like a good item!" Chu Yang's eyes brightened up. It was a chunk of an unusual item that had a lot of holes on its surface. It sparkled and released a faint cold light that could make anyone heartbeats race. It was neither gold nor stone. It was only the size of a person's head, but it was exceptionally heavy. In fact, it had pressed down the iron shelf to an extent that the shelf was a little bent...

The Nine Tribulation Sword cheered up inside his Dantian. In fact, it flipped over, and somersaulted in his Dantian. This flared up Chu Yang's determination to take this item even more...

"This thing is a chunk of Extraterrestrial Meteor Iron. It is also

known as ‘Thirty Thousand Lives’." Xie Qing Mo smiled and further introduced, "This thing came flying from beyond the heavens three hundred years ago, and fell on the earth. Its shock waves affected the entire mountain range, and turned it upside down. Thirty-thousand people within the radius of 250 kilometers lost their lives due to the impact of its shock waves!"

Then, Xie Qing Yan continued, "This thing was as big as a house back then. It was flaming and burning like the sun. After that, we sent our men, and asked them to wait for it to cool down. Then, they smashed over and over on the surface of this burning thing with sledgehammers. This big chunk was exposed from the inside of it... Look at these holes. They are actually burn-marks from that time."

"Great!" Chu Yang touched the item. Then, he exerted his wrist, and held this ‘Thirty Thousand Lives’ in his hand. He felt his wrist fiercely pushed down by the weight of this item. However, he urged his strength, and managed to hold it firmly.

"We don’t know what this thing is. But, it is heavy, wonderful, and matchless! Only this person’s head-sized piece weighs more than 2500 kilograms!"

Xie Dan Qiong looked at this unusual item.

The name of this item seemed to be like a thrown-out bluff. But, it was extremely solid. In fact, it was nearly indestructible. The Xie Clan had kept it this entire time, but they didn’t know the use of this item. Chu Yang had come here at this moment. So, the first thing they thought was to sell out this ‘trash’ to him.

"This a good item! I want this!" Chu Yang nodded in satisfaction, "Brother Xie, please tell me the price of this."

Chu Yang didn’t know what this thing was. But, he knew one thing... [It can make the Nine Tribulation Sword react. So, it has to be a good thing! The important thing to note is that the Nine Tribulation Sword moves lazily even when it spots Star Iron,

Nightmare Steel and other items. But, it somersaulted for this chunk of Extraterrestrial Meteoric Iron... So, it's obvious that this thing is very precious.]

Xie Dan Qiong looked at this item, and discussed with his uncles. Then, he said, "Brother Chu, we don't know what the use of this thing is. So, we don't know its price. Moreover, it has never appeared in the market. So, there's no market value to have a reference with. You see... how about ten million taels?"

These three men had discussed the price of this thing. And, they had decided it to be ten million taels. It was neither too high, nor too low. But, it wasn't meager either. They wanted to show the sincerity of the Xie Clan. But, they didn't wish to suffer a loss either.

One must know that the Xie Clan had spent up to a million in silver taels for the manpower and physical resources to retrieve this Extraterrestrial Meteoric Iron. But, that was three-hundred years ago.

"Very well! So, it's a deal then!" Chu Yang straightforwardly said, "I will add two million taels to make that twenty-percent higher than the market price." He effortlessly took out golden notes to pay for the item.

King of Hell Chu was filthy rich at the moment. And, this was the perfect annotation of that!

This chunk clearly wasn't worth just ten million taels. After all, it had made the Nine Tribulation Sword somersault. So, Chu Yang would've even paid one-hundred-and-twenty million to get it. In fact, Chu Yang would've bought it even if it were to have costed him his entire net worth!

Xie Dan Qiong and the other two felt relieved. Then, they exposed a smile, "Brother Chu is very frank and straightforward."

[This guy is really rich, ah... he flung twelve million in the blink

of an eye without knowing anything about this thing...]

Xie Dan Qiong accepted the money amidst their conversation. He then called over a few people to lift that item and take it outside.

"I don't need to introduce this thing over here, right?" Xie Dan Qiong mischievously smiled as he pointed out to a chunk of mild-red rare item.

"Red Cloud Steel! It is a good item!" A bright light flashed in Chu Yang's eyes. [There was a big chunk of this item in the Iron Cloud Imperial Palace. This one is also as big as that one. It is genuinely a precious thing.]

"How about a hundred million for this one?" Xie Dan Qiong said.

"Alright! One-hundred million plus twenty million!" Chu Yang readily complied.

"This is a piece of Nightmare Steel..."

"Deal is done!"

"This is a piece of Nine Hells Iron!"

"Deal!"

"This is a piece of..."

"Deal!"

"This is..."

"Deal!"

"This..."

"Deal!"

They walked past thirteen or fourteen shelves in this manner. The shelves had started to look empty like anything. In fact, they looked desolate. Minister Chu had purchased everything right away!

He was like a rag-picker. He would take anything as long as he

found it useful. Anyway, the Xie Clan had arranged these items here. So, how could they possibly be ordinary?

…

Chapter 506: Chu Yang Promises!

Chu Yang had already thrown out eight-hundred million in just half an hour... by a rough estimation!

Golden notes continued to pile up in Xie Dan Qiong's bosom. And, his bosom continued to bulge-up.

Xie Dan Qiong, Xie Qing Mo, and Xie Qing Yan became increasingly excited. [He's a very wealthy person! He's not saying no to anything, ah...]

The three of them were least interested in what Chu Yang would do with these items. [These things can only be used to forge weapons! But, forging weapons from these things isn't easy.]

[The shape of some of these materials won't change even if you throw them into a volcanic crater. But, you – King of Hell Chu – are buying these things. It means that you're only collecting show-pieces. Only those old monsters of Ninth Grade Monarch level or above of the Upper Three Heavens know how to forge weapons from these things. They might be capable of forging weapons from these items... But, such kind of person must be very experienced and highly skilled. And, such people are truly elusive. So, who would you find to forge these things for you?]

[Also, can you even find such people, Chu Yang?]

Chu Yang continued to walk forward in high spirits. He hadn't explored the entire secret treasure-house of the Xie Clan yet. In fact, there were still at least one-hundred shelves that he hadn't seen yet.

Chu Yang continued to walk forward, and continued to throw golden notes along the way. After that, the men of the Xie Clan who were waiting outside would come inside to carry out the stuff. Gu Du Xing had arranged for people to receive the stuff in the Gu Clan's camp. And, he was getting these items stuffed into Chu

Yang’s tent.

The servants of the Xie Clan were bringing these items to the Gu Clan’s camp in the beginning. But, eight Revered Martial Artists had started to carry the things soon-after! There was no other way since an average man couldn’t move some of those heavy items.

The secret treasure-house of the Xie Clan was half-emptied. And, Chu Yang didn’t have any more money.

Chu Yang had already thrown away five billion in this secret treasure-house at the end of it! After all, the Xie Clan was a tyrannical force of the Middle Three Heavens. And, it had a millennium old heritage. How could they not have an abundant collection of items? Chu Yang wanted to empty the entire treasure-house at once, but it was obviously unrealistic.

However, not having money wasn’t a matter of concern for Chu Yang because he had plenty of other ways.

"Young Master Xie," Chu Yang suddenly stopped his steps. He noticed that Xie Dan Qiong’s bosom were almost full and that he couldn’t hold the golden notes anymore.

"Is it that Brother Chu doesn’t have any more money in hand?" Xie Dan Qiong smiled. He had clearly sensed Chu Yang’s problem.

"That’s right. I have one thing. But, I don’t know if the Xie Clan would be interested in it..." Chu Yang profoundly smiled.

"What treasured object does Brother Chu have?" Xie Dan Qiong chuckled and said, "Brother Chu doesn’t even need to put forward this item he possesses. Just tell us if you take fancy to anything. And, you can pay later. I know that Brother Chu is trustworthy."

[Nonsense! I am trustworthy?!] Chu Yang thought in his heart, [It has only been one month that I have arrived in the Middle Three Heavens. And, you already think that I am trustworthy? I don’t know how...]

"I have a chunk of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal..." Chu Yang

profoundly looked at the uncles and the nephew, "I want to sell it."

"Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal?" Xie Dan Qiong's mind went blank. And, the golden notes in his bosom got scattered on the floor with 'shua''shua' sound.

The eyes of Xie Qing Mo and Xie Qing Yan also popped out of their eye-sockets!

The cultivation method of the Xie Clan had always been very reserved and gentle. In fact, it had been on the cold and feminine side. Therefore, this supreme and treasured object known as the 'Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal' could substantially boost the cultivation method of the Xie Clan! Moreover, there won't be any possibility of an accidental rebound if they were to practice their skills while wearing the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal!

This was the thing that the Xie Clan hadn't been able to find for over a thousand years. And, they had been longing for this thing for a long... long time!

"It's the core of the crystal to be precise." Chu Yang faintly smiled, and added further.

"Core of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal...? Do you really have it? Please, take it out; I want to look at it!" these words were spoken. But, they weren't spoken by any of the uncles... or the nephew Xie Dan Qiong himself. They were instead spoken by an old man who had suddenly appeared there.

His mustache and beard were completely white. He looked skinny and withered. In fact, the meat on his whole body would've weighed only a quarter grams put-together if it were to be cut out and put on a weighing-machine.

This old guy had appeared in front of Chu Yang very suddenly. Moreover, his eyes were emitting a mysterious light of longing.

"Ancestor?" Xie Dan Qiong was startled. The old man who had just arrived was the Ancestor of the Xie Clan in reality. Xie Zhi Qiu

was already four or five hundred years old. His cultivation level was so high that even Xie Dan Qiong didn't know how high it was...

"He is a Ninth Grade Emperor Level Expert. He has been observing you people with his Divine Sense this entire time. Moreover, his appearance leaves me to guess that he must have been stuck in the bottleneck for more than a hundred year... So, I'm afraid that it would be the end of his lifespan if he isn't able to break through to Monarch level in the coming few decades." Sword Spirit softly spoke-up inside Chu Yang's mind, "And, he can actually make the breakthrough with the help of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal!"

"No wonder you agreed to put forward the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal. So, you had intended to aim at this old guy," Chu Yang replied in his thoughts. He now understood why the Sword Spirit had been calmly telling him not to worry. The Sword Spirit had wanted to catch this big fish this entire time...

"Of course..." Sword Spirit mischievously laughed.

Xie Zhi Qiu paid no attention to Xie Dan Qiong and his uncles. His eyes were firmly fixed at Chu Yang.

The sound of this activity caught the attention of the high-level experts of the Xie Clan. And, all the high level experts who were paying attention to it appeared in quick succession.

"I genuinely have the core of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal. However, I obviously want an appropriate price for it." Chu Yang insipidly smiled and said, "Otherwise, the Clan of Young Master Ou Du Xiao has also invited me to their secret treasury to take a look at the treasures they have..."

"First you take it out. This old man guarantees you that you will be paid beyond your expectations if you really have it." Xie Zhi Qiu didn't pay attention to the saluting people of the Xie Clan. He only focused at Chu Yang while he spoke.

"Alright."

Chu Yang knew that it would be counter-productive if he were to keep these people in suspense for a long time. So, he turned over his palm, and a fist-sized core of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal appeared in his hand.

Suddenly, a cold aura spread out in the secret treasure-house.

It was so cold and refreshing that it could make a soul feel tranquil! In fact, it could even pacify a persona, and make him regain tranquility regardless of how jittery he would've been feeling.

Dozens of visions got fixed at Chu Yang's hand in unison...

This chunk of jade was as clear as water. And, it was emitting a gentle radiance.

Xie Zhi Qiu's body somewhat shivered as he stared at it! [This thing is it! This thing is actually 'it'! This thing is the real Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal if I'm not wrong! I would be able to break through to the Monarch level if I have this. Moreover... the intrinsic quality, martial power, and the cultivation method of the entire Xie Clan will advance forward very quickly!]

"I... this... can I take a look at this?" Xie Zhi Qiu rubbed his hands.

Chu Yang slightly smiled. He handed over the core of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal. He also sighed since his heart was deeply moved by this.

The Xie Clan was a famous clan in the Middle Three Heavens! No matter what financial resources or what military forces it had... it was considered to be one of the supreme clans of the Middle Three Heavens. But, what made it praise-worthy was – the upbringing of the Xie Clan!

The upbringing of the Xie Clan was stern. It was top-notch in the Middle Three Heavens!

This kind of treasure could affect the fate and the future of the Xie Clan. So, the reaction of all the people of Xie Clan at the sight of this item was beyond Chu Yang's expectations.

He had planned everything well in advance. He was prepared to compress his consciousness if something happened. Then, he would transfer his consciousness to the Nine Tribulation Space. His consciousness would swap places with the Sword Spirit as a result. And, the Sword Spirit would take control over Chu Yang's body. Then, the formidable power of the Nine Tribulation Sword would be unleashed in its entirety. And, that would slaughter everyone of any importance in the Xie Clan!

Chu Yang wasn't a charitable person. And, he wasn't a fool either. How would he take out such a treasured object without having precautionary measures in place?

These people of Xie Clan who present at this scene weren't less than sixteen or seventeen in number. Expressions of greed and craving were flickering in the eyes of these people. And, killing intention was also glittering in the eyes of a few. However, this was only the case with five or six people... The majority of the people gathered had shocked and pleasantly surprised looks only. They were obviously greedy, but their expressions weren't disgusting.

In fact, they would've been abnormal if their hearts wouldn't have become greedy while looking at such a treasured thing!

This left Chu Yang to praise them in his heart.

The Sword Spirit had clearly anticipated the reaction of the people of the Xie Clan. It was exactly how he had analyzed.

Xie Zhi Qiu held the core of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal. And, he felt that it was making his withered meridians regain the flow of energy. He took a deep breath, and cherished his regained tranquility, "Little brother, you rashly put out such a valuable treasure. Did you not fear that this old man would take it... or

maybe kill you for it?"

"We must take risks in life." Chu Yang warmly smiled, "I want to make friends. So, I must first show my sincerity. And, I would say that I took a risk in gambling and lost if I were to get harmed because of this. But, I will have made trustworthy and reliable friends for a lifetime if I don't get harmed. I equally fear earning and losing. But, I have no other choice but to bet."

"Right! Right! Right!" Xie Zhi Qiu looked at him with rapt attention for a long while. Then, he suddenly laughed heartily. He turned his head and said, "Everyone must be aware that this thing is very important for our Xie Clan."

The other people of the Xie Clan nodded as they listened to the Ancestor's instructions.

"Little Brother, our Xie Clan wouldn't disappoint you since you have put this thing forward!" Xie Zhi Qiu said, "This old man might as well tell you that this thing is the most valuable treasure for us! And, this is an opportunity to achieve extremely rapid progress for our Xie Clan!"

He looked around the secret treasure-house and said, "This secret treasure-house is yours! All the things inside it... are a price for your core of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal! It is the price for your sincerity. You can also take any other item my Xie Clan may acquire at a later date if you like! We won't take any money from you in return!"

He awe-inspiringly turned around and said, "Dan Qiong, did you hear this?"

"Yes, Ancestor!" Xie Dan Qiong respectfully nodded.

"Wait... don't you think that you're being too hasty? Senior, you might wish to think over it carefully." Chu Yang was taken aback. He hadn't expected that he would get such a major commitment in exchange for that crystal. This commitment had left Chu Yang to

feel restless in his heart!

"You don’t know what you have put forward. Let this old man tell you... you have put forward the future of the Xie Clan!" Xie Zhi Qiu replied with a respectful look on his face, "Any man who shows respect to our Xie Clan receives ten-fold respect in return! And, I cut the head off the body of anyone who tries to harm a single finger on our hand! I have a clear stance about gratitude and grudges!

"Besides, what you have given us is so precious that we have nothing to trade it with." Xie Zhi Qiu heavily continued, "To be honest, this old man still can’t estimate the value of this core of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal. It is simply priceless!"

"I see." Chu Yang solemnly replied, "This junior also needs the things in your treasure-house. So, I will gladly accept them. But, I will certainly give you a generous reward in the future!"

This was the first-time-ever that Chu Yang had said, ‘I will certainly give you a generous reward in future’!

This phrase would’ve been mere words without commitment if they had been spoken by someone else. But, Chu Yang had said these words in this case. So, they were no less than a commitment! Moreover, this commitment contained so much value that the Xie Clan couldn’t even imagine!

The Xie Clan felt that they had struck a cheap bargain. However, Chu Yang knew that it was the other way around. Chu Yang would’ve done a ‘tit for tat’ if the Xie Clan had tried to deceive him. And, he wouldn’t have been bothered about it if that had been the case. In fact, he wouldn’t have had the least bit of mental pressure.

However, the other person had shown such a noble character. So, their gesture had moved Chu Yang’s heart. Consequently, he had decided to make this promise. But, he hadn’t made this promise in the heat of the moment...

Chapter 507: The Real Jasper Flower

Both sides felt cordial towards each other after having spoken such words in this situation. Xie Clan's people got enthusiastic in quick succession, and took the initiative to help Chu Yang in moving his stuff out.

Gu Du Xing was standing outside. He was in-charge of receiving the items. His eyes nearly popped out as he opened his eyes wide in a stare.

[Fu*k, Big Brother is emptying the entire Xie Clan?] He saw that huge pile of items in Chu Yang's tent. In fact, he had to arrange for two more tents for stocking things up.

"Brother Chu, how will you carry so many things?" Xie Dan Qiong accompanied Chu Yang out and said, "Let me prepare a few carriages for you."

"That's not necessary. I have my own means," Chu Yang replied with a smile.

Xie Dan Qiong handed over that thick stack of golden notes to him during this conversation, "Brother Chu, please take this back."

"What are you doing?" Chu Yang replied in an astonished manner.

"Brother Chu has given our Xie Clan a big fortune. Our ancestor has clearly stated that entire treasure-house shall be used to buy your Mysterious Ice Jade Crystal Core. Then, this money should naturally be yours! We can't keep it." Xie Dan Qiong firmly replied.

Chu Yang felt helpless at this moment. [I am fine with making profits at others' expense, but I shouldn't take advantage of someone like that, right?]

Xie Dan Qiong saw that Chu Yang was feeling embarrassed. And, he couldn't help but laugh out loud. He then said, "Brother Chu, I know that you are feeling somewhat troubled in your heart... But,

you want these things because you wish to forge weapons, correct...? Ha-ha, I was very curious to be honest. Can you really forge weapons? And, would it be possible to build one for me as well if you can?"

He patted Chu Yang's shoulder and said, "Besides, we are going to have a long and steady business relationship in the future. However, you have to go to the Ou Clan right now. And, their secret treasure-house is no worse than ours. So, you will need to take lots of money."

"Eh?" Chu Yang felt a shock in his heart. Then, he received the money, and replied in a carefree manner, "I would gladly accept this since Brother Xie is insisting." He thought in his heart, [This money is a favor from the Xie Clan. And, I won't let it go in vain.]

"Brother Xie, may I see your famous concealed weapon... the Jasper Flower?" Chu Yang asked with much curiosity.

Xie Dan Qiong was startled for a second. Then, he replied with a smile, "Why not?" He took his weapon out, and added with a sigh, "Unfortunately, my Jasper Flower isn't yet perfect..."

"Oh?" Chu Yang looked at those two petal-like things, and thought with rapt attention. [There's a contraption above it. The surrounding sharp petals begin to rotate rapidly when it's touched and instilled with spiritual power. It then forms an invincible storm that can destroy any enemy who stands in front of you...]

Xie Dan Qiong demonstrated it for a moment, and said, "It works like this, but... the secret manual I got with it is somewhat incomplete. Its current power isn't small. However, I always feel that it's still somewhat lacking since I can't display its true potential..."

"It's not Jasper Flower. It's the 'Soul Seizing Flower Blades' in reality!" the Sword Spirit spoke-up in a disdainful tone in his mind.

"Do you know what this item is?" Chu Yang asked the Sword

Spirit in a curious manner.

"This is the famous weapon of the ‘Soul Seizing Flower Fairy’ from 20,000 years ago. The Soul Seizing Blade is capable of rendering ten-thousand flowers colorless in the world. And, the enemy’s soul is taken away amidst the vivid rain of colorful flower! It used to be number one concealed weapon of its time! However, this kid of the Xie Clan has practiced it wrongly!"

The Sword Spirit snorted, and added further, "Why do I know this? It’s because this weapon was personally developed by me for the Seventh Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword. He had it prepared as a gift for his concubine to flatter her... That Soul Seizing Flower Fairy was that guy’s sixth concubine... do you now understand how I know this?"

Chu Yang was shocked, "Eh! So, it’s like this... Do you still have this thing?"

Sword Spirit rolled his eyes, "Do you want?"

"You don’t say!"

"It can be manufactured in a moment. However... this ‘Seizing Soul Flower Blade’ was originally crafted for a woman. This boy is clearly a man... I’m afraid that it won’t be easy for him to practice it to the perfection," Sword Spirit looked at Xie Dan Qiong and said.

"That’s his problem." Chu Yang calmly replied, "Even feminine can be turned into masculine when there’s determination in one’s heart."

The Sword Spirit’s eyes lit-up as he said, "Even feminine can be turned into masculine. Well said. In that case, I will help you in assisting him to accomplish his goal. Whether he managed to succeed or not... will totally depend on his luck!"

Xie Dan Qiong saw Chu Yang holding his Jasper Flower in a pensive manner. He found this strange. So, he asked, "Brother

Chu, is something wrong?"

Chu Yang woke up from his pensive state of mind, and replied, "No, there is nothing wrong. I only found this Jasper Flower of yours somewhat familiar. I had once obtained two items which resemble your Jasper Flower. Or maybe... they aren't entirely similar..."

"Are you serious?" Xie Dan Qiong's eyes lit up.

"Brother Xie, you wait here for a minute. I'll go and fetch them." Chu Yang excused himself, and slipped into the tent where he was going to wait for sometime while the Sword Spirit would craft the weapon.

Chu Yang came back out not long after. He took out an item – which looked like two flower-buds – from his bosom in front of the astonished gaze of Xie Dan Qiong and said, "Brother Xie, please take a look at these..."

Xie Dan Qiong couldn't hold himself back, and urgently took it over. He looked at it from all angle. Then, he pressed the contraption located below it, and the petals suddenly opened. It seemed dreamy like an illusion. However, the rim of each petal was flashing sharply, and appeared eerie. It seemed as if the devil himself had drilled out from the hell and had started to wink...

The more Xie Dan Qiong looked at it... the more excited he started to appear. In fact, his hands had begun to tremble soon-after...

"Jasper Flower! This is the real Jasper Flower..." Xie Dan Qiong unconsciously grabbed Chu Yang's hand and asked, "Brother Chu, where did you get this item?"

"I got this... from an ancient tomb..." Chu Yang replied with difficulty, "I remember getting a piece of gold leaf along with it. The practice method was inscribed on it... However, I didn't like it much because it's far too feminine for my taste. So, I didn't

practice it."

"Gold leaf...? Practice method engraved on it...?" Xie Dan Qiong nearly fainted from overexcitement. This news had struck him like a thunderbolt from a clear sky. In fact, he had gotten so excited that he didn't know how to react...

"Brother Xie... Do you like it?" Chu Yang attempted to be pretentious. He had the intention to present it to him, but he still had to follow this course of events. After all, he still had to make this story consistent in order to justify this lie.

"Like...!? I love it!" A strong ray of hope appeared in Xie Dan Qiong's eyes, "Brother Chu, this may be the greatest opportunity... in my life!"

"Here, it's done," the Sword Spirit had carved the practice method on the gold leaf by now. However, this last minute rush-work had made him terribly exhausted.

His voice sounded in Chu Yang's mind, "I can only give him the first part of the practice method... His current cultivation isn't enough for further parts. He would probably lose his life in a few days to this 'Soul Seizing Flower Blade' if he attempts to practice the second part or third part now."

Chu Yang silently nodded. Then, he took out the gold leaf, "Brother Xie, take a look at this. See if it's of any use or not..."

He hadn't yet finished speak when he realized that Xie Dan Qiong had already 'snatched' it from his hand... and was currently looking at it in a hungry manner. He fiercely looked up after a long time had passed, and stared at Chu Yang with such a grim look in his eyes that it gave goose bumps to Chu Yang. He then suddenly yelled, and rushed over to embrace Chu Yang...

He hugged Chu Yang so hard that it nearly suffocated him...

"Brother Chu! Brother Chu, you... you are the noblest man I have ever seen... you are the best!" Xie Dan Qiong was visibly moved to

tears. He couldn’t control himself in overexcitement, "This is the most complete Jasper Flower, and the most complete Jasper Flower practice method ah..."

"Eh..." Chu Yang struggled to break free, "It’s great that they are complete... now you let go of me first!"

"I won’t let go!" Xie Dan Qiong nearly began to hop while still hugging Chu Yang. King of Hell Chu rolled his eyes as he suddenly realized that this wasn’t even remotely consistent with his usual elegant image...

Chu Yang was embarrassed. He somehow broke free. Then, he turned his head to look around. He saw that the people Xie Clan were looking at them with strange looks in their eyes...

He scratched his head in embarrassment. Xie Dan Qiong was also somewhat embarrassed. His handsome face had turned red, "Brother Chu... I'm sorry ... I'm got a little too excited and couldn’t control myself."

"It’s fine. I understand." Chu Yang nodded his head. Then, he used his right hand to secretly rub his shoulder. He said in his heart, [You fu*ker. You got excited and hugged me so tightly that you almost dislocated my shoulder...]

"Brother Chu... these ... can I keep these?" Xie Dan Qiong tightly grasped the Jasper Flower and the gold leaf, and cautiously looked at Chu Yang with a somewhat apprehensive expression in his eyes.

"Yup," Chu Yang nodded.

Xie Dan Qiong cheered up once again. He rushed forward to hug Chu Yang, but somehow managed to restrain himself this time around. He finally didn’t lose self-control. However, his handsome face was already flushed.

Chu Yang drew back two steps, and vigilantly looked at him. [Don’t hug me. You had better not hug me again... or I won’t be able to withstand it this time...]

Xie Dan Qiong went back home dancing with joy. And, he repeatedly chanted in his heart, [I mustn't let him return without getting him drunk! I must get him drunk! Brother Chu, you would feel that I wasn't a good host if I don't get you drunk... And, you will feel that I didn't entertain you properly. So, I must get you drunk. That's the only way I can show my greater sincerity towards you...]

"Has this guy lost his mind or something?" Ji Mo looked at Xie Dan Qiong's overexcited appearance, and asked in a perplexed manner, "Has this guy received such an impact after Big Brother Chu emptied his clan's property... that he's gone insane?"

"It seems like that to me as well," Luo Ke Di had a deep look on his face. He looked-on solemnly, "He's showing those symptoms. I recall that this sickness is called epilepsy... And, it seems that Xie Dan Qiong is suffering from this condition..."

"So pitiful..." Ji Mo nodded.

"Indeed..." Luo Ke Di nodded his head, "Though, his condition isn't as worse as Second Brother Gu's..."

"I also think the same," Ji Mo felt that Luo Ke Di had stolen the thought in his heart.

"You both get lost!" Gu Du Xing got furious, and kicked them one after another. This obviously sent them flying...

The Xie Clan threw a banquet that night. All high-level experts of the Xie Clan were in attendance; including Xie Zhi Qiu even though he had shunned the world entirely, and hadn't participated in such an occasion in more than 100 years. So, his presence at a banquet was simply unprecedented.

Xie Zhi Qiu made a formal announcement about the alliance between the Xie Clan and Minister Chu before the banquet began. He clearly pointed out... [Chu Yang will be an irreplaceable ally of the Xie Clan from now on! No matter what happens... The Xie Clan

shall support Chu Yang unconditionally. It doesn’t matter whether what’s just and what’s wrong... we shall have a clear-cut stand, and we shall stand beside Chu Yang!]

This decision was obviously somewhat insane!

However, Xie Zhi Qiu knew that Chu Yang was worth it since he had seen the real Jasper Flower and the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal Core. Therefore, the friendship with him was worth it. He was worthy of Xie Clan’s investment of time and energy in friendship!

Gu Du Xing and the other brothers had come to realize this... [The Xie Clan of the Middle Three Heavens has become our unconditional supporter!]

It could be said that this was equivalent to another big step towards Chu Yang's goal!

These brothers didn’t know how Chu Yang had pulled this off. However, they had a feeling that the future was going to be brighter and brighter from here on...

...

Chapter 508: Challenges the Entire Clan Alone!

This was a party night!

Xie Dan Qiong had almost gone crazy. And, he kept on forcing cups and jars of wine on Chu Yang...

Xie Dan Qiong's goal was clear – [Get him drunk!]

[Only getting him drunk will show my sincerity, my hospitality, my gratitude, and my good intentions...]

Only God would've known how this thought came to him.

Chu Yang finished the first round of drinking after he had been forced to do so. He then saw that Xie Dan Qiong was completely intoxicated. His eyes had belied his drunkenness. In fact, he would sway thrice after taking one step. And, he came over to Chu Yang in this manner. His pretty face that could make any women jealous reeked of a tipsy look, "Come on, come on. Hic~ Brother Chu, hic~ drink more!"

He was constantly hiccupping. But, his heroic aura hadn't decreased yet.

"If you don't drink... it won't do!" Xie Dan Qiong said in a loud voice, "I have secretly made this fine wine... I have mixed 'immortal intoxication drug' in it. So, it will inhibit your spiritual powers. And, that will allow you to get drunk... come on, come on... drink from this cup... drink from this bowl... empty this jar... How would I show my hospitality if I won't get you drunk to death...?"

Chu Yang was flabbergasted.

[What did he just say? How would I show my hospitality if I won't get you drunk to death...?]

[Fine, then! Who's afraid of you if you want to drink like that...?]

Chu Yang became enthusiastic. He then stood up and shouted loudly, "Fine! Let’s drink, let’s drink! I will show my drinking capacity to everyone. I challenge the entire Xie Clan! I would stop calling myself a drinker if I can’t get you drunk-enough to reach a state where you collapse."

This sentence thoroughly instigated everyone.

And, the members of the Xie Clan stared at him since they had gotten furious.

"What did I just hear? This guy wants to challenge the entire clan to a drinking competition?"

"Get him drunk to death!"

"Outdrink him!"

"Get him drunk to death!"

"Everyone together!"

"Line up in a group! This feast wouldn’t be over until he passes out due to excessive drinking!"

"Let’s begin..."

...

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had tried to slip away the moment Chu Yang had made this statement. But, a few old men of Emperor Level who had tipsy expression across their faces caught these few youngsters, "Everyone is drinking! Why aren’t you drinking? Why don’t you try?!"

Ji Mo’s head heavily fell on the table with a ‘thump’ sound not long after. His head then further slid down like mud. After that, his body slipped down the table like a snake. The way he lay down on the ground was... glorious.

After a while...

Luo Ke Di foolishly hummed a few folk songs. He then howled

thrice in a row, "Ahwooh! Ahwooh! Ahwooh!" After that, he slammed to the ground with a ‘thud’ sound, and lost consciousness.

After a while, Dong Wu Shang burst into loud laughter. Then, he emptied three jars in one go.

However, Gu Du Xing didn’t utter a word. He merely got under the table, and started to snore...

The cute little girl Mo Qing Wu started to jump around as she clattered. And, she continuously cried out in surprise, "Wow! Brother Ji Mo has collapsed..."

"Wow! Brother Coyote has also collapsed..."

"Wow! Brother Wu Shang is also drunk..."

"Wow! Brother Du Xing is snoring..."

"Wow... Elder Brother Chu Yang is still drinking..."

...

Only Chu Yang was left alone. So, the clan members of the Xie Clan felt excited because they had begun to hope that they would win the competition soon. The Xie Clan had sacrificed many Masters to the wine to get Gu Du Xing and the others drunk. But, they still had the numerical advantage...

However, there was one thing that no one could understand, [This King of Hell Chu looks like the king of drunkards! How come he hasn’t collapsed after having drunk so much?]

[King of Hell Chu seemed drunk and on the verge of collapsing soon after this feast started... And, he has drunk so much more by now. But, he’s still in the same condition...]

[He’s still drinking, and still looks like he’s on the verge of collapsing... How much has he drunk?]

"Bring more wine!" Minister Chu shouted.

"Bring more wine!" Minister Chu shouted again.

"Damn it! Pour more wine in my cup!" People of the Xie Clan shouted.

"Come on... one by one... Don't cause a ruckus," Chu Yang kept them in order, "Come on, come on... Xie Dan Qiong, let's start from you. I will outdrink you first! Next turn is of your men. Everyone, just go over there and lie down after you've gotten completely drunk..."

Wine puffed out of Xie Dan Qiong's nose and mouth with 'Bang''bang''bang' of three jars. He murmured, "I will get you drunk to death..." then, he collapsed with a 'thud' sound.

Then, another man came. Chu Yang drank three jars, and outdrank that man too!

People continued to come, and continued to fall! However, Minister Chu refused nobody, and continued to empty the wine cups! The people of the Xie Clan had a cold thought in their hearts, [Such drinking capacity he has... is he even human?]

[Crap! He has drunk fifteen to twenty liters of wine by now...]

However, Minister Chu's drinking capacity wasn't good in reality. And, this wasn't hidden from the people of the Bu Tian Pavilion in the Iron Cloud Nation. He had only had drunk one or two liters back then, and had passed out as a result...

But, the thing in this case was...

The Sword Spirit had made a huge wine-barrel in the Nine Tribulation Space. And, he was helplessly looking-on as cup-after-cup and jar-after-jar of wine were being poured into the barrel. It was like the Milky Way itself was being poured into that huge wine-barrel from the ninth heaven... The barrel was about to be filled soon...

Therefore, he made another extra-large barrel...

The Sword Spirit laughed bitterly, [How would he get drunk when he’s drinking like this? Make him drink the wine of the whole world, and he still won’t get drunk!]

[This is cheating…]

[The Xie Clan’s people are the genuine drinkers…]

At midnight!

Minister Chu bellowed, "Is anyone still left? Is anyone still left?"

Everyone was lying here-and-there…

The only man who hadn’t gotten drunk was the Ancestor of the Xie Clan — Xie Zhi Qiu. Xie Zhi Qiu bitterly smiled, and sneaked away in silence… [I am very old. I can’t follow this gang of these crazy youngsters! My effort will go in vain even if I try to participate against this young lad…]

The servants of the Xie Clan kept quiet out of fear. However, they were looking at this King of Hell Chu with reverence in their eyes. [Crap! It is unbelievable… These dozens of men are heavy drinkers. All of them have insane drinking capacity… In fact, they are so good that they are almost immune to alcohol. Yet, all of them have been out-drunk by just one boy. And, he’s still clamoring…]

[I have never heard about such a freak-show! This is no ordinary wine. The immortal intoxication drug is mixed in it. This wine can intoxicate a spirit as well!]

It seemed extremely unusual and unjustified to watch someone as young as Chu Yang with such drinking capacity!

Chu Yang finally knelt down after he had shouted for a few times… he then swayed for a while, and fell down with a ‘thud’ sound… However, he was still murmuring, "Bring more wine…"

Minister Chu was drunk. In fact, he had been drunk ever since he had drunk one-and-half liters of wine. But, he hadn’t collapsed thus far because of his willpower. However, his mind suddenly

became relaxed since he had won. And, the immortal intoxication drug finally took over him. He was unable to remain in a standing position as a result...

The Sword Spirit looked at the four big barrels in the Nine Tribulation Space. Each of them was filled with such exquisite wine. He couldn't help but laugh bitterly. [The capacity of every barrel is fifty liters. This boy drank so much, and his belly hasn't even bulged like a drum... Can't the people of the Xie Clan see it?]

Everything had been extremely chaotic this entire time. So, nobody had gotten the time to look at Chu Yang's belly... Everyone was busy drinking... that's all...

The Sword Spirit sighed. He made a cup, and drank a cup of wine out of curiosity...

He started to feel dizzy as a result. Then, he swayed for a little while, and cussed, "Crap... I already feel drunk... Damn it..." the Sword Spirit also collapsed...

The immortal intoxication drug had directly hit his mind. The Sword Spirit was a residual wisp of his original soul. So, he bore the maximum brunt of the wine. Therefore, the glorious Sword Spirit was taken down by just... one cup!

The entire place had now been filled with snoring sounds.

The next day...

Chu Yang opened his drowsy eyes. He shook his head twice. He felt a little dizzy. [What is this fragrance?]

A small head stretched out from his side, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, you woke up, ah..."

It was Mo Qing Wu. She was dressed in a thin night-dress. She came out of the blanket like a kitten. And, she looked at him with a concerned look on her face.

"Qing Wu? Why are you here?" Chu Yang shook his head. He was

a bit perplexed, "How did you get in my bed?"

"You were drunk yesterday night. And, I was worried that you would feel unwell. So, I slept with you." The cute little girl became visibly shy, "Elder Brother Chu, are you alright? You grabbed my buttocks, and it's swollen now. Also... this is my bed... not yours..."

"Huh?!" Chu Yang was gob-smacked. He suddenly sat up. Then, he saw that his upper body was naked. He became shocked. He hastily turned his head, and asked Mo Qing Wu, "I didn't do anything, right?"

He had started to pray in his heart, [I hope I didn't commit a sin... Qing Wu is still so young...]

"Do what?" Mo Qing Wu opened her eyes wide, and looked at him since she was at a loss, "What are you talking about?"

"Eh..." Chu Yang blinked. He was baffled. [How do I explain this?]

"What did you not do?" Mo Qing Wu's big eyes glittered since she was curious.

"I... I didn't drink enough..." Chu Yang embarrassedly opened his eyes wide. A brilliant idea suddenly occurred to him. So, he said, "So, I am thirsty, ah..."

"You didn't drink enough? Humph! You were stinking so much last night that it was unbearable." Mo Qing Wu wrinkled her small nose, "Wait, I will go and get you some water," She bare-footedly ran to bring the water bag.

Chu Yang looked at the bed, and let out a sigh of relief. [It seems that I didn't do anything last night. Finally, I feel relieved.]

He drank the water with 'gulp''glug' sounds. Chu Yang was about to stand up and wear clothes, "Eh, Xiao Wu, you first go out. Elder Brother Chu Yang wants to wear clothes."

"Then, wear them," the cute little girl put her palms on her cheeks.

"You're here... So, it's embarrassing." Chu Yang was embarrassed.

"What is embarrassing?" Mo Qing Wu felt that this concern was unnecessary. She wrinkled her nose, "They are yours. So, wear them already."

Chu Yang felt helpless. He suddenly remembered an important thing, "Who took off my clothes last night?"

"Obviously, I did." the cute little girl replied with a sense of achievement. She then proudly added, "Who else would do it if not me?"

Minister Chu's face turned red when he heard this. [I don't even remember when I was stripped naked and left with only these pair of shorts...]

Mo Qing Wu looked at Chu Yang and giggled, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, are you feeling shy?"

Chu Yang suddenly felt ashamed when he looked at the purity in Mo Qing Wu's eyes. [Yes, ah. Little girl, you don't understand anything. You are wholly devoted to me, and care for me. Why would I be shy? It's just that I just had an extremely filthy thought...]

He lifted the quilt. He then calmly got out of the bed, and spoke with a smile, "Where are my clothes..."

Mo Qing Wu covered her nose with her hand and fled out, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... I have to say that I almost died because of the smell of your feet last night... And, you've lifted this quilt now, this... this... How can your feet be so smelly..."

Minister Chu who was only in his shorts stood dumbstruck like a wooden chicken...

A while passed before he could even let out a weird cry in his mind – [Damn it! I was so drunk last night that I forgot to wash my feet...]

Chu Yang tidied up, and came out of the tent. Mo Qing Wu swiftly stepped into the tent. She then grabbed the quilt, and brought it out to put it in the sunlight.

A rope was pinned between two trees. Mo Qing Wu spared no effort, and proficiently put the quilt on the rope. She looked left and right to see if anyone was around. Then, she secretly moved her small nose close to the quilt, and sniffed it. Consequently, she frowned and covered her nose. [Oh my! So stinky!]

...

Chapter 509: Break through at the Same Time!

Chu Yang couldn’t help but became absent-minded as he watched the little and delicate silhouette bustling-about. He seemed to have returned to his previous life. They would get out of the bed together every morning in his previous life. And, the first thing Mo Qing Wu would do was dry the quilt in the sun...

Mo Qing Wu would feel headache on cloudy and rainy days when there would be no sunlight...

However, she would sniff the quilt every time she would dry it in the sun. Then, she would gently smile and complain, "Oh my, it’s so stinky!"

At present, Chu Yang was watching Mo Qing Wu dry the quilt under the sun, and doing things like she used to do in her previous life. And, this suddenly left him to feel warm in his heart. [Qing Wu, you are the best.]

[Having you in my life is really good.]

Splendid sunshine radiated on his face as he smiled brightly. His eyes filled with happiness...

Gu Du Xing and others were getting into the tent while groaning at this time. But, they could feel this warmth as well. So, they couldn’t help but stand quietly on one side for the fear that they would disturb Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu...

They feared that they would disturb this peace.

A mysterious light suddenly flashed in Ji Mo’s mind as he watched this. And, he turned pale in alarm. He suddenly let out a strange cry. He opened his eyes wide in disbelief, and hastily held out his hand and covered his mouth.

Luo Ke Di asked, "What happened?"

"No... nothing." Second Master Ji felt dizzy and light-headed. Then, he shook his head twice. After that, he lifted his hand, and slapped himself twice with ‘smack’‘smack’. He then cussed, "You’re so sick, Ji Mo! Your brain is filled with dirty thoughts!"

"What’s up?" Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang also curiously gathered around. And, these four heads crowded-in as a result.

"I just had a random thought," Ji Mo felt somewhat awkward.

The other three of them became more curious, "What kind of a random thought?"

"I am thinking..." Ji Mo whispered, "Big Brother doesn’t seem to be interested in other woman. Has he taken a fancy to Little Wu... Well, this doesn’t seem to be reasonable... Big Brother can’t be such a beast... right? What do you guys say?"

Ji Mo became ready to get a beating after he finished. He was already prepared that the others would ridicule and scold him. In fact, he believed that they would gang up on him...

However, he didn’t expect that Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang would thoughtfully stroke their chins. A good while passed, and both of them looked at each other. They then whispered in unison by coincidence, "Perhaps, a little bit of a beast... I guess?"

Then, they looked at Chu Yang standing over there and smiling foolishly. After that, they looked at the petite body of Mo Qing Wu’s. Then, they again opened their mouths and said, "Truly a beast, ah..."

Ji Mo was also startled. He spoke-up with a stammer, "Do you also think so...?"

Both of them nodded in reply, "It’s possible, ah."

Luo Ke Di was also startled. And, he also spoke-up with a stammer after a while, "Would we... would we have to call this little girl sister-in-law in future?"

"First... let’s wait and watch for now," Gu Du Xing replied in profound tone.

"We will have to do a research first," Dong Wu Shang pondered.

"I also think so..." Ji Mo opened his eyes wide.

Luo Ke Di screamed in excitement.

"Let’s just leave this issue aside for the time being!" Gu Du Xing solemnly said, "No one is allowed to speak about it! Got it?"

"Correct!" Luo Ke Di excitedly said, "Let’s observe for a while! Let us observe from the sidelines and figure out why Big Brother is fooling around with this little girl. And, we also need to find out why he has kidnapped her. And, why..."

Xie Dan Qiong came over to Chu Yang with pale complexion at this time. His mouth was still stinking of the smell of wine. He said, "Brother Chu... Brother Chu, you’re inhuman... I still have a headache..."

"Eh... Big Brother, what happened last night..." Ji Mo and the others opened their eyes wide in disbelief.

Xie Dan Qiong felt like crying as he explained, "... he out-drank all of us in the drinking competition yesterday."

The four brothers became surprised, and looked at Chu Yang. Suddenly, Luo Ke Di sighed and said, "This is so strange, ah..."

The entire Xie Clan was knocked out in the competition last night! All the fogies of the Xie Clan had withdrawn to their rooms, and hadn’t come out this morning. They were ashamed... After all, the entire clan had been out-drunk by just one guy. He had made all of them fall on their stomachs. How could they bear this shame?

However, there was nothing to be done. Xie Dan Qiong was the Young Clan Lord of the Xie Clan. So, everyone had thought the same thing, [You had the biggest benefit from this association

among all of us! Who would go and bear the shame for all of us if you don't?]

Therefore, Xie Dan Qiong had shamelessly come over...

"Brother Xie... you got up so early?" The sunlight was shining on the face of Chu Yang. He seemed very fresh. He was standing in front of Xie Dan Qiong in a calm and composed manner, "This is beyond my expectations..."

Xie Dan Qiong's face became red. He could smell his own mouth since he was continuously puffing out the smell of liquor. He took a look at the neat and tidy body of Chu Yang's. This was obviously very shameful and awkward for him.

The difference between the two of them was poles apart...

...

They again started on their journey in the afternoon. Xie Dan Qiong had to make preparations for the new practice method on the other hand. The key was to first get familiar with the soul seizing flower blade. Therefore, he didn't go with them even though he was reluctant to part with them.

The elderly of the Xie Clan also embarrassingly came over to see-off Chu Yang and the others. Everyone felt embarrassed as they looked at Chu Yang...

Everyone had decided in their hearts, [I will never have a duel of drinking wine with this guy in the future! I will run away the moment I see him if the matter comes to drinking...]

They were very broken-hearted!

The masters of the Xie Clan then looked-on as Chu Yang and the others hastened-on with their journey with 500 kilograms of the Star Iron on their backs. And, their faces filled with heavy and pensive look at this sight.

They had obtained the core of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal.

So, it could be said that Xie Clan was going to step into the phase of rapid development. But... there would inevitably be some limitations. This core was obviously the most valuable treasure! But, one can't become an Expert if he doesn't have willpower and perseverance!

Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, and the others had taught the people of Xie Clan an important lesson by their practical actions.

[Would we have done such rigorous physical training so frequently while going on a journey if we had been in their place in our youthful days? We would've just hurried along, that's all...]

"Dan Qiong, you would have to work hard." Xie Zhi Qiu softly sighed as he watched the shadows of Chu Yang's team fade into the distance. Then, he heavily said, "This is called practicing Martial Arts! It can be said that the way you've been practicing Martial Arts is nothing in their comparison!"

Xie Dan Qiong's face filled with a look of shame as he replied, "True."

He firmly decided in his heart, [I won't lag behind you guys!]

An Expert of the Xie Clan suddenly shouted in shock, "Eh? Why have they started on their journey empty-handed? What about the stuff they took away yesterday?"

Everyone was suddenly woken by this. They then looked at the place where the Gu Clan had pitched their camps. But, they saw that it was empty. In fact, there was nothing there...

Everyone sucked in cold air...

[What did they do with all that stuff?]

...

Chu Yang and the others covered a distance of 250 kilometers in one stretch. The sky had started to fill with the star light by now. So, they stopped and set up a camp.

Chu Yang started to circulate his martial power on the same night. Those forging materials had been piled-up inside the Nine Tribulation Space. The Sword Point was well-pleased as it began to consume them in frenzy...

Chu Yang examined the drug ingredients that were delivered by the Xie Clan. He now had a very big pile of them. They weren't particularly precious. But, these treasures had good abilities. Moreover, they were high in quantity...

The Sword Spirit sat down in contemplation as he watched the Sword Point absorb these items. However, the Sword Spirit didn't dare to let his guard down. The Sword Spirit believed that the Sword Point was like a small thief that couldn't be guarded against that easily.

The Sword Point would absorb everything if they weren't protected properly...

Chu Yang felt that his bottleneck had become loose by night fall. So, he wanted to seize the moment in order to make the breakthrough.

However, he wasn't the only one. Gu Du Xing and the others also had the same feeling...

The main thing was that they had hastened-on with their journey while carrying heavy weights, and had been using their entire strength for eight days at a stretch. They had then taken one day's break to relax in the Xie Clan when they had become habitual of this training. And, this one day's break had been extremely crucial!

The result of the training that they had been doing had manifested itself after thorough relaxation! And, the entirety of that pent-up spirit energy had suddenly burst out and channeled into their meridians like the rivers that converge into the oceans...

The ten King Level Experts of the Gu Clan saw the spirit energies that were hovering over the heads of Chu Yang and the others.

And, the spirit energies were becoming increasingly violent. In fact, they had soon taken the shape of a whirlpool over their heads...

It was quiet, and very late in the night. The spirit energies were gathering towards this side like the rivers that converge into oceans, and were issuing whistling sounds.

The spirit energies in this area had gradually become so thick that a person with low cultivation wouldn't be able to breathe in this vicinity...

The spirit energies continued to gather, and continued to form increasingly thicker clouds... they just kept on gathering...

"One, two, three, four, five... hiss!" A King Level Expert of the Gu Clan sucked-in cold air. His mouth and eyes got crooked in disbelief, "Five people are soon going to break through at the same time! Moreover, all of them are King Level Experts! This... this... this is like an illusion!"

He didn't need to say this. The other King Level Experts had already discovered the situation by now. One of the high-level King Level Experts called out in a soft voice, "Be silent! Everyone must scatter out to make a guarding formation to protect them! We can't allow the slightest amount of disturbance to their practice at this time!"

The ten people immediately scattered in all the directions. They then started to watch all sides in the dim light of the night with vigilance in their eyes. But, the excitement that they felt in their hearts became increasingly powerful and overwhelming. In fact, it seemed as if seas and rivers were overturning in their hearts...

[Five youngsters! They are about to break through at the same time! Such brothers... at such age... have such strength...]

Finally...

The spirit energies suddenly issued a sound of explosion at the

center of this group of whirlwinds. Then, they suddenly dispersed out in a ferocious manner. After that, they again gathered together. Then, they came downwards in a spiral, and issued whistling sounds. These spirit energies had become so dense at this moment that they had become visible, and had started to exude a mild-green color!

"Hwoo~~~" Gu Du Xing exhaled a long breath, and slowly stood up. He opened his eyes, and shot two fierce sword-like-sharp rays of light from his eyes! He happened to look at a King Level Expert of the Gu Clan who was right opposite to him. The King Level Expert felt a chill all over his body as a result. It seemed that the two swords had suddenly arrived in front of his throat. And, he felt that he would get sliced if he were to come in contact with them. So, he didn't dare to move!

Third Grade Sword King!

Gu Du Xing couldn't help but feel excited in his heart, [I finally broke through!]

He then looked at the other four people with deep concern.

The second breakthrough was that of Dong Wu Shang's!

The spirit energy over Dong Wu Shang's head infused into his meridians when he broke through. And, the saber energy dispersed out of his body, and spread all across...

The saber energy pierced through the air, and issued cracking sounds... as if they had substance to themselves!

Third Grade Saber King!

Dong Wu Shang stood up. He and Gu Du Xing went to the left and the right side respectively, and made a protective formation for their brothers...

It was like a dream scenario for the King Level Experts of the Gu Clan!

They had just witnessed a Sword King and a Saber King breaking through at the same time! It was very unusual to see such things in the world!

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo also stood up soon-after. They had also made a breakthrough!

However, the biggest whirlpool was left in the air. And, it was still spiraling endlessly. The spirit energies were constantly rushing over from all directions, and were moving towards Chu Yang like moth flies to the flame.

The plants within the radius of several thousand feet had dried up at such a speed that the process of their withering could've been seen with naked eyes...

The quantity of spirit energy that Chu Yang needed to break through was simply frightful!

Gu Du Xing and the others looked at each other in dismay. And, they saw a look of terror flashing in the each other's eyes!

...

Chapter 510: Breakthrough to Fourth Grade Sword King!

Slowly, a terrifying whirlpool of Spirit Energy was formed in the sky. The gigantic whirlpool could be seen clearly as it slowly stirred-up.

Gu Du Xing and the others could clearly see the shape and the color of this whirlpool!

They looked at each other in dismay. They slowly drew back, and stopped two hundred feet away. They stood there and waited to see from afar.

Spirit Energies from all directions were madly rushing over, and were getting mixed with this whirlpool. In fact, the spirit energy had started to appear like green smoke as they floated in the sky. However, an increasing amount of the spirit energy was coming over into the whirlpool like moth flies into the flame!

The rotation of the whirlpool was slowly speeding up!

It had started to move slowly, and had eventually gained more and more speed...

The whirlpool gradually took the shape of a gigantic funnel with a sharp-pointed bottom. And, the pointed-tip on the bottom was approaching the center point of Chu Yang's head...

"The spirit energy is gathering like smoke from all directions. It's getting hard to breathe in a range of fifty kilometers. I'm afraid to say that this is like a Monarch Level breakthrough," A King Level Expert of the Gu Clan looked at Chu Yang with a shocked expression as he remained seated at the center of all this. He then cried out in a low voice in disbelief, "This kind of phenomenon can only be seen in a Monarch Level breakthrough! But, a whirlpool of Monarch Level breakthrough has appeared in a King Level breakthrough. This... this... Am I dreaming all this..."

The ten King Level Experts turned pale. The impact of the breakthrough of Gu Du Xing and the others was more powerful than that of an ordinary King Level's breakthrough. The Sword and Saber King breakthroughs of Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang respectively had a scary impact. But, this one was simply bizarre!

[These people are sworn brothers!]

[How terrible would it be once the incredible aptitudes of these brothers would mature fully?]

Gu Du Xing and the others looked at each other with amazement! [The impact of Monarch Level Breakthrough...?]

Everyone looked-on as the speed the whirlpool's rotation became so intense that it started to issue ear-piercing whistling sounds. In fact, the color of the entire whirlpool had changed to dark green by now!

It suddenly stopped for a moment. Then, it started to rotate in the reverse direction. Then, it suddenly started to move downwards! Consequently, the pointed end of the funnel that was rotating with matchless speed disappeared into the center of Chu Yang's head!

Chu Yang's body exuded a fierce sound of explosion. And, every piece of Chu Yang's robe was fluttered away into tatters as a result...

Mo Qing Wu was standing far away. However, she felt that an airstream had hit her. Her mouth and nose were obstructed. She held out her hand in panic, and felt that she had grabbed something. Then, she opened her eyes, and looked towards her hand. She then realized that the thing she had grabbed was a torn-out piece of Chu Yang's black robe. A long strand of black hair was fluttering unhurriedly in this torn-out piece of the black robe.

As anyone would think...

How could there be a long hair of a woman in Chu Yang's

clothes? Moreover, it looked like it had been carefully stitched in the black robe. This clearly meant that he didn't wish to hide it from people... What was going on?

The aura of the breakthrough gradually spread out in the air.

Swift and fierce sword energies scattered in all directions. Then, the radiance of the green color disappeared without a trace!

Third Grade Sword King!

It was again a Sword King breakthrough!

The Ten King Level Experts of the Gu Clan looked-on with amazement, [Such kind of a Sword King breakthrough makes for a rare event even in the span of a decade. However, three of them occurred in one fell swoop today!]

"He made a breakthrough!" Ji Mo shouted in excitement. He was about to rush towards Chu Yang and celebrate. But, he was stopped by Dong Wu Shang, "Do not move!"

Everyone found an anomaly. Chu Yang had made a breakthrough, but he was still sitting in the same place. He wasn't moving...

Moreover, his entire body was covered in a dense aura. And, the aura still hadn't dispersed away. Instead, an enormous aura was still revolving around him!

It seemed that the spirit energy had again started to rotate slowly in the air...

[Is it the formation of a new whirlpool again?]

Everyone blankly looked-on. [What is this? I've never ever seen this kind of a bizarre phenomenon!]

The whirlpool started to get bigger and bigger. And, its range started to become wider and wider. In fact, the spirit energy of higher altitudes was coming over from farther places this time. Wave upon wave of spirit energy started to rush over towards the

whirlpool as time passed. And, it again gathered in this newly-formed whirlpool like moth flies into the flame.

The plants in the vicinity started to wither with crunching sounds. In fact, all of them had lost their vitality in a split second!

The whirlpool was slowly getting enlarged. The mild green smoke of the spirit energy again appeared to be becoming denser and denser...

However, its range was two-times wider than the previous one!

"Is he going to break through again? Is he going to do this two times in a row?" the oldest King Level Exert of the Gu Clan cried out in alarm. But, it seemed as if he was cussing. And, his fingers trembled as he clutched a wisp of his beard.

Everyone had been struck dumb! [This is too... unimaginable, isn't it?]

[Breakthrough... Making a smooth breakthrough even once is tantamount to heaven's blessing. And, this dude is doing this a second time in a row? Aren't you tired? You may not be tired... but, would your meridians be able to bear it?]

Then, this expert felt that the spiritual power in his body was seemingly reacting. It seemed as if it was about to part from his body and fly away. It seemed that it was being pulled into that whirlpool of spirit energy...

"Move back. Quickly!"

Gu Du Xing shouted. Everyone hurriedly drew back.

Dong Wu Shang grabbed Mo Qing Wu, and drew backwards by five-hundred feet!

The spirit energy was rotating along with the whirlpool in the sky. It became bigger and bigger with the passage of time, and eventually took the shape of a funnel!

Then, it came swishing down...

The spirit energy issued a sound of explosion once again. But, this one was much more intense than the previous one. In fact, the King Level Experts were nearly knocked down to the ground by the shock!

Countless sword energies were revolving around Chu Yang. It seemed as if they were celebrating the birth of a Sword King. They were fluttering up-and-down as if they were cutting the air itself into fragments.

Chu Yang softly let out a sigh of relief. He then moved his neck. It issued snapping sounds. After that... he slowly stood up.

His breakthrough was finally over with...

Several King Level Experts became dumbfounded as they looked at this genius. They eventually heaved a sigh of relief. [That was too shocking...]

An old King Level Expert of the Gu Clan somewhat wanted to cry but had no tears to shed. He extended one of his hands towards his old fellow on his side. Then, he extended his other hand. He bent down his three fingers. He had a confused look on his face as he shook his fingers.

"What?" the other man was puzzled.

"Seven years..." The King Level Expert of the Gu Clan was at a loss. He was dumbfounded. He shook the seven fingers that were set upright, "It took me seven years to level up from grade three to grade four... Seven years, ah! And, I'm still an ordinary King Level Expert... Take a look at this guy... Just take a look at him... he leveled up from grade three to four in just... seven breaths... I... I... I think that my life has been meaningless... Fu*k it!"

He looked up to the sky, and heaved a deep sigh. His cheeks were streaming with tears, "This disparity will make this old man feel diligent for a lifetime... How would I endure this?!"

The other nine King Level Experts became speechless.

Chu Yang's bare body had stood up. He spread out his hands, and pulled out a black robe out of nowhere. It then got draped on his body as if it was a black cloud. Then, he pulled and gripped his waistband. And, he regained his elegant appearance as a result...

He smiled as he strode towards Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, and the others. Then, he extended his one finger.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang forced a smile. Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo looked grief-stricken...

One-hundred pounds!

The meaning of this one finger was clear – [Now, I am one grade above you guys. Therefore, a hundred pound would be added on top of your one-thousand pound! Um, in other words... I will make you run while carrying 1100 pounds of weight on your back from tomorrow onwards.]

"Big Brother... that was shocking!" Ji Mo groaned, "I have never seen such breakthrough capability... you once broke through from Martial Warrior to Martial Master. You had jumped across several levels at once at that time. Then, you had broken through from Martial Great Master to Revered Martial Artist, and you had again jumped several levels at once... And, now you're a King Level Expert... how do you do this? Are you even human?"

Chu Yang spread out his hands, and replied helplessly, "I have my ways... don't tell me that you are worried about getting crushed by such a meager weight?"

Dong Wu Shang's face twitched. He snorted and spoke-up, "Isn't it just an additional 100 pounds? Ji Mo, are you a blabbering bird? I lift six-hundred pounds more weight than you guys, and I still don't whine."

"How come...?" Luo Ke Di hopped up. He felt wronged and said, "Your saber is only 570 pounds in weight, alright..."

"A group of evildoers!" That dumbfounded King Level Expert of

the Gu Clan looked at these five freaks. He then turned his head, and spoke-up in a sad tone, "This old man will also start practicing. This old man will also carry one-thousand pounds of weight on his back from tomorrow onwards...!"

The ten King Level Experts sighed and walked away. However, their backs looked crooked and their footsteps were unsteady...

"We have nothing much to do right now. So, there's no harm in practicing and training, right?" Chu Yang said, "Du Xing, you train Ji Mo. Wu Shang and Coyote, you guys come and attack me together."

Ji Mo's cheek instantly streamed with tears, "Why do I have to be trained?"

Gu Du Xing exposed an evil grin. He suddenly pulled out his sword, and rushed to attack...

However, Lou Ke Di was in full zest. So, he rolled-up his sleeves for battle, "Big Brother... Ahwooh... let your little brother teach you a lesson."

He made a signal with his eyes. Then, he and Dong Wu Shang approached Chu Yang from the left and right sides. The saber-light sprang up in an instant. And, the sword energy spread everywhere...

Chu Yang laughed heartily, "Come on, then!" he pulled his sword out as his back robe fluttered in the air. Then, this group of three started to fight.

Luo Ke Di immediately came to regret this action. And, this was because Chu Yang didn't show the least bit of mercy. Just one sword was pressing down two men! Dong Wu Shang could tolerate it to some extent because his saber was very heavy. In fact, Chu Yang was only dodging it. However, Luo Ke Di was met with heavy reverses since he was getting attacked by random and chaotic sword slashes. In fact, he was also being kicked once in a while.

And, he would be sent flying in the sky like a rubber ball each time this happened...

These five people had just made their breakthrough. So, everyone had gained new insights. They weren't evenly matched. But, this fight was still a treat to eyes!

The two groups they were previously divided in merged together into one later. So, their fight got full-on chaotic. All of them would fight one vs one at one given time. They would then fight as two-against-three the next moment. And, sometimes they would even fight as one-against-four!

The fighting skills that everyone displayed in this fight were very proficient. And, these brothers were unceasingly gaining battle experience. So, they were constantly gaining new ideas and insights as a result...

Chu Yang, Dong Wu Shang, and Gu Du Xing joined forces against the weaker team of Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di later on, and attacked them with their full strengths. Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di obviously screamed as they got beaten up. They had obviously been pushed into an extremely distressed situation!

These three had the common idea – [Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di are the weakest of us five brothers. Therefore, we must pressurize them. It will make them catch up as quickly as possible.]

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had obviously realized this idea. So, they gritted their teeth and persistently supported each other. They'd scream and cuss since they were being oppressed. But, they also got inspired and attacked with their full strength as a result...

This fight went on until the sun rose from the east.

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di surpassed their limitations during this fierce struggle... This made Chu Yang and the others stunned. [It seems that these two guys have become quite fierce...]

...

Chapter 511: She Would Be the Masked Sovereign!

One must know that Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had broken through their limitations to withstand the attacks during this fierce fight. Therefore, their strength had continued to grow over the course of this fight! It wasn't something that an average person could achieve. However, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had reached to this point. And, this was going to play an important role in their future progress!

Everyone continued to hasten-on with their journey early in the morning. Chu Yang discovered something impressive – The members in their training team had increased to sixteen. Everyone besides Mo Qing Wu was carrying weights on their backs.

Gu Du Xing and the others were carrying Star Iron on their backs. And, the King Level Experts of the Gu Clan were carrying pieces of ordinary bluestones on their backs!

A few of these ten old men were more than forty years in age. However, each of them was carrying mountain-like boulders on their backs...

This discovery left Chu Yang with a desire to burst into laughter!

It wasn't even past morning time, and those King Level Experts couldn't bear the weight anymore. Their waists were aching, and their backs were also paining. They had gotten cramps in their legs. So, they had no other choice but to put down the boulder. They had finally understood, [the road to make a breakthrough isn't easy to walk on...]

"It's not that you can't do this. But, you have already crossed the appropriate age." Chu Yang explained while they were having their lunch, "Most of you have crossed the time of tempering of bones and internal organs since this must've been done when you were

Martial Great Masters and Revered Martial Artists! Therefore, you wouldn't be able to keep up with us youngsters. This training process starts when one is a Martial Great Master. The bones are tempered when one becomes a Martial Great Master. It's very difficult to bear. And, the internal organs are tempered when one becomes a Revered Martial Artist. It's also very difficult to bear!"

Chu Yang insipidly said, "All of us are at King Level at present. But, our foundation was set at the time when we were Martial Great Masters and Revered Martial Artists. So, we are dozens of times stronger than you! Thus, we can do it, and you can't. This is the truth."

The King Level Experts became depressed, and felt as if they had failed.

Mo Qing Wu secretly pulled Chu Yang to one side after the lunch, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I discovered a secret of yours!"

"Secret...?" Chu Yang scratched his head. He was very surprised, "What kind of secret?"

"Humph! There was a strand of hair in your clothes! It was a long hair!" Mo Qing Wu pouted. Then, she rolled her eyes and looked at Chu Yang, "Look, here it is."

She took out the torn-out piece of Chu Yang's clothes. A strand of fine black hair was fluttering on it. However, it seemed to be a wisp of tender sentiments that was helplessly twining therein.

"Long hair..." Chu Yang's heart started to beat somewhat fast as he took this strand. He then lightly stroked this long hair with his fingers as it gently curled up on his palm. It seemed as if a woman had put the entirety of her heart's feelings on his palm...

Suddenly, the slender and graceful silhouette of a woman appeared in his mind. She was standing alone, and her long hair was fluttering in the air. She was beautiful. She had a pained and bewildered expression in her eyes. Her lips gave her a stubborn

and proud look...

This sweet, fair, and graceful woman was dressed in a black robe. She turned over, and the fierce mask she wore became visible to the eye. She looked at Chu Yang with gentle and tender expression in her eyes, "From today onwards... I am King of Hell Chu...

"Isn't this what you want? Haven't you already planned for this...?"

These two questions resounded in Chu Yang's heart. And, he couldn't bear the pain in his heart.

[This woman with devastatingly beautiful appearance,]

[Had changed her clothes to black robe;]

[With the Icy heart and Jade Bone,]

[She wore the mask to be the sovereign!]

[Wu Qian Qian!]

These verses had seemingly cropped-up in Chu Yang's mind. He further thought, [there is only person in Lower Three Heavens to whom I feel indebted to. And, it is none other than Wu Qian Qian.]

[This woman had to sacrifice her own appearance for her infatuation. And, it has all gone in vain now. It has gone forever... this young and beautiful woman has become a pitiful person now...]

Chu Yang lowered his head, and took a deep breath. [No wonder I had noticed that Wu Qian Qian's hair seemed shorter after I had returned from the Great Zhao. It was also a little thin. But, I didn't ask her at that time...]

[This woman's heart is full of affection in reality. So, she had sacrificed her own black hair for my black robes!]

He recalled that he had thirty or forty such black robes in the Nine Tribulation Space! [Wu Qian Qian must have spent a lot of physical and mental effort to stitch these clothes one by one... She

must’ve felt a pain in her heart every time she would finish sewing a black robe. She must’ve felt deeply shattered every time, right?]

Chu Yang sighed in disappointment and frustration.

Mo Qing Wu rolled her eyeballs and looked at him. She softly said, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I’m going over there to find Brother Ji Mo to play with him..." She acted tactfully and swiftly went to a side.

Chu Yang complied. In fact, he was somewhat absent-minded as he slowly nodded.

Then, he again took out a black robe, and slowly stroked it a little to look for the hair. And, he eventually found a hardly-noticeable strand in the hem of his robe. It was a place where mostly people’s attention won’t be drawn to...

And, Wu Qian Qian’s hair was unexpectedly stitched there.

Perhaps he would’ve never found out that a woman’s heart was stored in the hem of his black robe if Mo Qing Wu hadn’t discovered this by chance...

These strands of hair seemed to be secretly placed. And, there seemed to be one or a few complete strands of hair...

Chu Yang’s hand somewhat trembled. He was confused as to whether he wanted to know the reason behind it or not... Finally, he took a deep breath. Then, he looked for a smooth piece of bluestone. Then, he circulated his martial power, and hit his palm on the bluestone to flatten it.

He whipped the black robe with a ‘woop-eesh’ sound on the bluestone. The cloth-fabric scattered, and only the fine black hair was left behind on the stone. And, the long hair softly imprinted the pattern that was originally on the cloth onto the bluestone...

These patterns turned out to be a few beautiful words.

"Chu Yang, Qian Qian likes you."

These words had been weaved in the robe using the long black hair. And, they appeared in front of Chu Yang as he imprinted them onto the bluestone.

There would've been similar words on the other robes as well!

She had stitched the strand of her own black hair inside the black robes. How could he discover black hair in black robes? Besides, he wouldn't have paid attention to the hem of the robe. Moreover, it wouldn't have come in contact with his skin either.

Wu Qian Qian clearly didn't wish for Chu Yang to find it. But, she had silently sacrificed the entirety of her love, and had put it here. She had only wished that her hair would be able to accompany Chu Yang by his side whenever he'd wear these robes! She had only wanted this...

This woman's love was very humble and profound. But, she was proud of her love!

[I won't force you if you don't want to accept me! I have always said that I wouldn't complain about it. I have my pride. I have my self-respect. It's alright if you don't love me. But, you can't stop me from loving you.]

[I secretly love you... isn't it enough?]

Chu Yang felt heavy in his heart. He suddenly recalled the time when he had that showdown with the Golden Horse Riders Department. Wu Qian Qian had stubbornly wanted to put-on the mask... so that she could go into the battle in his place. But, he had stopped her at that time, and had said, [I already owe my whole life to another woman. So, I don't want to owe my life to you as well!]

How much pain would these words have inflicted to Wu Qian Qian...?!

She had complied with Tie Bu Tian's marriage proposal as a result of this! And, she had become the Empress of the Iron Cloud Nation... He recalled the morning when he was about to leave the

Lower Three Heavens... Wu Qian Qian had despair and grief in her eyes... and, these feelings of hers' had reached the point of hysteria...

Chu Yang's heart ached. He felt bitter in his heart. And, he silently said, [Qian Qian... I'm sorry.]

[She is married to Tie Bu Tian, right?]

[Tie Bu Tian is also a good man... I only wish for her happiness...]

If only Chu Yang could know that the so-called 'marriage' between Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian was fake...

If only he would've known...

Chu Yang sighed deeply. Hundreds and thousands of thoughts were revolving in his heart. Everything felt like a dream... like a fantasy. The past events were passing through his heart like a faintly discernible cloud of smoke...

He wanted to destroy the black robe at first. However, he thought it over for a while, and decided to keep it, [If I destroy this... how cruel would it be... for that pitiful woman and her infatuation towards me!]

[This is her only desire towards me, ah.]

Chu Yang stood up. The sunshine shone on his black robe. He suddenly felt a burning heat on the black robe on his body. It felt extremely painful, and seemed as if his skin was being baked. [This girl indeed has a burning heart...]

The black robe felt as heavy as a mountain. And, he had seemingly been pressed down by the weight of it. In fact, he couldn't even breathe properly...

His brothers were engaged in a conversation at a distant place. They deliberately didn't look at him. They were chatting and laughing among themselves. But, Chu Yang knew that they were intentionally not looking at him. They deliberately hadn't come

over to him because they didn’t wish to disturb his train of thought at this time...

[Ah!] Chu Yang took a deep sigh.

"Is Brother Chu here?" a laughing voice sounded from a distance, "I am Ou Du Xiao of the Ou Clan. I have come to pay a visit to Brother Chu," Ou Du Xiao of the Ou Clan – the Future Poison Spirit – had finally arrived.

Chu Yang put his mood in order. He then stood up, and went over to welcome him.

...

In Lower Three Heavens... inside the Iron Cloud Imperial Palace...

Tie Bu Tian was lazily sitting in her bed. She had removed her jade pendent, and was in her true appearance. Lan Mei Xian was sitting next to her. She was looking at her disciple with satisfaction. The more she looked at her... the more she would beam with joy.

Lan Mei Xian had been showing the responsibility and diligence of a mother these days. In fact, it seemed as if she had been looking after her own pregnant daughter. She was watching over the Iron Cloud’s Emperor as if she was the center of universe. And, she was extremely attentive towards her!

Tie Bu Tian’s underbelly had already swollen up. It was a sign that the baby was growing healthily.

"It has already been four months," Lan Mei Xian would count days on her fingers every day, "There are still five-and-a-half months left... um... less than that. Your delivery must be in five months and a few days."

"Master, your calculation is so precise..." Tie Bu Tian felt somewhat embarrassed.

"There’s nothing to be shy about it. Women give birth to children. It’s a normal thing." Lan Mei Xian happily and excitedly looked at her, "Rest assured. You have your master on your side. So, you don’t need to be worried about anything."

Tie Bu Tian blushed as a smile creased upon her face. Tie Bu Tian had found her mother in Lan Mei Xian over the past few days. In fact, she’d sometimes feel as if her own mother was there with her. And, she felt that she didn’t need to worry about anything...

"Where is your Empress? I haven’t seen her in a while?" Lan Mei Xian somewhat ridiculously looked at her own disciple, "You girl... sigh, you have even made an Empress for yourself. I only hope you’re not victimizing her..."

"She’s busy these days..." Tie Bu Tian obviously didn’t dare to speak-up that her Empress was playing the role of King of Hell Chu in reality. She then added, "I will ask her to come over. I need to consult a few things with her now that my pregnancy has become so apparent."

She put on the jade pendent after she said this. There was a fluctuation of light, and she changed into the Monarch who would reign over the entire world. Then, she walked a few steps away, and insipidly said, "Messenger, go and ask the Empress to come over. Tell her that I wish to speak with her. We have some matters to consult with each other."

"Yes," the messenger complied and left.

A sharp voice reported from the outside after some time, "The Empress has arrived."

...

Chapter 512: Lan Mei Xian is Shocked!

A palace maid lifted up the curtain, and Wu Qian Qian elegantly walked in. She wore a phoenix crown on her head, while a phoenix robe was draped over her body. Moreover, the way she walked was a bit strange...

Everyone in the palace knew that the Empress was pregnant. So, Wu Qian Qian obviously didn’t dare to neglect anything. How could she reveal a flaw...

"Your Majesty..." Wu Qian Qian bowed. Her actions and bearing seemed to be impeccable.

"The Empress doesn’t need to be overly courteous." Tie Bu Tian hastily supported her with his hand. He then waved his hand, "Everyone, step back. I command everyone to stay at least a hundred steps away from here!"

The palace maids and the palace eunuchs drew back and disappeared without a trace as soon as he issued this order.

"Qian Qian, sit down," Tie Bu Tian stood up. He then said with a smile, "There are no outsiders here anymore. So, you don’t need to pretend to be a pregnant woman. Ha-ha."

Wu Qian Qian obviously recognized Lan Mei Xian. She had seen her terror before. However, Lan Mei Xian hadn’t seen her before since this graceful and pretty empress was dressed in a black robe when Lan Mei Xian had seen her earlier. After all, she was in the disguise of the sinister King of Hell Chu at that time...

She smiled after she heard this. Then, she sat down in her authentic style.

"Is this the Empress? She is indeed a very beautiful woman." Lan Mei Xian looked at Wu Qian Qian with a satisfied look. She then praised, "Her eyebrows are bent, but unyielding. Her eyes are full of innocence, and have no trace of evil in them. Her face is like a

beautiful flower. Her nose is sharp, and looks graceful... She seems to be stubborn and proud, yet educated and well-balanced at the same time. She looks soft from the outside, but strong from the inside. Very good! She looks absolutely stunning!"

"Senior is overpraising me." Wu Qian Qian bowed slightly.

"There are wars going around the land right now. However, there's no scope of any decisive war breaking out in the Lower Three Heavens! The unification of the world under Iron Cloud is inevitable." Tie Bu Tian said, "Therefore, there would be a great celebration throughout the world after the prince is born! Qian Qian, you must be ready!"

Wu Qian Qian smiled and replied, "This is my duty! Your Majesty, please don't worry about that."

Tie Bu Tian laughed out loud. She then began to deliver some life lessons to Wu Qian Qian. Wu Qian Qian learned everything by heart. Lan Mei Xian also added her two cents in between whenever she felt it fit. After that, Lan Mei Xian suddenly became startled. She no longer spoke anything. She only focused her attention on Wu Qian Qian. The more she looked at her... the more she knitted her brows. A look of shock had soon appeared in her eyes as she continued to observe Wu Qian Qian...

Lan Mei Xian suddenly stood up with a leap while Tie Bu Tian was still talking. She then looked at Wu Qian Qian and exclaimed, "Mysterious Yin Female Body?!"

Wu Qian Qian suddenly raised her head, "Huh?"

Lan Mei Xian had already walked to her side with quick steps. She held her wrist, and carefully examined. She exposed an expression of increasing excitement on her face, "Mysterious Yin Female Body! It is indeed the Mysterious Yin Female Body that's rarely seen in ten-thousand years!"

She inhaled cold air with a 'hiss' sound! Then, she turned her

head and looked at Tie Bu Tian. She remained silent as she forced a smile, "This Iron Cloud Imperial Palace has indeed left me speechless... I had come here to find the Icy Heart and Jade Bone. But then, I found that the Icy Heart and Jade Bone was only an empty hope. But, I've unexpectedly found the Mysterious Yin Female Body instead..."

"Moreover, the Mysterious Yin energy of your Mysterious Yin Female Body is very dense..." Lan Mei Xian's cultivation was at its peak at her current age. But, she became so shocked by this fact that she couldn't regain her calm for a long while. In fact, she felt that she was dreaming even after she had confirmed this fact!

[This Iron Cloud Imperial Palace should be a place where great scholars of Martial Arts should be most willing to arrive. Why? So that they can easily find disciples with the most satisfying aptitude for themselves, ah.]

Finding a great teacher is very difficult for a disciple. But, finding a disciple who is more able and superior to the teacher is even more difficult for any teacher!

The aptitudes that Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian possessed were so unique that it wouldn't even be found in the Upper Three Heavens! However, two of them had appeared here at once!

Wu Qian Qian became somewhat panic-stricken. And, that's because Chu Yang had told her, [It would be better that you don't allow anyone to know about your aptitude since doing so would be very dangerous. There would be far more jealous people in the world than the ones who would admire your capabilities.]

"What is your current cultivation level?" Lan Mei Xain stared at Wu Qian Qian. She then nodded, "Ninth grade Revered Martial Artist! You're only one step away from being a King Level Expert... eh! What Cultivation Method do you practice...?"

She was at a loss as she looked at this girl in front of her, "It's hard to believe that you are a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist at

such a young age in the Lower Three Heavens..."

"I, I..." Wu Qian Qian nervously looked at Tie Bu Tian. Tie Bu Tian nodded and spoke-up in a soothing manner, "This is my master. Don't be nervous. Tell her."

"It's... Ice Jade Divine Art," Wu Qian Qian feebly replied.

"Ice Jade Divine Art...?" Lan Mei Xian tightly puckered her brows. [What kind of Cultivation Method is this? Why haven't I ever heard of it before?]

How would she have known? After all, Chu Yang had changed the name of this Cultivation Method. In fact, Wu Qian Qian herself was unaware of it even though she was the one to practice it...

"Show me some of your moves. Let me have a look." Lan Mei Xian held out her hand. A gentle shock-force emitted out of her hand, and all the things that were placed on the floor got shoved to one side. A wide area of the floor became completely empty as a result. In fact, no sound was produced while she did so.

"Tian Tian, you go to one side, and watch carefully," Lan Mei Xian said.

Tie Bu Tian complied. She went and sat in a corner, "Master, please don't be too strict..."

"Relax. I only wish to test her limits. We won't have a fight of life and death. Moreover, would this little girl stand a chance if I wanted to handle her?" Lan Mei Xian confidently smiled, "I will suppress my Martial Power to that of a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist. And then, I will test her out. So, it would be rather a pity if she is following an improper Cultivation Method!"

"Come on! Girl!" Excitement flashed through Lan Mei Xian's eyes. She had only had this kind of excitement three times in about hundred years – First time when she had seen Yang Ruo Lan... the second time when she saw Tie Bu Tian; and, the third time... was this moment!

"Alright!" Wu Qian Qian took out the small pillow that she had put in her clothes to disguise as a pregnant woman. And, she reorganized her clothes. Then, she looked at Lan Mei Xian. She then shook her arms once, and suddenly released the cold Yin aura!

The color of her eyes turned pitch-black.

"Eh?!" Lan Mei Xian became surprised. She looked-on as Wu Qian Qian's body changed into afterimages. Lan Mei Xian then felt that Wu Qian Qian was rushing over with her fingers joined together. However, she soon realized that it was a sword move in reality!

She rushed over head-on as her fingertips issued piercing sound wherever they went. It seemed as if sword-energy was producing an air-piercing sound.

Lan Mei Xian became gob-smacked. She hadn't expected that this little girl's Cultivation Method would be so special. Her footwork was also very unusual. Moreover, her sword-play was unusually crafty! She tilted her head, and dodged the attack. Then, her hands attacked like two orchid flowers.

She was a highly experienced Martial Artist. So, she would've been thoroughly discredited if she were to get attacked by someone from the younger generation.

Wu Qian Qian didn't know the cultivation level of the woman in front of her. But, Lan Mei Xian wanted to fight. So, Wu Qian Qian had used her full strength to attack. And, her primary aim was to attack! [She isn't going to hurt me. So, I can just practice my skills...]

Wu Qian Qian unfolded an increasing range of her agility skills since she was being driven by this thought process. Her sword-play also became increasingly sharp. In fact, Lan Mei Xian momentarily fell into a disadvantageous situation by the moves of a mere ninth grade Revered Martial Artist...

She had lived for so many years, and her cultivation had reached to great heights. But, she was still in a difficult situation right now. She snorted. She let her hands loose, and they took the form of orchids at their full blooms.

Wu Qian Qian's feet staggered. She dodged Lan Mei Xian's attack using a strange move and went out of her attack range. In fact, she completely drew back away from the attack.

Lan Mei Xian shouted, "Good!" She then rushed forth and launched a fierce attack.

Wu Qian Qian clumsily moved to her left and right. However, she was eventually unable to keep up with Lan Mei Xian. After all, it was the first time that she was using her newly learnt skills in a fight. So, there were still many things that she hadn't mastered yet.

Lan Mei Xian sensed that she wasn't fully proficient. So, she slowed down the speed of her movements, and gave her enough time of respite so that she could get used to this fighting style.

A good while passed before Lan Mei Xian floated away and sat down on a chair, "Enough."

She moved her eyes to size Wu Qian Qian up, and it seemed as if she was looking at a peerless treasure.

And, that's because she had clearly felt that Wu Qian Qian was progressing every moment during this short fight! Moreover, her spiritual power was also constantly increasing.

[I have never seen such a practice speed!]

[She's perfect in every way... whether it's her aptitude, power of understanding, or her temperament!]

Wu Qian Qian appeared like a jade that hadn't yet undergone the process of polishing, but still managed to emit impeccable radiance! Her radiance would be so bright if she were to undergo the process of polishing that it would shock the universe. And, she

would then transform into a treasure that couldn’t be challenged!

"It’s such a pity that both of you with such great aptitudes are here in the Lower Three Heavens," Lan Mei Xian muttered, "Tian Tian, how about I take away your Empress with me after your delivery?"

"Take away...?" Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian asked in amazement.

"That’s right." Lan Mei Xian took a deep breath and said, "It would be a waste of her abilities if she were to stay in the Lower Three heavens! However, she would be able to progress in a very short time in the Upper Three Heavens! Moreover, her accomplishments would be limitless if I were to be her teacher!"

Tie Bu Tian hesitated for a while. Then, she turned her head around and said, "Qian Qian, what do you say?"

Wu Qian Qian pondered for a long time. Then, she said, "I want to go. However... I want to finish this matter of yours before I go!" [Wouldn’t I get to hear about Chu Yang after I go to the Upper Three Heavens? I may not be in the same place as him. But, I would be able to help him after my strength would increase!]

[There would be no need for him to know even if I ended up sacrificing my life for him.]

[Also, I – Wu Qian Qian would be most willing to do so.]

Tie Bu Tian nodded and said, "...you pretend to be sick for some time after the baby is born, okay? Then... I will declare that the empress passed away after giving birth once everything settles down... Then, you can go to the Upper Three Heavens."

Wu Qian Qian exposed a grateful expression in her eyes, and replied, "Alright."

"Not just her — you too!" Lan Mei Xian looked at Tie Bu Tian, "Do you think that I received you as my disciple so that you can be a mere emperor in the Lower Three heavens?"

"Me?" Tie Bu Tian started blankly. She forced a smile after a good while, and said, "How would I be able to go? How can I throw away my duties?"

"You obviously can’t leave for the time being! But... won’t you be able to go after the one in your belly grows up a little...?" Lan Mei Xian smiled, "You would obviously need a little longer to make the necessary arrangements if you give birth to a princess. But, if you give birth to a prince..."

Tie Bu Tian started breathing heavily.

She had never thought of it. Or perhaps, she had deliberately avoided thinking about it. She had avoided this thought altogether because she wanted to believe that she had done it to save the man she loved. She didn’t want to have some purpose attached to her actions. But, she had realized something in this moment, [The birth of my baby will solve the major problem of the Iron Cloud Empire since it will no longer lack a male heir!]

"Let me think about... this matter." Tie Bu Tian stroked her underbelly, and felt the little life pulsing inside her. She murmured, "How would I be able to leave you..."

...

Chapter 513: Murderous Intentions and Conspiracies!

Chu Yang entered the Ou Clan, and he suddenly found it very different from the Xie Clan!

The entire Ou Clan's estate had a dark hue to it. In fact, one would find oneself sinking into the gloomy and eerie atmosphere even from afar. The gray walls, the gray roof tiles... everything had been constructed with a gray-ish color to it.

Even the surrounding trees were gray in color.

"It is indeed the clan of a thousand poisons," Chu Yang nodded in silence. [The Ou Clan is famous for their poison techniques. However, poisons are extremely hard to control. Their potency might be terrifying, but one can hurt oneself if they are used in an improper manner.]

[Gray is the typical color of most poisons, but it's also the color of death!]

[Half of the people would feel gloomy in this color when they'd enter this place. However, the people who make poisons and use them would feel safe and secure...]

Chu Yang suddenly stopped after he had gone halfway in. He then said, "Du Xing, you don't have to accompany me. You accompany Wu Shang and Ji Mo, and go meet up with the Dong Clan and the Ji Clan. Take the stuff they need along with you when you go. You must hurry and leave. An excessive delay will be very detrimental in this matter!"

Gu Du Xing's complexion turned cold. He replied in a calm and heavy tone, "Right. This matter should not be delayed if that's the case. I will overtake them at once."

He said this and turned his head towards Ou Du Xiao. He then spoke-up, "Brother Ou, I would trouble you to receive Big Brother

Chu as a guest for the time being. But, we have some other business to attend to. We will come some other day to pay you a visit."

Ou Du Xiao was stunned. He asked, "What urgent matter do you have to deal with at this time? My clan has prepared a feast... for all of you..."

Gu Du Xing revealed a profound smile on his face as he said, "Brother Ou, there will be ample time for that later. So, there's no need to be impatient. Besides, we will only be drinking and having fun at your home. But, I must accompany Wu Shang and Ji Mo to handle a pressing matter. Brother Ou, please excuse me."

He cupped one fist in the other hand to show respect. Then, he turned around to leave. And, 14 people rushed away with a 'whizzing' sound.

Ji Mo waited until they had moved away from there. Then, he anxiously asked, "What important matter do I have? What does Big Brother wish for us to do?"

"Big Brother doesn't want us to do anything," Dong Wu Shang replied with a stern countenance, "He doesn't want all of us to get caught in the enemy's dragnet and get eliminated in one fell swoop!"

"So to say... is Big Brother in danger?" Ji Mo's complexion changed as his footsteps suddenly came to a halt.

"Big Brother would've been in danger if we had gone in together! But, he's safe now since we are outside," Gu Du Xing calmly replied, "There would've been no evidence if all of us had died together. And, the Ou Clan would've certainly dared to attack us if that had been the case! However, we aren't with Big Brother, and we clearly know the fact that Big Brother has entered the Ou Clan. So, the Ou Clan will inevitably have to face the anger of our four clans if he doesn't come out safely! Thus, they won't dare to injure Big Brother!"

Dong Wu Shang nodded, "They don’t have the courage to do that!"

Mo Qing Wu was silently walking after them. She suddenly raised her head at this moment and asked, "But, how did Elder Brother Chu Yang figure that it can be dangerous?"

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang glanced at each other. [This little girl has touched the crux of the matter by asking this question...]

"That’s because Ou Du Xiao was being too warm today!" Gu Du Xing solemnly replied, "That ‘over the top’ enthusiasm of his’ seemed somewhat fake to us as well!"

Dong Wu Shang smiled coldly and said, "And, that’s because we don’t share a deep friendship with Ou Du Xiao! So, why did Ou Du Xiao come to welcome us by himself? Why did he say that they are preparing a feast? Why did he say that he must meet every requirement of Big Brother’s... and, that too ‘entirely’! After all, this is only a business deal, and nothing more than that..."

Mo Qing Wu nodded her head as if she didn’t understand it properly at first. She then said, "So, the excessive enthusiasm gave it away."

Gu Du Xing nodded his head, "The so-called ‘friendship’ is accumulated over a long period of time since it takes a while before people gain each other’s recognition. And, the friends can invest energy and time in their friendship in order to further deepen their bond on the basis of this recognition. And, one can go beyond the level of ‘casual friends’ and become a ‘genuine friend’ once this phase is reached. However, this phase is also the most dangerous for that friend!"

"Why?" Mo Qing Wu asked in a confused manner. Even Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were somewhat puzzled.

"That’s because the friends begin to trust each other after they’ve

arrived at this level. And, they begin to consider each other as ‘worth depending upon’. However, none of the friends put forward the idea to do something together. That’s because there will inevitably be a conflict of interests if they do something together... Of course, it’s only a ‘conflict of interests’ for most people. However, it’s a matter of life and death for the people of Jianghu!

"Therefore, real friends will encounter this trial. And, they will eventually come across some situation which will act as a ‘touchstone’. This will happen either by some dark set-up... or their greedy hearts would secretly be at work, and that will eventually cause trouble. But...‘friends’ often become ‘enemies’ after they come across this test, and end up parting ways... And, sometimes they even... hate each until they die!

Gu Du Xing sighed and said, "However, Big Brother does very well in this regard! And, that’s why he now has us brothers by his side!"

Dong Wu Shang deeply sighed, and suddenly recalled the scene in which Chu Yang had his hands pierced by a knife. He couldn’t help but feel warm in his heart as he added in a heavy tone, "That’s true!"

"Let’s go far away from here, and leave the Ou Clan with some scruples! This will make things easier for Big Brother, and allow him to have a smooth business deal inside." Gu Du Xing said, "Everyone, let’s increase our pace!"

Everyone complied, and they quickly left the place.

... ...

"Why has only one person arrived?" a person doubtfully whispered atop the Ou Clan’s gate tower.

"Don’t tell me the situation has changed?" another person spoke-up in a somewhat puzzled manner.

"That’s highly unlikely. The report sent by the informer inside

the Xie Clan clearly mentions that Chu Yang and his brothers had entered the Xie Clan together. They had even spent several days there. In fact, they had drunk and had fun. How come their stance has changed so much when they have come to visit us?"

"That report also says that this bastard is filthy rich. I have heard that he has billions worth of gold notes and items. It seems that we can obtain these billions worth of gold notes after we've killed him."

"Nonsense! He has come alone. How can we possibly kill him in this situation?" another person said in an annoyed manner, "We will have to face the retaliation of four big clans if we do that!"

Ou Du Xiao had entered the Ou Clan's villa with Chu Yang in the midst of these two men's conversation.

"Ha haha... Du Xiao, is this King of Hell Chu? He's young and promising as expected! Such a young hero he is!" A middle-aged man in embroidered robe came over with large strides. There were five or six men in gray clothes at his side. They also came over along with him. And, they all sized up Chu Yang.

"Brother Chu, this is my father," Ou Du Xiao smiled.

"So, it's the Clan Lord of the Ou Clan. I'm Chu Yang," Chu Yang smiled and said. He was neither overbearing nor servile.

"Minister Chu is very polite." Ou Clan's Lord Ou Cheng Wu gave a straightforward smile, "We are indebted to Minister Chu for extending the deadline. We have already prepared the goods for Minister Chu. Please come in and take a look."

"Alright," Chu Yang smiled back.

"What all things does Minister Chu need? We shall do our best to give you a fair deal as long as our Ou Clan has what you need," Ou Cheng Wu laughed out loud as he accompanied Chu Yang forward. He continued, "I heard that Minister Chu is willing to purchase our goods at a rate 20% higher than the market price. This is indeed a

huge favor."

"It’s no big deal. Money isn’t an issue as long as I like what I am seeing," Chu Yang replied, "The main point is that I must like the items. I won’t stop until I have spent all my money if the Ou Clan’s Lord has arranged appropriate goods, or medicinal herbs. In fact, I’ll go down to the last piece of silver I have!"

"Minister Chu is very frank and straightforward!" Ou Cheng Wu burst into loud laughter. Then, he made a signal with his eyes and said, "I will let Du Xiao accompany Minister Chu to go choose the goods. Meanwhile, we will arrange the banquet, and wait for Minister in the hall. Let us all get thoroughly drunk!"

"Ou Clan Lord, please do as you wish," Chu Yang smiled warmly with an amiable expression on his face.

Ou Cheng Wu again burst into laughter. Then, he turned around to leave along with everyone else.

"Clan Lord... this man has come alone. It... It will be a little unsafe to deal with him," someone whispered after they had walked a certain distance away.

"Why will it be unsafe to deal with him?" Ou Cheng Wu coldly snorted and said, "He has his guard up against us. That’s why he deliberately dispersed his team. But... he is still inexperienced after all. We can’t attack him in our own home. But, won’t he meet up with his team later? And, how difficult will it be to attack them after they meet up?"

"It’s a brilliant idea, Clan Lord."

...

The Sword Spirit woke up terrified from his meditation inside Chu Yang’s mind, "Oh Great Sword Lord... what kind of a wolf’s lair have you stepped in? Why is there murderous aura soaring all around us?"

"I’m in the Ou Clan right now. It should be fine," Chu Yang

chuckled.

"There’s a harmful aura aimed at you from every place in the surroundings. Everyone’s divine sense is filled with the greed of a hungry wolf that’s ready to feed on its prey..." Sword Spirit was somewhat anxious, "I suggest you better get out of here without any delay if you can..."

"I know," Chu Yang calmly replied. A cold light flashed in his eyes.

[I exposed my financial resources in the Xie Clan. I eventually made friends with the Xie Clan, but the news about the things which had happened over there couldn’t be concealed from the Ou Clan.]

[I have financial resources in abundance. And, I also have the entire stock of treasures from the Xie Clan. So, it’s not surprising that the Ou Clan is lusting after my wealth. It seems like the Ou Clan has already made up its mind to act against me and the others...]

[Well, let’s see who deals with whom!]

Chu Yang coldly snorted in his heart.

Ou Du Xiao had a big smile spread across his entire face as he walked forward with Chu Yang. He held out his hand, and pointed at something as he said, "Brother Chu, you see that row of red tables up ahead. There’s a secret door-switch hidden there. There’s tunnel that goes down to an underground secret chamber once that door is opened. And, that’s where the Ou Clan’s treasures are hidden. "

Chu Yang put on an amiable smile and said, "Your clan is genuinely very cautious."

[This place is located at the center of the entire Ou Clan. It is surrounded by hidden sentry posts that are situated at higher grounds. Such tight security is indeed a little extreme.]

Ou Du Xiao laughed heartily and said, "People who don’t prepare for contingencies are bound to face tragedy in the end."

They had arrived in front of the switch amidst their conversation. Ou Du Xiao held out his hand, and turned on the mechanism. Two secret pathways – which were going downward – appeared before them with a click-clack sound. Ou Du Xiao asked, "Brother Chu, some rare items are present on this side. And, you will find our storehouse for medicinal herbs on that side. Also, there are many ‘martial treasures’ stored in our herbal storehouse. Ha-ha... Brother Chu, which side do you wish to check out first? It’s your choice."

Chu Yang’s eyes lit up. He said, "Martial treasures? Brother Ou, you have made me excited now. How about I check out these martial treasures first?"

Ou Du Xiao laughed heartily and said, "Sure, why not. There’s no problem in that. Brother Chu, please come with me." Then, he turned to the left side, and took the secret pathway to go in.

The 30 feet thick secret door that was made up of some secret metal slowly closed behind them, and shut tightly! The torch in this secret pathway seemed to have received some order as the entrance closed, and they lit up. However, no smoke came out from the torches. Only a sweet fragrance filled the air instead.

...

Chapter 514: Seeking Riches and Honor in the Middle of Danger!

"Such an elaborate design," Chu Yang praised in a heartfelt manner.

"This is just a small method. Brother Chu must be joking," Ou Du Xiao showed a faint smile as he took the lead to go in. A conflicted look flashed through his eyes. He was obviously aware of his clan's plan.

Ou Du Xiao didn't approve of his clan's crafty plans and schemes in all honesty. After all, Chu Yang had saved his face back then. In fact, Chu Yang had prepared an escape route for him by agreeing to extend the deadline and proposing this alternative method of debt repayment.

This was a huge favor! And, this had consequently saved the Ou Clan from facing humiliation in front of the world heroes... Regardless of whatever ulterior motive Chu Yang had behind this good deed...

Ou Du Xiao had felt very grateful at first. And, he genuinely wanted to repay Chu Yang. So, he wanted to give him 525 million worth of materials at the very least.

Ou Du Xiao returned home, and found that even the clan was in favor of Chu Yang. After all, Chu Yang had the backing of four big clans. Hence, his influence couldn't be underestimated. So, it would obviously be a great thing if the Ou Clan could have such a strong ally...

However, this situation had suddenly changed after they heard about the things that had happened at the Xie Clan! And, everyone's thoughts were altered in their entirety in the blink of an eye!

10 billion worth of fortune! Plus billions worth of stocks from the

Xie Clan!

What kind of enormous wealth was this? The Ou Clan's net-worth would undeniably be the total sum of the net-worth of the Ou Clan and the Xie Clan if they could get their hands on it! This wealth could then be used to recruit forces and rope in experts. And, that would alleviate the Ou Clan's strength to a whole new level!

The Ou Clan was currently one of the top three clans in the Middle Three Heavens. So, what would going a step further imply?

It would mean that they might replace the Ao Clan, and become the number-one clan of the Middle Three Heavens!

And, what does it mean to be the number-one clan? This ranking wasn't just for name's sake. It gave more of a charisma and influence to a clan to rally supporters! More and more people would be willing to join them once they would attain the status of the number-one clan. And, the strength of the clan would become more and more stable. In fact, it wouldn't be strange if they were to make their way into the Upper Three Heavens if things would go smoothly for some time...

"Why did the Ao Clan become the number-one clan? Isn't that because they had suddenly discovered a buried treasure 200 years ago? The Ao Clan used to be similar to our Ou Clan back then. But, it had a dramatic rise after it obtained that buried treasure. What does it come to in the end? Financial resources!"

These words from an elder of the Ou Clan had aroused everyone's ambitions, "No one knows the true value of the buried treasure that the Ao Clan had found. However, the Ao Clan wouldn't have been the size it is at this time if it had exceeded a certain limit! It would've been bigger and stronger! Therefore, it can be said that the estimated worth of their treasure is only in billions; that's all!

"Therefore, it's safe to say that our wealth will be equal to that of the Ao Clan as long as we obtain the wealth that's there in King of

Hell Chu's hands. In fact, we may become richer than them... After all, his wealth contains Xie Clan's treasure-stock which has been accumulated over hundreds of years! How is it any different from some buried treasure?

"Our Ou Clan will emerge as a super power in the future with the decisions we make at this moment! So, what are we waiting for? We may have to take risks, but we must do it once-and-for-all," the elder's voluminous and eloquent speech had made everyone's blood boil.

"Indeed. These four clans only seem to be supporting King of Hell Chu on a superficial level. This support is only based on their individual friendship rather than their clan's interests. And, this is worth thinking over... The Young Clan Lord of the Gu Clan has taken charge. So, he represents his entire clan now. However, the Gu Clan isn't a top clan!"

Ou Clan's Lord Ou Cheng Wu then analyzed further as he said, "And, the other supporters are merely the Second Young Masters of the Dong Clan, the Luo Clan and the Ji Clan... Ha-ha! So, killing them would be tantamount to cutting short the future troubles of the Eldest Young Masters to a certain extent. There's bound to be a backlash if the news leaks out. However, it won't be that big...

"But, who will find out that it was us if we do it in secret...?"

The members of the Ou Clan had then come to a decision, and made up their mind.

Even Ou Du Xiao's mindset had quietly begun to change at that moment.

[What's wrong with killing a bunch of nobodies to attain the supreme glory of the number-one clan? Isn't rising to the status of the number-one clan in the Middle Three Heavens bound to incur a heavy debt of blood? Isn't it bound to be based on a mountain of corpses?]

[Can getting stranded for a trivial friendship be called the behavior of a real man?]

Consequently, these men had been united under this firm mindset.

The situation had changed since Gu Du Xing and the others hadn't arrived as they had anticipated. However, this still hadn't hindered Ou Du Xiao's motivation. In fact, it had managed to arouse his murderous intention even further... [You think you will be fine if you do this? You think we won't deal with you if you do this?]

[It's simply ridiculous!]

...

Ou Du Xiao had a cordial look on his face. However, the atmosphere was chilly-cold in his heart. Chu Yang could clearly feel this, but he didn't show any reaction. In fact, the look on Chu Yang's face was even more cordial, even more genial, and even more affectionate than the one on Ou Du Xiao's...

They looked like two individual who had been friends for decades as they walked side by side. Their conversations made it seem like they were sharing the deepest secrets of their hearts. In fact, the enthusiasm they showed towards each other had nearly reached an extent where it seemed like they would only need a few more words to become sworn brothers...

A large stone room appeared in front of Chu Yang after they turned a few corners. A white light was sparkling inside. It turned out to be a jade shelf which had an array of dazzling jade boxes on it.

"Warm Jade Rack, and Divine Incense Jade Box! Brother Ou, I am genuinely stunned." Chu Yang was genuinely startled. The Warm Jade was treated as a rare treasure in the Lower Three Heavens. However, there was an entire shelf made of it in this place!

Divine Incense Jade was used in the preservation of medicinal herbs. And, it was second only to the Purple Jade in this regard. The Purple Jade could preserve herbs for thousands of years. The Divine Incense Jade couldn't preserve them for thousands of years, but it could still do so for 500 years...

In fact, it was better than white crystals and blue crystals in this regard!

Divine Incense Jade didn't have the fantastic abilities or the capacity to hold spirit energy like the white crystal and blue crystals did. However, it was regarded as the best when it came to the preservation of medicinal herbs.

"The preservation of martial treasures is entirely different from the preservation of other herbs," Ou Du Xiao explained with a sigh, "Endless financial resources had to be spent when these things had been crafted! How can one imagine the brutal and inhumane process that the clan must've gone through to have achieve the present scale? Brother Chu, you do understand the bitter-sweet aspects of life, right?"

"Indeed. That's right." Chu Yang nodded in affirmation, "The rise of a clan is bound to be through endless tears of blood, and constant perseverance. It requires the sacrifices of countless geniuses with outstanding talents over a period of hundreds of years... or even over a thousand years. Someone may fall, but the next follows and replace the fallen comrades... Sigh... But, the decline of a clan is as easy as it gets."

Ou Du Xiao sighed and said, "Yes, there are numerous powerful enemies out there in the Nine Heavens. It's hard to tell when one may end-up offending one such person and trigger the extermination of the entire clan as a result. But, that would make the countless painstaking efforts of the predecessors go in vain..."

"True," Chu Yang sighed, "However, the usual incurring root of trouble is either some 'show off young master'... or the 'insatiable

greed' that ultimately brings about disaster..."

Ou Du Xiao's eyes flashed. He felt that this remark of Chu Yang's seemed quite profound in its meaning. But, why had he mentioned 'insatiable greed' at this moment?

Ou Du Xiao laughed and said, "However... there are many things one is helpless about when it comes to seeking riches and honor amidst danger. In particular, when one is unable to move forward when one wants to keep progressing towards success... In fact, one will inevitably lag behind and move back to a more distressed position if that happens. One could say that it is the same as declining if one wants to go a step further and there's no danger ahead. The helplessness of a big clan is as extreme as that of a hero's exploration. Brother Chu, we must learn from it."

Chu Yang smiled calmly and replied, "Brother Ou is very wise."

He didn't speak further. He simply waited for Ou Du Xiao to begin the introduction of the medicinal herbs. He had made that previous remark to see how Ou Du Xiao would react. And, Ou Du Xiao's response had thoroughly incited the murderous intent in Chu Yang's heart!

[It seems that you have decided to seek riches and honor amidst danger, eh? Very well! I will also have to seek... riches and honor amidst danger in that case!]

Ou Du Xiao tried to probe whether Chu Yang had figured out his intentions. However, he only saw Chu Yang warmly looking back at himself. Moreover, there was a kind and magnanimous shine in his eyes. And, Ou Du Xiao couldn't help but feel ashamed.

He quickly took two steps forward and said, "Brother Chu, please take a look at this. There's a Five Colored Jade Orchid in this first jade box. This herb grows in the profound depths of a ten-thousand feet deep valley. It doesn't receive the least bit of sunlight all year round. It acquires one color in every hundred years when it starts to grow. So, it gains 5 different colors in 500

years. And, these five colors achieve their perfect condition in another 500 years. This Five Colored Jade Orchid already has all colors. Moreover, it has also begun to acquire a jade-like appearance. It has already reached the maturity of 1500 years at the very least. Its effects are wondrous when it comes to the treatment of internal injuries. It can even dispel poison, and it's considered a wonder drug. What does Brother Chu think about it? Do you like it?"

Chu Yang looked carefully and said, "It could've been a fire-rate product if it had completely transformed into jade. This herb is certainly precious, but it hasn't matured enough. So, it won't be of any use to me."

Ou Du Xiao's smiling face turned stiff as he said, "Brother Chu, you are joking, right? It takes at least 5000 years for it to turn into jade..."

He had spoken this as he had covered the lid of this jade box. He then placed it back. After that, he skillfully opened the second jade box and said, "Brother Chu, what about this? This is the Millennium Grass Cinnabar. Furthermore, this cinnabar's body already appears bright red..."

"This herb... I would've taken it if it was a sparkling white instead of red," Chu Yang continued to belittle.

Ou Du Xiao's eyes flashed. He said in his heart, [this guy's standards are way too high. It seems like he needs some top-notch items.] Thereupon, he opened the third jade box and said, "Brother Chu, please look at this..."

Ou Du Xiao opened six jade boxes in a row. However, Chu Yang would simply shake his head and pick out a list of problems instead of pulling out money to buy those items. In fact, he'd make it very obvious that he didn't like them at all.

They were already 3 or 4 steps away from the first jade box at the moment.

Ou Du Xiao had gradually begun to somewhat lose his cool. He pulled open the seventh jade box, but he saw a bright look in Chu Yang's eyes before he could open his mouth to speak, "This is a good item." He went a step forward, and lowered his head to sniff it once. Then, he said, "Not bad, I like it..."

Ou Du Xiao finally felt happy in his heart. [Finally, there's something you like. I had nearly begun to lose confidence in my clan's secret treasures since I had been watching you shake your head this entire time...]

He hastily exploited this opportunity and said, "Brother Chu, this one was very hard to find. It had to be mined from the volcanic area. My Ou Clan had sent three King Level Experts for it..."

The two of them moved close to the jade box, and discussed fine details about the item inside. Chu Yang eventually spoke-up, "Brother Ou, its market price should be about 2 million. How about I give you 2.5 million for this?"

The wisp of a colorless and transparent thing silently fell on the ground from the back-hem of Chu Yang's black robe as he proposed the price. It meandered about a bit on the ground. In fact, it seemed as if it was alive. Then, it sneaked into the first jade box with a 'swoosh'...

...

Chapter 515: Returns with a Full Load!

The jade box was originally sealed tightly. But, this bizarre matter was like a pervasive ghost as it passed through things without facing any obstacles. It floated about and infiltrated into the jade box as if there was no barrier...

Ou Du Xiao wasn't even aware of it. In fact, his heart was brimming with feelings of accomplishment at this time. Moreover, the price that Chu Yang had set for this item was fair and just. So, he straightforwardly replied, "Brother Chu said that he wants. So, 2.5 million it is!" He thought, [The things that you're buying right now are going to come back to us anyway...]

Chu Yang laughed out loud as he personally moved the jade box. But, he then put it down at the entrance, and said, "Brother Ou, I will put all the items that I wish to buy at the entrance, okay? Then, you get them shifted out later. Also, please give me one big package so that the items can be packed in it. That would be very convenient..."

Ou Du Xiao replied with a smile, "There's no trouble in this. Everything would happen according to Brother Chu's desire! But, are you sure you don't want the jade box? You won't be able to preserve the herbs you'd buy if you won't have them..."

"I have my own ways," Chu Yang forced a smile and said, "I wouldn't be able to buy a lot of items if I add on the value of these jade boxes."

Ou Du Xiao smiled back.

The two of them continued to move forwards. Then, he opened the eighth jade box...

The thing that made Ou Du Xiao depressed was that Chu Yang looked at the jade boxes, but he didn't wish to buy any of the items in them. These divine medicinal herbs were priceless in Ou Du

Xiao's eyes. But, Chu Yang would look at them once to assess, and walked forward.

He looked at ten jade boxes in a row. Then, Chu Yang took fancy to a Dreamy Heart Herb. And, he paid five million silver taels for it. Then, he again passed by five or six jade boxes, and liked the core of a Snow Lotus Herb. However, the amount he paid this time was somewhat bigger. It was twenty million...

Chu Yang slowly looked at 150 jade boxes as time passed. However, he only picked six jade boxes out of them. And, this was very different from what Ou Du Xiao had previously imagined!

However, he wasn't worried. [No matter how many items you choose... we will snatch them back from you later...]

Then, they walked to the other side. Chu Yang's nitpicking attitude made Ou Du Xiao's hair stand up in anger since he only chose two items!

The entire morning had already passed by now.

Luckily, Chu Yang's speed was good. Otherwise, one day wouldn't have been enough to look at all the items...

He had seen three hundred jade boxes by now. And, the thing that had made Ou Du Xiao speechless was... [Chu Yang has only spent less than one hundred million in such a precious treasure house! The jade boxes that he has picked were precisely ten.]

Chu Yang looked somewhat disappointed as he said, "Brother Ou... I wish to say something. But, I don't know if saying that would be appropriate or not..."

Ou Du Xiao hurriedly said, "Brother Chu, there's no harm in saying what you wish to say."

"The millennium-old heritage of the Ou Clan... has surprised me. But... he he he... you have many varieties of stuff... but, there seems to be only a few of them... that are genuinely good. It seems that your clan needs to put more effort in enhancing the quality of

the items... and not the quantity..."

He shook his head. He let out a sigh of regret and said, "Take my example... I thought that I will return home with a full load when I saw such a big secret treasure house. But, I feel disappointed after having looked at this... This is very different from the reputation of your clan's millennium-old heritage..."

Ou Du Xiao almost crooked his nose in anger. He thought, [there are so many martial treasures on this side. And, you don't want them! There are many divine medicinal herbs among them that are almost equivalent to the Nine Great Herbal Medicines. You just fail to appreciate the quality. You have beads for eyes. And, you're criticizing the heritage of our Ou Clan?]

He replied with a forced smile, "Yes, yes. Brother Chu Yang is right." He thought, [The clan's decision to get rid of this guy is obviously the right one. Dammit! Being in his company is depressing me to death...]

"Umm... let's go and take a look over to that side." Chu Yang considerately said, "Brother Ou, tell your men to move out these ten herbs. Please get them wrapped in packages and loaded properly. Don't worry... the medicinal efficacies of the herbs that I've bought won't drain out that easily, he he, unlike the rest of the herbs..."

Ou Du Xiao gritted his teeth. He thought, [you think the items you have bought are superior to the others...? I had thought too highly of you earlier... it turns out that you're nothing more than a country bumpkin who has come up from the Lower Three Heavens. You know nothing...]

"Umm, let's go out quickly. This is a sealed stone chamber. So, the efficiencies of the medicines drain out once it opens. I don't like these medicinal herbs, but your clan has gathered them with great effort... So, please close the door as soon as possible, okay..."

Chu Yang had spoken this very casually. But, these words had a

secret meaning. And, it made Ou Du Xiao so angry that he almost vomited out blood.

"Brother Chu is absolutely right. I will close the door!" Ou Du Xiao's complexion was somewhat unpleasant. He personally piled up the ten jade boxes together. Then, he supported them with one hand and walked out first.

Chu Yang chuckled and followed behind him. A ray of light jumped out of the last jade box in the stone chamber at this happened. And, it stuck itself on the hem of Chu Yang's black robe. Then, it disappeared without a trace in a flash...

Chu Yang felt a strange heat in his Dantian. The Sword Point of the Nine Tribulation Sword had come back after it had eaten its fill. It then burped. After that, Chu Yang took one step forward, and walked out of the door.

Ou Du Xiao pressed the contraction, and the door of the herbal store got locked. He thought, [This God of Disaster has finally come out. He makes me so furious...]

He then called his men to come in and take out the ten jade boxes. After that, the two of them went to the different side of the treasure house.

Inside Chu Yang's mind...

The Sword Spirit jumped up ferociously, "Crap... Where did so many efficacies come from? This, this, this... this is too much!" Sword Spirit became flustered, "Does this little bastard want me to explode? This is too much... it's several times more than the efficacies that we had plundered from the herbal storehouse of Diwu Qing Ruo's... oh no... it's actually dozens of times more than that..."

However, the Sword Spirit didn't have much time to complain. So, he hastily made a circle with his hand, and drew an open area in the Nine Tribulation Space. After that, he moved his other hand

and huge amount of pure efficacies flooded in.

The Sword Spirit had initially used eighty-percent of the power that he had extracted from Chu Yang's meridians to absorb the efficacies...

However, the efficacies that were rushing out of the Sword Point of the Nine Tribulation Sword surged over more and more...

"Too much... this is too much..." The Sword Spirit gritted his teeth. He then used hundred-percent of that power, and started to absorb even more frantically!

[Absorb!]

[Keep absorbing!]

[Absorb, absorb, absorb!]

[Crap! It keeps coming...]

...

Chu Yang entered into the other side of secret treasure house, and his face suddenly turned red. Moreover, his body also became feverish. This had happened because the ferocious efficacy had suddenly attacked Chu Yang's meridians, and it seemed as if they'd break them apart.

"Brother Chu, what happened to you?" Ou Du Xiao looked at Chu Yang, [It's so strange. Why did his face suddenly turn so red?]

"Ah! It is really unexpected..."Chu Yang opened his eyes wide, and it seemed as if he was pleasantly surprised. His body slightly shivered. His appearance made it seem as if he had found something incredible, "It's highly unexpected... it is such a pleasant surprise... Brother Ou, you have so many top-notch materials for forging peerless treasures here... indeed... indeed... it's very good! Brother Ou, I am very excited... please don't mind..."

"He he... Brother Chu is indeed a genuine person who can't hide

his feelings. How can I take offence..." Ou Du Xiao suddenly felt greatly pleasured in his heart! [Motherfu*ker! Finally, something made you stunned. Look at your eyes... they are filled with shock. Your face has turned red. Your whole body is shivering in a pitiful manner. Humph! Humph...! And, you were thinking that my Ou Clan doesn't have any valuable treasures?]

Chu Yang was trying his best to control his body's reaction. But, it had become hard to keep it in control since the efficacies were madly surging within him. He let out a strange cry, and broke into the material storehouse of the Ou Clan. His eyes were shining, while his hands shook in a chaotic manner. His entire body shivered as he caressed one item. Then, he gently caressed another item one more time...

"Crap, Star Iron, ah..."

"Ah! Nightmare Steel, ah!"

"Wow! Red Cloud Steel, ah!"

"Wow, you have Mysterious Golden Sand here!"

"It's wonderful! Is it Nine Heavens Silver?"

"It's truly incredible!"

"This has baffled me!"

"I'm very excited..."

"Oh Gosh..."

...

He 'excitedly' checked the stuff on one hand. And, he secretly prayed in his heart on the other..."Crap! Sword Spirit, my dear uncle... just hurry up already... I won't be able to bear this for long..."

The Sword Spirit was doing his utmost to extract the efficacies, "Almost! I'm almost done... Just hold on for a while..."

"But, I can’t continue to hold on..." Chu Yang screamed in his mind.

[Crap! The efficacies here can’t be compared to the ones that we stole from Diwu Qing Rou in the Lower Three Heavens. How can the stuff in this colossus treasure house of the Ou Clan be ordinary?]

[Each of these herbs can instigate a fight among people!]

[Chu Yang had incited the Sword Point to steal these treasures. It seemed very cool at first, but the consequences are out of control.]

[After all, he’s being followed by the Future Poison Spirit...]

[This guy isn’t an idiot. Things would certainly turn for the worse in case he finds out that Chu Yang’s excitement is being caused by the efficacies...]

Fortunately, the heat inside Chu Yang’s meridians gradually began to subside when he was almost unable to control...

And, the efficacy that the Sword Point of the Nine Tribulation Sword was outputting eventually began to grow smaller in amount...

The Sword Spirit also let out a sigh of relief as he continued to extract the efficacies with a whistling sound. He said, "It’s alright. It’s fine now. Everything is finally under control. The efficacies were flooding like tsunami waves before... so much so that even a knowledgeable and experienced person like me also jumped out in fear..."

Chu Yang finally let out a sigh of relief. His complexion also gradually became normal.

Ou Du Xiao had felt a dark pleasure in his heart when he had seen Chu Yang’s excitement. But, he couldn’t help but feel suspicious in his heart when he saw that Chu Yang was somewhat excessively excited. [It doesn’t seem right. He shouldn’t be this excited, right?]

He was about to say something. But then, he saw that Chu Yang had already turned around. Chu Yang embarrassedly smiled and said, "Brother Ou, I couldn’t control myself after I saw so many rare materials at once. Ahm Amh... I am really ashamed... I made a joke out of myself in front of Brother Ou..."

"It’s no problem. This is human nature. Brother Chu, you are the very manifestation of genuineness. You are someone who can’t hide his feelings. How can I laugh at you?" That strand of doubt had suddenly vanished from Ou Du Xiao’s heart. And, he said with a bright smile, "Brother Chu is very pleased with the items on this side?"

"Yes, yes... I’m very pleased!" Chu Yang burst into loud laughter. His complexion had regained its normal appearance by now. The Sword Point of the Nine Tribulation Sword still continued to output the efficacy. But, the Sword Spirit was able to absorb it effectively at this time.

They haggled over the prices, and Chu Yang selected some comparatively more precious items. However, he wasn’t miser in the least, and he threw away eight billion! Ou Du Xiao opened the door and made the Ou Clan’s servants come in one-after-another. They then took out the items that Chu Yang had selected.

Also, he arranged ten big horse-drawn carriages in response to Chu Yang’s request.

However, it was already night time by now. Chu Yang ate and drank as much as he liked at the Ou Clan, and it seemed as if he wasn’t cautious at all. In fact, there was literally no stopping him. Then, they talked about random stuff. Moreover, the conversations had been very exciting. However, this made those experts of the Ou Clan whom Chu Yang had met after Gu Du Xing and the others had left impatient.

...

Chapter 516: Please don't Hold Back!

Chu Yang ate and drank to his heart's content. He then drank several cups of tea, and picked his teeth. Then, he calmly and unhurriedly bid goodbye to everyone. He refused Ou Du Xiao's request to stay even though the former had made it out of a fake display of friendship. He then jumped and got on a horse. He rushed along the journey, and personally led the ten carriages.

He seemed extremely carefree as he started off his journey.

"Send two Emperor Level Experts to follow him! The rest of you must wait for orders!" Ou Cheng Wu looked at Chu Yang's silhouette as it went far into the distance. He then commanded in a dark mood, "Don't get too close to him. Come back and inform us when you find all of them together. The clan will then dispatch its troops, and catch everyone in one net!"

"Yes." Two shadows flashed, and went to chase after him like birds.

Ou Cheng Wu gave orders in succession with a dark face, "Second Elder, Third Elder, and Fourth Elder!"

"Yes! What order do you have for us, Clan Lord!"

"Prepare the core manpower of the clan! You three will lead thirty King Level Experts. Wait for the Eighth Elder and Ninth Elder to come back. You five Emperor Level Experts must then launch an attack!"

"Yes!"

"He would have no way to escape once we move into action! Ensure that you kill all of them! Eleven men of the Gu Clan, one man of the Ji Clan, one man of the Dong Clan, one man of the Luo Clan, a little girl of the Mo Clan, and that Chu Yang! They are sixteen people in total! There would be huge trouble if any one of them manages to flee! Understood?"

"Yes! This old man is confident. They are only sixteen youngsters. They won't be able to get away from us!"

An intense murderous aura flashed in the eyes of the Second Elder as he spoke on behalf of everyone.

They had the strength of five Emperor Level Experts and thirty King Level Experts to deal with only fifteen King Level Experts on the opposite side. It seemed as easy as using an ox-cleaver to kill a chicken!

It would be an enormous joke if they allowed the other party to slip away from their clutches with such strength at hand!

....

Chu Yang was leisurely leading the carriages under the moonlight. He seemed carefree since he didn't have the slightest appearance of vigilance.

He had left the Ou Clan's territory, and he was moving forwards along his journey at this time.

He had slowly covered a distance of 20-25 kilometers. And, there was a vast forest in front of him at this time. Chu Yang hurried his carriage to the periphery of the forest, and came to a stop. He quickly entered into the carriages one-by-one, and shifted the items into the Nine Tribulation Space at the fastest possible speed.

After that, he asked the Sword Spirit to manufacture a big wine jug in the Nine Tribulation Space. Then, he asked him to throw both eyes of the Poisonous Flood Dragon into the jug. These two bowl-sized pearls were the Yin Yang Poisonous Dragon Eyes in reality! These two things would be the world's best antidote if they were together. In fact, they could dissolve any poison!

There would definitely be a fight with the Ou Clan at this point of time. So, these items were indispensable treasures for him!

Chu Yang's body flashed as soon as he finished doing these preparations. He then sat on the top of a carriage, and took out the

jug of wine from his bosom. He looked towards the moon in the night sky, and drank the wine in one shot. This indeed seemed like an extremely carefree attitude.

The leisurely attitude of this guy made the two Emperor Level Experts who were following him anxious and unable to endure.

[Crap! This chap is very quick, ah! Hurry up! Go and meet the other little bastards. The others and I will terminate all of you in one fell swoop. What's the matter? Why you're delaying so much? Why have you stopped all of a sudden?]

[Are you waiting for them here? However... don't you know that this place is very close to our Ou Clan? Are you genuinely that gutsy? Or do you trust us so much?]

Chu Yang stretched his body after a long while. Then, he thought aloud, "The night is already deep, and I feel sleepy," He slid down from the carriage. Then, he placed a plank on the ground as makeshift bed, and looked at it in a manner that made it seem as if he was going to sleep on it.

The two Emperor Level Experts shot flames from their eyes as they looked at him from afar!

[This bastard!]

They watched as Chu Yang lied down. But, he then suddenly sat up, and muttered, "Dammit! I drank too much wine in the Ou Clan. I need to go and pee first. It would indeed be very bad if I were to hold it back in the night."

He held his pants as he said this, and carefreely went into the forest.

The two Emperor Level Experts were left speechless at this sight. And, they let out a deep sigh in quick succession. [Dammit! It is the biggest misfortune for both of us that we are assigned to follow such a weirdo!]

[Motherfu*ker! Its night at this time, and no one is around.

Wouldn’t it resolve the matter if you just pee anywhere and be done with it? But, you have entered into the forest now? You are a grown man! Why are you being so cautious?]

They heard rustling sounds in the forest when they were silent. After that, two loud sounds of someone farting were heard from the forest. Then, a sound of growling stomach came along with the sound of dripping water. Chu Yang muttered, "Dammit! It looks like a big one is about to come out. The Ou Clan was very enthusiastic. I have eaten a little too much..."

Rustling sounds of tree leaves resounded. It seemed that this guy was going to defecate along the way.

The two Emperor Level Experts became dumbstruck.

He suddenly cried out in fear, "Dammit! There’s a black bear here!" Then, sounds of wrestling started to transmit out along with the screams of the bear...

The two Emperor Level Experts became expressionless... and in a daze. In fact, it seemed as if they had been struck by lightning!

[How can there be such a bizarre coincidence?]

[He bumped into a black bear while he was out to defecate!]

The sounds finally stopped after a while. A voice resounded, and it seemed as if someone had been relieved from a burden, "Finally, it’s all settled. Dammit! I was about to take off my pants, and a bear suddenly appeared out of nowhere..."

Then, no sound was heard for a long while.

The two Emperor Level Experts felt that there was something fishy. And, they were about to go there and take a look. But, they suddenly heard loud pitter and patter sounds...

[So, he is having diarrhea...]

The two Emperor Level Experts were too far away, but they still felt somewhat nauseated as they heard these sounds. In fact, their

complexion had discolored as if they wanted to vomit.

Pitter and patter sounds again resounded after a while…

Then, the crackling and rattling sound resounded again …

[This guy's diarrhea seems to be very serious…]

[Fu*k! I remember that we didn't put any poison in his food for the fear that he will suspect it, ah. Could it be that someone gave him a laxative?]

The two Emperor Level Experts remained perplexed despite much thought.

It had been half-an-hour, and the crackling and rattling sounds were still resounding.

Both of them were dumbfounded. [You may have eaten too much… but, you're defecating far too much. The intensity of these sounds… how are you still alive, ah….]

They suddenly looked at each other, and saw suspicion in each other's eyes – [Something is fishy, ah!]

[Even an Expert's diarrhea shouldn't have been this extreme, right? Moreover… he should be capable of controlling it at such a cultivation level, ah…]

They then flew up. They jumped up-and-down, and entered into the forest. However, they felt an overwhelming stench once they had entered! So much so that they couldn't help but cover their noses.

Then, they followed the smell, and finally looked at the spot.

The two men who had covered their noses with their hands became very angry at the sight they witnessed!

They looked ahead, and saw a huge black bear. The bear was tied to a tree. It had a very helpless and grieved appearance on its face. A block of Star Steel had been stuffed into its mouth. So, it couldn't issue the least bit of noise… even though bodily waste had

been piled up under his buttocks like a mountain...

This was a black bear. Moreover, the black bear was having diarrhea...

It seemed that the black bear had reached the point of dehydration after having diarrhea for such a long time...

Actually... Chu Yang had captured this black bear, and had tied it to the tree. Then, he had fed it a lot of laxative. After that, he had plugged its mouth to make it remain silent... So, it wasn't surprising that these two Emperor level Experts had been hearing the sounds of diarrhea for so long...

As for Minister Chu... he had gotten more-than-an-hour to run away. So, it wasn't known where he had run off to.

There was a paper stuck over the head of the black bear. There seemed to be something written on that paper...

The Eighth Elder furiously went over and grabbed it. He then read what was written on the paper, "The night is deep and serious. Thanks for your trouble, Your Excellency. Your Excellency was particularly patient-enough to wait for the black bear to finish its diarrhea. Such a level of moral integrity and attitude is very rare to see in the world. I have only received the great kindness and magnificent hospitality of your clan, and I am unable to return the favor. So, I intentionally made Brother Bear prepare a lot of gold for Your Excellency in order to properly entertain you. Your Excellency can have it according to your taste... be it dry or watery. Eat it properly. Please take your sweet time, and enjoy the meal. There's no poison in it. Please, please, please, don't hold back."

Moreover, he had drawn a big smiley face below the written content. It was obviously meant to mock them...

"Damn it! This son of a bi*ch! This old man will chop his body into ten-thousand pieces!" the Eighth Elder bellowed loudly. He joined his hands, and crushed the paper in between! His face

swelled up and turned purple.

The bear started emitting... the pitter-patter sound again...

The Ninth Elder became so angry that it seemed as if he had lost his mind. He lifted his hand, and slammed it on the body of the big black bear with the sound of a thunderclap. The gigantic bear immediately splashed sh*t out in return. Consequently, the two Emperor Level Experts had to rush back in a distressed state.

They saw the ten carriages that were there outside. They thought, [Motherfu*ker! You ran away, but you didn't take the carriages with you?]

They advanced forward and looked inside the carriages. They couldn't help but cry out in surprise.

The carriages were empty. They were full of items before, but there was nothing inside them at this time. There were four horses tied to each carriage. Their innocent eyes were wide open as they looked at these two furious elders...

"I can't control my anger!"

The Eighth Elder and the Ninth Elder only felt extreme anger in their chest. They wanted to vent it out, but couldn't. They were chocking of anger, and it seemed as if their chest would explode.

"Let's continue to move forward and chase after him! I don't believe that this brat is capable of escaping far away!" Both of them reacted without thinking, and decisively flew into the forest. And, they skimmed through the forest like two big birds!

Chu Yang had entered the forest at that time. He had then used the inner core of the bear race to attract over a black bear. After that, he had made the preparations and left without making a sound.

Chu Yang had smoothly escaped from this place using the black bear as a distraction.

He crossed the forest in quarter-of-an-hour. He had also made a few false directions with his clothes to mislead the enemy. Then, he began to head towards the place where he had agreed to meet his brothers.

He continued to move this entire journey at full speed like flickering light and passing shadows. His figure would only flash in the sky, and disappear without trace...

He rushed forward madly until he covered two-hundred kilometers. Then, he saw Gu Du Xing and the others moving forward in the same direction at a slow speed.

Chu Yang caught up to them at a flying speed and said, "Move forward with full speed! Look for an advantageous position, and be prepared to face the enemy!"

Gu Du Xing knew that situation was an emergency. So, there was no time to ask questions. Everyone accelerated with full strength as per the order.

Chu Yang held Mo Qing Wu in his arms at first. He then put her on his shoulders. The brothers removed the Star Iron from their bodies, and everyone felt as lithe as a swallow. Then, they rushed forwards like a gust of wind blowing over the earth...

Mo Qing Wu cleverly bent down her lower body and tightly held Chu Yang so that she could reduce the resistance from the wind. She felt somewhat sad in her heart, [I'm too weak. I can't help Elder Brother Chu Yang. Instead, I am only weighing him down...]

[Wouldn't it be good if my strength could be the biggest help to Elder Brother Chu Yang?]

Mo Qing Wu's fine black hair was flying upwards since the gust of wind was blowing against her face. And, it was also arousing a craving for strength in Mo Qing Wu's heart!

[I don't want to grow stronger for anything else. I only don't wish to become a burden on Elder Brother Chu Yang! I want to

help him! I don’t want to be deadweight!]

Such a thought had risen in Mo Qing Wu’s mind for the first time.

[I will become strong! And, I will protect my Elder Brother Chu Yang!]

Mo Qing Wu’s heart was rolling like tides along with the whistling sound of the wind…

Chapter 517: Ambushes the Emperor Level Experts!

Chu Yang took out a water pouch, and threw it towards Gu Du Xing as they rushed, "Du Xing, give it to everyone, and tell them to take a sip from it. I can't be certain when the enemy would come up to attack us!"

"Alright!" Gu Du Xing didn't know what this was. But, he knew that Chu Yang had given this... so there must've been some purpose. He raised it, and took a sip first. Then, he tossed it towards Dong Wu Shang. Then, Dong Wu Shang took a sip, and passed it to Luo Ke Di.

They kept passing the bag, and everyone took a sip of the drink.

Then, Gu Du Xing asked, "Big Brother, what's the use of this drink?"

"One sip of this will make you immune to all kinds of poisons!" Chu Yang softly replied.

"I expect that this is because of the Ou Clan!" Gu Du Xing became furious. His eyes turned cold in an instant.

[An antidote... It's being used to guard against the Ou Clan. Why else would we need it?]

"I guess the Ou Clan wants to plunder the resources that you possess?" Dong Wu Shang spoke-up in a deep voice. He was usually a quiet and reserved fellow, but he had accurately pointed out this issue.

"You're right," Chu Yang nodded.

"The Ou Clan is truly ungrateful!" Ji Mo furiously spat and said, "Big Brother, Ou Du Xiao would've been thoroughly discredited on Mt. Dingjun if you hadn't helped him out. And now, he's biting the hand that has fed him. That man has no principles!"

Gu Du Xing smiled and said, "The Ou Clan thinks that they are too smart. They would've had smoother chances of success if they had intercepted us directly. But, they've acted too smart for their own good. And, they only sent Ou Du Xiao. They wanted to lure us into their manor so that they could eliminate us all in one fell swoop. They wanted to have best deal at the cheapest rate..."

"However, it's a pity because God's plans supersede our own. Big Brother had detected it, and he made us leave before they could act. Then, Big Brother went in alone to have the business deal. They must've flown into a rage, but couldn't dare to act... Ha ha ha..." Dong Wu Shang had understood the matter. And, he couldn't help but laugh in pleasure as a result.

"Big Brother, you must've plundered somethings after you entered their clan, right?" Luo Ke Di asked with curiosity.

"Not much. I only spent eight billion in the Ou Clan! I bought a large part of the rare and precious items the Ou Clan had," Chu Yang smiled, "And, I may have conveniently stolen a few things from their herbal storehouse as well..."

"Great...! Big Brother, you're indeed great..." the four brothers showed thumps up at the same time, and adulated him.

[Going to other people's homes... then, going to their secret treasure houses... and then, stealing things from there... it's also a rare talent!]

These people obviously didn't know that Chu Yang had stolen many things. They thought that he had only stolen a few items. However, they were unaware that this Big Brother of their' was rather greedy by nature. So, they obviously didn't know that he was carrying all the items of the entire herbal storehouse of the Ou Clan...

His so-called 'a few things' weren't 'just a few things' in reality...

In fact, there was nothing left in the herbal storehouse of the Ou

Clan at this time... except for the empty Divine Incense Jade boxes...

Well... there must've been some ashes in the jade boxes...

"There should be the Chill Wind Forest 150 kilometres ahead. The Chill Wind Forest will be a good place to hide!" Gu Du Xing said, "The terrain over there is complex. So, it would suitable for us to travel stealthily."

He paused and said, "However... we need to take note of one thing. The Ou Clan wants to attack us, and they must already know that we can easily defeat ordinary King Level Experts! So, they will definitely dispatch Emperor Level Experts. Moreover, there will be more than one!

"Therefore, this fight would be extremely dangerous. And, they will probably try to wipe us out. So, there would certainly be casualties even if we were to be a little lucky! Everyone must be well prepared for the situation!" Gu Du Xing said, "If you wish to turn back — then you may do so right now. No one will stop you if any of you wishes to walk in the other direction. We won't force you to stay!"

He had obviously spoken these words for the ten King Level Experts of his own clan since he knew that his brothers weren't going to withdraw at any cost.

No one responded for a long while after these words were said.

Gu Du Xing felt heavy in his heart. He said, "You guys don't have to feel forced. After all, you can't be careless when it comes to life and death. So, you can leave if you want. But, please inform my clan in case we brothers happen to meet any mishap. And, we would still be grateful to you!"

[This is a valid reason. And, it's the most just and honourable reason to get out of this situation!]

Most people see the profit and forget morality. Most people are

greedy for life, and afraid of death. Most people wish to escape from death. And, they need any such reason to escape. And, Gu Du Xing had himself thrown out the reason at this time.

This reason had obviously made some people restless.

Three of them signalled each other with their eyes. They then suddenly spoke-up, "We three people wish to go in a different direction in accordance with the Young Clan Lord's words. We can also attract some enemies away for the Young Clan Lord..."

A cold light flashed in Gu Du Xing's eyes as he said, "Take care!"

He didn't even turn his head as he continued to speed-along with the other people. So, only these three people remained there as a result...

The three of them looked at each other at first. They then chose another direction, and started to proceed forward.

"Boss, would we genuinely attract some enemies for them?"

"You're foolish, ah... The Ou Clan will attack from all sides from their base camp. Those guys are screwed. How can we three help them? Hurry up, and run for your life!"

"We can't go to the Gu Clan after we've abandoned the Young Clan Lord since that will also be a dead end for us. So, it's pointless to give the news to the Clan. Let's just run away!"

The shadows of the three men vanished in the dim of the night.

"Young Lord, we shouldn't ignore the decrement of our manpower," An old King Level Expert of the Gu Clan looked-on as his subordinates fled. In fact, he had flown into a rage because of it. He was about to chase after them so that he could execute them with his own hands. But, Gu Du Xing had stopped him.

"Third Uncle, you're being overanxious. The danger is huge at this juncture. So, we needed to ensure that our team was honest and pure!" Gu Du Xing profoundly smiled and said, "These men

threw away the friendship and fled. So, there's no guarantee that these men wouldn't have beheaded us to save their own lives. And, we can't take such a risk right now. Therefore, it was better that we made them leave beforehand."

"Du Xing is right," Chu Yang added, "Besides, these people have run away. And, it's obvious that the Ou Clan knows that there are sixteen people in our party. So, the news of these three people running away would definitely reach the Ou Clan. Therefore, the Ou Clan won't allow them to slip away since they would find it hard to avoid the road to disaster even though these three guys have secretly absconded. Moreover, they have unintentionally become another target of the enemy's pursuit!"

"You're right. That is indeed the case," The old King Level Expert named Gu Qing Feng carefully thought over what he heard. And, he couldn't help but be frightened in his heart. He then looked at Chu Yang and his brother. However, he noticed that they didn't seem worried. He knew that these brothers had already thought this through. He couldn't help as he drew a long sigh and muttered, "These youngsters will surpass us in no time!"

The two elders of the Ou Clan got distracted by Chu Yang's cloth-diversions, and wandered around for a long while. Then, they eventually found the right direction. But, they were already four-hundred kilometres behind Chu Yang and the others by now!

"Send the news to the clan without delay, and inform them that they've gone into the Chill Wind Forest! They were initially sixteen in number. But, there are three less now. They must've gone to seek help. It's important to kill those three men as well! They mustn't be allowed to get away since their survival will cause a lot of trouble," the Eighth Elder hurriedly spoke-up while flying forwards.

The Ninth Elder took out a little golden falcon from his bosom. He wrote several words, and hung the paper on its leg. Then, he loosened it from his hands, and the little falcon hurriedly flew

away. It hovered in the sky, and disappeared without a trace.

The two elders gave a quick look to each other, and accelerated the pace of their chase.

...

"This is the Chill Wind Forest in front of us!" Gu Du Xing extended his hand, and pointed forward. They could only see darkness in the front. There were dark clouds and mists gathered all-around. The chilly wind was roaring. And, the cold Yin energy was blowing in a range of several kilometres.

"This Chill Wind Forest has an unusual climate. And, terrain here is very unique because of this. In fact, one can't even see the sun in broad daylight since the clouds and mist are always gathered here. Moreover, one can't even see the person who stands opposite to them when the situation becomes extreme..."

Dong Wu Shang feared that Chu Yang might not understand this since he had just come up from the Lower Three Heavens. So, he was constantly explaining these aspects.

"It's a good place!" Chu Yang's eyes lit-up.

"Two men are chasing after you at the back. It seems like there's a first grade Emperor Level Expert among them. And, the other must be a second grade Emperor Level Expert," the Sword Spirit hurriedly uttered and reminded him inside his mind, "They are the ones who were chasing after you earlier."

"So quick..." Chu Yang muttered to himself.

"These two men must've been sent out as an advance party. So, there must still be time for the main troops to arrive," the Sword Spirit reminded.

"So to say... there are only two people right now?" Chu Yang rolled his eyes and exposed a cold murderous aura on his face.

"Du Xing, we will enter the Chill Wind Forest, and lie-in-wait to

ambush them!" Chu Yang whispered as they dashed forwards, "Two Emperor Level Experts of the Ou Clan are chasing after us. And, this is the only opportunity to attack them since they are alone!"

"Alright!" A sharp light flashed in Gu Du Xing's eyes. He waved his hand and shouted, "Speed up!"

Everyone crossed two-or-three kilometres like dark clouds with a few whooshing sounds, and entered the Chill Wind Forest. The cold winds and the gloomy fog that prevailed in the air swallowed everyone's figures as they entered the forest...

Gu Du Xing issued an order as soon as they entered, and everyone came to a halt. After that, he started to make arrangements since there wasn't enough time to explain anything. He placed the remaining seven King Level Experts together in a relatively safer place.

Chu Yang put Mo Qing Wu on a tree in a distant place. However, Mo Qing Wu felt an increasing amount of pain in her heart as she watched Chu Yang turn around and leave. [I want strength! I want strength! I want strength, Ah! I must be at Elder Brother Chu Yang's side to help him whenever he fights. I don't want to see him from afar and be worried, ah...]

Mo Qing Wu felt a very strong urge in her heart...

Chu Yang was obviously the one who positioned the brothers.

"Du Xing, Ji Mo, you stay in the left... Wu Shang and Ke Di, you stay in the right... And, I will be in the middle!" Chu Yang looked at the four brothers in a commanding manner, "I will use a method as powerful as thunderbolt, and I will make them fall into a defensive situation in one fell swoop. Then, you guys will seize the opportunity and attack them! You must land a decisive blow on the enemy in the first strike itself. Our opponents are two Emperor Level Experts. Don't let them have the slightest opportunity to counter-attack!"

"Yes!"

The four people complied in unison.

They drew their swords and sabers out of the sheaths, and held them in their hands. They would’ve made sounds if they were to draw their swords and sabers when the time for the attack would be upon. And, those sounds could’ve alerted the enemy. Therefore, they took out their weapons ahead of time!

"They want our wealth, and we want their lives!" Chu Yang coldly said, "This is only the beginning!"

Chu Yang made a signal with his hand, and everyone held their breaths.

...

Chapter 518: Emperor Level Experts Can Be Killed! A Notion!

It was late in the night. Perhaps it could be said that it was very early in the morning. However, it had become increasingly dark inside the Chill Wind Forest. The chilling wind was blowing with a whistling sound. In fact, it was issuing the sounds similar to that of ghost's crying and a spirit's howling!

The shadows of two men arrived at the entrance of the Chill Wind Forest with a flash.

These were the Eighth Elder and the Ninth Elder of the Ou Clan!

Both of them went sideways in a flash, and hid behind a boulder. They then cautiously examined the surroundings until they were assured that there was no danger in the vicinity. [The enemy must've entered the Chill Wind Forest.]

"Let's go in and have a look!"

Eighth Elder and the Ninth Elder looked at each other, and it seemed as if they had sensed what was going on in each other's minds. [It's true that the Chill Wind Forest is all-black and has no daylight. But, this is advantageous for us. We can't see the enemy. But, it would be even more difficult for the enemy to see us! And, that's because the divine sense detection of an Emperor Level Expert is much stronger than that of a King Level Expert! So, the higher the cultivation level — the greater the advantage!]

These two Emperor Level Experts could easily kill the enemy as long as they knew the target's position. Moreover, they could at least constrain them till the break of the dawn even if they couldn't kill them. And, they could execute them later once the main team would arrive!

The two of them had made up their minds. So, they went floating inside the Chill Wind Forest, and issued whistling sounds as they

moved!

These two had gone inside the forest. So, it would be impossible for the enemy to find their trails. However, these two were Emperor Level Experts. So, they could easily track things in the dark.

Therefore, they weren't worried even though they were vigilant.

Their self-confidence was completely reasonable because Chu Yang and the others couldn't find them! But... Chu Yang had an over ninety-thousand years old Sword Spirit within him!

Suddenly, the sound of floating air was heard. It sounded like the wailing of ghosts and howling of wolves. And, these two men couldn't help but smile in a bitter manner. [This Chill Wind Forest is indeed worthy of its name.]

They launched their divine sense detection, and moved forwards very cautiously...

It was already pitch-dark at the distance of only three or four steps ahead.

Chu Yang made the first move in this dense fog without the slightest hesitation as they entered the Chill Wind Forest! His black robe fluttered as he appeared in the dense fog like a devil god. His sword then flashed as he made the move without making any sound. 'What harm is there in slaughtering the whole world'!

The two elders had seen extreme darkness as soon as they had entered the forest. So, they had subconsciously closed their eyes.

There was sudden turbulence in the dense fog up ahead at this time. And, an extremely sharp sword-light suddenly appeared as this happened. In fact, it came head-on so powerfully that it seemed as if it could wipe out everything in a range of five-hundred kilometers!

This sword-attack had come so suddenly that it was beyond the expectations of these two men! In fact, there hadn't been any sign

of the sword-light before it had appeared! However, the sword-light had appeared before their eyes by now!

These two Elders of Emperor Level cultivation had never seen such a terrifying sword blow in their hundred years of experience!

The two of them simultaneously felt trapped in this boundless murderous aura! And, they felt a chill in their bodies!

They bellowed and hastily aroused their fighting spirits to counterattack. Both of them drew their swords out of their sheaths along with two ‘clang’ sounds, and prepared themselves to face the attack of this sword-light! But, they couldn’t produce their best strength since they were in a rush!

Besides, they were facing a sword technique that had been present on this Nine Heavens Continent for tens of thousands of years!

Moreover, it was the number-one sword-art in the entire world!

The sword issued an increasing amount of murderous aura!

‘What harm is there in slaughtering the whole world’!

The sword-light issued a sound of thunderclap, and it seemed as if a thunderbolt had come down from the Ninth heaven!

The sword-light suddenly clashed with the swords of these two men like a lightning!

A crackling and rattling sound was heard, and the swords they had been using for a lifetime were reduced to tiny fragments in a spilt second. The sword energy wildly rushed over, and both of them spouted out blood with ‘puff’ sound! However, the sword attack’s power continued to rush over madly and aggressively!

Chu Yang felt a smother in his chest and bloody taste in his mouth during this clash with their sword light. And, that was because of the strength of the counterattack of these two men. He almost puffed out blood from his mouth. But, he endured this and

unleashed another sword-light. He had ferociously issued two moves in quick succession. ‘A sharp will buried deep will not change’ and ‘Gather wind and cloud to rule over all’!

Chu Yang wanted to use all the sword moves of the Nine Tribulation Sword in one spurt of energy. But, he had just unleashed these two moves, and he was already feeling a piercing pain in his chest! These Emperor Level Experts hadn’t put their entire strength while counterattacking, but Chu Yang’s cultivation wasn’t high-enough to allow him to take the impact that easily. So, Chu Yang had to give up on his original plan.

However, the advantage was such that these two sword moves had filled the surroundings with sword-lights. And, this had abruptly surrounded them in a seemingly inescapable net!

The sword-light poured like rain. Moreover, the sword energy was moving randomly all across! Countless ‘shua’ sounds were heard as both of them received several wounds on their bodies. In fact, their wounds were so deep that their bones could be clearly seen. And, their blood gushed out like fountains as a result!

Both of them had been scared out of their wits at first! Then, they re-collected themselves and crazily struck out their palms to defend themselves as they retreated in desperation.

Chu Yang would’ve completely exhausted himself if they hadn’t drawn back, and had stubbornly continued to withstand his attacks until the formidable power of those two sword moves had come to exhaust. Then, he would’ve posed no threat to them. Moreover, Chu Yang’s initial arrangement wouldn’t have worked either...

However, they had no other choice but to draw back. The first sword attack had already left them scared, and had managed to damage their courage! In fact, they had become certain, [There’s an Emperor Level Expert on the opposite side! Moreover, it’s a Sword Emperor!]

[Otherwise, how could he have sent out such fierce and swift sword move? And, such an enormous and powerful sword attack at that...?]

Not drawing back while facing a Sword Emperor in the dark would be akin to courting death! Only drawing back at first, and holding their grounds thereafter may turn this defeat into victory. This was the only way their lives would've been saved! Therefore, they had no other choice but to draw back at first!

However, this retreat had sent them closer to the edge of the knife!

A bone-chilling 'sword intention' was issued out from the left side. The Sword King Gu Du Xing had attacked! The sword came out piercing like a viper before the sword intention. It was targeted at the heart of the Eighth Elder!

Meanwhile, a sword light came out flying like a cylinder. Ji Mo's body united with the sword light and silently flew up in the sky. Then, he recklessly shot a killer attack from the left side of the Eighth Elder.

...

The Ninth Elder drew back while stumbling on the right side. He let out a painful cry. But, a tall and sturdy silhouette jumped up high in the sky before he could react. A heavy black saber slashed down in fierce manner with a type of power that could chop a mountain!

This saber-attack didn't have any move behind it! It didn't have any crafty martial skill either! But, it was concentrated with vigor! This was a sure-shot killer attack!

It could be said that the entire sky would've been torn apart if it were to stand in this blade's path!

More and more sword-lights came piercing like vipers from behind! Actually, it was Second Master Luo – Luo Ke Di who had

sinisterly blocked the escape routes for this Emperor Level Expert!

Ninth Elder let out a scream in despair. The combination of three exceptional attacks had suddenly been launched on him in quick succession. His body had already sustained serious injuries. So, he was in a state of panic and confusion. So, he would've never thought that a mad Sword King would be lying in wait in his retreat route!

He lifted his left hand in panic, and circulated his martial power to defend against the incoming black saber. Then, he hurriedly took out a small and exquisite dagger from his right hand, and lifted it upwards to face the attack! His body also flew backwards as this happened. His arm may get chopped off, but he could save his life from that vicious sword attack as long as he could block the saber attack with his left hand!

Cha!

The big saber suddenly chopped-off his left hand!

The dagger in his right hand faced the saber-attack. The saber had seemingly hacked down with the entirety of the indifference of the world combined!

Dong Wu Shang looked like a sovereign king with the saber in his hand! It seemed as if he reigned over the world, and no one could dare to disobey him!

This was his innate imposing bearing. And, no one could imitate it.

Ding!

The dagger broke down!

The forehead of this Emperor Level Expert was slashed by the ferocious power of the big saber! And, blood gushed out!

Luo Ke Di didn't hold back his sword-attack at this moment. And, it went piercing through the middle of this Emperor Level Expert's

back. The two attacks from the front and the back had taken away the life force of this Emperor Level Expert!

The big saber continued to fall. And, this Emperor Level Expert was chopped into two equal halves from the top of the skull to the crotch with a ‘shua’ sound...!

The Ninth Elder thrust out his palm whilst he was on the verge of his death. But, he had already become powerless by now! Dong Wu Shang kicked him. And, half of his body filled the entire sky with rains of blood.

Dong Wu Shang’s silhouette coldly appeared at this time. His tall and sturdy stature seemed like that of a legendary God of War! He looked towards Gu Du Xing’s fight with his saber-like sharp vision.

Gu Du Xing’s Black Dragon Sword rushed like a thunder with a speed that had exceeded that of light. And, the air-friction that had resulted from this short distance sprint of the Black Dragon Sword had managed to produce an incredible heat!

Puff!

The sword pierced the heart!

The Eighth Elder had the cultivation of second grade Emperor Level. But, he did get enough time to react. And, his heart got pierced by the sword. He continued to draw back as his feet trembled, and didn’t come to a stop!

Gu Du Xing began to draw back his sword as the Eighth Elder felt a pain in his chest.

However, the Eighth Elder exposed a cruel smile of despair on his face. He then suddenly threw himself forward, and the sword penetrated into his heart again.

"Du Xing, leave your sword!" Chu Yang shouted out loudly.

Gu Du Xing loosened up his grip, and fiercely flew back like an arrow. However, the Eighth Elder’s palm hit him with a loud

‘bang’. He had struck on one side of Gu Du Xing’s body with only less-than-half of his strength. However, Gu Du Xing spouted out a mouthful of blood, and his body was left to tumble over.

The Eighth Elder fiercely shouted, and strode forward to pursue and attack.

However, a light magnificently flashed in the air at this moment. Ji Mo’s body united with the sword-light and sped along with that brilliant light. The sword-light then swallowed the entire body of the Eighth Elder!

This second grade Emperor Level Expert didn’t even get the time to let out the final cry as his body got slashed into pieces of meat inside the brilliant sword light!

The sword-light disappeared. Ji Mo jumped up in the air, and grabbed the Black Dragon Sword. He then hurriedly rushed over, "Second Brother! Second Brother, are you alright?"

"Yes, I’m alright!" Gu Du Xing resisted the pain even though he felt as if half of his body was falling apart, and stood up. He stood perfectly straight, and took the Black Dragon Sword.

This fight had already ended even though it had barely started a moment ago! They didn’t get enough time to react, but everything had already been sorted out. Moreover, those two Emperor Level Experts had been ambushed to death in such an unjust manner!

Everyone felt somewhat thrilled as they looked at this scene.

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were still in a panicked state even though the fight had ended. They had set their hearts out to kill the enemy a moment ago. But, they still couldn’t think how it had come to happen. Their knees suddenly went weak as they recalled everything. In fact, they could barely endure it...

The hearts of Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing were also beating fast.

[Emperor Level Expert! Their existence used to be so aloof and

remote. And, we had dared to target such people. And, they've died at our hands...? Just like that...?]

"It seems like a King Level Expert can also kill an Emperor Level Expert!" Dong Wu Shang let out a long breath. That indescribable listlessness in his voice had gradually vanished. Instead, his killing intention had grown more and more, and had gradually turned chilling cold.

The saber-energy of his saber became increasingly wild! And, a kind of self-confidence wildly bubbled up inside him!

It seemed that this short fight had untied the Devil of Slaughter in his heart!

In fact, this hadn't happened to him alone. The temperament of Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had also changed after this fight! After all, these King Level Experts had killed Emperor Level Experts!

It was only an ambush. But, that invincible image of an Emperor Level Expert had begun to collapse in their hearts with a loud rumble!

This wasn't just a fight... it was a notion!

...

Chapter 519: I will become Sister-in-law, Ok?

One must know that Emperor Level Experts were basically considered at the top in the Middle Three Heavens! The big clans also had higher level experts of the Monarch Level, but those individuals were mostly old monsters of god knows how many years of age. In fact, they wouldn't even show up once in decades! And, the ones who were somewhat extreme wouldn't even show themselves in 100 or 200 years...

Moreover, even their own clans had no way to determine whether these people were still alive or not...

Therefore, the invincibility of the image of the Emperor Level Experts had been deeply carved in the hearts of every single person in the Middle Three Heavens for a long time. So much so that there was even a saying in the Middle Three Heavens that 'A clan which didn't have Emperor Level Expert couldn't establish a strong foundation after its expansion'!

The Emperor Level had become the lifetime goal for the youth of Middle Three Heavens. And, they used to strive hard to achieve it! And, this was why the Gu Clan had imprisoned Gu Miao Ling... after all, an elder's promotion to the Emperor Level had been interrupted by her actions!

It was undoubtedly a driving force. However, it was also an imperceptible shackle! Because... Emperor Level was paramount, and achieving it would be like a dream come true. However, what would happen once this life-long dream was materialized?

Therefore, many experts felt as if their job was done after they had cultivated to the Emperor Level. Mindset is of paramount importance for any martial expert! Therefore, the emergence of this feeling inside their hearts would basically leave them to believe that they had arrived at the finishing line!

Gu Du Xing and the others had also grown up in such clans. So, they were bound to have such a mentality as well. And, Chu Yang needed to smash it for them!

The Ou Clan hadn't attacked them yet. However, Chu Yang had taken the initiative, and had led his brothers to ambush and kill Emperor Level Experts! And, he had done this to shatter this mentality of theirs!

[This illusory legend of their hearts will be shattered only when Emperor Level Expert die in front of them... and, that too at their own hands!]

The reason why Chu Yang had arranged for this ambush and killing — his true purpose — was to help them walk past this very notion since it had occupied a very important position in their heart!

"This isn't limited to the Emperor Level exerts alone! We can also kill... a Monarch Level Expert in the same manner as long as we make proper arrangements!" Chu Yang smiled slightly. His voice was filled with a fanatical self-confidence. And, this self-confidence was rapidly spreading to his brothers as well!

None of these five people spoke. But, their eyes were shining.

This glow signified a breakthrough from the shackles on one's mind!

All of them felt that an intense fighting intention was seething within their hearts. In fact, they even forgot about their own physical injuries!

An idea had spontaneously arisen in everyone's heart. [We can kill Emperor Level Expert even though we are at the King Level. In fact, we could even kill Monarch Level Experts! So, won't it be possible to destroy Saint Level Experts once we reach the Monarch Level? And, if were to extrapolate like this...]

[A Supreme Level Expert is nothing...?]

Chu Yang let out a sigh of relief. He knew that his brothers had gotten through this notion. So, he finally felt relieved. However, he suddenly felt a sharp pain in his body at this moment...

Chu Yang's pre-emptive attack had been the most important action in that battle! However, the injuries he had received were also very serious. Thankfully, there was no need to worry because he currently had an unlimited supply of medicinal efficacies in his body. He also had the incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pills in abundance. So, he had everything he needed.

Every person popped a pill along with Gu Du Xing. And, their injuries healed not long after.

Gu Du Xing heaved a sigh of relief. He opened his eyes and said, "So, this is how it feels to kill a strong enemy! Ha-ha, it's quite ironical that I had arranged for seven more people to ambush the enemy. And, they would've come out to launch the final strike if we had failed. However, I didn't expect that there wouldn't be any need to call them..."

Everyone laughed.

"Our preliminary formation for this battle is indeed worthy of being proud of." Chu Yang summarized, "The aggression of Wu Shang, the strong spirit of Du Xing, and the courage of Ji Mo and Ke Di! This is the most valuable thing. And, this will also be our greatest advantage in the future. You guys must firmly remember the characteristics of each brother. The battle scenarios will be ever-changing in the future. So, we can only maximize our respective strong points in order to bring out our true potential."

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others nodded in a profound manner.

"Also, killing an expert... isn't an easy task. You can kill an expert, but what matters is how you do it! You can have self-confidence, but the one who is conceited and blinded by overconfidence... will inevitably weigh us down and drag everyone

to hell! We must keep this point in our minds!" Chu Yang profoundly added.

"Yes."

"The Ou Clan's people should be arriving soon. Everyone, get ready," Chu Yang issued an order. The brothers' bodies flashed as they went floating into the Chill Wind Forest.

Chu Yang picked up Mo Qing Wu, and strode into the forest as well.

However, he felt that something was off once they had covered some distance. Mo Qing Wu seemed to be somewhat silent compared to her usual self...

"Qing Wu, what's wrong?" Chu Yang asked, "Were you scared?"

"No." Mo Qing Wu pursed up her lips and shook her head with all her strength. But, her small mouth didn't say anything else.

"Don't tell me... are missing your home?" Chu Yang continued to probe.

"Definitely not," Mo Qing Wu shook her head again.

Chu Yang continued to make several guesses in quick succession. However, Mo Qing Wu would only shake her head in response.

Mo Qing Wu eventually pouted in an aggrieved manner and asked in a timid fashion, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, is Xiao Wu very useless?"

"Useless...?" Chu Yang was startled, "Where did that come from?"

"But... but, I always feel... that I have become a burden on Elder Brother Chu Yang," Mo Qing Wu made a sad face. She then said as she started to cry, "I can only hide and watch from the sidelines every time Elder Brother Chu Yang fights. You may win or lose, but I can only watch... I want to help you, Elder Brother Chu Yang. But, I don't have the strength... I don't have the strength... boohoo..."

Mo Qing Wu had spoken this while crying. She then used her small hands to wipe her tears, "I'm so useless..."

"How can Qing Wu be useless?" Chu Yang anxiously said, "Having Qing Wu by my side is the most useful thing ever. Elder Brother Chu Yang's mood gets better when he see Qing Wu after the fight. It's always fun to be around Qing Wu. Qing Wu's usefulness is beyond anyone's reach!"

"But, I am so weak..." Mo Qing Wu's mood suddenly brightened up as she whispered. In fact, the sad look on her face had also disappeared by now.

"So what if your strength is low...? That can be increase by practicing. Besides, Qing Wu is injured right now. Just you wait for 10-20 days. We will find Young Master Yu and take that stuff from him. Then, I can cure Xiao Wu's Three Yin Meridians. And, you will be able to cultivate once your Three Yin Meridians have been cured. And then, you will even surpass Elder Brother Chu Yang in a few days."

Chu Yang added with a gently smile, "Later, Elder Brother Chu Yang will even start to count on Qing Wu to protect him."

"Really?!" The cute little girl opened her eyes wide, and her eyes started to glisten with teardrops, "You aren't lying to me... are you?"

"Of course not!" Chu Yang vowed solemnly.

Mo Qing Wu had faith in him. So, her mood suddenly got a lot better. In fact, she even began to sway from side to side while riding on Chu Yang's neck. She then spoke-up in a merry tone, "Humph, humph, wait till I am able to cultivate again. I will protect Elder Brother Chu Yang. I won't let anyone bully him!"

She bent down to face Chu Yang, and looked into his eyes. And, her black hair suddenly fell over Chu Yang's neck. She blinked her eyes, and spoke-up in manner that made it seem as if she was

taking a vow, "Elder Brother Chu Yang can relax. I will protect you for a lifetime!"

"Eh... protect me for a lifetime..." Chu Yang was suddenly taken aback. In fact, he even let his imagination roam. [For a lifetime...]

"Yes! For a lifetime!" Mo Qing Wu nodded with all her might as she replied in a firm manner.

"That's great!" Chu Yang laughed and said, "Then, I shall remember this. Qing Wu will protect me for a lifetime."

"He he... hee hee hee hee..." Mo Qing Wu laughed merrily. Her calves were swinging in front of Chu Yang's chest. Chu Yang lowered his head, and started to daydream. He couldn't help but laugh foolishly when he recalled that part where had she said 'I will protect you'.

Neither of them spoke afterwards. There was a long period of silence before she asked in an apprehensive manner, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... you see, um... can I ask you a question?"

"What is it?"

Mo Qing Wu smiled in a pitiful manner as she asked in somewhat imploring way, "Whose hair is stitched... inside your clothes?" She diffidently looked at Chu Yang's face. She further added in a feeble voice, "Elder Brother Chu Yang's complexion looked so ugly that day..."

Chu Yang was suddenly rendered speechless.

He hadn't expected that this cute little girl would bring it up again. She had seen it that day, but she had held herself back until now. In fact, it must've been extremely difficult for her to hold-it-in for this long. However, the answer to this question was even harder to say...

"Well..." Chu Yang wanted to explain, but hesitated...

Mo Qing Wu seemed broken-hearted as she whispered, "Is it

Elder Brother Chu Yang's wife?"

"Eh... no, no... eh... no, no, no, no, no..." Chu Yang's body shook as he denied with all his might. [Fu*k... this is totally baseless. How did my wife come into this little girl's imagination... damn it, this matter is bullshit...]

"So it's not... phew..." Mo Qing Wu let out a sigh of relief. And, she immediately felt somewhat light in her heart. She didn't know why, but she felt happy when Chu Yang denied this.

Then, a snorting sound was heard. And, this was followed by a few words which seemed intended to investigate in detail, "Then... there is no sister-in-law?"

"What sister-in-law! There's no sister-in-law!" Chu Yang's breathing got louder. [Why is this little girl stuck with the word 'sister-in-law'?]

"There's no sister-in-law... great!" The little girl rolled her eyes once. Then, she spoke-up in a lovable manner, "Elder Brother Chu... I remember you had said to me in the Lower Three Heavens that you would make me your fiancée after you come over..."

The little girl had begun to turn over old accounts. Moreover, she had 'closed in on him' in a very rhythmic and systematic manner. She continued to pursue relentlessly before the final strike.

"Eh... uh..." Chu Yang rolled his eyes in a dispirited manner.

Meanwhile, Gu Du Xing and the others had held their breath for fear that they might get heard by Chu Yang. In fact, they had covered their mouths with all their might. And, their entire bodies were twitching...

"What 'eh''uh'..." the little girl spoke-up with a displeased pout. Then, she anxiously questioned, "Do you remember? Do you remember?"

"I remember. I remember," Chu Yang replied in an ambiguous manner. He was sweating profusely since he felt that... [Gu Du

Xing and the others aren't far. So, they can definitely hear this conversation. But, I am being forced by this little girl to confess...]

One should think about this situation... An eleven-year-old little girl was constantly interrogating him, and was asking sensitive questions like fiancée, sister-in-law, and such. And, he had no choice but to muster his courage and face the questions. Meanwhile, everyone else in the surroundings was eavesdropping...

"Do you admit or not?" Chu Yang didn't elaborate. So, this little girl flipped out and grabbed her Elder Brother Chu Yang's ears to make him confess...

"I admit! Of course, I admit!" Chu Yang nodded like a 'chicken that was pecking rice'.

"Humph. That is to say that there's genuinely no sister-in-law..." Mo Qing Wu pouted her little mouth in a victorious manner since she had a habit of pouting regardless of whether she felt wronged or happy. She then lowered her head. However, the expression on her face was entirely different by the time she faced upwards again...

"Of course not," Chu Yang hastily replied as he wiped his cold sweat.

"So, I will become the sister-in-law, ok...?" The little girl started to blush. Her vision was as clear as water even at such a young age. Chu Yang was shocked by this. He raised his eyes, and saw a bashful face that had a strong feminine touch to it...

Chapter 520: Who is the Hunter? Who is the Prey?

"Ha ha ha ha..." Ji Mo's body twisted as he rolled about. He was laughing out loud while rolling back-and-forth.

"You want to become sister-in-law... Well, we were also waiting to call you sister-in-law... ha ha ha..." Dong Wu Shang was also laughing uncontrollably.

Mo Qing Wu was struck dumb as she looked at these four individuals who had approached closer. Then, she suddenly blushed. In fact, it seemed as if she was shy. She then spoke-up with a stutter, "You... you guys..."

Luo Ke Di pinched his nose and wriggled his hips as he said, "Oh my... I remember you had said to me that you would make me your fiancée after you come over... uh-huh... then, I will become the sister-in-law, ok...? Ok...?"

"You... you guys...! I hate all of you! I hate you guys to death!" Mo Qing Wu became very bashful. She lowered her head and snuggled behind Chu Yang's back. Her small face had become burning hot. Her legs were hanging in front of Chu Yang's chest. And, she was continuously kicking with all her strength. But, she wouldn't raise her head to look up...

"Eh... it's all right..." Chu Yang was smiling while comforting her.

"Humph!" Mo Qing Wu snorted feebly, and became even more ashamed and indignant.

"Ha ha ha..." Gu Du Xing and the others laughed impudently. All of them had burst out laughing one-after-another.

"Humph! All of you are laughing... you eavesdrop on other people's conversation... then, you even laugh!" Mo Qing Wu kicked her calves angrily as a muffled sound came from Chu Yang's back.

"Ahm Ahm... don’t laugh," Chu Yang was at a loss. But, he had no choice but to use his authority as their Big Brother. He said, "What's so funny..."

"But, such a tiny little girl... wants to be our sister-in-law..." Ji Mo uttered a loud cry of anguish. His entire body twitched. In fact, he nearly got cramps all over.

A good while passed before everyone restrained their laughter under Chu Yang’s suppression. However, their bodies were still trembling even though they were enduring with great difficulty.

"It’s all right now. See... no one’s laughing." Chu Yang suppressed his own laughter and patted Mo Qing Wu’s hand.

Mo Qing Wu cautiously stuck out her head from behind Chu Yang, and saw everyone’s distorted faces since they were trying their best to suppress their laughter. She then made a sad face, and spoke-up in a displeased and annoyed manner, "Tell them to stop grinning!"

Then, she again shrunk back with a ‘swoosh’...

Chu Yang tried to coax her for a long time. And, he eventually managed to amuse this cute little girl. She blushed as she lowered her face with a helpless appearance on her face.

"Well, they dare to laugh at you now. So, you become their sister-in-law later, and teach them a lesson!" Chu Yang wrote a bounced check.

"Ok!" Mo Qing Wu nodded her head. She then pouted and angrily said, "You guys... just you wait and watch!"

Ji Mo grinned. He was about to laugh when he was stopped by Gu Du Xing, "This is no time to be laughing! You two fools! The enemy is approaching rapidly!"

...

The Ou Clan’s people were indeed approaching fast.

They had received the news, and the three Emperor Level Experts had rushed over at the fastest possible speed along with 30 King Level Experts! Later, a team of 6 King Level Experts had branched out to chase down and kill the three runway King Level Experts of Gu Clan.

However... there was a distance of hundreds of kilometers until they'd reach the Chill Wind Forest. So, it wasn't easy to reach there early.

The morning sun's light had illuminated the world. And, that was when the Ou Clan's experts finally managed to arrive at the Chill Wind Forest. They saw the chill winds flourishing and roaring before them. This place looked like the lair of demons and monsters. Everyone frowned when the saw this scene.

"Old Eight and Old Ninth? Where did they go?" The Second Elder knitted his brows. They had received no messages from the Eighth and Ninth Elders on their way here. And, this bewildered everyone.

The Third Elder said, "It is possible that those two have gone into the Chill Wind Forest to chase after the enemy."

"Could it be that something has happened to them?" the Fourth Elder spoke-up with some uncertainty.

"Ha-ha..." the Second Elder calmly laughed and replied, "Old Fourth, do you think... 20 or so King Level Experts are capable of killing an Emperor Level Expert?"

"But... 20 or so King Level Experts are perhaps capable of killing an Emperor Level Expert in a fight to the death if they were to go all-out at once. That's certainly a possibility," the Fourth Elder seemed startled as he replied.

"You mean those two...? One of them is a Second Grade Emperor!" Traces of disapproval flit across in the Second Elder's eyes.

"That's not possible," Fourth Elder said.

"Then, what are you still skeptical about?" The Second Elder scoffed. He then waved his hand and said, "Go in! There's a vast empty ground on the other side of the Chill Wind Forest. So, there's basically nowhere to hide! We have our men over there, and they are monitoring the situation from there. And, no news has come from there so far. This shows that those little bastards are still hiding somewhere in the Chill Wind Forest. So, there's no time to lose! We must go in and kill them."

"I believe that Old Eight and Old Ninth are also anxiously waiting for us in there," he continued with a brutal smile, "Kill the enemy as soon as you find them! Don't leave any witnesses alive! We are only responsible for bringing things back!"

"Yes!"

"We will break into three teams. The three of us will each lead a team that comprises of eight people. These three teams will take three different routes to search. Let out a long and loud shout to inform others once you've found them," the Second Elder made a prompt decision and said, "Assume the fan-shaped advancement formation. Ensure that the gap between the teams doesn't exceed 1000 feet! Also, the gap between people mustn't exceed 100 feet!"

"Yes."

"This matter shouldn't be delayed. Let's act immediately!" The Second Elder waved his hand, and the 27 people stealthily entered the Chill Wind Forest.

"There are signs of fighting here!" They had barely entered when someone discovered some traces.

"Look at this. It seems that the fight must've been very tragic. The bloodstains are concentrated. That means... the speed of attack must've been very fast! The fight would've ended in a very short period of time," The Second Elder lowered his head and

inspected, "There are sword fragments here. This place seems to have been cleaned, but the fragments can still be seen..."

He raised his hand in the air, and carefully examined a piece of fragment he had pinched between his fingers. He then said, "This fragment has a cloud pattern on it. Moreover, its bright luster indicates that this sword was doped with Star Steel! It is such a marvelous high-quality sword. How did it break into pieces?" He was suddenly startled as he spoke this. In fact, he had been scared by his own words.

[Isn't Old Eight's sword also doped with Star Steel?]

Third Elder and Fourth Elder also thought of this, and their complexions changed as well.

The three people looked around, and soon found several tiny fragments. Their faces became increasingly unsightly...

"Some of these sword fragments are exuding black vapor. This indicates that the sword is doped with Nightmare Steel... this is clearly Old Ninth's sword!" The Second Elder's countenance had turned more and more solemn.

"Those two men's swords were apparently shattered into small pieces here. Then... it means that they fought here. Then, whose blood is this?" There was fear in Third Elder's expression.

"Second Brother, you said that the fighting time must've been very short. And, their swords have been shattered. Then..." the Second Elder and Third Elder glanced at each other as the Fourth Elder spoke this. And, they saw shock in each other's eyes!

There was only one possibility... [Some people launched a surprise attack here. The Eight Elder and Ninth Elder had their swords shattered when confronted with this attack. And, both of them perished!]

"There are traces here!" someone shouted.

"Here too!"

These three inspected those nearby spots, and their faces sank thereafter.

There were specific traces left behind by someone leapfrogging with the entirety of their strength at those spots.

Moreover, the point of view of battlefield positions suggested that this must’ve been a premeditated sneak attack!

"However, sneak attack from these two sides shouldn’t have worked. There must’ve been a strong opponent on the opposite side. He must’ve attacked head-on to block those two, and must’ve pushed them back! And, only that could’ve allowed the people who were hidden on both sides an opportunity to strike! Moreover, the person who must’ve come from the opposite direction to launch a surprised attack should’ve had a cultivation that couldn’t have been weaker than those two!"

The Second Elder gritted his teeth and bitterly said, "In other words... there’s an enemy of First or Second Grade Emperor Level... or higher in this Chill Wind Forest."

[Damn! Old Eighth and Old Ninth must’ve suffered a great loss in an ambush like this! They may have even... died by now!]

Everyone’s complexions changed!

"We move further as planned! Make noise to give us a warning signal if any of you discover the presence of this expert! The three of us will have to do our best to get rid of this bastard in a spurt of energy. Otherwise, we will inevitably incur heavy casualties today," the Second Elder said.

"The enemy has such a person in their ranks. So, why should we separate?" Fourth Elder asked, "Shouldn’t we go in together?"

"Fool! Why would the enemy resort to a sneak attack if they had enough strength to kill us all in one fell swoop? This shows that this individual can only cope with one or two Emperor Level Experts even with a sneak attack’s help! His assurance isn’t that

big! Thing about it...! Do you think that will he dare to show up if all three of us are together?"

The Second Elder seemed disappointed in him. So, he continued in a teaching manner, "You must lure him out first!"

"I see." The Fourth Elder nodded.

The three teams entered the Chill Wind Forest immediately-after, and proceeded slowly according to the prior agreement. Everyone was cautious and solemn as this time. They had arrived brimming with confidence. However, they had completely lost it by now.

A team composed of such experts had become quite jittery at this time.

"They've entered the forest," the Sword Spirit said in Chu Yang's mind.

"How many people?" Chu Yang asked.

"27 people. One Third Grade Emperor Level Expert, two Second Grade Emperor Level Experts, seven Ninth Grade King Level Experts, and the remaining King Level Experts are at either fourth or fifth grade. They are divided into three teams, and are coming from three directions. Each team is being led by a respectable Emperor Level Expert. The leftmost team seems to be the strongest," the Sword Spirit carefully explained each and every detail.

However, the Sword Spirit suddenly felt somewhat aggrieved once he had said this... [Respectable Emperor Level Expert...? Motherfu*ker, since when have I started to call this group of trash as 'respectable'?]

"The Ou Clan really isn't holding back," Chu Yang sneered in his heart. [It can indeed be called as 'overkill' that they've dispatched troops of such capacity to deal with us youngsters.]

"The cloth diversion formation at the entrance must've aroused

their vigilance. And, that must've succeeded in making them think that there's a high level expert among us. Therefore, they haven't dared to come in rashly. In fact, they are advancing very cautiously," the Sword Spirit spoke-up somewhat jokingly.

"Well, our chances of winning are very big as long as they don't swarm around us!" Chu Yang nodded. A sinister smile appeared on his face.

"How are the preparations going?" Chu Yang turned his head to ask.

"Nearly done," Gu Du Xing seemingly replied without even listening to the question. Then, he further said, "Only the trap Luo Ke Di is working isn't ready yet. But, it should be done soon."

"Good," Chu Yang whispered, "They've entered the forest."

Gu Du Xing nodded, and silently moved back.

Dong Wu Shang and Ji Mo looked at each other from far away. And, they only saw each other's twinkling eyes in the midst of the roaring chill winds. The murderous intent was flaming in their hearts.

[The Ou Clan wants to deal with us purely by encircling us. They intend to hunt us down. However, they would've never thought that their prey has already transformed into the hunter!]

[And, they themselves have become the real prey. Moreover, the prey is willingly walking towards the hunter's trap...]

...

Chapter 521: Three Stars Divine Clan? Star Race?

"This is a dark and gloomy forest. There are great mountains on its left and right side. And, the mountains block everything from both sides. But, there is a mountain-pass dead-ahead. The mountain-pass is so narrow that even a weak wind makes very loud sounds when it blows through this mountain-pass. However, the factor that plays the most important role is a towering Iron Wood Forest that comes on the way from here to the mountain-pass. The sound of wind along with that of the movements of branches and leaves changes into intense sounds of ghost-like wailing when the wind passes through the Iron Wood Forest. This is the reason why this forest is called the 'Chill Wind Forest'.

"And of course, there are people who exploit the natural conditions of this place. There is groundwater in the subterranean territory of this forest. Moreover, it is a hot spring. The water vapours rise, but they don't get dispersed in the surroundings. They only get consumed within this forest, and remain gathered there. So, this forest continues to get denser and denser year-after-year!

"So, the positional set-ups play a decisive role under these circumstances!"

Chu Yang was explaining these things while making his strategies. His explanation was so detailed that the people who had been living in the Middle Three Heavens for a long time might not know so much about this forest.

This left Gu Du Xing and the others to feel a bit embarrassed. They also found it somewhat unimaginable, [Big Brother has recently come up from the Lower Three Heavens. How does he know this area far better than we do?]

"And, these factors prove as favourable conditions for us! It may

be disadvantageous at first, but it would be advantageous as long as we exploit it well! And, that's because it would be as disadvantageous for us as it would be for our enemy! You guys must remember these words under all circumstances!" Chu Yang insipidly concluded.

He was making use of his time to teach the theories he knew to his brothers!

Many of these theories were clichés. However, Gu Du Xing and the others were listening to Chu Yang very earnestly!

And, that's because there are some things which sound convincing only when they are said by the leader of the group instead of some 'random nobody' who merely believes in himself. This is a universal psychology of humans. For instance... everyone has heard the saying "it's only when it comes time to apply knowledge that you regret not acquiring enough of it" from a very young age. However, one realizes the true meaning of these words only after decades of years of experience when one has experienced the setbacks...

However, it has already been late at that time of realization.

"The most effective way to deal with the Ou clan is to ambush them and use poison against them!" Chu Yang calmly said, "So, we have to set a trap..."

"Slow down!" Ji Mo raised his hand. He didn't know whether to laugh or to cry as he asked, "Use poison...? Use poison against the Ou Clan? Big Brother, what are you thinking? They are experts in using poisons, ah."

"Um, it is unimaginable for you. So, it would be even more unimaginable for the Ou Clan!" Chu Yang sneered, "They have long been famous for using poisons. So, they have always been conceited. Therefore, they wouldn't be as cautious as an ordinary person if someone were to use poison against them! However... the only important thing is to think of some kind of poison that the Ou

Clan hasn’t discovered yet."

Gu Du Xing’s eyes lit up. He was beginning to feel increasingly incredible about the steps Chu Yang was taking. This wasn’t because his strategy was too brilliant or anything... It was because Chu Yang was attempting to exploit the blind spot of the enemy. And, this was something that the others simply couldn’t think of!

Just this point itself had put them at an invincible position!

Perhaps nobody in the entire Middle Three Heavens had ever thought of using poison to deal with the Ou Clan.

In fact, he was continuously thinking while Chu Yang was talking, [what poison should be used to deal with the Ou Clan? Using an ordinary poison would be akin to making a fool of ourselves. We must use a poison that they can’t detect. Moreover, we must make a clever plan...]

"There are 700-800 pounds of Poisonous Flood Dragon’s meat!" the Sword Spirit spoke-up in Chu Yang’s mind, "I can extract the poison... Moreover, this poison... is very deadly. However, it will contaminate the place where it would be used. And, that place will remain a poison land for a long time, and that will inevitably harm the innocents."

Chu Yang’s eyes lit up as he replied, "That won’t be an issue. I can smear the poison on our weapons and bodies. So, it would be limited to these two parts that way. Then, we will kill the enemies and clean up. But, it’s a pity that the original trap will go to waste... So, let’s do it this way... we will still use our initial plan. But, we will put up a warning sign to warn people that this is a poisonous area..."

The Sword Spirit became silent for a while. He then said, "This decision is yours to make. The Middle Three Heavens is one massive landscape. And, there are only a few innocents among the people of Jiang Hu... Moreover, the ones who may enter the Chill Wind Forest are most likely not going to be good people anyway.

So, it doesn’t matter even if they die."

Chu Yang nodded and replied, "Let it be that way if that’s the case."

Chu Yang didn’t feel anything towards this. [Just as Sword Spirit said... How many innocent are there among the people of Jiang Hu? The Middle Three Heavens adheres to the law of jungle more strongly. Which men have come here and haven’t submerged in the cluster of blood debt?] Chu Yang had always assumed a decisive stance whenever it came to making decision to kill.

It was soon informed that Luo Ke Di had made the preparations on his end.

The Sword Spirit promptly reminded, [The Ou Clan’s people aren’t far away.]

Chu Yang immediately kick-started the plan, "Ji Mo! Get into action!"

Ji Mo shouted in a strange manner, "Don’t worry... Ahwooh~~~ Dog Aunt!"

Everyone laughed.

...

The Ou Clan’s people were spread out in a big fan-shaped formation. Three elders were in the middle of their respective troops. And, they were advancing forward as a slow pace.

They felt more and more gloominess and moisture as they went deeper into the forest. Although it was broad daylight, but clouds and mist were still curling up all around. So, the line of sight had become extremely hazy. In fact, their eyes were almost useless since nothing could be seen beyond twenty or thirty feet.

Therefore, everyone had become more alert. In fact, no one dared to be negligent.

They continued to go deeper, and half-an-hour had passed soon-

enough. Suddenly, faint sounds of fighting were heard from a distance.

[Could it be that some people are already fighting here?] The Second Elder and the others were startled. They rapidly went towards the place from where the sounds were coming. The more they moved forwards... the more intense the fight felt to be...

The Second Elder puckered up his white eyebrows. He then said in a low and deep voice, "It seems that many people are besieging a person!"

The other people looked at each other. They then started to move forward more carefully.

[Who is fighting? Is it one of the men that we are chasing after? It would be very good if that's the case!]

The faint sounds had turned into loud sounds of cussing by now.

"...Kill this freak! Quickly! The Ou Clan is about to reach..."

"Everyone attack!"

"Let's attack him all at once!"

...

The Second Elder smiled. It seemed as if he had been relieved from a burden. He exposed cruel killing intention in his eyes, "Brats! We finally overtook you!"

[But, who are they fighting against?]

An odd rumbling sound came along with a furious voice at this moment. It seemed as if the person who was speaking was extremely angry. Moreover, it seemed that he was extremely aggrieved, and couldn't take it anymore.

"This... what is he saying?" an expert of the Ou Clan leant his ear in puzzlement, but he couldn't understand anything that he heard. However, he wasn't the only one. The other people of the Ou Clan were puzzled as well. They also tried to hear closely, but couldn't

understand anything. In fact, they were unable to make any sense of what they heard.

They went a few steps in. Suddenly, several metal clanging sounds echoed along with loud cries.

Then, an odd and extremely furious voice was heard, "... Dog in dog! Mi mi ta! Sister-in-law hometown! Wow, wait! Dog Aunt...!"

The Second Elder looked left and right in confusion. And, he found that everyone else also had a puzzled look on their faces.

"Is it possible that he's cussing at the other people?" an expert of the Ou Clan cautiously and solemnly guessed.

"The tone of this voice doesn't suggest that he's speaking words of praise..." another man knitted his brows and said, "But, what did he just say? How come I've never heard that before?"

A loud explosion was again heard at this moment. And, that voice again furiously said, "Sister-in-law hometown! Trash oil mud rice... woo this, woo that, wow howl? Whip chirp pout mommy Ou he nun wind and rain monkey! Wow, wait! Dog Aunt! Wow, wait! Dog Aunt!"

"Whatever he's saying sounds really bizarre!" An expert of the Ou Clan scratched his head, "I don't understand anything!"

Another expert also had a depressed look on his face. In fact, he was staring blankly... like a duck that was listening to the sounds of thunder.

The Second Elder, Third Elder and Fourth Elder were very experienced and knowledgeable. But, they couldn't make sense of these words either. However, they could sense the urgency in the voice of this man. Moreover, the fight had also become increasingly intense by now. Suddenly, a scream was heard, "Sister-in-law hometown! Dog Aunt, ah..."

The cussing sounds continued to be heard. Then, a scream was again heard. And, it seemed that the fight had shifted towards the

left side. The man seemed to have broken the siege. Then, it again seemed to have shifted to the right side...

"This man is injured," the Second Elder spoke-up with certainty.

"Second Elder, it's a very wise observation. You have made the exact judgement of the situation of the fight with the help of these small clues. That is indeed godly!" An expert who was standing next to him had a look of admiration on his face. The Second Elder stroked his beard and nodded in a flattered manner.

However, everyone else looked at that guy disdainfully. [Motherfu*ker, this guy's cry was so pitiful. He is obviously injured. Even a child can deduce this... And, this is a wise observation in your opinion? Would you shout like that in normal situations if you were at that man's place...?]

[To think that you'd flatter him like this... how very disgusting!]

"Go and encircle! Don't make any sound!" the Second Elder made a prompt decision and waved his hand as he gave the order.

His voice hadn't even faded yet, and the Fourth Elder's men went over there and surrounded the area.

They went flying over. However, they didn't get the time to begin the attack when they suddenly saw some movements up ahead in the thick fog. They saw a person's shadow falling down. This person appeared to be in an extremely distressed state. Then, this person flew over to several hundred feet. He then fell down on the ground again. Then, he stood up... but again collapsed. He then cussed in a loud voice, "Slight squint! Together gang up! Sister-in-law hometown! Wow, wait! Dog Aunt... Dog Aunt..."

Everyone looked at this. They couldn't help but suck in cold air.

This person's stature appeared to be thin. He wasn't tall. And, he looked grotesquely shaped. His hair was colorful. And, he had a strange horn sticking out from his hair. His nose was sticking upward, and it seemed somewhat twisted. Surprisingly, one of his

eyes was red and the other one was blue.

The flesh wounds on his body were so twisted that it was too horrible to lay eyes on them. He had wounds all over his body, and blood was gushing out of them. The strangest and most surprising thing was that the blood which was flowing out of his body was sparkling and translucent. In fact, it seemed as if starlight was flashing out of the blood from his wounds. Moreover, there was an eye-catching symbol on his forehead. This symbol seemed to resemble a golden star...

"This is a person of Star Race of the Three Stars Divine Clan!" the Second Elder was indeed worthy of being called ‘experienced and knowledgeable’. He had managed to recognize this even while looking from afar. Everyone exclaimed in admiration at the same time. [The Second Elder is genuinely erudite and informed.]

However, the Second Elder’s mind was still filled with suspicions, "No wonder we couldn’t understand what he was saying... that’s because it is a person from the Star race of Three Star Divine Clan. But, why will someone from Star race appear here?"

That strange person lay on the ground. He raised his head, and realized that he had been encircled by many people. And, his eyes immediately emitted a panic-stricken look as he realized this. He then started to crawl back. He seemed to be stuck in a dilemma as he said, "Dog in dog! Sister-in-law hometown! Sister-in-law hometown! I cry! Tired... Dog Aunt!"

...

Chapter 522: Ji Mo's Trap!

Everyone looked at each other in dismay. [Who understands... the language of this person of the Three Stars Divine Clan?]

They were about to speak-up when they saw the pitiful appearance of this guy. But, they then heard the sounds of movements in the thick fog, "Everyone, run away, ah! People of the Ou Clan have come." Several 'shua' sounds transmitted and vanished immediately-after.

The Second Elder and Third Elder angrily rebuked and chased after the sounds. But, they found no one there. They only saw a huge patch of bloodstain on the ground!

"Who are you? You are from the Three Stars Divine Clan, aren't you?" The Fourth Elder wrinkled his brows. He looked at this strange guy who lay on the ground. He wanted to step forward and touch him. [How does this fellow have such an ugly appearance? He may be from the Three Stars Divine Clan... but, such an appearance is a little ugly even from their standards...]

"I cry! So greasy? I cry! So greasy...? Dog Aunt! Dog Aunt!" that guy shouted in alarm.

It was quite clear that the Elder didn't understand anything that this guy was saying. Similarly, that guy didn't understand what the Elder was saying.

They didn't understand each other. So, they merely looked foolishly at each other for a while...

The Fourth Elder and the people on his side looked at each other in dismay. [His language makes no sense. What should we do now?] No one knew how to interrogate this guy as they listened to his pitiful and hoarse screams.

A King Level Expert of the Ou Clan voluntarily came forward from behind. This guy had a mute younger brother back at his

home. So, he knew the sign language very well. Everyone felt relieved when this happened, [How did we forget about this guy? He should be able to interpret to some extent...]

The King Level Expert walked to the front of this freak-show. He then made a gesture to indicate ‘beating’. Then, he made a gesture to indicate ‘injuries’. Then, he extended his hand and pointed out in the direction in which Chu Yang and the others had escaped. After that, he asked, "Uh-huh?"

The eyes of this weirdo of ‘Three Stars Divine Clan’ immediately lit up. He stood up and made a gesture as an indication of ‘beating’. Then, he made a gesture to indicate a ‘sneak attack’. He then resentfully spoke-up in a hubbub manner, "Trouble smell! I cry! Tired... howl repair howl? Dog Aunt!"

That expert nodded in affirmation. He then made expressions of sympathy and understanding. Then, he made an angry gesture and a gesture indicating pursuit and attack. Then, he patted on his chest. He made a gesture of courage and bravery and asked, "Uh-huh?"

It meant, [I will help you take revenge? Alright?]

This weirdo of the ‘Three Stars Divine Clan’ was suddenly incited by this. So, he made a circle using his hand. Then, he drew the people before him inside that circle. Then, he drew a larger circle. Then, he placed a foot in front, and the other foot in the back. He then made the gesture that indicated pursuit-and-attack. Then, he again jumped two steps back to his original spot. He then asked in an enthusiastic manner, "I cry! Tired? Uh-huh?"

"Uh-huh!" That King Level Expert nodded in affirmation. He thought, [We are lucky to have this guy to guide us. He will help us find Chu Yang and his gang.]

"Ahwooh~~ Dog Aunt!" The weirdo of the ‘Three Stars Divine Clan’ jumped in excitement. But then, he started to groan. He looked at the wounds on his body and looked anxious. Then, he

raised his head and looked at the Fourth Elder and the others. He spread out his hands while making a contorted and painful face, "Ahwooh! Ahwooh! Dog Aunt...?"

"He means that he's in a lot of pain right now. He is heavily injured and doesn't have any strength." The Expert of the Ou Clan looked at the Fourth Elder. He then interpreted in advance, "This 'Ahwooh' must mean 'being in pain' in the Three Stars Divine Clan's language."

The Fourth Elder looked at this guy from top to bottom... as if he was a worn out sack. After that, he puckered his brows. [The appearance of this guy leaves me to believe that most of the healing medicines that we have with us will be used. Should we waste them on him?]

He then hesitantly looked that the shivering body of this weirdo of the 'Three Stars Divine Clan'. Just then, he shouted in despair, "Ahwooh! Ahwooh... Ahwooh ah... Ahwooh..."

Then, he slowly and softly slumped down on the ground... And, his hands and feet began to twitch.

"Heal him!" the Fourth Elder hatefully looked and shouted. And, everyone began apply healing medicine all over the wounds of this guy as a result. This guy was shouting 'Ahwooh' on the one hand. However, he would wrinkle his face, while his hands seemed restless on the other. Moreover, he was shaking hands with everyone who was coming over to put medicine on his wounds out of courtesy. In fact, he would continuously shout 'Ahwooh' if someone would refuse to shake hands with him.

Therefore, the four King Level Experts held their noses and shook hands with him since they didn't have a choice.

After that, that King Level Expert who was translating this weirdo's language also circulated his spiritual power to give him a little treatment of internal injuries. This guy stood up once he had received the treatments. He then issued two 'Ahwooh' sounds with

a painful look on his face. Then, he fished out something from his armpit. The thing that he had fished out seemed to be a dark pill which was similar to a dirt ball rubbed from the body. Then, he tossed it in his mouth, and chewed it for some time while making loud chewing sounds.

Everyone looked at this act, and couldn't help but feel nauseated. [Did this guy just rub out filth from his body? And, he then ate it as medicine? Motherfu*ker... I have never seen such a disgusting thing. Three Stars Divine Clan is really Three Star Divine Clan... he is so fu*king illiterate.]

Everyone cussed in rage within their hearts as they resisted throwing up with great difficulty.

However, what occurred before them at that moment left everyone surprised. The wounds on the body of this weirdo started to heal at such a fast speed that the transformation could be seen with naked eyes... The entirety of his wounds had gotten healed, and had turned into scars not long after.

After that, they saw this guy extending his hand and caressing the wounds with his hand. Then, the scars also started to fall off... He exercised his arms and legs a bit thereafter. And, he was unexpectedly able to move them freely by now!

Everyone's eyes popped out at once. [Can this kind of medicine even exist in this world?]

Then, they suddenly thought, [You had such a good medicine. So, why did you use ours?]

"Ahwooh. Dog Aunt! Beautiful beautiful trouble dog!" This weirdo looked at his own body and nodded in satisfaction. After that, he disdainfully looked at everyone. His gaze meant – [your medicines are too inferior!]

Everyone almost fainted...

[Damn it! A weirdo of Three Stars Divine Clan is looking down on

us...]

The eyes of the Fourth Elder lit up. [If we can get our hands on the recipe of this mysterious medicine after this matter is resolved... ah... how would the Ou Clan not make a rapid advancement if that happens?]

[This is indeed a heaven-sent opportunity for our Ou Clan!]

The weirdo turned around. He seemed to be impatient. He then made a gesture, and indicated pursuit-and-attack with his hands. Then, he made a gesture as he cupped his hands on the ground. He was very anxious as he shouted 'Ahwooh'. Then, he made a gesture by putting his hand in the pocket of his clothes...

The anxious look on his face indicated that he had become late for something.

"Um, he is saying that there is a treasure over there. He fought with those people for the treasure. The treasure is very important. They will take it away if we don't hurry..." The King level Expert who was translating was indeed very intelligent. He was even able to explain the body movements of this freak...

[Is it a good thing that this weirdo is worried?]

Everyone's eyes lit up. They then moved forwards with urgency.

This weirdo was very familiar and at ease with the surroundings. In fact, he passed through the dense fog as if it was his home.

The Fourth Elder and his men closely followed behind him. The men of the Fifth Elder outflanked from another direction. The men of the Second Elder diverted a little bit, and took the aerial route as they jumped from tree to tree. Everyone had held their breaths tightly. It seemed as if they were making a three-dimensional attack from three sides! They didn't wish for those guys to have any chance of running away again.

However, the Fourth Elder and his men felt something soft under their feet as they were rushing forwards. They lowered their heads

and realized that they were standing in a ‘semi-swamp’ area. Moreover, this area seemed to be covered with dry leaves...

The soles of theirs shoes had become wet as a result.

That weirdo was still taking the lead as he moved forwards. And, the muddy water splattered everywhere along with the splashing sounds.

The Fourth Elder waved his hand, "Speed up!"

Everyone complied and went on following after that guy. It was getting softer and softer under their feet. And, the wetness was also continued to grow until their feet had been inundated. In fact, many water spots had gotten splashed on the calves of their legs.

They ran for a while and their legs were already dripping wet with the muddy water. It had even moistened their skins.

Only the Fourth Elder was wearing special kinds of boots that didn’t get wet. But, the other eight people couldn’t stay dry.

Finally, one of the King Level Experts felt a little itchiness on his calf. He couldn’t help but bend down and scratch a few times. He then unexpectedly found that a big lump of flesh was scratched out from his leg in this process. And, his pale bone was exposed as a result!

However, he didn’t even feel a little bit of pain!

Moreover, the fingers of his right hand had also been reduced to bones while he was scratching. The flesh and blood had evenly fallen off from the fingers as well...

This King Level Expert had shaken hands with that weirdo of the Three Stars Divine Clan a while ago... he immediately looked at his hand in fright. He suddenly felt so frightened that he didn’t even dare to breathe...

[There is deadly poison in this muddy water?!]

"What’s going on here? Boohoo..." This King Level Expert was

blank for a moment. Then, he asked while crying.

However, he suddenly looked ahead in the direction of the weirdo of the Three Stars Divine Clan, and suddenly screamed out in fear! His voice was so mournful that it seemed as if he had seen a ghost in front of his eyes!

The Fourth Elder quickly rushed over to look. He saw a big and freshly dug hole under a big tree in front of him! And, the weirdo was pointing his finger towards that big hole, and was shouting in a crazed manner. His complexion was sad and shrill, and his voice was mournful.

"Ahwooh! Ahwooh! Dog one attack. Pigs. Greasy unrestrained spicy! Greasy unrestrained spicy! I cry, tired!" this weirdo turned over, and continued to shout at the Fourth Elder.

The Fourth Elder asked in confusion, "Is it in there?" He pointed his finger to that big hole.

The weirdo repeatedly nodded. He pointed towards the Fourth Elder and shouted, "Greasy unrestrained spicy! Greasy unrestrained spicy! I cry, tired..."

The Fourth Elder puckered his brows.

[This is...] That King level Expert finally regained his senses. He shouted out loud, "Fourth Elder..." He then quickly dived forward to rush over.

The Fourth Elder instinctively turned his head. Suddenly, that weirdo gathered a lot of muddy water from underneath his feet, and started to splash the muddy water on everyone. The face and the neck of the Fourth Elder immediately got stained by the water as a result. He tried to open his eyes, but couldn’t open them.

The Fourth Elder was caught off guard since he had fallen into the trap. He angrily turned his head, "Bastard! You are trying to do..."

However, what appeared in front of him scared him out of his

wits. He saw that a bright light had suddenly appeared in front of him. That weirdo of the Three Stars Divine Clan had drawn out his fierce sword, and was rushing over towards him.

The eyes of the Fourth Elder were stained because of the muddy water at this moment. So, he was doing all he could to draw back. The long sword that he had raised in his hand also erupted into a brilliant sword-flower. He had made a counterattack to block the incoming blow!

He was confident that he would be able to block... no matter what kind of attack it would be!

However, the Fourth Elder was unaware that the weirdo would use the force of his counterattack and somersault back in the air. He then landed on a tree that was far away. Then, he laughed heartily, "You weren't able to understand? A bunch of pigs! Ah ha ha ha... Let me translate this for you — You dogs, you pigs, you all will die! You all will die! I cry, tired means 'fu*k you, motherfu*kers'! Do you understand it now? Ha ha ha..."

...

Chapter 523: Use Poison against Poison!

The fierce figure of this weirdo started to move amidst the sounds of loud laughter. He jumped down the tree with a ‘shua’ sound, and disappeared in the dense fog without a trace.

It was Second Master Ji Mo who was disguised as a person of the ‘Three Stars Divine Clan’! And, he had genuinely succeeded in playing this part.

The Fourth Elder was furious. He was about to pursue and attack. But, he suddenly noticed that his subordinates were looking under their feet with a frightened look on their faces. The Fourth Elder also looked down. And, he couldn’t help but scream out at what he saw. He then spouted blood from his mouth...

He only saw that his subordinates were dumbstruck while standing still. Their faces filled with despair. The people who had shaken hands with that freak were in more miserable conditions since their hands had been reduced to bones.

A few of them lifted their trousers to have a look. Then, they screamed even more pitifully since only bare-white bones had remained up to their calves to support their bodies...

There was no trace of flesh or blood on their calves. Moreover, a trace of blackness had silently started to spread upward on their bodies. And, the flesh had begun to rot wherever it had spread to...

Moreover, one couldn’t feel anything from this rotting!

"This... what kind of a poison is this?" the Fourth Elder fished out an antidote pill in a flurry. He then stuffed it into his mouth. It was said that the detoxifying medicines of the Ou Clan were the best in the entire Middle Three Heavens. However, he couldn’t feel anything even after he had popped a big pill.

The Fourth Elder wanted to lower his head so that he could take a look at his legs. But, he realized that he couldn’t see anything as he

lowered his head...

He held out his hand to touch his face since he was very frightened. But, he felt that a large chunk of flesh had fallen down, and he was touching only the bone that had remained.

"Old Fourth!"

"Old Fourth!"

The anxious voices of the Second Elder and the Third Elder were coming through from afar. They had obviously discovered this situation by now. Therefore, they had gone all-out to rush towards this side.

"Don’t come here!" the Fourth Elder gathered his remaining strength, and shouted at the top of his voice. However, his voice had a sobbing texture to it, "The water here is poisonous! You will be killed if you got infected! We are done for... Don’t come over! Don’t come over... No matter what..."

His voice had become hoarse as he spoke those last words. And, his tongue was spurt out of his mouth with a ‘puff’ sound immediately-after. His throat then issued an extremely hoarse cry. Then, he collapsed on the ground with his face upwards.

The eight people in the surroundings also became frightened and scattered in all directions... as if they would be saved if they were to leave this place. But, they could only run up to four or five steps. The bones of their calves had already rotten. So, they could no longer support their bodies. And, they eventually fell down in the water with plop sounds...

The Second Elder had literally flown to arrive here when he had heard the sounds of commotion from this place. And, he had immediately begun to descend when the Fourth Elder had shouted. However, he had become alert when he had heard the Fourth Elder’s warning. And, he had quickly grabbed the branch of a nearby tree. So, his body had gotten suspended in the mid-air as a

result...

The branch was on a verge of breaking as it issued a faint snapping sound. It seemed that he had been relying on a weak support to remain suspended from the tree.

The Third Elder also rushed over with his men in tow. And, the people of the Second Elder were also gathered together. However, the eighteen people were left dumbstruck when they saw the Fourth Elder and the other eight people of his team tumble into the muddy water, and slowly rot afterwards. They repeatedly tried to shout, but couldn't. They slowly wriggled and twisted. And, they gradually turned into skeletons. Their bones also melted gradually, and turned into the marsh after decaying...

Several bubbles appeared in the marsh. Then, there was a little turbulence in the water. After that, vapours rose up in the air, and got merged with the dense fog. And then, the marsh regained its state of tranquillity...

It now seemed as if nothing had happened here.

Even a miraculous detective wouldn't be able to tell that this tranquil marsh had swallowed nine human lives! Moreover, those nine individuals had been experts in their own merit. In fact, one Emperor Level Expert, and eight King Level Experts!

The Second Elder, the Third Elder, and the others watched their brothers die in front of their eyes in a daze. However, they were struck dumb, and were at their wits' end... as they saw them changing into skeletons, and then dissolving into the marsh water!

They felt so grieved that they wanted to die. But, they were helpless still!

The Third Elder looked at this marsh in a daze. His lips quivered as he nervously said, "Old Fourth... what kind of poison is this? Old Fourth... what kind of poison is this..."

The Second Elder looked up and let out a loud scream as tears

swirled down his face! He bellowed in deep sorrow, "Chu Yang! Gu Du Xing! You bastards! I take a vow in front of the heaven and earth – I swear I wouldn't be a man if I don't chop you bastards into ten-thousand pieces!"

The sound of several grim laughs was heard from afar in the dense fog.

"Chase after them!" The Second Elder's face was filled with a murderous look. He had gone mad in anger, "You think that you can use poison, and our Ou Clan can't?!"

...

Everyone was even more cautious during the chase this time. Each person was carrying a few little animals in their hands. And, they would first throw an animal into any marsh they'd find on the way. They would obviously do this in order to examine it for poison. Then, they would hasten-on with their journey based on the situation they'd encounter.

The trees all around were having a bad day since they would break the branches of the trees one by one. Then, they would throw them into the water, and rush forward while stepping on them.

Everyone was extremely cautious and timid. But, nothing happened on the contrary to their expectations. It was somewhat unexpected that what they were expecting didn't happen again the entire way.

This continued for a while. Then, they realized that the land under their foot had become increasingly soft. In fact, they were already half in the marsh even though it looked like solid-ground. So, they lowered their heads and took a look. And, they noticed that they were already inside a very faint stream of water.

The Second Elder took a deep breath. He first threw a snake into it. The snake panicking out of fear as it desperately wandered in

the marsh. However, everyone felt relieved when they saw this happen. The Second Elder wrinkled his brow, and thought of an exquisite plan.

He took a deep breath. Suddenly, a steaming black energy ferociously came out from his body. He slowly extended his hands in a manner that made it seem as if he was holding a little baby in his arms. The black energy rose up from his palm at first. However, it suddenly disappeared thereafter. Then, he pressed his palms on his Dantian.

A snow-white layer that could be clearly seen with the naked eyes started to emit out of the feet of the Second Elder. The snow-white layer touched the water on the ground. Then, it started to expand like snow-frost. It was so fast that it rapidly expanded far-and-wide on the ground in a short while!

Everything to which it had expanded became frosty in the entire area. In fact, it would even spread up and cover an entire tree if it came in contact with one. And then, that large tree would turn snow-white in an instant.

This strange whiteness was still spreading at a rapid pace. A few water snakes suddenly rushed out from the marsh. But, they began to twist once they fell into the range of this hoarfrost. Then, their bodies became stiff and motionless.

The small ants by the wayside also died due to poisoning. There were some birds on the trees. They also fell down with ‘pop’ sounds. The Chill Wind Forest had suddenly changed into a dead region!

Poisonous Evil Divine Art!

This was a secret technique of the Ou Clan! In fact, it was so secretive that it hadn’t been passed-on to everyone. There were only some out of all the people of the Ou Clan who could use it! However, the Second Elder had already mastered this technique due to his cultivation level.

[Chu Yang and others will undoubtedly die if they come within the range of this white fog!] The Second Elder had confidence in himself. It had never been heard that anyone in the Middle Three Heavens could break this Poisonous Evil Divine Art of the Ou Clan!

[We will use poison against poison! You poisoned my brothers. So, I will kill you guys by using my poison!]

The range of the poison became increasingly wide as the Second Elder strode forwards. It got more and more concentrated, and began to spread out in an increasingly wider range. More and more small creatures died due to this. And, their dead bodies were left to float on the water's surface.

The eyes of the rest of the experts of the Ou Clan lit up as they watched this happen. [This technique is so good, ah. Not only is it constantly omitting the need to be alert at all times, but it can even kill the enemy!]

Therefore, everyone started to imitate the Second Elder in quick succession.

The hoarfrost continuously spread out as a result. The eighteen other people had also launched Poisonous Evil Divine Art soon-enough. And, it spread within the range of several thousand feet within a short period of time.

They then slowly advanced forward on their journey in this manner. However, the earthworms started to emerge from the soil once this technique's effect was induced into the underwater channels. This indicated that the ground was safe to walk upon. So, everyone's speed increased even further.

...

"Big Brother, what's to be done?" Luo Ke Di nervously asked at a distance place.

The traps that Chu Yang had arranged had lost their purpose given the way the Ou Clan's people were advancing.

Chu Yang twisted his brows, and pondered hard. A good while passed before he realized that he didn't have any good method to deal with the current formation of the enemy.

The traps they had set-up would get discovered as long as the enemy's Poisonous Evil Divine Art was active. So, how would they be able to find a quick-fix to this situation?

However, Chu Yang's eyes suddenly lit up as he watched the poisonous fog spread in the entire forest like salt frost. He then turned his head and said, "We must prepare for a decisive battle in this case! However... it must be done in so and so manner ..."

Chu Yang waved his hand to beckon everyone. Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Dong Wu Shang gathered together to listen to Chu Yang as he spoke in whispers.

"...so and so... ok. But, you four people must go all-out when the time comes... After that, you must join forces to tie down one of the two Emperor Level Experts ... understand?" Chu Yang said in a cold and sinister voice. He clenched his teeth, and his vision became fierce.

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others slowly nodded. They had serious expression on their faces as well.

A long while passed before Dong Wu Shang asked, "Big Brother, can you do it... all alone?"

Chu Yang clenched his teeth and replied, "If everything happens according to plan... there's 40% chance of success."

"40% chance!" Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing looked at each other. They had a dignified look on their faces as they spoke-up, "Alright! There's generally not even a 10% chance of success when King Level Experts deal with an Emperor Level Expert! So, it's good that we have 40%!"

The two of them didn't hesitate one bit. Gu Du Xing turned around, and gave brief instructions to the King Level Experts of the

Gu Clan. However, the atmosphere had became unprecedentedly tensed...

...

The Second Elder and the others were sparing no effort into urging their poisonous technique forwards. They searched for Chu Yang and the others nearly everywhere in the Chill Wind Forest, but they couldn’t find them.

They had reached the heart of the Chill Wind Forest by now!

"I don’t believe that they have wings that they could fly away!" The Second Elder gritted his teeth in anger, "Continue onwards!"

He hadn’t even finished saying this when he suddenly heard a loud ‘bam’. It seemed as if a heavy object had fallen into the swamp, and had caused a burst of dense moisture.

This sound was sufficient for one to assess that it had been made by a human body’s fall.

The Second Elder’s eyes lit up. He hurriedly whispered, "Go over and take a look. Be very careful."

The Third Elder complied, and went to the side where the sound had originated from. The dozen or more people who stood behind him also went over to surround that area.

"Old Third, launch your field to protect your body first. Rest of you, don’t stop using your Poisonous Evil Divine Art!" the Second Elder hastily reminded them. He had also unleashed his field while speaking these words of caution.

A transparent layer of spirit energy wildly rushed forth from his body. It took the shape of his body, and made a transparent cover around his body. Even the dense fog obeyed command inside this transparent cover of spirit energy, and got gathered to one side!

"Yes." The Third Elder also activated his domain-field. However, he had a mournful expression on his face. He let out a deep sigh

and said, "Old Eighth and Old Ninth hadn’t comprehended the power of the domain field. Old Fourth, you had comprehended it, but you never got the chance to use it..."

The Second Elder’s face twitched in pain as he said, "Let’s go!" Then, he moved first.

Some people could be seen rushing away as the poisonous effect of the technique was spreading forward. But, they could only fly to the halfway before they fell down. They fell heavily on the marshy ground. And, their clothes made it seem as if they were Chu Yang and his gang.

There was a particularly dense cover of woods a hundred feet up ahead. However, the trees had already been corroded by the poisonous gas up-until their mid-length. And, the trees had turned white as a result.

A dozen or more people were lying in disorder under the trees. Moreover, these people were continuously struggling. Some of them had managed to stand with difficulty. But, their complexions had already turned blue, and saliva was dripping down from the corner of their mouths.

The Second Elder coldly snorted. He gnashed his teeth and stared in anger, "Running away?! Did you think that you could run away?!"

...

Chapter 524: Decisive Battle with Emperor Level Experts!

"You bastards! You took the life of my Fourth Brother!" The Third Elder became somewhat aroused. He bellowed as he rushed over.

"Slow down! Beware of their traps!" The Second Elder extended his hand to hold him. His eyes shone as he looked towards that area where Chu Yang and the others lay. Then, he waved his hand and an electric flash was issued out with a whistling sound.

Actually, it was a short knife that had went whistling towards Gu Du Xing! And, the target was Gu Du Xing's heart!

Obviously, he must kill one man to confirm. After all, it was an issue of life and death. There would inevitably be some kind of reaction if the enemy was pretending. So, he wanted to confirm if it was another trap of the enemy or not.

Gu Du Xing had a cold expression in his eyes. He issued a firm look.

The speed of this knife wasn't fast. In fact, one could extend one's hand and grab it. And, dodging this strike was even easier. But, dodging this strike would have proven that they were merely playing a trick. And then, they would have been annihilated right this instant.

He twisted his body barely enough to glance at his brothers with a look of yearning in his eyes. It seemed that he wasn't going to dodge this knife... Gu Du Xing had decided to sacrifice himself in order to help his brothers succeed this operation. He was going to do this for the sake of his brothers' life!

The knife's light came whistling!

"Young Lord!" a pitiful voice suddenly came as a person fiercely jumped over from Gu Du Xing's side. He can over swaying, and

pushed Gu Du Xing to another side. His movements were very slow, and it seemed as if he intentionally didn't wish to dodge. He took that knife on his chest.

Puff!

The bright blood splattered everywhere!

The short knife was deeply inserted into the chest of this King Level Expert. His face twitched in pain as a result. And, his body became stiff as it turned around. His body then slowly slumped down. Blood spurt out from the corner of his mouth. And, he stopped breathing thereafter!

"Sixth Uncle Wang!" Gu Du Xing shouted loudly. He suddenly stared in anger. There was a strong killing intention in his eyes. He was in indescribable grief at this moment!

The Second Elder and the others looked-on as this happened. They then laughed heartily since they were very pleased. [These men have genuinely been poisoned!]

It would've been easy to dodge such a slow knife-strike. However, it had still taken the life of a King Level Expert.

"Catch them! I want them alive!" the Second Elder sinisterly ordered, "This old man wants to torture them to death! I want to take revenge for Old Fourth, Old Eighth, and Old Ninth!"

Sixteen experts stepped out as soon as he issued the order. They then rushed towards the area like wolves and tigers, and it seemed as if no one could stop them.

The Third Elder was at the forefront. So, he was the first one to rush over. He quickly grabbed Chu Yang, and lifted him up. Then, he laughed nastily and said, "King of Hell Chu, you have fallen into my hands now!"

Chu Yang weakly looked at him, and spoke-up with a bitter smile, "You used poison to plot against us. There's no skill in it."

"Stop your fu*king nonsense! Do you think that it was very honourable and fair to use poison to plot against my fourth brother?" the Third Elder angrily cussed. He shouted, "Take them away!"

Ten King Level Experts complied with the order, and each of them grabbed a person. Some firmly grabbed two as well. They became more relieved once they had seized their targets' weapons. Then, they walked with the captives in their grasp.

"Um... how come they are short by one person?" The Second Elder looked from afar. He then puckered his brows, "Besides the one that just died... there should've been a little girl here... Where is that little girl?"

An unforeseen event suddenly occurred as he raised this question!

The captives in the hands of these ten King Level Experts had been limp and half-dead. But, they suddenly moved into action. Their fists moved, and they ferociously applied the entirety of their strength to attack the nearest enemies. They then fiercely grabbed and beat the vital parts of those King Level Experts!

Be it their chests, their heads, their 'main point' or their Dantian! They repeatedly launched attacks, and landed countless of kicks and punches on the bodies of these ten experts.

Suddenly, a burst of intense sword light was unleashed in the Third Elder's bosom. The overbearing sharpness of this sword-light broke-open the Third Elder's domain-field, and caught him off guard!

The sword-light issued countless sharp beams like sunlight. They then pierced into the domain-field with several 'puff' sounds. After that, the beams of light assembled into a group, and crazily came over to strike. It made a gap in the domain – that was a shield made up of the spirit energy – and broke through it with a 'snap' sound. And, this gave rise to fierce howling winds and wild storms.

Screams were issued from the other side. The King Level Experts of the Ou Clan had been beaten up into piles of mud in the blink of an eye!

Gu Du Xing and the others didn't utter a word after they had launched the attack. They snatched back their own weapons without the slightest of hesitation. The four brothers first got united with their weapons. Then, they screamed and rushed like thunder towards the Second Elder!

The other six King Level Experts of the Gu Clan also shouted out loud. They dominantly snatched their weapons, and then rushed over to fight with the remaining six King Level Experts of the Ou Clan. They then started a one-to-one fight with their counterparts! And thus, the battle had begun in an instant!

Meanwhile, the bodies of those King Level Experts started to fall softly to the ground in quick succession.

Some of them had already died. There were some who hadn't died yet, but they were only left with a few final breaths. The experts of the same level had launched an attack in their own bosom. And, their mouths were still open since they had been laughing a moment ago. Moreover, they didn't have their guards up... how sad and miserable this thing was!

The Second Elder didn't get enough time to warn them. The unforeseen event had already occurred over there. And, he couldn't help but stare at this scene with killing intention! He furiously roared when he saw three sword lights ferociously surging over to envelop his body along with a saber light!

He furiously let out a loud scream. His face was filled with a murderous look, "You have done it now, you brats! This Old Man will rip you alive!" He flicked his wrist, and a sword-light flashed as he rushed forward seething in anger.

The Second Elder and the four brothers crazily started to fight in a group!

Chu Yang had made a ruthless attack on the other side. He had unleashed twelve sword moves of the Nine Tribulation Sword at once. Then, he had further launched a synchronized attack of his own four sword moves!

He didn't even see the Third Elder's present condition. Instead, he just continued to issue his most powerful attacks in the most furious and reckless manner!

The Third Elder's screams shook the skies!

He was also off guard at that time!

The only advantage he had in comparison with others was that he had the protective shield of his domain-field!

However, a domain-field of such a degree was unable to withstand the first blow of the Nine Tribulation Sword! The second move then broke through the domain. But, it bought him a little time to draw back!

However, Chu Yang's attacks followed him closely. And, they became more and more quick, and more and more fierce!

The Third Elder had become aware of this thing within an instant – [I'm standing alone in front of a sea, and I'm faced with the raging tidal waves that are surging up more and more! Or maybe, I'm standing under an overhanging precipice, and suddenly a landslide has occurred! Moreover, the landslide is also accompanied by the flash flood...]

Such was the tragedy of the Third Elder!

He pulled out his sword with his utmost power, and tried his hardest to block. But, he could only resist for a while since he found that his sword had broken into fragments after clashing with the enemy's sword.

After that, felt pain in his palm. And then, his chest started to ache. Even his heart had turned cold. Then, he madly roared as he felt a stinging pain in his eyes! He madly jumped up! And, he

crazily cussed out! He trembled within the sword light. He got distorted. Then, a dazzling sword-light erupted with an explosion, and his meat crumbs filled the whole sky!

And, Chu Yang issued the ninth sword move of the Nine Tribulation Sword at this time.

However, he was unable to stop. So, he ended up crazily launching the remaining seven sword moves in succession even though the air had been filled with the flesh of his enemy!

The sword energy surged over as a result, and spread everywhere within this narrow and small range in an instant!

He eventually retracted his sword since the matter was over. Not even a single strand of hair of the Third Elder could be seen apart from the blood fog at this time! It had indeed been the most concentrated attack...

Then, Chu Yang fished out an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulation Pill without slightest bit of hesitation, and stuffed it in his mouth. Then, he circulated his martial power, and regained his lost power. However, he didn't waste a single moment thereafter, and he readied his sword to attack as he went straight to join the battle circle of Gu Du Xing and the others!

Meanwhile, the six King Level Experts of Gu Clan were desperately attacking their opponents. All six men had the same thought... [We won't yield even if we die! We will not let them slip out of our hands. We won't allow them to save the Second Elder!]

Gu Du Xing was in a precarious situation at this time.

The Second Elder was a Third Grade Emperor Level Expert. How could Gu Du Xing and the other three King level Experts deal with such a man? The four people had put their lives at stake, and were going all-out. However, they were being drawn back... step by step. In fact, they had been pushed in a very disadvantageous situation by the incredible power of the Second Elder!

However, these four seemed willing to fight to death. In fact, they simply wouldn't back off!

Blood had already begun to seep out from the mouths and noses of these four people even though the fight had barely started moments ago! Dong Wu Shang had put the highest amount of pressure on the Second Elder since his counterattacks were very fierce. However, he had blood all over his face at this time. Moreover, the web between his thumb and forefinger had ruptured because of the shocks. So, he had no other way but to hold the saber in both hands as he continued to attack crazily!

The Second Elder had pressured the four people into a disadvantage. But, these four men were still stuck to his body like ants to sugar. And, they weren't letting him get away! So, he was more irritable than these four... and, more furious as well!

And, that was because he still had spare time to hear the on-going activities all around even whilst being in this fight. So, he had seen that his own third brother's energy shield was broken by the enemy's attack. He had seen it getting shattered by the enemy's sword. After that, his brother's palm had sustained injuries, and then he had met a sword's blow on his chest. Then, both of his brother's eyes were punctured, and he had gone blind as a result. Then, his whole body had oozed out arrows of blood. Then, his body had gotten distorted whilst he was alive. And, he had finally gotten reduced to pieces mid-air...

The Second Elder was extremely furious in his heart this entire time! But, he still hadn't been able to rush over to save him!

He could have pulled the Third Elder out of that sword energy if he could've broken free of these four brothers. And, that would've saved the man. The Third Elder would've still been severely wounded... or even crippled. But, at least his life could've been saved!

He had become very anxious at that time, but he still couldn't

move a single step. And, that was because he would've been hit by the weapons of the attackers that had surrounded him if he had thought of moving. And, this would've pushed him back!

In fact, he would've gotten struck, and would've been forced back even if he had sacrificed his own life to rush over! He felt very powerless when he realized that the tables had been turned. In fact, this had made the Second Elder so sullen that he had blown his top!

But, it was all over in a split second on that side!

The blood fog of his Third Brother scattered in the air! And then, the murderer of his Third Brother had immediately readied his sword, and had rushed over towards him!

"Damn you Sword King!" the Second Elder shouted furiously. His eyes had turned red!

"Come on! Come on! All of you, come on!" he crazily roared.

Chu Yang flew high up in the air. The Nine Tribulation Sword flashed in the sky. It was the sword move 'there is no harm in slaughtering the whole world'! This sword move had been readied from the distance of a hundred feet. So, it had reached to its maximum potential by now!

"Du Xing!" Chu Yang roared so loudly that his voice resounded in the skies!

Gu Du Xing responded. He crazily launched a sword blow, and then immediately drew a step back. Chu Yang's sword attack had reached the power of a thunderbolt. So, Chu Yang exploited the gap that had been made by Gu Du Xing's retreat since the Second Elder was busy in dealing with Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di, and fiercely launched the sword attack!

The Second Elder's fine beard fluttered. He then angrily shouted, "Come on!" He didn't dodge or evade. He resisted the attacks of Dong Wu Shang and the other two people using his energy shield.

And, he also unleashed a sword attack to welcome Chu Yang's strike in the mid-air.

The two sword lights collided in the sky with a clang sound!

Chapter 525: Fight for Life and Death!

The impact of Nine Tribulation Sword's move had generated formidable power along with the incomparable and acute sharpness of the Nine Tribulation Sword! Moreover, the Nine Tribulation Sword had devoured many rare metals and items of late. So, its power had gone up a notch compared to earlier!

However, the Second Elder was a Third Grade Emperor Level Expert. So, he was nine levels above Chu Yang. His sword-play, sword moves, and sword quality was way below than those of Chu Yang's, but his spiritual power was not to be trifled with!

The two sword-lights clashed like meteors! The brilliance of the sword lights filled the entire sky with a 'boom'!

The entire Chill Wind Forest abruptly quivered. The marsh inside the muddy water also splashed up with a loud rumbling sound. Unexpectedly, it rose up to a height of a hundred feet!

Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo let out a wretched groan even though they were separated by a distance. They had been sent flying by this tremendous force, and they had fallen onto the ground!

Chu Yang and the Second Elder shouted loudly at the same time. And, their bodies went flying back in the air. Both of them were bleeding from different places. Both of them had sustained serious injuries during this clash!

Chu Yang's chest, shoulders, thighs, lower abdomen, and Dantian had been hit by the opponent's sword blow. The chest, shoulders, thighs, and arms of the Second Elder had sustained injuries, and were bleeding as a result!

Chu Yang was in mid-air when he popped an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill that he had prepared in advance! Chu Yang had already consumed two incomplete versions of Nine

Tribulations Pills in this fight that had lasted merely less than a breath!

Therefore, it could be clearly seen how frigid a fight it was...

One could imagine that Chu Yang would've already died at least once by now if he hadn't had the Nine Tribulations Pills on him.

He had the Nine Tribulations Pills. But, the Second Elder didn't possess any such magical item. Moreover, the domain-field on the body of the Second Elder had dispersed by the impact of this clash. So, his protective shield of spiritual energy had disappeared without a trace.

Even an Emperor Level Expert needs to consume a great amount of energy to maintain this kind of a life-saving method. So, how could he afford to turn on his domain-field again while he was in the middle of such an intense battle?

The body of the Second Elder hadn't dropped yet. However, Gu Du Xing had just withdrawn, and was prepared to unite his body with his sword at this time. The sword light shot up high in the sky, and then rushed towards the Second Elder even though the man's body was still in midair and retreating rapidly like lighting!

The Second Elder sensed the crisis. And, he bellowed loudly. Suddenly, he fiercely circulated the spirit energy in his whole body. Several wounds on his body abruptly spurt out blood when this happened. But, he managed to cope up in one breath. He then activated his spiritual power. And then, he again clashed with Gu Du Xing in midair.

This Third Grade King Level Expert had launched a strike, and had risked his life without thinking of his safety.

The Second Elder had counterattacked with all his might. And, both of them fiercely crashed into each other! They both then yelled and screamed.

Gu Du Xing clenched his teeth. But, he lost consciousness as he

was sent flying back in the air. His body was bleeding profusely from three places since the Second Elder had injured him with his knuckles. Seven of Gu Du Xing's ribs had broken! His entire chest had almost sunken in as a result. But, the Black Dragon Sword in his hand was half-drenched in blood!

His sword had deeply pierced in the right side of the Second Elder's chest. The Second Elder had been shaken by Gu Du Xing's counterattack. So, he drew backwards.

The Second Elder noticed that the injuries he had received were very serious once he had floated backwards.

Dong Wu Shang howled like a hungry wolf at this moment. He united with his saber, and rushed over.

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had turned around by now. They also united their bodies with their swords. They then followed behind Dong Wu Shang, and dashed towards the Second Elder to attack him with all their might.

The attacking strategy of these three men was also the same as that of Gu Du Xing's... They were brave men with no thought of personal safety. They'd put their entire strength, and would attack with their heart and soul. So, they obviously put their entire vitality into this attack.

[We will die if the Second Elder doesn't!]

They knew it for sure!

Therefore, they wanted to take advantage of his injuries by taking his life!

Chu Yang let out a loud shout in the distance. His body turned over as he jumped up. The Nine Tribulation Sword flashed. Then, he again unleashed the move 'What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world'! The sword attack came down from high up in the sky!

A strong sense of regret emerged in the Second Elder's heart.

[I should've retreated and escaped after I had discovered that this was an ambush! I hadn't imagined even in my wildest dreams that these five youngsters would turn out to be so abnormal!]

[But, I am Third Grade Emperor Level Expert!]

[A Third Grade Emperor Level Expert dammit!]

[And, I am in the danger of losing my life!]

However, he didn't have time to regret. Dong Wu Shang had arrived in front him while being untied with his saber!

The Second Elder bellowed in despair. He once again gathered the remaining strength in his body, and crazily clashed! Dong Wu Shang yelled out loud, and unloaded his heavy Black Saber as his body went flying and whirling in mid-air.

However, this Third Grade Saber King had made the strike with all his might! And, he had also succeeded. And, this was like adding hail to the snow for Second Elder. Blood fiercely spurt out from his body once again as a result!

The Second Elder couldn't suppress the bleeding and the injuries this time around. So, blood continued to spout out from his mouth. Even the look in his eyes had become bleak...

His left hand had become limp. It then drooped down with clattering sound. This had happened because the heavy Black Saber had smashed it into bits!

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di shouted loudly at this moment, and rushed over while synchronizing their sword attacks.

The Second Elder screamed loudly. He only had his right hand to defend. He suddenly emitted out dense poisonous fog of black gas from his body! This was his last strategy to save his life – Burn my own Poison Cultivation, and strive for an opportunity to escape from here!

The poison art that he had been practicing for his entire life

would be deposed after this kind of combustion. And, he wouldn't be able to use it anymore...

This was the last moment to use this martial art. He would've never thought of doing this if he hadn't been stuck in a situation where he had nowhere to go!

However, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di didn't fear this in the least. In fact, they actually used their bodies to force their way into the fog of poison!

"You guys aren't afraid of the poison?!" the Second Elder screamed in despair. Both of them slammed into his body with their swords as two 'thump' sounds resounded. The Second Elder screamed. Blood splashed out of his whole body in the same manner that juice splatters out from a smashed fruit. He sustained more than hundred fresh wounds on his body. And, his flesh and blood started to whirl around as a result.

Snapping and crunching sounds resounded from his chest. The number of bones that broke was unknown...

However, he still managed to escape. There was a tree behind him. He used his feet, and used his final strength to pedal up the tree. He would be able to fly away from here as long as he could land on the trunk of that tree.

However, it was already too late!

A splendid sword light rushed over like a meteor, and cut off all the hopes of the Second Elder!

Chu Yang!

Nine Tribulations Sword!

What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world!

Chu Yang smashed-open a big and bloody hole in the Second Elder's chest with his sword, and came out from his body on the other side with a loud 'Bang'!

The light in the eyes of the Second Elder went dark. He powerlessly remained standing on the summit of the tree. Then, he let out a long sigh. He lowered his head, and his head unexpectedly tumbled down from his neck. Then, his tattered body fell down from the tree. His body had fallen only halfway when it fell apart and turned into a pile of minced meat.

Chu Yang and the others wiped-off the poison from the tips of their weapons only after he had fallen to the ground. The poisoned had played its part. This pile of meat decayed, and turned into black fluid in an instant...

Chu Yang let out a loud scream, and withdrew his sword. He then arrived at Gu Du Xing's side. Gu Du Xing was unconscious at this time. He then fed Gu Du Xing an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulation Pill. However, Chu Yang didn't waste any time, and he immediately jumped up with a whistling sound to assist the others. Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di also rushed to the fighting circle of the six King Level Experts of the Gu Clan.

The outcome was already determined at this time...

The Experts of the Ou Clan were wiped out very quickly. Unexpectedly, not a single person managed to escape!

Everyone contemplated for a long time after the fight was over...

Because, this was the real meaning of a desperate fight on which lives depended!

[Our bodies would've been lying here instead of theirs if there was even a little bit of remiss or lack of cooperation on our part!]

...

Chapter 526: Hatred and Kindness in the Heart

This fight lasted for such a short time that it was over in less than half-a-quarter-of-an-hour. No. It didn't even last for less than one-third of a quarter-of-an-hour! But, this fight had been dangerous. In fact, it had been the most dangerous fight that Chu Yang and his brothers had ever fought since their debut!

Moreover, the complete strength of everyone had gotten exhausted in this fight.

Everyone had faced the risk of death innumerable times over this fight. [But, luckily, we won!]

"We won!" Gu Du Xing stood up from the ground. He exposed a bright smile on his blood-stained face.

"Won?" Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and the others still couldn't believe these words. It seemed as if they were dreaming.

This had been a sneak attack, and a clever plan. But... these few people had withstood against a larger group of enemy. And, they had managed to prevail over them. In addition, the two enemy leaders were Emperor Level Experts!

These people felt a faint ache in their chest. They had been injured by Emperor Level Experts. So, they still harboured a feeling of terror... as if their death was near at hand. Their psyches still had a lingering fear even though their enemies had vanished in a puff of smoke...

The outcome felt like an unrealistic dream!

Dong Wu Shang's heavy Black Saber was inserted straight in the ground. And, it was sending out a chilly aura... as if it was the monarch of the world.

The people of the Ou Clan had changed into bloody liquid by

now. They had rotted in this cold and gloomy atmosphere of the Chill Wind Forest. Gu Du Xing and the others slowly stood up. They then looked at the mess that they had created with their own hands. There was now silence everywhere. They only felt roughness in their throats since they were heavily gasping for breath.

"This is only the beginning. There will be more and more powerhouses in the future who will have to die because they will have offended us!" the stirred up mood of Chu Yang and the others quietened down as Chu Yang indifferently stated this.

"We have killed five Emperor Level Experts today. But, we've also escaped death very narrowly! We brothers would've died ten-times-over if we hadn't made a plan!" Chu Yang stood up. He swept his sharp gaze over his brothers. He slowly extended his hand, and then slowly clenched his fist. He then focused his attention entirely on his own fist.

After that, he slowly spoke-up in a deep and low voice, "But... there will come one day when we will make such Emperor Level Experts work under us... And, we would be able to wipe them out with the flick of a finger!"

He had spoken these last few words at an extremely slow pace. However, his speech had brimmed with self-confidence!

The brothers looked-on as Chu Yang slowly stretched out his tightly clenched fist. And, they couldn't help but feel their hearts throb in a fierce manner when they saw him fiercely flip over his fist and go downwards with pressure!

It had seemed as if he could've crushed Emperor Level Experts into pieces under the pressure of his fist!

"It will be that easy." Chu Yang turned around and exposed a cold smile. His white teeth sparkled in the dense fog.

Everyone calmly looked at him. A light flashed in their eyes. But,

they didn’t say a word.

Gu Du Xing slowly turned his head and looked at the six King Level Experts of the Gu Clan after a long while had passed. He then said, "I wish to follow Big Brother Chu so that I can become a member of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. I wish to fight my way up the Nine Heavens! Does any of you wish to come along?"

The six people looked at each other. This group was led by a man named Gu Qing Feng. He took a step forward, and spoke-up in a dignified manner, "The skills of us brothers aren’t that proficient. It is difficult for our cultivation to advance even by an inch! But, it is rare to have such an ambitious Young Lord. We brothers aren’t hesitant, and we would love to follow you at any cost. We want to help our Young Lord in accomplishing his dreams! So, we will follow you anywhere at your command... no matter what happens!"

He bleakly smiled as he looked at the dead body of his brother that had fallen into the pool of blood. Then, he said in a deep and low voice, "An earthen jar is inseparable from the well even if it gets broken. Death is inevitable for a soldier who is fighting on the frontline! We are people of the Jianghu. We know that death awaits us at every step. But, the only unavoidable thing is that our Gu Clan is in imminent danger..."

"The Young Clan Lord wants to fight his way up the Nine Heavens. However, we brothers won’t regret dying for you even if you wouldn’t represent the Gu Clan, and be a part of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion instead... After all, you have the surname Gu attached to your name!"

Gu Du Xing inhaled a deep breath. But, he felt that the rims of his eyes were slightly burning. He said, "I’m the Young Clan Lord of the Gu Clan. So, I’m obviously am a man of the Gu Family! And, I will certainly make a very good reputation for the Gu Clan in the entire Nine Heavens if I’m able to make it big one day!"

The six men neatly knelt down as tears started to stream down their faces, "We want to follow the Young Clan Lord. We want to join the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. We will have no regrets even if we have to die ten-thousand-times-over!"

Gu Du Xing nodded and spoke-up, "The Heavenly Armament Pavilion is weak and small at the moment. So, it would be inappropriate to leak out our secrets and true identities... Remember this thing..."

Gu Feng Qing respectfully replied, "This is obvious! Everything has its own laws. It's not our first day in the Jianghu. So, we obviously understand... I don't know how to say this... We aren't skilled enough, but we've known the ways of hiding our true identity in the Middle Three Heavens for most of our lives. So, we are more confident than the Young Masters in this regard... And, we can take care of many such matters in the future."

Gu Du Xing nodded with satisfaction. And, the trace of a smile appeared on his cold face.

He had first used a trick to make those three unsteady people turn back. And, he had been left with only faithful and loyal people as a result. Therefore, these people were capable of making a top-notch foundational team for the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. Consequently, these brothers would be able to achieve great results with the help of these old people of Jianghu in every venture they would attempt...

Everyone discussed for a while. Then, they buried the dead King Level Expert. After that, they continued to move forwards.

"We will come back to settle this account with the Ou Clan in time." Chu Yang gazed in the direction of the Ou Clan before they left. He then slowly said after some time had passed, "The Ou Clan will cease to exist in the Middle Three Heavens in the future!"

Then, he turned around to continue-on his journey. And, he didn't look back again...

He had always been the type of man who would seek revenge for the slightest of grievance. The Ou Clan had planned to make everyone die a tragic death. And, his brothers had sustained serious injuries as a result. How could this matter not leave an imprint on Chu Yang's heart?!

Gu Du Xing had stood speechless in front of the new grave for a long while. He had a determined look on his face, and his eyes had been expressionless.

He had suddenly grabbed a little soil from the burial mound before he had left. And, he had then stuffed it in his mouth, and swallowed it down. Then, he had knelt down, and heavily knocked his head three times on the ground. He had then gotten up and strode away. However, he didn't look back after that...

[This hatred is mine!]

[I will settle this account for you!]

[I won't say anything. But, you know heartfelt regards for you if you're listening to my heart from the netherworld. I will kill every single man of the Ou Clan. And, then I will come back to this Chill Wind Forest and tell you that... It will allow your soul to rest in peace!]

Gu Du Xing didn't speak out these sentences. In fact, he didn't say a single word. But, he had taken an unshakable oath in his heart! He left with large strides. His black robe fluttered in the wind as he left the Chill Wind Forest. He looked as tall and straight as a sword from the back profile.

He had hatred and kindness in his heart!

He had the hatred to take revenge with his own hands. And, he had the kindness since he wanted to repay the favor ten-thousand times over to the King Level Expert who sacrificed his life for him...

This was Gu Du Xing's personal principle.

The Chill Wind Forest again got covered with dense fog and stagnant mist along with the departure of these people. It seemed as if the newly-added ominous souls weren't howling and sobbing in the forest. Instead, it seemed as if the soul of that hero from the Gu Clan was smiling in reluctance as he waved goodbye to his comrades...

...

Three days later... in the Ou Clan...

A teacup fell down with a 'crash' sound from Ou Cheng Wu's hand – the Clan Lord of the Ou Clan. It shattered into pieces as a result. The complexion of the Great Elder and the others became gloomy. In fact, it seemed as if something was eating them inside. Ou Du Xiao's complexion had turned deathly pale. His mouth was open, and his lips were quivering. But, he was unable to speak a word...

Six King Level Experts had come back to report, and they had carried three human-heads along with them. However, the other men who had been sent to the Chill Wind Forest to chase after the enemy hadn't returned. The informers who had returned from the Chill Wind Forest had reported — [King of Hell Chu's party of twelve men have left safe-and-sound. Everyone was full of vigor. Some had wounds on their bodies...]

The manpower that had gone to check the Chill Wind Forest had reported back — [Several traces have been found inside the Chill Wind Forest. These traces indicate that there was a fight between experts! The traces that are left behind on the scene leave one to judge that this must've been a showdown between Emperor Level Experts! Moreover, the fight must've been extremely bitter. The forest region in a range of several thousand feet in the vicinity of the battlefield has been destroyed!]

The fight was over, and it had been very desperate one. King of Hell Chu and the others were safe and sound. The Second Elder

and the others hadn't returned... Therefore, any fool could guess what must've transpired there!

The Second Elder and the others must've been wiped out. Moreover, even their corpses had been destroyed. Thus, no trace had been left behind!

The Ou Clan had lost five Emperor Level Experts and twenty four King Level Experts in this battle! It could be said that fifty-percent of the Ou Clan's strength had collapsed in one day!

They used to have nine... Emperor Level Experts, ah! And, there were more than fifty King Level Experts at that time. But, more than twenty of those experts were foreign aid who had been hired with a great amount of money. So, the Experts who belonged to the Ou Clan's army were only thirty in number...

And, these people were obviously the most reliable ones. So, there was no fear that they would leak out the Clan's affairs. Therefore, they had been sent to execute this covert mission. But, what came to happen... was very unexpected...

Twenty-four King Level Experts had suddenly died!

These six King Level Experts had luckily returned alive because they hadn't gone together with the others. How could they have come out uninjured from the Chill Wind Forest if they had gone together... Perhaps, these six lives would also have been lost in vain!

The Ou Clan was in a sorrowful situation!

Ou Cheng Wu felt regret deep within his bones. Why would he have made this plan if he had known that Chu Yang and his gang had such a powerful support? In fact, the clan would've come to a clear decision before Chu Yang's arrival, and would've taken advantage of this opportunity to mend relations with the four major clans...

However, this opportunity had come with a big price! And, it had

been ruined because of everyone’s greed. Moreover, they were forced to sacrifice the lives of five Emperor Level Experts and twenty-four King Level Experts in the process! In addition, they had even made themselves some very formidable enemies!

This was indeed a matter of grave concern...

"It seems that there is some super-expert hidden among King of Hell Chu and the others!" The Great Elder’s chest was fiercely moving up-and-down. His voice was somewhat shivering. But, he forced himself to calm down and analysed the situation calmly, "There were no casualties among these youngsters even after facing our besiege... This explains that these kids will have boundless prospects in the future! Moreover, they have the support of four major clans!

"They won’t come to take revenge from us for at this time because they don’t have enough strength. However... they have started to nurture enmity towards us. So, they will come for us in time!"

The Great Elder continued in a deep voice, "Therefore... we can’t sit idle and wait for death! The armies of the four clans may collaborate to attack us... And, that will probably be the end of us."

"I will look for them and take revenge if they don’t come here! How can I let them off so easily?" Ou Du Xiao gritted his teeth. The blue vein was throbbing on his temple.

"No matter what time it is... we must consider proper self-preservation first as a clan. Then, we can make plans to defeat the enemy! Du Xiao, you need to temper yourself for the time being! Taking revenge is important. But... there are many things which are more important than that! A moment of animalistic courage will only lead us to destruction; nothing else!"

The Great Elder coldly looked at Ou Du Xiao and said, "At present, the most important thing for us isn’t taking revenge — but self-preservation! What would be the use even if you kill all of

them at the cost of the Ou Clan’s existence?"

Ou Du Xiao’s face turned red. He said, "Yes! The Great Elder is right." He took two steps back, and said in his heart, [the people who have died were your brothers... wouldn’t you scold me for being heartless if I won’t show anger?]

Ou Cheng Wu’s eyes lit up. He then said, "So, the Great Elder means to say..."

...

Chapter 527: Chu Clan's Chu Fei Long

"The idea... is to form... alliances first!" Great Elder heavily spoke-up, "Let's count our enemies... King of Hell Chu, Gu Clan, Ji Clan, Luo Clan, and Dong Clan have become our enemies because of this matter... Moreover, there are two stern additional allies of theirs – Mo Clan and Xie Clan!"

Great Elder pulled out his finger and coldly said, "The Gu Clan is the weakest of them. The Mo Clan is strong, but they are going through major changes at the moment. So, they can't be considered very strong at present. The Ji Clan is nothing but medium. It's suspending in the middle. It's not strong enough to go up. However, you can't pull it down even if you try to. However, the Luo Clan, the Dong Clan and the Xie Clan... can match the strength of our Ou Clan."

He heaved a long sigh before he sadly said, "Our Clan has lost so many experts over this matter. So, we don't have sufficient strength to be on a par with these three clans anymore... This Old Man has miscalculated..."

He paused, and didn't speak-up for a long while. He had a sad look on his face. Then, he continued, "We will aim at these clans for now, and analyse the situation between the enemy with respect to ours.

"There is an unresolved hatred between the Ji Clan and the Gao Clan. It's the same with the Mo Clan and the Black Devil Clan... they can't live under one sky. The Dong Clan and the Tian Clan have also been fighting again and again. The Gu Clan and the Tu Clan also have deep-rooted hatred and desire for revenge against each other. Also, the Zhao Clan has been beaten down by the Luo Clan for a long time... At present, the Meng Clan is an extremely difficult situation... However, this is a plus point for us. The, there's the Xie Clan. The Xie Clan has refused a marriage proposal from the Li Clan. So, these two clans also don't get along!"

Great Elder continued in a profound manner, "The enemy of our enemy... is our friend. We will have... the strength of eight big clans on our side if we form connections with them. And, we won't be weak if that happens..."

Great Elder deserved to be called a 'reservoir of rigorous schemes and deep foresight'. This plan was well-thought of. His wisdom was unquestionable even in the face of such tremendous changes.

Ou Cheng Wu's eyes lit up, "Great Elder's idea is brilliant!"

"Um... However, the enemy has already taken the lead in forming connection. So, we need to start taking action right now. We are a step late... But, they would first have to deal with this ninth grade spirit beast event. And, this will buy us some time!"

Great Elder wrinkled his brows, "But, we need to particularly guard against... the Dark Bamboo! I have heard that Young Master Yu of the Dark Bamboo and King of Hell Chu are good friends... I don't know how good that friendship is... However, it may be possible that Dark Bamboo moves into action."

"We won't have any chances of success if Dark Bamboo turns against us." Ou Cheng Wu's complexion turned solemn. He then said, "We must make contacts with the Ao Clan and the Li Clan. We can only be evenly matched if they stand on our side. And, that should reduce the risk very considerably."

"You're making a mistake. It will be more chaotic if the Bamboo gets involved! And, that's because the Bamboo and each of these clans have had contradictions or conflicts in the past..." the Great Elder snorted and said, "And, there's nothing to worry when it comes to the Ao Clan. The Ao Clan won't step into muddy water... but, what if we kill Ao Xie Yun and shift the blame on these clans...?"

He only spoke till here, and suddenly came to a stop. His gaze had turned deep since he was lost in contemplation.

Ou Cheng Wu's eyes lit up. The hall had turned silent in an instant.

A long while passed before Ou Cheng Wu stood up with a 'shua' sound, "We have no time to lose. So, I will immediately arrange the manpower to go to each of the big clans."

"Take some martial treasures along with you," the Great Elder sinisterly said, "We have no other choice but to spend resources because we are in need of support. These things must be kept with oneself... since they come-in-handy at the critical times!"

Ou Cheng Wu replied, "Alright." He made Ou Du Xiao take men along with him. Then, he started to make arrangements for manpower in an aggressive manner. After that, he started to make preparations to send them on diplomatic missions.

However... Ou Du Xiao madly rushed after some time. And, he was sweating coldly from head to toe. His face had twisted beyond recognition. He had seemingly lost his mind, "This is bad!"

"What's wrong?" Ou Cheng Wu stared blankly, "Have they arrived already?"

The Great Elder was even more dissatisfied, "You need to keep your calm! Why are you panicking?"

Ou Du Xiao's entire face was filled with soya-bean-sized sweat beads. He nearly wanted to cry, "Our hidden treasure house has been looted. None of our martial treasures are left... inside!"

"What?" The Great Elder fiercely stood up. And, the chair made a 'bang' sound as it got flipped over. However, he didn't pay any attention to it. His old eyes had always been hidden in the wrinkles, but they suddenly got opened-wide like copper bells, "Say it again?!"

"It has been looted... everything is gone..." Ou Du Xiao's voice had a sobbing tone in it, "We are left with nothing..."

Ou Cheng Wu fiercely withdrew three steps. His complexion had

become as white as snow.

"Let's go and take a look!"

The Great Elder was soon standing in the empty 'secret treasure house'. His eyes became lifeless when he saw that each and every Divine Incense Jade Box was empty. He didn't speak for a good while, and it seemed as if he had lost his soul...

A very long while passed before he suddenly vomited out blood. After that, he fell down while looking upwards, "Oh God... do you want my Ou Clan to perish?!!"

Ou Cheng Wu's body was shivering. His vision went blurry as he murmured, "How can this happen...?"

The Ou Clan had collected these martial treasures to upgrade their cultivations in the past. But, these treasures didn't have much of a use left after a certain amount of time had passed. So, they were sealed up. And, they got in an increasing number of opportunities to commit all kinds of crimes as the Clan continued to expand. So, they plundered more and more of these martial treasures.

The Ou Cheng Wu used to think that these treasures could be slowly used for cultivation since they had collected so many of them. But, the clan had later reached a new level in the poison art, and these martial treasures could be used with poisons. Moreover, the poisons that were made with these treasures were of highest level. Therefore, these treasures had been managed very carefully since then.

However, they had never expected that these martial treasures would be stolen at the critical time when the Ou Clan would need them the most!

"The only thing that is left behind here... is a lot of dust. Some dried up elixirs are also left here," Ou Du Xiao spoke-up in a daze.

Suddenly, a mysterious light flashed in Ou Cheng Wu's eyes as he

spoke-up, "Could this be King of Hell Chu's doing?"

Ou Du Xiao shook his head, "It can't be. I was with King of Hell Chu since the moment he entered this place, and I stayed with him the entire time! So, he didn't have any opportunity to do such a thing! There must've been someone else."

"Find out!" Ou Cheng Wu violently roared-out.

All the elixirs were gone. Moreover, the treasured items had also been taken away by King of Hell Chu. Consequently, a big clan like the Ou Clan had now sunken into a troubled situation where they didn't have anything to deliver if they would wish to give gifts to someone!

...

Upper Three Heavens

Chu Fei Ling had returned to the Chu Clan. And, this had caused a great sensation.

No one had thought that Chu Fei Ling would find the Mysterious Yang Jade so quickly.

Doctor Yu was greatly startled when held the Mysterious Yang Jade. His white beard had turned straight. And, his eyes had nearly popped out of their sockets, "Mysterious Yang Jade Core? Where did you get this treasure from?"

"I found it by chance. That's all. It was just pure luck." Chu Fei Ling gently smiled. He didn't wish to reveal the existence of his 'little brother'. The first thing Chu Fei Long would do... would be to vent out his anger on Chu Yang if he were to find out about this.

"Your luck must have been very good." Doctor Yu looked at him with an envious look, "This Old Man has searched for it for a hundred years. But, I never even saw the root of its hair."

Chu Fei Ling replied, "Doctor Yu, I've gotten this thing... So, there won't be any problem in curing my father's injuries, right?"

"There absolutely won't be any problem anymore!" Doctor Yu patted on his chest and said, "We have the core of Mysterious Yang Jade now... So, I will stop my practice and leave for begging if I wouldn't be able to treat the Clan Lord of the Chu Clan properly!"

Chu Fei Ling let out a sigh of relief and said in a grateful manner, "Thank you so much, Doctor Yu. We have troubled you a lot."

Doctor Yu gently chucked.

"Big Brother, I heard that you have come back! Did you find the Mysterious Yang Jade?" a voice full of deep concerns was heard. A middle-aged man walked over along with the voice. His appearance was heroic. His stature was tall. He wore an embroidered robe. His hair wasn't messy from any angle. There was meaningful look in his eyes. His vision would seem to be as sharp as that of an eagle even if he looked at someone with a gentle look in his eyes.

However, the expression in his eyes was as deep as an ocean. Moreover, his temperament was extraordinary. He stood in such a way that his disposition looked as calm as water, and his stature as lofty as a mountain. Every action and every movement of his' seemed very natural, but also full of the natural instinct of authority.

It was the Second Son of the Chu Clan – Chu Fei Long.

"I've found it. Father's injuries should be healed without any issue now." Chu Fei Ling looked at his own Second Brother with a complex look, and replied in a light manner.

"That is indeed very good!" Chu Fei Long's spirit immediately rose up. He then grabbed Chu Fei Ling's hand and spoke-up in a pleasantly surprised manner, "Big Brother... you must've been very lucky this time. Third Brother and I didn't feel like eating anything over the past few days... Ah, luckily, Big Brother has come back so early. Third brother would keep blaming himself even if I would support him... Perhaps, I wouldn't have been able to stand for long."

He sighed while speaking, "Third Brother always thinks too much. He said that it's his fault so many times that it literally gave me a headache."

Chu Fei Ling's Adam's apple moved as he swallowed saliva. Then, he replied with a smile, "You two have looked after father in these days when I wasn't present. Second Brother, thank you for the trouble..."

Chu Fei Long became disgruntled. And, he sincerely said, "Big Brother, why are you saying this? We are brothers from the same parents. We are born of the same mother! So, it's only natural that we must care for our father. Why are you saying 'thanks for the trouble'? You must be very tired because you had to rush about, Elder Brother. This is making me worried for your health. You must give your body a proper rest for a few days now that you have returned. Big Brother is indeed the backbone of our family. Your little brothers don't know what we would do if you collapsed from weariness."

He had affectionately spoken these words with a clear and bright smile. And, he cordially pulled the hand of his elder brother. He had an utterly sincere look on his face. And, he generously gazed at his elder brother. Moreover, the rim of his eyes had turned somewhat red. So, one could clearly see that these words had come straight out of his heart.

Chu Fei Ling sighed since he felt emotional in his heart.

He recalled the time when the nine Saber Emperors of the Ye Clan had chased after him to kill him.

[Second Brother, was it really you? I want to believe that the 'you' in front of me is the real you...]

Doctor Yu looked-on as this happened. And, he couldn't help but feel envious as he said, "You brothers have a great relationship. Such brotherly love is very rarely seen in others families."

Chu Fei Long laughed out loud and replied in a sincere manner, "Doctor Yu is speaking so highly of me that I'm blushing. We are the children of the same mother. So, what kind of brothers would we be if our relationship wouldn't be good? Elder Brother has taken care of us two brothers since our childhood. He has taken-on everything on himself for us. He always bears the burden of responsibilities... Would there be any in the world who would deserve respect if such an elder brother becomes unworthy of respect?"

Doctor Yu became gratified as he nodded. He then said, "I will give this to the Clan Lord Chu to heal his injuries. You brothers haven't seen each other for a long while. So, you should enjoy some time alone to chit chat." He walked away as soon as he finished saying this. And, he sighed while walking away.

[Indeed. There are so many clans in the entire Nine Heavens. But, brothers like these with such kind of deep brotherly love... really can't be found in many of them.]

Chapter 528: My Sworn Little Brother is Very Ferocious!

A man’s shadow flashed. Chu Fei Yan rushed-in at a flying speed, "Big Brother... you have come back... I heard that you have found the Mysterious Yang Jade?" His hands were somewhat shivering with nervousness. He had firmly fixed his attention at Chu Fei Ling.

Chu Fei Ling nodded and smiled, "Yes. I’ve found it."

"Very good... very good!" Chu Fei Yan jumped up. He then saw that the Second Brother was also present here. So, he hastily greeted him as well, "Second Brother, you’re also here..." he sounded a bit nervous.

Second Brother had always been very kind to him. He had always taken care of him in every possible way. But, he didn’t know why he felt frightened every time he looked at his Second Brother... it was something far worse than a big brother’s affection.

Chu Fei Yan didn’t know what was going on in his heart.

"Third Brother, this impatient temperament of yours never changes." Chu Fei Long puckered his brows, "You are a fully grown man now, but you still behave like a child. Our Big Brother had personally moved into action. So, was there any reason to lose hope? Is there any need to even raise this question..."

He pulled his younger brother with stern criticism on his mouth. He carefully brushed and patted the dust off his collar. Then, he caressed the messy hair on the head of his younger brother. He was full of love and protective intentions. His face was steady and calm as he rebuked, "Pay some attention to yourself in the future! Look at yourself... what a shabby appearance you have!"

Chu Fei Yang scratched his head, and laughed mischievously. He felt a little embarrassed. [Big Brother is tolerable to an extent. But,

Second Brother has always considered me a child... It's very annoying.]

[However, Second Brother shows such love and affection that it feels good...]

Chu Fei Ling looked-on from a side with a smile on his face. But, his heart heaved a sigh of pain.

Chu Fei Long's performance was impeccable. It could deceive everyone except Chu Fei Ling. After all, Chu Fei Ling had personally suffered at the hands of Chu Fei Long. So, how could he be deceived so easily?

[My wife and I were chased and attacked repeatedly. And, it has been eighteen years since we lost our son. Then, I was besieged by nine Saber Emperors in the Middle Three Heavens! Could this all be false?]

[Second Brother... What exactly are you after?]

...

The three brothers sat for a while until the sounds of approaching footsteps were heard. It was Doctor Yu who walked over with quick steps. He had a smile across his face, "Fortunately, I didn't fail in my job!"

Chu Fei Ling and Chu Fei Yan stood up unison. They were overjoyed to hear this.

A cold light flashed through the eyes of Chu Fei Long at first. But then, he also stood up in great happiness. In fact, it seemed as if he would go crazy. He rushed and grabbed Doctor Yu's hand, "Thank you, Doctor! Thank you, Doctor! Doctor, you have done a big favour on my Chu Clan. You've made this Fei Long shed tears of gratitude! A thank you wouldn't be enough for the favour that you have done. Please, accept my heartfelt gratitude!"

He knelt down with a 'thump' while speaking. Then, he repeatedly kowtowed. His face was filled with grateful expression,

and his eyes were brimming with tears of excitement. The feelings that he was showing seemed to be very real.

"There is no need to do this. There's no need of this. Second Master Chu, I genuinely don't deserve this." Doctor Yu consoled him with all his heart. He then hurriedly lent an arm to support Chu Fei Long, and made him stand up.

A hearty laughter was heard. An old man with round eyes and a well-formed forehead walked over from inside. He had a smile of satisfaction on his face. It was the Clan Lord of the Chu Clan – Chu Xiong Cheng. The darkness on his face had cleared up. His whole face seemed to emit a red glaze. One could see that his injuries had healed.

"Um, everyone is here... that's good! Fei Ling, I survived thanks to you," Chu Xiong Cheng laughed heartily and spoke-up.

"Father, it's great that you've recovered completely. Your child's suffering has paid off," Chu Fei Ling respectfully and sincerely replied.

"Big Brother, has sister-in-law returned?" Chu Fei Yan asked.

"She had gone to the Lower Three Heavens. But, I've passed-on the news to her. She should be back in a few days," Chu Fei Ling replied with a smile.

"Sister-in-law has gone alone... What if something happens on the way..." Chu Fei Yan anxiously said.

"Your sister-in-law and her master have gone together... So, there is no way that something could happen," Chu Fei Ling replied in a manner that indicated that there was no need to worry.

"Big Brother had made a well-thought plan," Chu Fei Long burst into loud laughter, "You requested Senior Lan to go along with sister-in-law. Now... there are very few people in the entire Nine Heavens who can injure sister-in-law if her master is with her. Big Brother loves sister-in-law very much. She is indeed your lovely

wife."

"Ha ha ha..." everyone except Chu Fei Ling laughed heartily.

Chu Fei Ling felt a bit depressed in his heart. But, he had no other choice but to laugh a little along with everyone.

...

Several days passed. Yang Rou Lan had finally returned to the Chu Clan. But, she had returned alone. She was pulled away by Chu Fei Ling after she had paid her respects to her old father-in-law.

"Why did you return so late?" Chu Fei Ling was somewhat anxious.

"I had something to handle on the way." Yang Ruo Lan replied, "What's the matter?"

"The matter is important!" Chu Fei Ling had a serious look on his face, "I encountered Ye Ran Mo in the Middle Three Heavens. He had eight Saber Emperors with him. And, they besieged me in a battle array. It happened on my fifth day in the Middle Three Heavens."

"Has he started to act again?" Yang Rou Lan's complexion changed, "He is indeed dead-set on exploiting every opportunity to get to us. Are you alright?"

Yang Rou Lan listened to him, and sensed that this matter was fishy.

"I am okay. Luckily, I had my sworn Little brother on my side. Otherwise, I wouldn't have come back alive," Chu Fei Ling sighed. He recalled about Chu Yang, and couldn't help but expose a warm smile on his face.

[He saved my life, and he also gave me so many gifts. This is very...] Chu Fei Ling felt a heartfelt kindness towards his own sworn Little brother.

"Your sworn Little brother...?" Yang Ruo Lan asked in a mocking way, "Are the brothers of your own family not reliable enough... that you had to find yourself a sworn Little brother?"

"He he... My sworn Little brother possesses remarkable abilities," Chu Fei Ling replied in a mysterious and secretive way. Then, he looked all round with rapt attention and observed the sounds of activities, "Don't tell anyone what I am about to tell you. My sworn Little brother is the one who gave me the Mysterious Yang Jade Core."

"Eh? Your sworn Little brother is so generous?" Yan Ruo Lan was flabbergasted, "But, the Mysterious Yang Jade Core is the most valuable treasure in the world! How can someone be willing to give it away just like that?"

"There's more to it than that. My sworn Little brother gave me many other things as well," Chu Fei Ling smiled and said, "It's a pity that the Second Brother has a great popularity in the Clan nowadays. And, he has people who are very close to him. So, I can't speak about the matter of my sworn Little brother. Otherwise, it will definitely reach his ears... oh dear!"

"What is the cultivation level of your sworn Little brother?" Yang Ruo Lan tightly knitted her elegant eyebrows and said, "Obviously, you can't speak about him if his strength is low. He has destroyed Chu Fei Long's plan. So, Chu Fei Long won't let him off at any cost."

"Yes. This is what I'm worried about," Chu Fei Ling nodded and said, "My sworn Little brother is merely a second grade Sword King."

"That can be a problem. You may not speak anything about your little brother. But, won't Ye Ran Mo speak-up about it?" Yang Ruo Lan anxiously asked, "He is too dangerous. He might try to catch your sworn little brother. Your sworn little brother has done a very big favour on us. My conscience would be very disturbed if

something were to happen to him."

"It’s all right," Chu Fei Ling slightly smiled, "My sworn little brother has already killed Ye Ran Mo. And, I have killed those nine Saber Emperors of the Ye Clan with the help of my sworn little brother. None of them survived."

"That’s good." Yang Rou Lan let out a sigh of relief. Then, she suddenly became gobsmacked as she realized something extremely strange about this matter. She then lifted her head and opened her eyes wide, "Hold on... What did you say? Ye Ran Mo was killed by your sworn little brother? Your little brother is only a second grade Sword King, isn’t he? And, he helped you kill nine Saber Emperors? And, no one survived?!"

"Yes, ah... incredible, right?" Chu Fei Ling felt somewhat proud as he said, "My sworn little brother is very ferocious!"

Yang Ruo Lan was struck dumb. Her mind was blown since she couldn’t imagine how a Second Grade Sword King could help a ninth grade Saber Emperor kill nine Saber Emperors...

"Yes, this is true. My sworn little brother is crafty and full of tricks... He didn’t use his true skills when he killed Ye Ran Mo." Chu Fei Ling didn’t have any other option but to tell everything about what had happened on that day. He was smiling while speaking. He then said, "Even I was very shocked when this happened..."

"That’s a given..." Yang Ruo Lan had a dull look in her eyes.

"Just guess... What is my cultivation level right now..." Chu Fei Ling asked in a mysterious manner.

"Aren’t you hiding your real cultivation level of Ninth Grade Saber Emperor? What is there to guess?" Yang Ruo Lan coldly glanced at him and said, "Now tell me properly... how did you come to know your sworn little brother?"

"Check this out." Chu Fei Ling extended out his hand and

grabbed. Suddenly, the whole spirit energy in the air got caught in his hand. Then, a white light issued out from his hand. And, four perfectly round small halos of pure white-color flashed in his hand.

"Ah!" Yang Ruo Lan suddenly stood up. She looked at her own husband in disbelief. Her eyes got filled with astonished look, "You... you... you... a fourth grade Saber Monarch? You are... a fourth grade Saber Monarch. But, why are your 'Sovereign Monarch Rings' white in color?"

"Well, my present cultivation level is of a fourth grade Saber Monarch. But, my mental state cultivation is at the peak of ninth grade Saber Monarch," a light flashed in Chu Fei Ling's eyes as he explained, "Therefore, the Sovereign Monarch Rings are pure white."

"How... how is this possible...?" Yang Ruo Lan covered her mouth in shock, "How... can you possibly be so quick... And, what's up with this mental state... this..."

Yang Ruo Lan was an Emperor Level Expert. So, how could she not know what this meant? The cultivation level of a fourth grade Saber Monarch possessed the mental state cultivation of a ninth grade Saber Monarch! This meant that he wouldn't face any bottlenecks on the path that led to the ninth grade Saber Monarch. Therefore, it could be said he would automatically become a Ninth Grade Saber Monarch as long as he continued to practice!

Wouldn't it be very easy to increase one's martial power while cultivating under these circumstances? The most important key during cultivation was the mental state! In fact, it was possible to remain stuck at the bottleneck for a lifetime if the mental state couldn't make a breakthrough.

For instance... someone's cultivation level is at third grade, and another person is at fourth grade. They both practice together. The third grade person would only be able to consolidate energy

after a certain extent. He would absorb a lot of spirit energy, but it would scatter soon after. On the other hand, the fourth grade person would be able to make the spirit energy enter into the body, and would be able to turn it into his cultivation.

This is the importance of the breakthrough of mental state! That is... the existence of the so-called ‘bottleneck’!

However, it had become a piece of cake for Chu Fei Ling!

"I didn’t believe it at first. I initially thought that I would stay trapped on ninth grade Saber Emperor Level for a long time. But, my sworn little brother gave me a medicine. And, it made my cultivation upgrade by five levels in a sudden manner. I broke through the bottleneck without any problems. Moreover, it made my mental state cultivation level-up to a ninth grade Saber Emperor’s!" Chu Fei Ling’s eyes flashed. He had expression of gratefulness on his face as he slowly explained.

"What kind of medicine?" Yang Ruo Lan felt her breath becoming faster.

"I don’t know about this medicine either." Chu Fei Ling mysteriously smiled and said, "But, my sworn little brother has given me two. I have taken one of them and made this advancement. And, the other one is for you. Your condition of heartache would also vanish once you eat this. Moreover, your state of mind would also be able to upgrade to ninth grade Monarch Level... And, your martial power cultivation would also be able to level up by a lot. You will see it for yourself."

"Such an elixir exists in the world?!" Yang Ruo Lan was so shocked that she was at loss for words.

"Didn’t I just tell you? My sworn little brother is awesome!" Chu Fei Ling had a proud smile on his face.

...

Chapter 529: Son? This Can’t be Said so Casually!

Chu Fei Ling took out a purple jade bottle from his bosom as he spoke this. He then handed over this precious treasure to Yan Ruo Lan, "Take it, okay? This is little brother’s gift for you."

Yan Ruo Lan held the jade bottle, and she felt a kind of peaceful sensation in her whole body. She couldn’t help but exclaim as she said, "It is indeed a very good thing... Why is this little brother of yours so good to you?"

"The kindness of my sworn little brother towards me is indeed as unshakable as a mountain!" Chu Fei Ling sighed with emotion and said, "My sworn little brother has given me two medicinal pills for both of us. He said this medicine can even bring one back to life as long as one’s head hasn’t been chopped off! Moreover, he has given me this bottle of medicines. No one would be able to see your actual cultivation once you’ve taken this medicine. This happens because this medicine covers the fluctuations of one’s internal energy..."

Yan Ruo Lan became speechless since she was in shock. She had never seen or heard of such things before!

[This sworn little brother has given you so many things?]

"Well, my little brother has also given me a sword for you. And, he has also given a saber to me as a present." Chu Fei Ling carefully took out a sword and said, "I have tested this sword. It can cut iron as if it was mud. It is more than ten times stronger than my previous saber! It can be said that this is the sharpest heavenly weapon I have ever seen if you exclude those treasured weapons of the great nine clans!"

He heaved a long sigh, "The sharp swords and treasured sabers of the Nine Great Ruling Clans are the weapons that the ancestor of

the clans have handed down from generation to generation. They are the sacred items of the clans. How can they be found in common places..."

Yan Ruo Lan picked up the sword. She then pulled it out of the sheath, and looked at it. She felt a cold illumination... like the clear-limpid autumn waters on the sword. It seemed as if it was showing the reflection of the world in every possible way.

The weight, length, and style of this sword were gratifying and satisfactory. It was beyond exceptions! She couldn't help but click her tongue in wonder as she said, "This sworn little brother of yours is so talented. This sword is so much in-line with my preferences."

"My sworn little brother is a true genius with God-given wisdom. I don't think that there is anything that he doesn't know about," Chu Fei Ling proudly said.

Yang Ruo Lan replied, "Your sworn little brother seems to hold deep affection towards you. Fei Ling, you mustn't let him down by any means! These things aren't some ordinary items. Each of them is an embodiment of generous kindness sent from the heavens, and demands profound obligation."

"This is obvious!" Chu Fei Ling assuredly said, "Take this medicine quickly. Little brother said that it is only effective on Emperor Level Experts, and experts of higher level. It won't have any effect if someone below Emperor Level takes it."

Yang Ruo Lan nodded. She gently and carefully opened the purple jade bottle. There was a multi-colored pill inside it. Suddenly, a burst of rich fragrance filled the air. She didn't dare to delay, and hastily popped the pill.

She felt a huge amount of spiritual power transforming into pure vitality as soon as it went into her mouth. It then madly rushed towards her limbs and bones... She couldn't help but groan in a low voice. Then, she was made to enter into a mysterious realm by

the ferocious medicinal efficacies...

It was early evening time and the lanterns had already been lit by the time Yang Ruo Lan regained consciousness.

Chu Fei Ling had been standing right next to her to protect her this entire time. He hadn't dare to move away.

Yang Ruo Lan opened her eyes. She circulated her martial power for a while. She felt that several unopened bottlenecks had opened up and linked up together within her body. And, this had given her a thorough understanding of many things. Her consciousness was brightly illuminated. She didn't understand a lot of martial laws previously. However, she had gained a thorough understanding about everything at this time. From head to toe... from her soul to her physical senses... everything felt indescribably relaxed!

[My cultivation has upgraded very substantially!]

"Amazing!" Yang Ruo Lan was somewhat dumbstruck as she checked her cultivation. It was difficult for her to swallow down her saliva as she said, "I am now... a seventh grade Emperor Level Expert..."

She extended her hand and condensed her martial power. Seven circles of pure-white color appeared on her hand. She couldn't help but remain in a daze. She then said, "But, my mental cultivation has reached the ninth grade Monarch Level!"

She stood up because she felt that she was still dreaming. Then, she exerted the entirety of her strength and pinched her arm. Then, she spoke-up while still being in a daze, "Is this real? Is this real? Is this really real?"

"It's absolutely real!" Chu Fei Ling embraced his lovely wife in his arms. But, he found that tears of joy were streaming down his wife's face.

He hadn't seen his wife so happy ever since they had lost their son. He couldn't help but feel gratified in his heart.

Yang Ruo Lan leant on her husband’s bosom. She couldn’t hold back her tears from streaming down. She said, "Back then, if... we had such cultivation level... then, our son, our son... we wouldn’t have lost our son..."

Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh. He hugged her even tighter.

"I want to thank your sworn brother properly!" Yang Ruo Lan wiped her tears and said, "Fei Ling, a person with this kind of genuine affection and friendship is considered as a priceless treasure. And, coming across such a man is very rare. So, we can’t disappoint him."

Chu Fei Ling deeply nodded. He then spoke-up to relieve the anxious mood of his wife, "I feel weird saying this, but my little brother is only eighteen years old. He looks very handsome... he felt very familiar to me whenever I looked at him. Moreover, his appearance is similar to me in some ways. You tell me... is it not the destiny that the heaven has bestowed upon me?"

He was full of enthusiasm while he had said this. But, he suddenly found that Yang Ruo Lan’s tender body had suddenly frozen in his arms.

Then, Yang Ruo Lan turned around like a whirlwind. Glistening teardrops and hope flashed in her eyes. She then spoke-up while shivering either anxiety, "Your sworn little brother... is only eighteen years old... And, he looks a lot like you? He... he... can he be..."

Chu Fei Ling became startled.

"Can he be our son?" an intense ray of hope erupted in Yang Ruo Lan’s eyes as she stared at Chu Fei Ling’s face in a firm manner.

"It can’t be..." Chu Fei Ling suddenly jumped up in fright. In fact, his face had filled with sweat because of these words. He wiped the sweat and replied in distress, "That’s absolutely impossible! My sworn little brother is brave, and he’s master of strategies. He is

aggressive and stern. He murders decisively, and he is flexible in all situations! He is the world's top genius. I will have no regrets if I die today in case our son... genuinely has the kind of skills my sworn little brother does..."

He thought, [Motherfu*ker! I will die of shame if that boy is genuinely my son... The fact that I became sworn brothers with my own son... perhaps would become the top legend in the entire Nine Heavens. You can't say this so casually and irresponsibly.]

"What is the name of your sworn little brother?" Yang Ruo Lan didn't pay attention to his rant. She simply pursued further as she asked.

"It is so strange to tell you that... he is also surnamed Chu... He is called Chu Yang." Chu Fei Ling coughed twice and said.

"Chu Yang? King of Hell Chu of the Lower Three Heavens?" Yang Ruo Lan fiercely drew a step back. An unbelievable ray of light was issued from her eyes. [How can it be possible? Is it him?]

"Maybe. I haven't met King of Hell Chu. But, I know it for a fact that my little brother has also come from the Lower Three Heavens," Chu Fei Ling nodded.

"That's right..." Yang Ruo Lan murmured. Her face suddenly turned red. She recalled that she had ruthlessly taught a lesson to King of Hell of Chu a short while ago. But, she hadn't expected that he was the sworn brother of her husband! She hadn't expected that he was that kind man who had done such a big favor to the entire Chu Clan!

[Would I now be considered a person who forgets favors and violates justice?]

She couldn't help but feel ashamed as this thought crossed her mind.

However, she recalled the time when she had met King of Hell Chu. She recalled the image of a dandy, frivolous, rowdy, and

hoodlum of a man. Then, she recalled what her husband had said, ‘He is brave, and he’s master of strategies. He is aggressive and stern. He murders decisively, and he is flexible in all situations!’ These two images didn’t match at all.

Moreover, her husband had also said, ‘the appearance of my sworn little brother resembles mine’... [But, that King of Hell Chu doesn’t have the least bit of resemblance to my husband...]

[Could it be that they are two different people?]

Yang Ruo Lan felt confused in her heart.

"I had to handle a matter. That’s why I came back late... And, the name of my target was Chu Yang." Yang Ruo Lan thought for a while, and then told everything regarding this matter.

Chu Fei Ling became startled as he carefully listened to everything. His face suddenly changed colors to show his displeasure as he listened-on. He then said, "He had an illicit se*ual relationship and abandoned the girl later? My sworn little brother wouldn’t do that at any cost! You are certainly mistaken! Your master handles things arbitrarily. She is selfish. She doesn’t care about the feelings of others... Moreover, did that junior sister of yours seek you and yours master to vent out her anger? She willingly and gladly sacrificed herself for him. What does this have to do with you two? Who asked you to go and teach lessons to others’ boyfriends? This is simply irredeemable!"

Yang Ruo Lan’s face turned red as she said, "I indeed... acted a bit rashly in this matter."

"What ‘acted a bit rashly’? It was simply absurd!" Chu Fei Ling said angrily, "We still don’t know whether the person you dealt with was my sworn little brother or not... How would we face him in future if it’s really him?"

Yang Ruo Lan’s face had reddened. She said, "But, this Chu Yang was somewhat flippant and insincere. Moreover, he seemed to be

rowdy even though he was a mere 18-year-old King Level Expert. There wasn’t the least bit of resemblance of you in his appearance. Moreover, he wasn’t a calm boy... Perhaps, these are two different individuals. It can’t be said for sure..."

Chu Fei Ling puckered his brows and said, "This can also be a possibility."

He pondered for a moment and said, "However, I somewhat don’t feel relieved... I will go and confirm after I’ve dealt with the matter of ninth grade spirit beast and Three Stars Divine Clan."

Yang Ruo Lan said, "Well, we both will go together when the time comes. We will express gratitude to your sworn little brother in person. And, I will personally apologize to him and seek for his forgiveness if I have treated him unfairly."

Chu Fei Ling nodded. He thought, [My sworn little brother is very skilled. So, how did he get beaten by you so easily? This isn’t possible! One person can’t pull this off by himself. His wisdom and cultivation are enough to enable him to be unimpeded and unhindered in the Middle Three Heavens.]

...

In the Middle Three Heavens...

After Chu Yang and the others went through a long and difficult journey, and they finally felt that they had arrived in the Great Northern Wilderness.

The more they approached... the more cold they felt. After all, they had arrived in the Great Northern Wilderness. Everyone sucked in cold air since they were only getting to see big glaciers and snow-capped mountains as far as their eyes could reach!

The peaks of the mountains seemed to be wrapped in jade. Only one color could be seen across a vast stretch of thousands of miles. It was a world of ice and snow! It seemed boundlessly grand.

Chu Yang had never been to this place in his past life. He had

believed that many people of great clans of the Middle Three Heavens would've arrived here in the past few days. So, shadows of people should be seen flying here and there in a chaotic manner. But, he found out that he was grossly mistaken now that he had arrived here himself.

Strangely, there wasn't a single soul in sight.

Moreover, he didn't know where those people had gone off to. However, one would look tiny-enough to be easily overlooked even if one were to be standing openly and fearlessly on the top of a glacier...

"We have finally arrived!" Chu Yang's black robe fluttered in the wind as he set footing and walked slowly in the ice field. He felt that the chillness of the air blowing head-on was seeping into his bones. There were snowy clouds in the sky. It was boundless. Suddenly, they could feel a heroic feeling raging in their hearts!

...

Chapter 530: Transcending the Nine Heavens... Starts from Today!

Suddenly, Sword Spirit fiercely flipped over in Chu Yang's mind. His face filled with excitement. And, this made the entire Nine Tribulations Space shake. In fact, it seemed as if it were dancing.

"Isn't this the Northern Ice-field of the Middle Three Heavens?" the Sword Spirit asked with limitless excitement.

"Yes," Chu Yang replied.

"Very good! You've finally arrived here!" the Sword Spirit excitedly somersaulted in the Nine Tribulations Space. He then said, "I had been waiting for this day for a long time... for a very... very long time!"

"Huh?" Chu Yang questioned.

"A wisp of my soul is sealed here," the Sword Spirit burst into loud laughter, "It's just under this Northern Ice-field. So, I can increase my strength to double or even more if you can find it. Moreover, other functions of the Nine Tribulations Space would be activated! Your cultivation would also increase subsequently! Moreover, I would also be able to help you even more!"

He gladly smiled and said, "And, the most important thing is that the quality of the Nine Tribulations Sword will upgrade by one more level!"

"So, that's how it is." Chu Yang got very excited in his heart when he heard this.

The chill entered through the soles of his feet, and went all the way up through his body. The Sword Point of the Nine Tribulations Sword crazily shook in the Dantian. It was in a very excited mood. In fact, its excitement even passed on to Chu Yang's heart.

"What's up with this?" Chu Yang's heart thumped madly. The Sword Point, Sword Edge, and Sword Spine were also throbbing intensely in overexcitement.

"Innumerable martial treasures grow on the Northern Ice-field! This place is extremely cold. So, human presence is almost negligible in this area. Therefore, the herbs here are preserved very well!" the Sword Spirit excitedly explained, "However, the Nine Tribulations Sword will again make advancement if it gets to swallow so many rare treasures and herbs! Moreover, it will also get ready to meet the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword. And, these opportunities are right here!

"In the Northern Ice-field!" the Sword Spirit continued with a smile, "And, I forgot to inform you! The Nine Tribulations Sword will gain a new ability after it levels-up this time... it would be able to manufacture pills that can upgrade anyone's martial power! Moreover, this can be achieved without any negative side-effects."

Chu Yang was struck dumb. He remained startled out of pleasant surprise.

Sword Spirit then said, "That will also upgrade the cultivation of your brothers to the Emperor Level. After that, their mental cultivation will reach to the peak of the Monarch Level at one fell swoop if they take the Nine Tribulations Pill!

"The previous Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword had adopted this method. They had used it to help level up their henchmen. And, that had helped them in forming an unprecedented and invincible force that could flatten the nine heavens! However, this needs a very long process before it can materialize!"

"I see!" Chu Yang's eyes lit up.

"But, you must be careful. There are several extremely terrifying auras in this northern wilderness. These auras had dispersed into the distance a long time ago. However, the residual auras are still

overwhelming me! So, I can’t come out to help you if you run into such a person by chance... And, that’s because they will detect my existence! And, that would be even more dangerous for you," the Sword Spirit warned.

"Are they that powerful...?" Chu Yang puckered his brows, "How can such formidable people be present in the Middle Three Heavens?"

"These people aren’t from the Middle Three Heavens. They’ve only come here to handle some business," the Sword Spirit explained in a comforting manner, "You don’t need to be worried. The Nine Heavens Law Enforcement will set into movement in case more than two of such people appear. I can sense four such formidable auras in this vast wilderness. So, one among them has to be from the Law Enforcement!"

"What is the cultivation level of these formidable existences?" Chu Yang asked.

"...it’s hard to say." The Sword Spirit remained silent for a moment and said, "They are the so-called geniuses of this world. They have shunned the world, but they are absolutely brilliant. They have their own way of doings things. They often live a simple life, and they often possess a very high cultivation. But, nobody knows their names...

"Moreover, these existences appear once in a thousand years! And, their attacks can be world-shaking!" the Sword Spirit sighed and said, "The Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword have been revered in the Nine Heavens since ancient times. But, don’t forget this one little thing... the Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword have been considered extremely powerful since the ancient times, but the thing that was actually powerful... was the Nine Tribulations Sword... and, not the Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword themselves!

"However, the tyrannical power of these formidable existences

lies within themselves!" the Sword Spirit spoke in a serious manner, "These people are no match if all the fragments of the Nine Tribulations Sword are collected to make it a whole. But, the Nine Tribulations Sword Master will undoubtedly be defeated if he uses some other sword to fight with these people..."

He then warned in a heavy manner, "And, he will most-certainly die at the end of it!"

"These people respect the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword. So, they won't create any trouble because of the reputation of the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword. However, they don't respect the current Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword... they only respected that extraordinary man who has created the Nine Heavens!"

Sword Spirit continued, "You haven't gotten hold on the Nine Tribulations Sword... And, you haven't succeeded in obtaining all the fragments of the Nine Tribulations Sword yet. So, you must be very careful if you run into such people. That's because you lack the ability to protect yourself! Remember that you're still young! So, you must be very careful!"

"So such kinds of people actually exist in the world." Chu Yang murmured. He suddenly felt that his understanding of the world was becoming more brilliant and varied.

"Such people are very few... but, they certainly do exist." The Sword Spirit replied, "For example... Chen Feng and Liu Yun used to be two Supreme Experts... It has been ten-thousand years, but they probably haven't died yet... The concept of 'lifespan' doesn't apply on Supreme Experts. They have the ability to slow-down their aging infinitely..."

"So, you are saying that these Supreme Experts have followed the Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword in the past, and that they are still living till this day. Then, the cultivation of the Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword should've been at the Supreme Level

as well? So, perhaps they haven’t died either…?"

Chu Yang had asked this since he was at a loss.

However, the Sword Spirit suddenly became silent. He refused to answer this question, and sank into a kind of absolute silence. Even Chu Yang couldn’t sense what was going on in his mind, "I won’t tell. Kill me if you want but, I won’t tell."

Chu Yang helplessly shook his head and smiled.

Then, he rearranged his train of thoughts. And, he quickly turned it away from these fantastical stories. He thought, "It’s not so easy to come across these kinds of people anyway."

[The Sword Spirit’s soul fragment will return. And, the Nine Tribulations Sword will be upgraded when that happens. Then, I can make the strength of my brothers increase by a lot.] This news had made Chu Yang very happy!

The brothers saw Chu Yang in such a happy mood. So, they came-over to interrogate about the reason in quick succession.

Chu Yang laughed out heartily. He was in a very cheerful mood.

"There are friends in this Northern Wilderness! And, there are enemies as well! There are cold-blooded murderers, but warm-blooded saviors are also present! There are brothers! And, friends!" Chu Yang laughed heroically, "Brothers, you must know that this Northern Wilderness will bring the biggest transformation among us!"

"Biggest transformation? What transformation?" The brothers were somewhat puzzled.

"There aren’t many enemies in the Northern Wilderness. So, the killing intention is very faint here. This is an unexplored land of the Nine Heavens," Chu Yang added as he recalled the Sword Spirit’s warning. The Nine Tribulations Sword became excited in the Dantian. He looked up, and shouted out loud. He then said, "There are countless opportunities here! The fish will have

transformed into a dragon by the time we leave this place!

"This is a heavensent opportunity. How can it be missed?" He laughed out loud. Then, he faced upwards and howled. The howl was intense, sky-piercing, and cloud-tearing. He then fiercely said, "Transcending the Nine Heavens! It starts from today!"

A sharp and cold light was issued from Gu Du Xing's eyes. He then muttered, "Transcending the Nine Heavens starts from today..." Suddenly, he felt a profoundly heroic feeling in his heart!

A loud shout came from a distance. Then, a loud and clear voice was heard from the faraway place as it said, "Transcending the Nine Heavens. That's indeed a positive outlook. And, this is a good way of expressing this!"

A blue shadow of a man came from the sky. The shadow flashed like a meteor in the sky, and landed in front of Chu Yang. He then spoke-up with a smile, "King of Hell Chu, I have been waiting for you for a long time."

It was Young Master Yu!

Chu Yang's eyes lit up. He said, "My debtor has finally come. Young Master Yu, where are your white crystals?"

Young Master Yu put on a 'dumbfounded' expression. He didn't know whether to laugh to cry, "We haven't seen each other for a long time. And, you want to settle the account now that we are meeting again? Do you think that I – Young Master Yu – am not trustworthy...?"

"How can you be trustworthy when you haven't paid your debt yet?" Chu Yang coldly stared at him and said, "Be quick. I need them urgently." He couldn't help but become anxious. The cute little girl had been quiet since the past few days. And, her heart would feel more and more bitterness whenever she would look at Chu Yang and the others practicing.

Chu Yang felt distressed about it. The most immediate method to

untie the knot in this little girl's heart was to make the Nine Tribulations Sword join with Nine Tribulations Pill and cure her Three Yin Meridians at one fell swoop.

Mo Qing Wu would be able to continue with her practice if this were to happen. And, her chest would no longer ache every time she would practice...

However, the key to the enhancement of the Nine Tribulations Sword was the white crystal ore that was in Young Master Yu's possession!

Young Master Yu coldly snorted and said, "Fine, come with me then. Young Master Yu will first repay the gambling debt to you." he sprang up while speaking, "Come with me..."

Chu Yang carried Mo Qing Wu on his back, and followed him closely. Gu Du Xing and the others also went after them. And, this big string of people went whistling through the wind and snow.

They were moving swiftly on the slippery ice field. So, they covered a distance of dozens of kilometres in a flash. The winds and snow were getting denser and denser.

Suddenly, a strange howl came from a distance in the front from amidst the wind and snow...

"It is a ninth grade Spirit Beast!" Young Master Yu suddenly stopped even though he was going at a lightning speed. In fact, he halted in the slippery ice like a nail on the ground. He didn't put least bit of effort, and changed his direction immediately, "Let's go over and have a look."

His blue robe fluttered with 'shua' sound as he went away more than five hundred feet.

Chu Yang couldn't stop himself in time, and ended up slipping for a thousand or so feet on the slippery ice. Then, he turned around to come back. However, he couldn't help but cuss in his heart, [This bastard. Why did he change the direction halfway? Is

it possible that he wants to renege on the debt?]

Everyone rushed in that direction.

Everyone except Chu Yang was very interested in this mysterious ninth grade Spirit Beast. After all, this was their main aim of coming here.

...

Two men's shadows were walking several dozen kilometres outside this ice field.

These people were walking together. However, their movements, their expressions, their elegance, their appearance... their anything-and-everything was completely different from each other!

Anyone would feel the same thing when they'd look at these two people – [These people are from two different worlds! They absolutely are!]

One of them was moving steadily on foot. And, the other's feet were rushing quickly while spinning. One had a calm complexion, and exuded elegance. And, the other had stuck out his head, and was looking around with impatience. One's black robe was fluttering as if he was taking a casual stroll in a courtyard. And, the other's black robe was making gurgling sounds... as if he was struggling for his life.

One had regular facial features. And, his bearing was refined. He looked like a modest gentleman. The beard on his lower jaw was fluttering in the air... like that of an immortal. His expression was tranquil and calm. It seemed as if his heart had been released from the worries of this world.

But, the other one... damn! His appearance couldn't be described. It simply couldn't be described... the man looked extremely ugly. In fact, he was so ugly that such an ugly person had never been seen in the entire Nine Heavens! Such an ugly appearance of a man

had appeared for the first time in the ninety-thousand-years-old history of the Nine Heavens!

He flared-up his nose as they walked. Then, he suddenly turned around and said in great ‘shock’, "Master, there’s a tree over there. Don’t you wish to take a piss?"

…

Chapter 531: Tan Tan and the Divine Chi Gathering Fish!

These two people were Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan.

Meng Chao Ran seemed to be very helpless. He frowned, "Tan Tan, Master wants to discuss something with you."

Tan Tan responded in a ‘shocked’ manner, "Master, please say."

Meng Chao Ran’s face filled with sullen expression. He then powerlessly said, "Only us master and disciple are here. You don’t need to be shocked, okay? You think I wouldn’t know whether you’re good-looking or not... I have been raising you since the past eighteen years you know? Why are you pretending to be shocked in front of me?"

Tan Tan proficiently combed his hair using his hand. It seemed as if he hadn’t heard anything. Then, he raised his head and flung his hair. After that, he proficiently fished out a mirror from his bosom and shouted in a shocked manner, "Master, take a look. I haven’t looked in the mirror over the past few days. But, I have grown very handsome since then..."

Meng Chao Ran was struck dumb, "I think my words have fallen on deaf ears." So, he gloomily walked forwards.

Tan Tan looked at his reflection in the mirror very carefully. He then said in a narcissistic manner, "Fu*k! So handsome... that Young Miss Xie Dan Feng would surely go crazy about me if she were to see me now..."

The golden fish’s tail suddenly stretched out and swung twice in his arms.

Meng Chao Ran deeply sighed, [This Divine Chi Gathering Fish makes me feel nauseated...]

Tan Tan sorted and groomed his appearance in the mirror. He

crooked his mouth and slanted his eyes, and made a few expressions. Then, he again assumed the look of ‘shock’ in front of the mirror and said, "Say Master, will Chu Yang come or not?"

"He will definitely come," Meng Chao Ran spoke-up assuredly.

"Yeah... I have heard that the wife-snatching battle was very lively... it’s a pity that I couldn’t get there," Tan Tan bitterly looked at Meng Chao Ran. "I blame Master for this. You made me break through a bottleneck at that time..."

Meng Chao Ran’s complexion turned black. He turned a deaf ear to Tan Tan’s accusation. And, he sped forwards and left his shameless disciple far behind ... [How shameless! You arrived at the bottleneck. You reached at the turning point to make a breakthrough. Then, you wasted time and now you’re saying this... you’re blaming me? Don’t you know that such an opportunity doesn’t come easy to the ones who practice martial arts?]

[What you said is simply outrageous!]

Meng Chao Ran would’ve grabbed this guy and beaten him up if his forbearance wasn’t extremely good!

"Senior Martial Brother won’t recognize me if he sees me." Tan Tan happily took out the mirror and looked at his reflection again and again. Then, he looked aloof and dejected as he spoke-up, "The super-ugly Chu Yang would think that he has never met such a handsome guy..."

Meng Chao Ran’s shadow flashed. He hurriedly turned around and grabbed Tan Tan’s collar since he had been driven beyond the limits of forbearance. Then, he ruthlessly shouted, "Shut up! I will send you back to practice if you dare to speak half-of-a-word more! And, I will no longer allow you to come out again!"

Meng Chao Ran’s handsome face had gotten somewhat twisted... [This motherfu*ker is unbearable. The days of my life have been

sinking into the abyss of suffering ever since this guy has found that a ‘shocked’ expression makes his appearance look better. I really hate it!] Meng Chao Ran would feel that his temples were throbbing wildly whenever he was with this disciple. He was always worried that he might get a headache the next moment...

Tan Tan was flabbergasted as he looked at his master. He wanted to ask something, but didn’t dare since his eyes were filled with shock. However, he didn’t need to pretend being ‘shocked’ because he was genuinely shocked...

Meng Chao Ran only felt powerless when he saw this expression on his disciple’s face. He then slowly let go of his grip and said, "I couldn’t control my bad temper... but, you... can you not be such a narcissist..."

"Master... you are treating me very unjustly..." Tan Tan made a flat mouth since he felt greatly wronged. He felt that he was being treated unjustly. He even somewhat wanted to cry, "...I’m not narcissistic... How can I be a narcissist when I am so handsome...?"

Meng Chao Ran’s temples bulged up. He heaved a deep sigh. He powerlessly relinquished his grip, and said in a grieved and heartbroken tone, "Just walk... Ok...?"

...

The battle on Mt. Dingjun had already been over by the time this master-and-disciple duo had thought of going there. In fact, they had been three days late. After that, they had heard that the ninth grade Spirit Beast had appeared in the Northern Wilderness. So, Meng Chao Ran decided to take Tan Tan to help him gain some battle experience.

However, battle experience was only one aspect. Meng Chao Ran’s main purpose was... to deliver Tan Tan in Chu Yang’s care. After that, he wanted to escape to faraway places so that he could immerse himself in his practice. In fact, Meng Chao Ran felt that he would be able to live several years longer if weren’t to get to see

this guy for the remaining of his lifetime ...

He was genuinely fed up. He simply couldn't imagine what kind of torment it would be for him if he were to stay with Tan Tan for a long time... For instance, anyone would go crazy in no time if they were to see the infatuated Sister Xie Dan Feng stroking the hair of this narcissist every day...

Meng Chao Ran had already spent a miraculous amount of time in persevering through this!

It had already been more than a year since he had been training him in the Cang Lan battlefront.

Tan Tan's Divine Chi Gathering Fish had grown more than two feet long. It would obediently stay in Tan Tan's bosom. It didn't need to be in water since it was capable of gathering spirit energy and could then make water out of it. Consequently, it didn't need to worry about eating or drinking.

The Divine Chi Gathering Fish was capable of absorbing the spirit energy of the world. So, it could change the absorbed spirit energy into spiritual power within its body.

Moreover, it was enough for two people to cultivate at the same time.

Therefore, the strengths of this master-and-disciple duo were increasing at a lightning speed these days! However, Meng Chao Ran hadn't thought that he would be benefitted by being with his disciple and would continuously break through bottlenecks.

Tan Tan had reached the ninth grade of Revered Martial Artist in such a short period of time. On the other hand, Meng Chao Ran had broken through to the eighth grade of King Level!

Meng Chao Ran had discovered a very strange thing during his martial practice – [He noticed that the Divine Qi Gathering Fish absorbed more and more spirit energy as it grew. And, his advancement become quicker and quicker... In fact, the higher the

cultivation level, the quicker would be the breakthrough!]

This phenomenon was certainly mysterious.

In particular, the Divine Qi Gathering Fish would use the water congealed from spirit energy to fulfil its everyday requirement of water. Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan would drink the water every day. And then, their cultivation would advance by leaps and bounds!

However, Meng Chao Ran also found a problem. It was – [It is okay if Tan Tan drinks that spirit water condensed by the Divine Qi Gathering Fish. In fact, this fish quickly makes more water even if he empties it entirety. But, the Divine Qi Gathering Fish rolls its eyes to the back of its head and firmly stares at me every time I take a sip of the water...]

[It is as if it is some sort of spiritual wisdom.]

[Moreover, this lousy fish gathers large amounts of spirit energy only when Tan Tan's practicing beside it. But, it flips around and starts showing its white belly if Tan Tan isn't present. In fact, it simply stops working in his absence...]

This discovery had left Meng Chao Ran puzzled!

Tan Tan hadn't mistreated this strange fish any less either. In fact, he had thrown it into a latrine pit the first day when he had obtained this fish. And, this abuse had become increasingly intense with the passage of time. He would frequently hold it tightly to study and to figure out what kind of talent this fish had since it was capable of gathering the spirit energy...

Moreover, Tan Tan was diligent, and never slacked towards this research. In fact, he had released the Divine Qi Gathering Fish in water for the sake of the research one time. After that, he had wrapped the mouth, nose, and eyes of this fish in a cloth. In fact, he had almost choked it to death...

Then, he had fished it up from the water, and had put it under

the sun. Its skin had nearly dried to death under the sun. The Divine Qi Gathering Fish would've died after some struggle if it didn't have the skill to make water from spirit energy...

However, he hadn't made any progress with his research still. So, Tan Tan had cut out the scales of the Divine Qi Gathering Fish, and had crushed them into small pieces. Then, he had researched them as well...

The most unreasonable time was when Tan Tan had scooped out a piece of this fish's meat using a knife. This had almost killed this strange fish.

It could be said that this Divine Qi Gathering Fish would've died within three days in Tan Tan's hands if Meng Chao Ran hadn't stopped Tan Tan. In fact, it could be said that Meng Chao Ran would continuously stop the 'atrocity' of Tan Tan. He had done so many favors on the fish. He had saved the life of this Divine Qi Gathering Fish at least thirty to fifty times.

However, this strange fish never looked at Meng Chao Ran in a pleasant manner. On the contrary, it was full of love towards Tan Tan... regardless of the frequent abuse. It was sometimes depressing for Meng Chao Ran since he was very knowledgeable and well-cultivated – [What's so good about this brat?]

[But, this fish is hell-bent on serving him?]

Meng Chao Ran recalled all this and sighed. Then, he pointed his finger ahead and said, "Another 250 kilometres, and we will enter the Great Northern Wilderness. Chu Yang must've arrived there by now."

Tan Tan was suddenly filled with great happiness. He hopped up and said in shock, "It's great. Awesome! I will make that 'nothing special to look at guy' Chu Yang startled this time! I'm a man with devastating beauty and the brilliance of sunshine, and I will appear in front of him out of the blue. Ha ha ha..."

Meng Chao Ran suddenly turned his head. And, his complexion turned ashen. He remained silent and walked away in tears...

[I can't take this anymore. I really take this anymore... Oh God!!!]

...

Chu Yang and the others heard strange roaring sounds as they approached. Moreover, these sounds were getting nearer and nearer. It seemed that this ninth grade spirit beast was being besieged by people! The roars of this spirit beast were loud and clear. But, the roars weren't painful in their make. It seemed that this beast wasn't taking those people seriously.

They turned around an almost-transparent ice wall, but what they saw... left them gobsmacked!

They saw a big monster of several hundred feet in height. It was waving its two gigantic claws; they seemed like small mountains. It body seemed like that of a spirit monkey. It was flexibly jumping around, and its movements were quick.

Many mutilated and rotten corpses were lying in the vicinity. Also, many people were seriously injured. So, they were groaning in pain as a result.

A hundred or so people were still attacking this monster fiercely.

However, their attacks clearly didn't threaten the ninth grade spirit beast.

"What kind of monster is this?" Chu yang asked in his mind.

Sword Spirit disdainfully looked-on and replied, "It is only an ancient ice bear; nothing more. How can such a mindless brute deserve to be called a ninth grade spirit beast..."

"Ancient Ice Bear...?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes." Sword Sprit replied, "The ancient ice bear is known as the Gigantic Bear of Wilderness. It is an eighth grade spirit beast in reality. Its usual height is approximately thirty feet. And, its

general weight is about three-thousand pounds. But, its body can expand to ten-times of its normal size in emergency situations. Its strength also increases to ten-times! It’s most effective attacking method is its body. It can puff-out icicles from its mouth, and they can then act as sharp killer-weapons. But, its cultivation decreases greatly every time it spits them out.

"The body of the ice bear is covered with impenetrable fur. So, they can resist attacks very well. An ordinary expert can’t hurt it even with continuous attacks! It is obvious that this ice bear is having fun right now... These people are no threat to it," the Sword Spirit disdainfully passed the judgement, "But, this ice bear has a big role for a genuine expert. You can eat its left forefoot. And, it is very delicious as well."

...

Chapter 532: Young Master Yu's Misery!

"Eh, the only real function it has is its left foreleg..." Chu Yang was speechless. It was hard to digest what the Sword Spirit had said after he looked at this majestic and gigantic bear surrounded by dozens of King Level Experts.

Meanwhile, Young Master Yu felt very disappointed in his heart on the other side. He mumbled, "Dammit! It turned out to be this piece of sh*t? This is no ninth grade spirit beast..."

He suddenly became angry, "It is a waste of my time!"

Then, he shouted loudly, "You guys ought to fu*k off from here! Are you crowding here to give ration for feeding this monster?"

Everyone who was in the middle of that fight turned around furiously. They turned around and looked. And, they saw a man's shadow coming over at a flying speed.

The blue robe of Young Master Yu spread out in the snowy wind. His body pierced through the air and tore the snowflakes into shreds its wake. His body sent out shockwaves along with the sound of thunderclap. And, this was enough to blow away dozens of the King Level Experts who were present there. They were sent tumbling and rolling towards the head of the Ancient Ice Bear as a result. Then, he ruthlessly kicked on the shoulder of this big bear!

The ice bear screamed loudly. And, its mountain-like gigantic body was sent out flying to a distance of seventy-to-eighty feet by this kick. He fell down on his buttocks upon an icy mountain peak with an explosive sound. Then, a crashing sound echoed, and the icy mountain peak shattered into small pieces.

The bear immediately hopped and stood up. Then, it looked at Young Master Yu with a frightened expression since he was coming over towards it. Suddenly, it let out a strange roar. Then, it turned around and wildly rushed away.

The monster that was showing-off its strength, and was insufferably arrogant a moment ago... was now running away with its tail pressed between its legs because of one kick from Young Master Yu!

Everyone who watched this shocking scene was left with their mouth and eyes wide open. They stared at Young Master Yu as if they were looking at some supernatural entity...

[Is... is he even human?]

However, Young Master Yu didn't chase after it. His fluttering robe settled down. He then looked at the crowd from the corner of his eyes. After that, he disdainfully spoke-up, "This piece of trash seemed like ninth grade spirit beast to you? And, you even thought that you could hunt one down... do you guys even know that you can be killed by the fart of a ninth grade spirit beast? It's a pity that you're so ignorant... Wait. You guys still haven't gotten lost yet...? Why is everyone looking at me? Do you want to die?!"

That group of people had obviously come from several different clans. And, Young Master Yu's words were harsh and offensive. But, they didn't dare to retort with even half-of-a-word. In fact, none of them even dared to show an angry expression in their eyes. Instead, every person retreated with a smile on their faces...

"I told you people to get lost! Didn't you listen to me properly?" Young Master Yu became angry. He rushed over and kicked a middle-aged man on his buttocks. This guy went rolling away like a rubber ball as a result.

"That's right. Get lost... just like this! Get out of my sight! Otherwise, you will die!" Young Master Yu was clearly somewhat impetuous at the moment. He then kicked seven or eight King Level Experts as if they were some rubber balls.

The people in that group were angry with this mistreatment, but they didn't dare to speak-up. They didn't have any other option but to bend down, and chose the humiliating way of rolling out of

there. They then hurriedly left while rolling-about.

Young Master Yu's anger didn't vanish until these men had rolled out his sight.

"Brother Yu... You seem to have a big bad temper today, ah." Chu Yang asked with a soft smile.

"I have come here for the ninth grade spirit beast. The nine grade spirit beasts are very useful! But, I ran into such a shameless bear instead! He had the guts to pretend being a ninth grade spirit beast!" Young Master Yu snorted and said, "Would I have wasted my time on this wild-goose chase if I had known that this noise was being made by this bear? It is very hard to see a ninth grade spirit beast you know! Alas!"

Finally, he took a deep breath after he was done speaking.

"I see," Chu Yang secretly nodded in his heart. He thought [So, this is the reason. It's not surprising that he didn't care about the inner core of this bear. So, his only target is a ninth grade spirit beast.]

"We have also seen many spirit beasts before. But, they were mostly fifth, sixth, or seventh grade spirit beasts. Their power wasn't formidable. So, how come this eighth grade ice bear was so tyrannical despite being merely an eighth grade spirit beast?" Gu Du Xing went closer to them and asked.

"How can... grade seven and grade eight be compared? There is world of difference between them!" Young Master Yu grumpily replied, "Moreover, this ice bear is at the peak of eighth grade... it would need a great amount of luck and a large amount of time to break through to the ninth grade... And, this is the reason that I didn't kill it."

Chu Yang laughed out loud, "So, Brother Yu is waiting for this big beast to advance in grades."

"I will use this bear after it has levelled up in case I can't find a

ninth grade spirit beast," Young Master Yu complexion turned gloomy as he said.

Everyone unleashed their agility skills amidst this conversation, and started to move towards the depths of the wilderness. They had covered a distance of thousand miles by night-time. There stood a towering mountain up ahead at this time.

"This is my home." Young Master Yu stopped and looked towards that icy mountain peak in low spirits. His voice had a trace of nostalgia as he spoke-up, "I grew up here... and, I've been here as far as I can remember. Ha ha... I had no parents or close relatives. I had no master or friend... Only this icy mountain peak was there to accompany me."

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing looked at each other. They saw shock in each other's eyes.

"I left this place and went to the Upper Three Heavens when my cultivation arrived at Emperor Level." Young Master Yu seemed a little sad as he looked at this familiar scenery. He silently said, "I had never known why other people have parents and I don't...? I had always thought that this is very unfair... But, later I discovered that there were others out there whose parents had died or gone missing... or had perhaps abandoned them... But, the fact is that... I never had parents in reality."

Chu Yang thought over these words in his mind. Suddenly, he felt extremely shocked. [The fact is that I never had parents in reality... what does this mean?]

Sword Spirit also opened his eyes wide in shock inside Chu Yang's mind. He then muttered, "So, he is..."

However, the Sword Spirit didn't tell... what he was.

"I wandered in the Upper Three Heavens for several years. Finally, I felt that it was no fun. But, I offended a great clan in order to save a person... And, the person I saved betrayed me.

Then, three Saint Level Experts of that great clan chased after me to kill me... Ha ha... they eventually captured me. They then destroyed my cultivation, and crippled me. They destroyed my aptitude... ha ha ha... How can one stay a good man after that has happened!"

Chu Yang and the others became surprised from the bottom of their hearts. They had never anticipated that this handsome and divine looking Young Master Yu... a freak who had no match in the entire Middle Three Heavens... the famous Minister Yu of the Dark Bamboo... had such a painful past.

Young Master Yu smiled bitterly. His whole face was filled with bitterness and astringency. In fact, his mentality seemed to have become somewhat frail while facing this icy peak mountain...

"They thought that I would die! What a pity... I didn't die, but I ran away! Then, I wandered around, and came to the Middle Three Heavens again. After that, I started everything from the beginning... And, I slowly became who I am now. Then, I met Jun Xi Zhu while I was wandering around in the Middle Three Heavens!"

Young Master Yu smiled faintly, "Then, I lost a bet to her... So, I promised to do anything for her."

"But, I must take revenge from the enemy in the Upper Three Heavens."

Young Master Yu's clothes were floating as he stood in the front of the peak. He insipidly said, "This is my past. Isn't it very boring?"

"It isn't boring!" Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, "It is very free and rhythmical! It is also very admirable. I don't dare to guarantee that I would have been able to achieve what you have achieved if I were to experience what you have experienced."

"Our physical constitutions are different," Young Master Yu

softly smiled and said, "We are fundamentally different!"

His clothes fluttered as he walked ahead. Then, he insipidly said, "Follow me. Come, I will pay you what I have promised for the gambling debt that I owe you!"

...

Chapter 533: Heavenly Orchid!

Young Master Yu floated ahead. Then, he insipidly said, "Chu Yang, you come with me alone. Rest of you wait here, alright? After all... I owe only to Chu Yang, and not any of you."

Chu Yang made a signal to make Gu Du Xing and the others to wait here for a while. After that, he followed behind Young Master Yu alone. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang looked at each other, and saw an expression of understanding in each other's eyes.

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo were somewhat indignant. But, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were loners themselves. So, they had understood Young Master Yu. Although they hadn't faced such twists and turns that Young Master Yu had faced in his life, but they had felt the same kind of feelings before.

Moreover... the kind of position and strength one has... decides one's habits and moods.

Therefore, Gu Du Xing felt a sense of understanding as looked at the back profile of Young Master Yu. He felt envious, but he also took pity on him. He felt envious of Young Master Yu's strength, and he pitied him because of his loneliness.

It's quite easy for a person at the lowest level to make friends. One can talk to his friends anytime-anywhere, and play with them all day. Of course, it's only because there are too many people who are like him. But, the number of one's genuine friends begins to reduce if one attains a dignified status. Moreover, the person starts to build walls of guard in his heart without any particular reason, and subconsciously starts to maintain distance from other people... So, the word 'friendship' turns into a natural moat.

Whereas, the ones who are in a superior position than common folk... remain as his allies and subordinates. The word 'ally' is often perceived as 'friend'. But, one's allies can turn into worse than one's enemies if they let their guard down around their allies.

Therefore, it would seem that a dictator has no other choice but to be lonely.

This is also the reason why all the kings of the past dynasties had no other choice but to be lonely. It's because their position decided the absoluteness... that they couldn't have friends! In fact, they had no other choice but to stay lonely even if their heart would long for a friend. And, that's because nobody would dare to be friends with such people. And, this was the harsh truth.

This matter made Chu Yang melancholic in his heart. It wasn't impossible to have strength and friends at the same time. However, one would need to become someone like Chu Yang... who works hard with his brothers, progresses together, and reaches the pinnacle together! This was so because the friendship becomes instinctive when this association becomes a habit. And, that is what eternalizes the friendship...

Chu Yang decided that he would never be as lonely as Young Master Yu... no matter what phase would come.

He could sense that Young Master Yu's emotions were obviously very intense at the moment. Therefore, the outburst would be as terrible as a volcanic eruption if he were to be provoked at this moment!

However, Young Master Yu's mood was unstable because that Ancient Ice Bear had appeared all of a sudden. And, it had elicited his resentment towards the ninth grade spirit beast!

[So, how is a ninth grade spirit beast so useful to Young Master Yu? It must be of huge use, right? Otherwise, Young Master Yu wouldn't have lost his mind like that.]

[Young Master Yu has grown up here. He can kick a huge spirit beast who is at the peak of eighth grade, and send it flying for dozens of feet... but, he has never seen a ninth grade spirit beast? Or... is it that he has seen one, but couldn't do anything about it?]

[How terrifying can a ninth grade spirit beast be?]

[It's a difference of one grade. Is it that such a big difference?]

Chu Yang was pondering over these things in his heart. He seemed to have come up with a theory. In this theory, [It seems that the difference of one grade must be a great difference. But, why don't the spirit beasts of lower grades have such a big disparity?]

[Could it be that this grade difference of spirit beasts is similar to what cultivation is for humans? Going up the grades becomes more and more restricting, and so the disparity also increments exponentially...?]

He remained silent along the entire way. And, he entered into the icy mountain peak as he followed after Young Master Yu.

Young Master Yu's robe was fluttering as he arrived at the foot of the mountain. Chu Yang suddenly discovered that this icy mountain peak was a little different than the other mountain peaks. It was completely vertical in reality! In fact, it would be better to call it a 'thick mass of mysterious ice or a glacier' from ancient times rather than classifying it as a 'cloud piercing peak'!

"This is my home." Young Master Yu stood in front of this sky-touching icy mountain peak with his hands clasped behind. His back was towards Chu Yang. He then solemnly said with a strong undertone of vicissitudes to his tone, "You're the first guest at my home in many years!"

He shook his sleeves and exposed his fair hands while he spoke that. Then, he flew high in the air, and collected some ice and snow. Then, he wiped his fingers clean with it. He then gave a command with his thought, and the snow and ice covered his whole body with a howling sound. Then, they dissipated with a 'thump' sound.

Chu Yang couldn't help but feel that – [Young Master Yu is a lot

cleaner than before!]

[He actually washed his whole body before he entered his house! It's obvious that he cherishes his 'home' a lot!]

"I need to clean myself before going in, and before coming out of my home. No stain of the world should be there on me while I enter my house. And, I mustn't leave any dirt behind while going out." Young Master Yu softly said, "Only I can enter my home. Only I can enter... even after I get married. No one can enter my house... even if it is my wife or children."

He softly smiled. It seemed that he was full of reluctance as he said, "But, one more person can go in now. And, that person is you."

He extended his hands as he spoke. Then, he put them on his chest. After that, he separated his hands. Suddenly, a pure and holy white light appeared between his hands. The white light flashed and fiercely shone on the wall of the icy mountain peak. A pure and heavenly energy suddenly emitted out from the wall of the icy mountain peak. And, Chu Yang felt a strange comfort and peace in his whole body as a result.

After that, a door silently appeared on the wall. There was a gentle white light in the gate.

The process of appearance of this gate seemed to be as natural as the very existence of this icy mountain peak!

Young Master Yu hung down his hands. He felt very nostalgic as he saw this gate. Then, he softly let out a breath and said, "Come in, Chu Yang!"

Chu Yang hesitated for a while and said, "Even your wife can't enter your home. So, wouldn't it be inappropriate if I enter? Therefore, I would rather wait outside for you."

"Not necessarily. My wife can't enter. But, that doesn't mean that you can't enter either." A brilliant light flashed in Young Master

Yu’s eyes. He then said, "I too don’t wish to let you in. But, I have a feeling that you should come in."

Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, "Alright!"

He entered this mystical icy mountain peak as he followed after Young Master Yu.

He turned his head before he entered the door to look back. He looked in the direction of Gu Du Xing and the others. But, he couldn’t see anything apart from snowy-wind. It seemed as if Gu Du Xing, Mo Qing Wu, and the others had disappeared.

"They can’t see in here, and you can’t see them." Young Master Yu coldly said, "Others can’t see my residence without my permission... even if the person is a Supreme Level Expert!

"And, this has nothing to do with cultivation. It is the world of truth in reality! The world of privacy!" Young Master Yu smiled. Chu Yang couldn’t tell the reason, but he felt that this smile of Young Master Yu’s was filled with a sense of ridicule. And, it also seemed to be brimming with coldness and anger.

It seemed as if he himself disagreed with his own words –‘it is the world of truth and the world of privacy’.

They vanished the moment they stepped inside the gate. Then, this gate suddenly disappeared from the world. Only the icy mountain peak was left in the world, and it didn’t seem to be different from the other peaks!

It stood erect in the silence.

Chu Yang became startled as soon as he entered. [This mountain peak is a whole entity! But, the space in-here looks as if it was made by the heavens.]

White light was coming all around, but its place of origin was unknown. It was gently shining and making insides of this place look subtly illuminated. Chu Yang felt as if he was walking in a dream...

This place was entirely built inside the icy mountain peak. But, the air inside was unexpectedly fresh and clean. In fact, it was as warm as the air is in the spring season.

Even Heavenly Orchids were growing in abundance on the side of the passage. In fact, almost half of the stone-wall was covered with them! He looked at the appearance of these Heavenly Orchids. It seemed as if the leaves were made of the most delicate jade. Only one flower was growing in the middle of those leaves. Moreover, it had already attained nine colors. Chu Yang fiercely smacked his lips. [This Heavenly Orchid has already matured for ninety-thousand years!]

The Heavenly Orchid changed appearance every 10,000 years. And, it acquired one new color in every ten-thousand years!

One color was added on a Heavenly Orchid every ten-thousand years! It was a supreme spiritual medicine of the world. But, this spiritual medicine was of no use to an ordinary person.

In fact, it was a deadly poison! Even an Emperor Level Expert would immediately explode to death if they took it!

It was rumoured that a Saint Level Expert or higher level only needed to take a petal of the Heavenly Orchid, and his soul would become permanent thereafter! Moreover, a person would reincarnate with all of his memories intact if the said-person were to die after he had taken Heavenly Orchid. Moreover, even thirty-percent of his cultivation would be restored at re-birth...

So to considering this, if a Saint Level Powerhouse having the ‘memories of Saint Level’ and thirty-percent of his previous cultivation were to become an infant again... wouldn’t he become a terrifying expert when he would cultivate once more with such a profound base-foundation?

Thirty percent of the strength of a Saint Level Expert would be at the Monarch level at the very minimum!

A person’s soul would exist forever if they were to consume the Heaven Orchid in the face of a certain death. Therefore, the-said person would be resurrected.

Therefore, this Heavenly Orchid... wasn’t useful to a living person despite being the most wondrous medicine of the world. It was only useful to a deceased person! Or... it was only useful for a spirit!

However, such a huge utility also had an equally harsh condition. That was – the Heavenly Orchid must have achieved ten colors!

In fact, it wouldn’t even work on an immortal if it was consumed before it had reached the ten-color-mark.

But, ten colors...? That would mean the period of a hundred-thousand years! Who would wait for such a long time? Therefore, it merely existed in legends. However, Chu Yang hadn’t expected that he would see a ninety-thousand-years-old Heavenly Orchid right after he had entered this place!

The Sword Spirit’s breathing-rate became faster in the Nine Tribulation Space. In fact, it seemed as if he was bellowing. His lips quivered in excitement, "Chu Yang, oh great sword master... you must take hold of this Heavenly Orchid! This... this item has the biggest utility for both of us..."

Chu Yang knitted his brows, "Eh?"

"It can provide eternal soul, ah!" The Sword Spirit stared blankly as saliva drooled down from the corner of his mouth, "Am I not also a soul, ah...? In fact, I’m a residual soul... I definitely need this thing, ah!"

"This... perhaps, this isn’t the right thing to do..." Chu Yang was very much hesitant. [Young Master Yu cherishes his home so much. So, he obviously wouldn’t wish for anyone to take away this priceless 90,000 year old Heavenly Orchid from here... It’s too difficult, ah!]

[Moreover, I can’t steal...]

[If people respect me— I respect them ten-times more than that. Young Master Yu invited me in his house. Do you want me to steal from him? My heart wouldn’t be able to live with this burden even if I take it without telling him. Also... there’s nothing I can do to make Young Master Yu feel sympathised with me.]

The Sword Spirit begged in an unprecedented manner, "You must do it... even if it’s not the right thing to do... you must do it even if you are unable to... You must do it at any cost... This Heavenly Orchid has grown to ninety-thousand years, my God... I will make use of fifty-percent of my spiritual power to accelerate its ripening if it enters into the Nine Tribulation Space..."

...

Chapter 534: Super Doomsayer!

Sword Spirit nagged with hidden bitterness. He chattered in a somewhat nervous manner. Chu Yang was shocked by this. The Sword Spirit had used only a bit of his spiritual power in the past, and he had come close to dying due to cardiac pain. And, now he had mentioned to use half of his spiritual power to accelerate the ripening of the Heavenly Orchid...

However, Chu Yang turned a deaf ear to him. And, he continued to follow after Young Master Yu. At present, his strongest desire was to upgrade the Nine Tribulation Sword, and to treat Mo Qing Wu as quickly as possible. So, he pretended not to hear to this 'presumptuous' request...

[Um, wait for me to finish the main business first. Then, I might mention about it later... but, the hope of getting it depends on Young Master Yu ...]

The Sword Spirit was distraught in the Nine Tribulation Space. In fact, he was rolling and revolving in madness. He grabbed his hair and muttered to himself, "But, this is a Heavenly Orchid, ugh. I really want to eat a Heavenly Orchid..."

"Heavenly Orchid... will give me an eternal soul... Oh my God... I will die... this kind of enticement... is indeed fatal, ah..."

The Sword Spirit nervously revolved in circles. Then, he suddenly jumped in Chu Yang's mind. He bellowed loudly in a rhythm, "Heavenly Orchid! Heavenly Orchid! I want to eat the Heavenly Orchid! I want to eat the Heavenly Orchid!"

Chu Yang became frustrated. And, he was aware that he couldn't close his space of consciousness. So, the Great Master Chu kept on enduring... and enduring... and enduring... [I have had fu*king enough... wait until I get all the pieces of the Nine Tribulations Sword... the first thing I would do is to throw this guy out...]

[Dammit! How is this fair?! This residual spirit that is residing here temporarily is being so arrogant...]

...

"Here is my practicing room. This is my meditation room. This room is for breakthrough. This is my study room. This is my music room. This is my music room for playing zither. This is my bedroom... This upper floor is to keep ancient books and records. And, the top-most place is my sightseeing platform.

"However, I can't see anything except for ice and snow from there..."

Young Master Yu introduced his palace to Chu Yang in a soft voice while they walked. His tone had a warm meaning to it. In fact, this warmth was difficult to describe even though his tone was light.

"My hidden treasure-house is up-ahead," Young Master Yu softly smiled and said, "There are a few things in the so-called hidden treasure-house. But, I can promise to give you only one to take away."

"What about your White Crystal ore?" Chu Yang was obviously the most concerned about the White Crystal Ore because that was the most needed thing for the Nine Tribulation Sword at the moment.

"I will obviously give you... the White Crystal Ore!" Young Master Yu looked at him with a smile. Then, he earnestly asked, "The White Crystal is only for forging ware things as far as I'm concerned. It doesn't have much of a use otherwise. You might have noticed that my bed, my seat, my desk, my bookshelves... well, almost all of them are made up of White Crystal. It's genuinely not that extraordinary. So, I don't understand why you are so interested in such a low-level item?"

Chu Yang touched his nose and replied, "Well, this is a secret. It

would be inconvenient to tell you that."

Young Master Yu crossed his arms in front of his chest. He then said with a smile that contained a deep meaning, "Please! Come inside the hidden treasure-house."

The voice hadn't faded yet when a door opened up-ahead. Both of them went in. And, Chu Yang was startled when he looked inside.

[Can this also be called a hidden treasure-house?]

This place was very big. It had the large space of dozens of houses combined. It was very spacious!

There were five shelves made up of White Crystal inside the treasure-house. But, the thing was... Every shelf was a big lotus flower-like platform. And, one item was kept on each petal of the blooming lotus that was made up of white crystal!

In other words, this so-called hidden treasure-house of Young Master Yu's had a total of five types of treasure!

This was very different than what Chu Yang had imagined!

Young Master Yu's black robe fluttered. It seemed as if he had sensed Chu Yang's doubt. He walked slowly with his hands crossed behind his back and said, "Hidden treasure-house... is obviously a place to store treasures! And, how can a person of my level treat 'junk' as treasured objects? Obviously, I put only those items here that can be regarded as treasures in my eyes!"

He continued with a proud smile, "But, I only found these five items over the past many years. Only these items are worthy of being put here!"

Young Master Yu slowly walked forwards and said, "Come, I will show you!" he walked to the first shelf as he spoke. Chu Yang looked clearly and saw three black sand granules. They seemed average. In fact, they seemed very ordinary.

"This is the Heavenly River Sand!" a thunderbolt resounded in

Chu Yang's heart as soon as Young Master Yu spoke out these three words!

Heavenly River Sand!

The legends stated that the Heavenly River Sand was capable of changing something rotten into something magical! One grain of the Heavenly River Sand could transform a martial arts loser into an incomparable genius! It could increase one's strength hundreds-and-thousands of times... regardless of one's aptitude or comprehension ability!

The Heavenly River Sand was something otherworldly! The legends stated that this was an object that had been left behind by that extraordinary man who had created the Nine Heavens. So, nothing could be said about its origins.

However, the Heavenly River Sand had many other functions as well. The Heavenly River Sand was capable of changing anything rotten into something magical. Let's say that... one granule of the Heavenly River Sand was mixed with an ordinary iron while making a weapon. Then, the said-weapon would be able to cut iron as mud with ease!

Let's say that... one was lucky, and could assimilate one grain of the Heavenly River Sand into one's meridians. This individual wouldn't face any bottleneck... regardless of one's cultivation level! But... the assimilation of this item needed an incredible luck and opportunity.

In fact, one couldn't assimilate it even if one was to be a Supreme Level Expert and didn't have the stroke of luck on their side!

And, Young Master Yu had three granules here!

"I originally had four granules of this thing. But, I have already refined one of them. So, there are three left now. That is why I could make a comeback in a short period of time after I had been crippled." Young Master Yu looked at Chu Yang, and said with a

smile, "I was only three years old when I refined this thing."

"I see!" Chu Yang suddenly had a realization.

"Well, you only understand half of it." Chu Yang hadn't told him what he had understood, but Young Master Yu had still said that he had only understood half of it with affirmation in his tone.

"Oh? Then, what's the other half that I didn't understand?" Chu Yang asked.

"You only understood that refining this Heavenly River Sand requires a pure and innocent heart without any distracting thoughts. But, what you don't know is that... it not only requires pure and innocent heart, but it also requires an innate spiritual body!" Young Master Yu insipidly said, "For example... like mine!"

"So, that's how it is." Chu Yang suddenly had a realization. But, he didn't have any interest in this thing. It was a good thing indeed... there was no doubt about it. It wasn't surprising that Young Master Yu's cultivation was so quick. But, this thing was worthless to Chu Yang. [Not everyone has life experiences like Young Master Yu's. The pure and innocent heart along with the innate spiritual body that Young Master Yu spoke about... is perhaps more difficult to find... than the Heavenly River Sand itself...]

"It seems that you're not interested." Young Master Yu smiled and arrived in the front of the second shelf, "This is Purple Crystal Jade Essence. It is quite inferior to the other things that are present here. But, this is a treasure of the Nine Heavens, and it is very difficult to find."

Purple Crystal Jade Essence!

These words made Chu Yang's heart jump in a wild frenzy. Wasn't his identity pendant made up of Purple Crystal Jade Essence? He went forwards to look and held that in his hands. Be it the color or the touch... this Purple Crystal Jade Essence was the

same as the one that Chu Yang had!

Moreover, he recalled the shape of that jade token. It seemed that it could be fused together with the piece that was kept in front of him. It seemed as if they completed each other...

"It seems to be missing a piece. It doesn't feel complete," Chu Yang probed a little.

"Your vision is really very keen. Well, this Purple Crystal Jade Essence has a backstory." Young Master Yu smiled. He exposed the expression of recollection in his eyes. He felt somewhat warm, "I was travelling in the Upper Three Heavens in the past. And, there happened to be a family that had bought Heavenly Crystal Stone. They had spent a large amount of money on it! So, there was a auction of this item at that time. There were several other people in the bidding; including me. But, there was a guy who obtained it. This Young master didn't have enough property. Moreover, I didn't wish to use my treasures to buy it... he he...

"After that, that man and I drank alcohol on the same desk by chance. And, we got along very well. He then invited me to go and have a look at the opening of the Heavenly Crystal Stone with my own eyes. At that time, I was also very curious towards that stone. So, I went. You must know that there is always a blue crystal, a purple crystal, or a white crystal inside the Heavenly Crystal Stone. But, nobody can see it before they've cut the stone open. I had a little certainty that there would be a good item inside that chunk of the Heavenly Crystal Stone. But, I too couldn't determine what it was. So, I went to test and verify my vision.

"However, that large chunk of stone turned out to be useless since it was variegated Purple Crystal. That old chap became very disappointed by this." Young Master Yu recalled the affairs of those days and happily smiled, "But, I had sensed that there was something profound trapped inside. So, I suggested him to rub and polish the variegated Purple Crystal...

"He listened to my words and rubbed the crystal. After that, he unexpectedly took out a rarely seen and rarely heard of Purple Crystal Jade Essence! It was actually this!" Young Master Yu said, "Then, he divided that Purple Crystal Jade Essence into two, and presented me half in order to thank me. And, his granddaughter was about to get married at that time. His great-grandson was soon to be born. Therefore, he halved his own piece and made two jade pendants out of it."

"Two jade pendants..." Chu Yang's heart throbbed like a drum. Suddenly, even his eyes somewhat blossomed as he sank in deep thought...

"Then, that old man requested me... to carve names on both of the jade pendants! One piece was for his grandson, and the other was for his great-grandson... I still remember that I used my magical power and Saint level strength, and carved one word into the jade essence of each of the pendants without harming the surface of the pendants."

"What words?" Chu Yang anxiously asked.

"I carved 'Yang' on one piece... and 'Chu' on the other!" Young Master Yu leaked a smile on his face.

Chu Yang's whole body shivered a bit. The origin of the pendant that he possessed had been a secret. However, this secret had been fully revealed today. [Of course, my maternal grandfather gifted this to me. But, it was unexpected for me that Young Master Yu had engraved this letter with his own hands...]

[What is wrong with this world... Things are going nuts all of a sudden...] Chu Yang was grumbling in his heart. His eye-socket had started to give off heat...

"Obviously, I did it as per the request of that old chap. I too put a little effort, and set up a prohibition. In fact, I had jokingly said... Brother, I'm carving this letter today. Later, you have to drip the blood of the newborn baby from the tip of its tongue on this jade

pendant once he is born. Then, it will be linked with the surname of the family. The connection will slowly get stronger and stronger five years later. And, I've put my prohibition in place. So, the child wouldn't be able to go missing even if he would want to once these five years had passed..."

Young Master Yu burst into laughter. Obviously, he had recalled the strange expression on the face of his old friend of those days. He felt very pleased in his heart. It was no longer surprising that his 'old friend' had been waiting with all of his heart to hug his great-grandson... to hug his granddaughter's son. And, this Young Master Yu had actually cursed that man to lose his descendant in a weird manner...

This was too unpleasant!

Chu Yang's lips twitched several times. He raised his head, and bitterly looked at this man who had made an auspicious remark. [Motherfu*ker... perhaps I wouldn't have gone missing if you hadn't spoken these words in the past...]

...

Chapter 535: Is it Worth it to Trade Gold for Steamed-bread?

"I was besieged not long after that matter. And, my old brother got seriously injured while helping me. Even his clan nearly got destroyed..." Young Master Yu appeared to be lost in recollection as he continued, "This piece of Purple Crystal Jade Essence is no treasure. But, I have put it here because... I have looked around the entire Nine Heavens, and no one has ever helped me except for that person in these many years!

"So, I have put it here to keep it as a sign of our friendship," Young Master Yu slowly said.

"I see." Chu Yang's throat had become dry. He felt that he wouldn't be able to speak anything else today. So, he struggled and could let out only one sentence from his mouth –'I see'.

It was too unexpected!

It was too... surprising!

It was... too, too, too... coincidental!

The face of this guy made him seem very young. In fact, he didn't look more than thirty years old. So, it was unexpected and unimaginable that he had lived for an unknown number of years... [Dammit! A grandson...?]

[Does it mean that this guy is from the generation of my Great-Grandpa?]

"Um... Brother Yu..." Chu Yang forced a smile.

"What?" Young Master Yu looked him. He was somewhat puzzled, "Do you want this?"

"No, no, no... Brother Yu... Ahm Ahm... Brother Yu... Brother Yu..." Chu Yang said 'Brother Yu' several times. He thought, [Dammit! Calling him 'Brother Yu' is already too much... but, I am

calling him Young Master Yu so many times. But, I'm a little more compelled to call him Grandpa Yu now. Fu*k me! What's wrong with me...]

"What's the matter?" Young Master Yu was puzzled.

"Ahm ahm... Brother Yu, I meant to say... Brother Yu, have you never gone back to look for your brother in so many years?" Chu Yang asked with pauses.

"I want to go back and take a look... but, my present cultivation is still not good enough." Young Master Yu heaved a deep sigh, "I'm afraid that my return will implicate my old brother and bring destruction to his family. So, I can't dare to go back!

"I have changed my appearance many a times over these past years. And, I've been going into hiding in the Middle Three Heavens because of that. But, I don't want them to get involved in dangerous matters because of me! How would it be easy for them to deal with one of the ruling clans of the Upper Three Heavens, ah..." Young Master Yu was somewhat disappointed and frustrated.

"Those dominating clans would certainly want to get their hands on this secret if they found out that I was crippled to that extent and still managed to recover...! And, just in case they found that I was with that man back then... then... he he..."

"Oh... I see how it is!" Chu Yang understood this point very clearly. Young Master Yu had always been so carefree and self-centered. So, it was hard to imagine that he actually cared for others. In fact, it was nearly impossible to think that his thoughts were full of meticulous care.

"Unfortunately, I could never meet my old brother since these past years. I really miss him in my heart." Young Master Yu went on a mental journey after he said this.

"We should look at the third treasure," Chu Yang heard Young

Master Yu saying ‘my old brother’, and he felt a shiver down his spine. He touched his nose in a somewhat uncomfortable manner. [You think that I will let you make me feel uncomfortable? No way...]

The Sword Spirit burst into loud laughter inside Chu Yang’s mind even though he was very depressed in reality.

"This is the third treasure!" Young Master Yu looked at the third lotus flower. There was a piece of white snowflake. He then said with warmth in his voice, "But, I can’t give you this thing... even if you want it. I must keep it since this thing is very useful for me. I will jump up to the Supreme Level in one fell swoop with the help of this thing once I arrive at the bottleneck to enter the Supreme Level!"

He deeply looked at the white snowflake and said, "This is a piece of Soaring to the Skies Snow. It has only one function, and that is to help break through!"

"That’s okay..." Chu Yang spread out his hands, "Tell me what’s next since you won’t give it to me..."

Chu Yang wasn’t interested in this Soaring to the Skies Snow. That was because... This thing would only become useful when he’d arrive at the bottleneck to the Supreme Level. And, there was still a lot of time for his cultivation to reach that high. Moreover, this item was preserved here with Young Master Yu. In fact, this item might perhaps get fused into his body before there would be enough time to transfer it into the Nine Tribulations Space if it were to fall into his hands.

[Moreover, this thing can help a ninth grade Saint Level Expert to break through to Supreme Level. How much energy does it contain? I’m afraid that the Sword Spirit won’t even get enough time to extract power from it, and my body will explode in the process...]

[And, I will become the first one to die of greed in the history of

Nine Tribulations Sword’s Masters if that happens…]

"The fourth treasure is actually the gift I have prepared for you." Young Master Yu said with a smile, "This is Sun and Moon Ointment!" he smiled and said, "I had originally promised you a Purple Jade Core. But, I don’t have that thing here. So, I could give you the Purple Crystal Jade Essence in place of that. It isn’t the most valuable item in my hidden treasure-house even though it is far more valuable than the Purple Crystal Core. But, I realized that I would hate to part with it when I came to think of it. I can’t give it to you because… my sentiments are attached to it."

Young Master Yu looked at the Purple Crystal Jade Essence with eyes full of deep sentiments. Then, he slowly said, "Therefore, I am willing to give you a big bargain. I will give you this Sun and Moon Ointment instead."

"Then… I will gladly take you up on your offer." Chu Yang forced a smile. This big favor that had fallen from the heavens… had left him to feel smashed, confused, and disoriented.

Sun and Moon Ointment! The Nine Tribulations Sword somersaulted in the Dantian from excitement!

"Well, you can also consider it as a repayment for allowing me to keep the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and the Mysterious Yang Jade," Young Master Yu smiled and said, "Your account will certainly be balanced with this. The combined value of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and the Mysterious Yang Jade can’t be compared with that of the Sun and Moon Ointment. But, the Sun and Moon Ointment is useless to me. Well, these are two different things nevertheless. However, the fact is that I urgently needed these two items, and I can’t find them anywhere!"

He laughed out loud and said, "A man can buy a loaf of steamed-bread in-exchange of a thousand pound of gold in the times of starvation. It totally depends on what situation one is in at that time! A thousand pound of gold can’t buy life. But, a steamed-

bread can save a life. This is the fact."

He tilted his head and looked at Chu Yang, "You tell me... is it worth it to trade gold for steamed-bread?"

"More than worth it!" Chu Yang calmly smiled and replied, "I got a great deal today... regardless of the situation."

"The Purple Crystal Jade Essence was acquired by me. But, the other four treasures in my hidden treasure-house are my family property... They've been here since I was born," Young Master Yu laughed out loud, "My ancestors have left these things behind as gifts for me. And, I'm giving one to you now. I just hope that their departed souls won't crawl up from their graves to teach me a lesson!"

He took the Sun and Moon Ointment as he said this, and handed it over to Chu Yang. He seemed very unaffected even though he was giving away this valuable treasure. In fact, he didn't seem to have any willingness of keeping it. Instead, it seemed as if he was throwing away garbage.

Chu Yang also smiled and said, "I will gladly accept it in that case." He received the Sun and Moon Ointment.

As the name suggests, the Sun and Moon Ointment is formed when the essence of the sun and the moon intersect in one place. It condenses for gods know how many years. Then, a fantastic energy is formed with the fusion of the true fire of the sun, and the true energy of the moon.

It was as soft as cotton, and as light as air. This thing was particularly useful for the swords and sabers. A sword would be nourished with warmth and blood even if a little of it was wiped on it. It would produce the wisdom of the Heavenly Armament Spirit. It was a long process, but it had a unique function that nothing could replace!

The difference between having a weapon with ordinary spirit

wisdom... and having the wisdom of Heavenly Armament Spirit... was simply incomparable!

Moreover, a weapon smeared with the Sun and Moon Ointment would possess a ‘memory recall’ ability. So, the weapon would always automatically restore itself to its best state... no matter how much damage it suffered.

However, the Nine Tribulations Sword lacked this very ability! So, the Nine Tribulations Sword it would also become a weapon with Heavenly Armament Spirit Wisdom if it was merged with the Sun and Moon Ointment. Then, it would also possess this ability!

And, it could never be destroyed after that!

The Sword Spirit inhaled a deep breath in his Dantian. Then, he muttered, "It is indeed a great occurrence... none of the previous masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword have obtained this great item. But, this is the era of this boy now. This boy is obtaining all the things, and he’s breaking the previous records..."

"I have already paid as per the commitment. And, it also seems that you’re very satisfied." Young Master Yu smiled and said, "Now, it’s time to repay the gambling debt."

"Heavenly Orchid! Heavenly Orchid! Heavenly Orchid, ah! Heavenly Orchid!" the Sword Spirit crazily yelled in Chu Yang’s mind.

"Um, actually... there is something." Chu Yang took a deep breath. He had diligently spoken this under the Sword Spirit’s pressure. He then tried to probe out, "Your Heavenly Orchid... is very useful to me! I don’t know... whether Brother Yu would be willing to give it to me?"

Chu Yang had thought for a very longtime. Several thoughts had revolved in his mind. Then, he had finally chosen to get straight to the point. So, he had stated his purpose very directly. He knew that he would be the one to suffer a loss if he tried to play tricks on

someone like Young Master Yu.

"The Heavenly Orchid?" Young Master Yu suddenly turned around and looked at Chu Yang's face with a sharp look, "Do you want the Heavenly Orchid?"

"Yes." Chu Yang looked him in the eyes and nodded without hesitation.

"You know about the Heavenly Orchid. So, you must also know that this Heavenly Orchid has grown for ninety-thousand years!" Young Master Yu looked closely at him, "And, a ninety-thousand-years-old Heavenly Orchid is extremely poisonous! So, it is of no use to you. What would you do with it?"

"I can't tell you... what I will do with it." Chu Yang calmly replied, "But, I want it for sure. And, it is very useful to me!"

Young Master Yu sneered and said, "I had promised you the Purple Crystal Core, and gave you Sun and Moon Ointment in its place! You gave me a Yin and Yang Jade Pair, and I gave you the entire stock of White Crystal Ore! King of Hell Chu, I don't owe anything to you anymore. So, why should I give you the Heavenly Orchid?"

"Is there anything you need? I will have a trade with you if I can produce what you need in-exchange!" Chu Yang framed the words very carefully.

"Ha ha ha... what do I need?" Young Master Yu suddenly let out a shrill laughter. The laughter echoed in this sealed place for a very long time.

He glared at Chu Yang with coldly sparkling eyes after he was done laughing. He then said, "I just told you so many things. But, do you know my origin? Do you know the history of this icy peak? Do you know... the history of this Heavenly Orchid?"

"I don't know."

"You don't know anything. Yet, you are asking me for the

Heavenly Orchid?" Young Master Yu burst into loud laughter.

"An ignorant man is scared of nothing! I have dared to ask since I don’t know." Chu Yang insipidly said, "Perhaps I wouldn’t have dared to open my mouth if I had heard the things you’ve said. And Brother Yu, the sound of your laughter was so loud that it made my ears hurt."

A light flashed in Young Master Yu’s eyes as he snorted. He had obviously noticed the hint that was present in Chu Yang’s statement - ‘the sound of your laughter was so loud that it made my ears hurt’.

"Ninety-thousand years ago... that matchless and extraordinary man had integrated the Nine Heavens. However, it exterminated five races as a result!" A mysterious light flashed in Young Master Yu’s eyes as he said, "The crisis was approaching a certain race that was on this icy mountain-peak ninety-thousand years ago. So, that race used their whole strength to preserve the heritage of their race in this icy mountain-peak. They did this so that their lineage doesn’t go extinct! The treasures that are present here... are the remains from ninety-thousand years ago. This plant of Heavenly Orchid used to be a young plant ninety-thousand years ago!"

He heavily said, "However, I... was still an embryo in this space ninety-thousand years ago! I didn’t have any other person of my race to rely on. But, I relied upon the strength of this heritage and went through the time period of ninety-thousand years until I finally incarnated as a person!"

...

Chapter 536: Saying ‘Don’t Want’ Won’t Work!

Young Master Yu sneered, "What would you have asked for in-exchange of this Heavenly Orchid if you were in my place?"

"I don't know," Chu Yang sighed. The Sword Spirit also sighed in Chu Yang's mind.

However, there must've been a little bit of hope since Young Master Yu had said this.

Young Master Yu took a few steps forward and arrived in the passage. He looked at the Heavenly Orchid for a long time. His eyes were full of unwillingness to let this thing go. Suddenly, he slowly spoke-up, "This thing is precious. It is the only living witness of my existence. But, I can give it to you if you are willing to accept my condition."

"What condition?" Chu Yang's heart trembled.

"What is your real identity?" Young Master Yu suddenly turned his head and looked at Chu Yang. He had asked very senselessly.

"What?"

"Aren't you..." Young Master Yu approached him step by step.

"Brother Yu?"

"Aren't you... Aren't you... Aren't you... Aren't you..." Young Master Yu spoke these words a dozen times. And, the look in his eyes became increasingly fiercer as he said these words. But, he suddenly exposed contradictory and painful expressions, and eventually stopped. Then, he said, "Don't you... have an unusual storage space?"

The 'thing' he had just asked... left Chu Yang to turn pale in fright. But, what made Chu Yang even more startled was that he hadn't asked 'that' question in particular...!

Young Master Yu hadn't asked that question in a direct manner, but Chu Yang also knew what he had meant in exact terms.

"Don't worry. Your secret is safe with me!" Young Master Yu's forehead unexpectedly started to sweat. He lowered his head and said in a somewhat dejected manner, "I had started to suspect it when I met you that first time...

"I started to become somewhat sure outside the Continent Center Citadel. Therefore, I deliberately left... to let you go on your own so that you could handle your matters.

"Diwu Qing Rou had once come looking for me before you had left for the Middle Three Heavens." Young Master Yu softly smiled. His smile was brimming with a complex expression.

"Therefore, I looked at your cultivation when you came up here, and I understood half of the matter then.

"You've come here plundering fantastic metals, and belongings of others the entire route. So, I'm very confident about my guess now." Young Master Yu mischievously laughed with his hands clasped behind his back. There an expression of somewhat self-mockery in his laughter as he said, "Therefore, I initially wanted to look for two Purple Jade Cores from outside and give them to you. But then, I changed my mind and gave you the Sun and Moon Ointment instead!

"Do you understand what I mean now?" Young Master Yu tilted his head and looked at Chu Yang.

Chu Yang took a deep breath. He felt the train of his thoughts becoming frenetic. But, he forced himself to remain calm. Then, he replied in a deep and low voice, "Young Master Yu, you're genuinely worthy of your name."

"Don't worry. Nobody in this world can determine your real identity with these clues except for me and the Nine Ruling Clans of the Upper Three Heavens. Ha-ha, you don't need to worry

about... the Nine Ruling Clans of the Upper Three Heavens for the time being. Even that Diwu Qing Rou has a little suspicion about it since he came in direct contact with you. But, his surety shouldn't be more than 10-20%!

"So, Diwu Qing Rou isn't much of a danger for you. Moreover, he won't hesitate to overthrow himself in order to help you fulfil your ambition!" Young Master Yu coldly snorted.

"Would he dare to be so crazy with only 10-20% surety...?" Chu Yang was somewhat confused.

"Ha ha... 10-20% surety can go beyond expectations and become 100% surety! Diwu Qing Ruo wouldn't give up even if he had 1/1000 of surety. In fact, he would still fight for that one-thousandth of hope!" Young Master Yu replied with a grin.

"Diwu Qing Ruo won't reveal your true identity. He's now an object for profiteering for you on the contrary! He will cover up this secret by all means... because he has placed the hopes for his Diwu Clan on you. So, the Diwu Clan is finished if you're done for."

"There's one more thing..." Chu Yang was at a loss, "Where is all this coming from..."

Young Master Yu coldly smiled, "His case is very similar to mine. The fact is that... I want to kill you very badly! It's because you're the Master who has inherited 'that thing' after all! But, I can't kill you. Instead, I must protect you. In fact, I must give you anything you desire. And, I will do that because you will have to promise me one thing in-return!"

"What thing?" Chu Yang asked. This was the second time in a row that Young Master Yu had mentioned this condition.

"I only wanted to ask you to promise one thing. And, the opportunity has come. So, I will mention it now!" Young Master Yu said, "You don't know if you can do it. And, I don't know if you can do it either. But, I must remind you that you will be very

embarrassed when that day comes."

Young Master Yu sighed and continued, "Therefore, you need to consider it very carefully at this time."

Chu Yang nearly fainted.

[You want me to promise 'something' that you haven't told me yet...? And then, you want me to carefully think over it... What in the world is this way of putting a condition? How will I consider about 'something' that you haven't even told me regarding? Would I think over it with my a*s?]

"Promise him! Promise him! Promise him ah..." the Sword Spirit crazily made threatening gestures as it continuously jumped in Chu Yang's mind. In fact, the face of this remnant spirit had turned red in excitement.

Chu Yang lowered his head, and deeply pondered in a serious manner. [It has to be something very important since Young Master Yu has mentioned about it. In addition, I will feel embarrassed... Why would I feel embarrassed?]

[First, there's our present friendship... but, just think about it — Young Master Yu has helped me in Great Zhao, and in the Middle Three Heavens. Also, he has complied to be sparring partners with my brothers to help in their breakthroughs... And, Young Master Yu has put forward a condition now. So, I must help him even if he doesn't give me his Heavenly Orchid in-return. I must promise him!]

[However, he's still ready to exchange a priceless treasure like the Heavenly Orchid for a promise that has no guarantee of being fulfilled. Why?]

[This indicates that this matter perhaps involves an issue with the very principle of the Nine Tribulations Sword!]

Chu Yang eventually lifted his head and replied with difficulty, "I'm sorry, Brother Yu. I decline!"

The Sword Spirit screamed inside Chu Yang's mind. He tumbled and fell down. He abused with tears and snot all over his face, "Oh Great Sword Lord... you're a lowly pig, ah. A cheap pig, ah...! Motherfu*ker! He wasn't giving it to you when you were so much in rush. But, he's giving you the present with both his hands now, and you've declined...? You're so cheap! How can you be so cheap, ah...? My Heavenly Orchid, boohoo... my eternal soul... you Cheap Pig Lord... ah ah ah ah..."

A look of disappointment appeared on the face of Young Master Yu. But, he nodded in gratification instead, "As expected, you refused to comply! In fact, I knew it for sure that you wouldn't have agreed. This means that I haven't misread you."

He looked upwards after he said this. The look in his eyes was full of loneliness and pain.

Chu Yang suddenly felt relaxed after he had refused to promise. After all, he didn't need to think about it anymore. Therefore, he didn't feel burdened anymore. He then said, "Brother Yu, I have disturbed you for a long time. We should go out now."

"Right! Also, there is the White Crystal Ore... yeah." Young Master Yu looked at him with a strange expression in his eyes. Then, he forced a smile and said, "I want to kill you so badly with my hands right now. But, I won't dare to! It's because I don't have time... I will disappear as long as the limit of 100,000 is met... I will be completely eliminated from the world. So, I have no other choice but to fulfil your request... even if you don't promise me in return."

He sighed and said, "I did not hope for you to agree to my condition. But, I'm still giving you this Heavenly Orchid. It will be better if it's with you than here with me. But, you must remember that you must balance the account later since you owe me a favor now."

"Favor? How?" Chu Yang vigilantly asked.

"By favor, I mean... Just help me when you are capable of helping me. Then, you fulfil my desire. And, I won't force you to help me if you're not able enough..." Young Master Yu inhaled a deep breath. His eyes emitted dazzling cold light, "Don't refuse. This is the only hope that's left with me. I have placed my hopes on your conscience... I will have no choice but kill you if you refuse! Don't forget that you have mentioned about this issue with your own mouth. So, you can't back down now..."

Young Master Yu angrily said, "Even that man from ninety-thousand years ago wasn't as sceptical as you are!"

"You can trust me..." Chu Yang forced a smile. He had started to regret being so lame and getting instigated by the Sword Spirit into asking for the Heavenly Orchid...

[I was lucky this time. He didn't give it to me when I wanted it. And, he's forcing it on me when I don't want it... Moreover, refusing it is also out of question!]

[Young Master Yu's ashen complexion says it all. In fact, it seems as if he would fly into rage out of shame if he doesn't give this Heavenly Orchid to me...]

[But, what would I do when Young Master Yu will look for me for my help in case I accept this gift...? I can't go against my conscience and refuse, can I?] At this moment, Chu Yang looked at the plant of the Heavenly Orchid. It seemed nothing more than a headache for him. It didn't seem to be anything like a 'peerless wonderful treasure' anymore.

The Sword Spirit also seemed to be aware that they had invited trouble. However, he was still drooling out of greed from his mouth. But, he had still lowered his head since he felt a little embarrassed. [Making the Sword Master do this for my own self... is a matter worth being ashamed of, ah.] However, the Sword Spirit stealthily glanced at the Heavenly Orchid from the outer corner of his eyes as he was thinking about this, and his lips

slipped as a result. He then swallowed the saliva, [Such a great item, ah...]

"Do you want it or not? Say it!" Young Master Yu angrily said, "Tell me straight! It's fine if you want to take it. But, I will kill you right now if you don't! It wouldn't be a bad choice to make in that case, would it?"

[A bad choice...?] Chu Yang wanted to cry, [Are you fu*king giving me a choice? Is this called 'a choice'?!]

Young Master Yu gifting this wonderful treasure in this situation was equivalent to forcing a girl into prostit*tion. An ominous glint was flickering in his eyes. His whole body had a murderous aura about it. In fact, it seemed that he could go out of control any time now!

Minister Chu became flabbergasted. The first-ever honoured-guest at Young Master Yu's house had become a lamb in tiger's den!

[He has let me enter in his house... a place where he wouldn't let even his wife enter... However, the warm hospitality turned upside down in one moment after I entered...]

"I... Do I have a choice?" Minister Chu was helpless. He touched his nose and unwillingly said, "Never mind. I accept it..."

Great Young Master Chu wanted to cry as he said those words. [Would someone be this depressed after receiving other's treasure?]

This had happened clearly because their extreme desire for the Heavenly Orchid. In fact, it looked as if a maiden had been sold to a brothel. So, she had no other choice but to receive the old patrons and get tortured...

"That's like my good brother!" Young Master Yu immediately turned happy from angry. He heavily patted on Chu Yang's shoulder. Then, he rubbed his hands and said eagerly, "Do you want to pick it out by yourself? Or... do you want me to pick it out

for you? We must take decisive action in complex situations like this. The sooner you take it... the sooner I will feel relaxed."

"You can certainly relax now. But, I have begun to get worried in my heart." Chu Yang aggrievedly replied back. He felt very wronged in his heart.

"You're very boring. I am about to give you this peerless and out of the world precious treasure! Yet, you're feeling wronged for some inexplicable reason... Such a strange thing is happening for the first time!" Young Master Yu had managed to receive the 'big favor' that Chu Yang had finally 'agreed to'. Therefore, he felt so happy that he was in a mood to crack jokes.

"I... I am fu*king happy! I am so fu*king happy that I'm only an inch away from dying!" Chu Yang rolled his eyes in misery. He was feeling wronged, but had nothing to say. He was at a loss and depressed, "I am so happy that my heart will explode... fu*k!"

...

Chapter 537: This is a Tragedy

King of Hell Chu furiously said to the Sword Spirit in his thoughts, "Look how much trouble you have brought! What are you waiting for now? Hurry up and take it already!"

The Sword Spirit hastily complied in high spirits. He wiggled his buttocks and set in movement. The Heavenly Orchid disappeared without a trace with a 'shua' sound. And, Young Master Yu was left dumbstruck by this...

"You have to be more energetic and obedient when I will call upon you in the future to handle my matters! And, I will crush the Heavenly Orchid if you cause any trouble for me in future!" Chu Yang sinisterly threatened the Sword Spirit in his mind.

The Sword Spirit fiddled with the Heavenly Orchid as he loved it too much to part with it. And, he bowed his head and repeatedly nodded while doing so. This was the first time that he had been so obedient since he had entered into Chu Yang's mind!

"Come with me. Let me take you to the White Crystal Ores." Young Master Yu looked at Chu Yang with a somewhat envying look. He stepped up to go outwards. He walked for a while, but then he suddenly stopped. He pondered for a while, and then he turned around.

"Chu Yang, you owe me a favour today. But, it also means that I will owe you the biggest favour in the future..." Young Master Yu wrinkled his eyebrows. He seemed somewhat troubled. In fact, it seemed as if he didn't know where to begin. Then, he said with difficulty, "I wish to remind you about one thing."

"Please say, Brother Yu." Chu Yang felt indescribably heavy in his heart. He was aware that this matter wasn't going to be trivial if Young Master Yu was about to mention it.

"You are the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master... who keeps the

Nine Tribulations Sword with himself, and has the Nine Tribulation Space within his body... It is a supreme magic weapon! Also, it is the sharpest weapon in the entire Nine Heavens. No one in this world will dare to disobey your command after the Nine Tribulations Sword is perfected!" Young Master Yu had finally said the name 'Nine Tribulation Sword'. And, he still had something more to say...

Chu Yang's entire body also shook. He knew that Young Master Yu knew about his identity. But, he had actually spoken out these words from his mouth at this moment. No one had ever spoken out these words... except for Chu Yang! So, Chu Yang was still in shock.

"... However, this is actually..." Young Master Yu's lips quivered as he finally spoke out, "...not that good a thing. You must still agree... on something. I am also not that sure about this thing... but, this matter has been mentioned vaguely in records..."

"Vaguely in records?" Chu Yang knitted his brows and asked.

"The Nine Tribulations happen, and the winds and clouds dance. Ten thousand disasters take place, and the stars cry. The world transforms, and it ends the course of lives..." Young Master Yu recited in a heavy voice, "This is the secret song about the Nine Tribulations Sword in the continent. There are sixteen verses in total. These were only six! Here are the next few...'the body becomes the tribulation, and the soul acts as the road. Pull the heaven to tilt, eternally. Has no revere for God. Destroys flesh and blood relations..."

Young Master Yu recited till here, and suddenly stopped, "I only know these following seven verses. But, I don't know what comes after."

"Um..." Chu Yang pondered for a moment. [The first six verses are the functions of the Nine Tribulations Sword. After these, the verses are clearly said for the Master of the Nine Tribulations

Sword.]

['The body becomes the tribulation, and the soul acts as the road. Pull the heaven to tilt, eternally. Has no revere for God. Destroys flesh and blood relations...' these verses sound so gruesome that they can make anyone's hair stand on end, ah.]

"In short, be careful about everything!" Young Master Yu faintly smiled, "You're bestowed with such a supreme power as the Nine Tribulations Sword Master. So, it won't be normal if you don't have to make sacrifices in-exchange for such power."

Chu Yang laughed out loud and said, "Alright." Then, they put down this matter and went out walking side by side.

...

Outside, Mo Qing Wu was wrapped in a thick sable-furred coat from head to feet. She'd stretch out her neck from time to time, and would look ahead in the snowy wind with an anxious expression.

She had seen Chu Yang and Young Master Yu walk to that place before they had disappeared.

"Why hasn't Elder Brother Chu Yang come out?" Mo Qing Wu anxiously mumbled to herself.

The cute little girl wore a snow white ferret hat and a thick fox-furred scarf at this time. She wore a snow-white overcoat that was made up of a sable's fur. And, she also wore a pair of delicate red boots that were made up of fox-skin.

The color of her little face had turned snow-white in the snow. Her eyebrows were slender and elegant, and her eyes seemed to be two painted dots. They looked very adorable amidst this vast expanse of whiteness of the snow and ice.

The only minor defect in this otherwise perfect imagery was that there were too many clothes on her body. Chu Yang had thoroughly covered this little girl in several layers. Cotton-padded

jacket, cotton-padded trousers, cotton-padded waistcoat, furred clothes, furred waistcoat...

This made such a slender and skinny little girl seem like a penguin on this ice-field... or a little bear amidst the ice and snow. She seemed very fat...

She was pacing to-and-fro like a pendulum, but it seemed like a bear-cub was moving-around in the snow. However, she still seemed cute and adorable.

"Elder Brother Chu Yang is occupied with something inside." Ji Mo coaxed the little girl, "Come, Xiao Wu. Kiss Brother Ji Mo on the cheek, and I will tell you what he has gone off to do."

"Humph..." Mo Qing Wu gently rolled her eyes and replied, "You're just like Brother Ji Zhu. Your face is very stinky!"

Ji Mo flew into rage, "Don't compare me with that guy! I smell nice. Kiss me and see if you don't trust me."

"I don't kiss other men." Mo Qing Wu puffed her cheeks, "I haven't even kissed my own Second Brother..." she gave a cold look to Ji Mo as she said this. That implied – [let alone you...?]

Ji Mo retreated in defeat.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang went to his side and scolded him, "Why are you bullying a little girl? Get away."

Ji Mo drew back dispiritedly. He then went to the front of Luo Ke Di. Both of them eye contact and looked at each other for a while. Then, Ji Mo suddenly asked, "Did it grow?"

Luo Ke Di's face and ears turned red as he shouted, "Get lost!"

"Is it still not long enough?" Ji Mo exclaimed loudly. He then shrugged his shoulders and giggled. He said, "Mine is very lush."

Luo Ke Di was embarrassed. He stared at Ji Mo, and it seemed as if he would eat him whole.

This topic was about at the time when these naughty pals had

accidently taken a bath together. Young Master Ji Mo had then found out that Luo Ke Di's volume down-there was somewhat abnormal. Thereupon, a tragedy had struck Luo Ke Di because Second Master Ji would always bring up this topic whenever he was together with Luo Ke Di. This would obviously make him feel inferior to death ...

However, Ji Mo didn't let him off yet. He stared at him with his eyes wide open, and cried out, "I have heard that gifted and talented people have some peculiar features ... but this one, tsk, tsk... Coyote, it doesn't seem like it will make you bold and powerful..."

Luo Ke Di's face turned red. He angrily shouted, and grabbed Ji Mo's collar, "Do you want to be beaten-up?"

Ji Mo hastily lifted up his hands in surrender, "Spare my life... Spare my life... I have heard that the most awful ones are usually without hair... Ahwooh~~ Dog Aunt... Wa ha ha ha..."

Luo Ke Di had been driven beyond the limits of forbearance. So, he clenched his fist and smashed down.

They rolled on the snowy ground, and turned into a ball soon-enough. Ji Mo was laughing so hard that he couldn't breathe properly while fighting. He was being beaten up by Luo Ke Di wildly, but he still couldn't help laughing...

Luo Ke Di was crazily beating this guy. However, he suddenly raised his head and gave an expression of surprise. Then, he immediately became motionless.

Ji Mo also crawled up. He looked towards Luo Ke Di's line of sight. And, he too gave an expression of surprise and became motionless thereafter.

They looked ahead in the snowy wind, and saw that a beautiful and graceful white figure was leisurely coming over. It was a woman. She wore a snow-white dress. Her beautiful and thick hair

was floating in the air. This scene was indeed very pleasing to eyes. And, it indeed gave a feeling of pleasure.

The facial features of this woman were particularly gentle. She was coming over while strangely looking around in a chaotic manner. It seemed as if she was looking for something...

Luo Ke Di was dumbfounded. He nudged Ji Mo, "Look! She's such a beautiful woman, ah."

Ji Mo's eyes lit up. He repeatedly nodded, "She is fu*king beautiful..."

"She is so stunning that thousands of lotuses are growing with every step she is taking..." Luo Ke Di shook his head since he was dazzled.

"She looks so dreamy. It's as if she has come straight from a costume night parade." Ji Mo turned his head round and round as he spoke out.

Both of them had become a little lecherous at this moment. After that, both of them did something they would come to regret for a lifetime.

"Ahwooh. Ahwooh..." Luo Ke Di howled at the top of his voice. He put his fingers in his mouth and whistled. It was a sharp and loud whistle.

"Ahwooh~~ Dog Aunt!" Ji Mo's hands danced and feet tripped as he jumped with joy. He extended his two fingers, put them in his mouth, and whistled as well. His whistle was even shaper and more melodious than Luo Ke Di's...

The woman in white dress heard that whistling sound from afar. She was initially walking towards the icy mountain-peak. But, she changed her direction and started to walk towards them instead. It seemed as if her feet weren't touching the ground as she was coming over. Instead, it seemed as if the wind was arranging lotus leaves for her to walk on...

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di jumped out with thump sound without waiting for her to come near. Then, both of them exposed lecherous smiles as they went to greet her.

"Ahwooh~~ sister... you look very beautiful." Luo Ke Di was carried away by her bewitching glances, and his head went round and round.

"Yes, ah... you are very beautiful..." Ji Mo hurriedly caught up since he feared that Luo Ke Di might snatch the opportunity.

"Really?" The woman insipidly looked at the two and showed dull expression in her eyes.

"Really! It is hundred-percent true!" Luo Ke Di laughed out loud, "I looked at you, and thought to write an article. Um, we really admire you. You're very beautiful... Sister, what is your surname?"

"Yes, exactly." Ji Mo shoved Luo Ke Di with his shoulder as competed to flatter the woman, "Sister, you... you're very beautiful. May I ask your good name? I looked at you, and thought of composing a poem on you..."

"You want to write an article? You want to compose a poem?" The woman in the white dress pointed her finger towards Ji Mo, and then towards Luo Ke Di. It seemed as if she was somewhat curious.

"Without a doubt, ah..." Luo Ke Di proudly replied, "My literary talent is unconcealed. I once wrote an article for the nanny that works at my home..."

Ji Mo repeatedly nodded, "Yes, my poetic talent is incomparable! Everyone knows this... um, beautiful sister, which family do you belong to? How come I haven't seen you before? What is your name?"

"Humph! Humph..." The white-dressed woman suddenly turned monstrous. She then gave a smile that was full of a murderous aura. And, she said, "My name is... Jun Xi Zhu... have you heard of

my name? Second Master Luo Ke Di? Second Master Ji Mo?"

"Ah~~~~" Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di cried out in a strange at the same time. Their whole body felt numb, and they felt as if they had fallen into an ice-hole. And, their hair stood on end in an instant...

Luo Ke Di's eyes became red, and it seemed as if he was about to cry.

[Oh my heavens! The woman we just teased is the God of Death in reality. It's over... we have lived enough... we've lived for too long...]

Jun Xi Zhu was the chief of the Dark Bamboo. She usually wore black robe, black armband, and a mask. Therefore, next-to-no-one in the Middle Three Heavens had ever seen her face. Some old experts knew her real appearance, but no one had ever dared to speak out.

For how many days had Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo travelled around the country? They had only seen Jun Xi Zhu twice. And that too, they had seen her from afar, and had hurriedly turned their gazes away. Moreover, they had seen her in a black robe while she was emitting out cold aura. So, how could they know Jun Xi Zhu's true appearance?

Moreover, these two had casually indulged in this unsavoury act. They had seen a beautiful woman and had started to send out flowers from their mouths. They would end-up provoking and angering any beautiful women they would tease. Then, both of them would let out strange shouts, and would turn their heads to run away. However, they found this extremely enjoyable. In fact, there had been many young women in the Middle Three Heavens that had been teased by these two young perverts...

However, they hadn't expected that they would someday encounter a demon on a mountain. Unexpectedly, the woman they had teased a moment ago was the overlord of the most powerful underworld group in the Middle Three Heavens...

The rim of their eyes turned red in an instant – [This is such a bad luck. What did we do to anger the heavens that we have encountered such a situation...]

Chapter 538: Two Great Gifted Scholars!

Jun Xi Zhu was also very depressed regarding this event!

She had changed the black clothes she would usually wear when she arrived in the Northern Wilderness. She had done this because she was fed up with them. And, she had then put on her favorite clothes since they presented her natural features. She had only dressed in white in front of some of her trusted aides.

Young Master Yu hadn't returned ever since he had gone out. So, Jun Xi Zhu was somewhat worried. Moreover, she had received news that Young Master Yu had started a feud with a clan that had sent experts to hunt the ninth grade spirit beast in the Northern Wilderness.

Jun Xi Zhu had come to fear that Young Master Yu might lose. Obviously, it would've been useless to send other people to help him. So, she had personally come to look for him. Jun Xi Zhu was the only person in the entire Dark Bamboo who could help Young Master Yu if were ever to get in some trouble by any chance ...

She had come to look for Young Master Yu. So, it was obvious that she would first check Young Master Yu's old nest. She knew that Young Master Yu had come back here because he had some big reason.

Moreover, she was very curious about Young Master Yu's secret den since nobody had ever visited that place...

In short, Jun Xi Zhu had all kinds of reasons to come here looking for him.

She had just located Young Master Yu's den. But, who would've imagined that she'd bumped into these two young hoodlums who'd start to tease her. This had indeed left Jun Xi Zhu in an angry and funny mood.

Those whistles that were blown one after another had echoed

ceaselessly in particular. Jun Xi Zhu had become angry, and had decided to teach them a lesson. However, they turned out to be acquaintances when she came over to look. Moreover, they were the pampered sons of two wealthy clans of the Middle Three Heavens.

Jun Xi Zhu had originally planned to scare them with her glare. In fact, she had planned to make them retreat by doing that. But, these two well-known and mischievous men had started to blow their own trumpet in an attempt to flatter her before she could even open her mouth to talk when she came over.

[They want to write an article and a poem?]

Jun Xi Zhu coldly glared at them, "Luo Ke Di, you want to write an article? And Ji Mo, you want to compose a poem?"

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo started to shiver in an instant. Luo Ke Di wiped his sweat. His head was unexpectedly steaming hot in such a cold weather. So, it was obvious that he was very distressed, "Jun... Jun Jun Jun... So, it's Minister Jun, ha ha. Ahwooh... Minister Jun, please forgive me... Ahm, ahm, ahm... we were just... he he, we were only joking... really... just joking... joking... just joking... joking..."

Jun Xi Zhu's gaze had become more and more cold. And, Luo Ke Di was still wiping his sweat. He became increasingly dumbfounded as time passed. And, he eventually couldn't continue to say anything.

"Minister Jun, please calm down... hee hee hee hee... Minister Jun, please appease your anger... Give your rage a rest... supress your anger... this, this..." Ji Mo rolled his eyes as if his life depended on this, "You see... a man's heart can't help but admire beauty... All men have this... that..."

"What is this and that?!" Jun Xi Zhu became so angry that she couldn't control herself, and went totally all-out. She quickly grabbed Luo Ke Di and lifted him up. Then, she punched the

Second Master Luo's belly. She then knocked him on the ground with her kick, and stepped on his chest. Her charming face had become demonic by now, "Have you seen Young Master Yu?"

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo looked at each other, and put their hearts at rest, "Yes. We have seen. We have seen."

"Where?"

"He's in there... but, he hasn't come out yet. So, we are waiting for him here," both of them rushed to reply. [This woman is too scary...]

"In there?" Jun Xi Zhu heaved a sigh of relief. Thankfully, nothing bad had happened. Then she turned to see these two guys, and suddenly flew into a rage.

Jun Xi Zhu wasn't worried anymore since Young Master Yu was alright. So, she simply decided to wait for him here. And, she decided to teach these two se*ual harassers a good lesson while she was at it.

She kicked Luo Ke Di with a 'bang' sound. The kick made Second Master Luo squeal like a pig. Jun Xi Zhu shouted, "Luo Ke Di! Write an article for me! Quickly! Can't you write? You wrote one for your nanny, right? You're very talented..."

Luo Ke Di's face turned yellow in pain, "Minister Jun, Minister Jun... this, this..."

"Hurry up and write!" Jun Xi Zhu furiously said, "I want to see a complete literary piece of writing today. Otherwise, you will get an article written for you by others, Second Master Luo. And, that would be for your funeral!"

Luo Ke Di was continuously whining in his heart. Jun Xi Zhu's foot felt like an entire mountain when placed on his chest. He couldn't move even a finger. So, he was helplessly rolling his eyes. In fact, he even cried out for help, "Third Brother... Help me write an article..."

Ji Mo slowly turned around. He was about to rush off. But, he halted his footsteps where he was when Luo Ke Di shouted. However, he had already lifted his foot when he stopped. So, his foot was in air at this moment...

[This bastard... I almost ran away. But, you dragged me back to suffer the same fate with you...]

"Oh! I almost forgot! Ji Mo, you wanted to compose a poem, right?" Jun Xi Zhu squinted and looked at Ji Mo, "Compose a poem within three steps you take! Otherwise, I will make Luo Ke Di write an article for your funeral!"

Ji Mo jumped up with a pitiful scream. He cried loudly, "Luo Ke Di... You bastard! I will get killed because of you now..."

Luo Ke Di rolled his eyeballs up and down while being laid on the ground...

"Ji Mo, you start first!" Jun Xi Zhu's anger hadn't died down yet. So, she thrust her toe on Luo Ke Di's chest. Luo Ke Di's entire body trembled as a result. And, he shouted loudly, "Third Brother... quickly compose a poem. Quickly compose a poem... I... I, I can't take it anymore..."

Ji Mo spread out his hands... as if to give up. He felt so miserable that he wanted to cry, "If I could compose a poem... wouldn't I have done it by now? But, you want me to compose one quickly now?"

"Compose it. Quickly!" Jun Xi Zhu's complexion changed. The coldness in her eyes became more intense, "So, you were harassing me, huh? Is it fun to harass women?"

Ji Mo started to cry with 'boohoo' sounds, "We didn't know it was you..."

"Cut the crap!" Jun Xi Zhu shouted while emitting her murderous aura.

"I'm composing a poem... I am doing it..." Ji Mo stood motionless.

He wrinkled his brows and racked his brain for a solution, "From above the heavens... heavy snow... is fluttering again..."

He unconsciously took the second step forwards and recited the second verse, "Making the waist of a big mountain turn white in June..."

"Puff..." Luo Ke Di's whole body shivered as soon as he heard these two verses. His face had also turned red due to chocking. He could hardly move under Jun Xi Zhu's foot. But, he had still managed to laugh somehow.

"Are you laughing?" Jun Xi Zhu looked at him astonishingly, "Second Master Luo, you're very courageous. You genuinely don't seem afraid of death, ah..."

Luo Ke Di's eyes turned white when he heard this. [I couldn't help it... what this motherfu*ker is reciting... can it even be called poem...?]

Ji Mo stumblingly took the third step as he finally recited the third verse, "Composing poetry in this cold weather..." He tweaked his cheek and scratched his ears as he pondered for a while. Then, he said, "Isn't that bad..."

Then, he bounced, "Wa ha ha ha... I did it..."

"From above the heavens, heavy snow is fluttering again; making the waist of a big mountain turn white in June; composing poetry in this cold weather isn't that bad?" Jun Xi Zhu twisted her thin eyebrows, "What a crappy composition..."

"You only said that I have to compose a poem. You didn't tell me that it must have a certain standard..." Ji Mo straightened his neck and contended on strong grounds. [I must struggle at all costs. I will certainly die if Jun Xi Zhu made me write one more poem... This poem was already the most meaningful poem I've ever composed...]

"Very well!" Jun Xi Zhu waved her hand, "Get lost! I will make

the whole Ji Clan prepare for your funeral if I see you teasing a woman again."

Ji Mo bowed his head and nodded, "Yes. Yes. I am already engaged to a woman. And, Aobo is very good... I didn't want to do this. It's entirely that pervert Luo Ke Di's fault..."

He covered his head and sneaked away like a rat. He was as scared as a stray dog in reality, and he swiftly rushed away like a fish that had just escaped a net...

"Ji Mo! You pig!" Luo Ke Di cussed while being miserably laid on the ground. He hammered the ground with his hand since he was feeling too much pain, grief, and indignation.

"It's your turn now." Jun Xi Zhu looked at Luo Ke Di and said in a cold voice, "Show me your literary talent."

Luo Ke Di became vexed to death as he said, "Minister Jun... how about you stop beating me..."

"Stop your nonsense!" A cold light flashed. A long sword was pierced through the crouch-part of Luo Ke Di's pant with a 'shua' sound. It penetrated through the cloth, and went into the snow on the ground. Then, the blade of the sword shook and issued a cold light.

It was ice-cold!

Luo Ke Di's entire body trembled and his hair stood on end. He could feel the blade swaying and touching him down there. His soul flew beyond the heaven since he had been scared witless by this action. He suddenly felt a sense of urgency to jet-out from the front and back lower parts of his body...

"Spare my life..." Second Master Luo trembled.

"The whole generation of your Luo Clan will have to rely only on your brother Luo Ke Wu for an heir if you won't write an article..." Jun Xi Zhu insipidly spoke-up.

"I will write it!" Luo Ke Di straightforwardly agreed. He then wrinkled his brows and pondered.

"Title... of my writing is — Admiring the heavy snow." Luo Ke Di gasped for breath, "Would you let me stand up?"

"No!"

"Eh... No? No? Ok... Admiring the heavy snow... Admiring..." Luo Ke Di scowled miserably and made a long face. In fact, it seemed as if he was mourning over his mother's death. Ji Mo had recited a poem about snow. So, Luo Ke Di had also thought of using it as a reference.

"Snow was swirling in the air in the cold winter of June. Snowflakes were ferociously falling, and the north wind was fiercely blowing. The weather was cold and the ground was frozen. It was infinitely sad and miserable..." Second Master Luo's literary talent wasn't bad if one considered it carefully. After all, he had spoken this in one go...

"The winter arrives in June in your clan?" Jun Xi Zhu snorted.

"It is the month of June at present... isn't it a cold winter here?" Luo Ke Di rolled his eyes. He then said while stammering, "I would be sitting bare-chested in my home at this time..."

"Stop your nonsense! And, continue!"

"Um... The weather was cold and the ground was frozen. It was sad and miserable... And, the most miserable was the one who had abandoned me... that Ji Mo – that bad influence! One day will come when his muscles will be removed and his bone will be smashed..." Second Master Luo became more and more fluent. He rolled his eyes, "I saw a beautiful woman. The most beautiful among all the women in the world. She was so beautiful that she could cause the downfall of a nation. Her beauty bewitched me. But, it was pity that she was married to an ugly man. It was such a disappointment! The white snow is going inside my mouth..."

The snow had gone inside his mouth along with the wind while he was reading out the article. Second Master Luo had gotten pretty inspired by the surrounding scenery it seemed... Then, he returned to the original topic, "...the cold was piercing, and didn't feel beautiful. One would feel lucky at first... but eventually unlucky in this Northern Ice-field. I would have gone back if I could. But, the woman I harassed has chopped off my leg. Sister, spare my life. I have tried my best... how was my article? He he he he..."

"Puff..." Jun Xi Zhu was amused by him, and started to laugh. Then, she raised her foot and kicked this guy. She then scolded while laughing, "Get lost! Be prepared to lose your life if I ever see you teasing a woman again!"

"Yes, yes, yes..." Luo Ke Di crawled up. He then fled like a rat without turning his head back. His little heart was beating loudly. [Finally, my poor little life is saved. Oh my fu*king lord... I was so scared...]

[Who would've fu*king experienced such a terrifying thing? That ice cold sword was stuck 'there'. My 'little brother' would've been gone forever if I hadn't been careful. And, I would have become without my 'second brother'...]

However, he realized something while he was thinking all this. His lips had been shivering out of fright, and his face had turned white. However, they had suddenly started to brim with a smile at this moment, "My Second Brother? Second Brother Gu...? I'm very talented... Ahwooh~~~"

"What did you say?" Gu Du Xing appeared in front of him. His face was filled with a murderous aura... He had heard what Luo Ke Di had muttered to himself.

Luo Ke Di's legs went limp from fear. And, his mind was still in chaos. A short while passed before he managed to stammer, "I, I, I... I was talking about the 'second brother'... I didn't mean...

Second Brother Gu..."

"I will kill you, you bastard!" Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were originally here to act as reinforcements since Ji Mo had called them. In fact, they had rushed over with anxiety in their hearts. But, they saw that this guy was healthy and active. Moreover, he was also taking dirty towards Gu Du Xing... In fact, Gu Du Xing had heard these words. And, he had become very angry as a result. So, he started to rain punches and kicks on him, and beat him up like a madman...

Half of a quarter of an hour passed... Luo Ke Di was lying on the ground like a fish that had been left to dry in the sun... He was unable to give vent to his anger even if he wanted to...

A white light flashed at this moment. Suddenly, a circular door appeared. Then, Chu Yang and Young Master Yu finally came out...

Chapter 539: It’s Your Problem Even If You Regret!

"What's the matter? Why is this ruckus?" Young Master Yu puckered up his brows. He was very annoyed, "How come the outside of my sacred cultivation place has become as chaotic as a slaughter house?"

He turned his head and looked at Jun Xi Zhu as he spoke, "Why did you come here?"

"Someone from that clan had come to inform," Jun Xi Zhu coldly snorted.

Chu Yang hastily asked Gu Du Xing and the others amidst their conversation, "What happened?"

"The fault is of these two sworn brothers of yours!" Jun Xi Zhu replied. She coldly snorted and continued, "Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo are se*ual harassers. They came over to me to take liberties with me... Really... this has never happened in the Middle Three Heavens before."

Young Master Yu's body started to sway with Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo's in an instant!

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang felt even dizzier when they heard this. In fact, they almost sat down on the snowy ground. They had gotten very frightened by these words.

[No wonder Ji Mo patted his buttocks and came shouting for help... After that he said, 'Shoot! Shoot! Luo Ke Di is about to be slaughtered.' But, he didn't tell the reason...]

[This isn't surprising if you think of it. To even think that they sexually harassed the overload of the Middle Three Heavens' underworld... these two dudes are really...] Gu Du Xing sighed, [I would also have nothing to say in my defence if I were in their place. In fact, I would've already died of shame by now.]

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo lowered their heads... as if they had committed a very big crime against Jun Xi Zhu. In fact, their faces had turned like a tomato from shame.

Their appearance made it evident that Jun Xi Zhu hadn't accused them not wrongly.

"Really...?" Young Master Yu didn't know whether to laugh or to cry as he shook his head. He sighed and said, "You two youngsters are as incredible as those heroes from ancient times... admirable! Truly admirable! Please, don't misunderstand me. I'm not mocking you. In fact, I truly admire you... At least, you two did what I've never been able to dare..."

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo shrank their noses.

"Idols, ah..." Chu Yang held their hands with tearful eyes, "You two have pioneered something that has never happened in the Middle Three Heavens before..."

"Big Brother... I, I, I... I... please don't say this... I wish to die in my heart..." Luo Ke Di's face seemed to be in pain as he pleaded repeatedly.

"One of them told me that he would write a poem for me. The other one said that he would write a literary piece for me... they genuinely thought that they could coax me as if I'm a little girl..." Jun Xi Zhu rolled her eyes.

Everyone had seemingly been struck by lightning at first. Then, they started to interrogate Second Master Ji and Second Master Luo about what kind of a poem and literary piece that had written. And, those two guys inserted their heads in the crotch of their trousers, and didn't raise their heads no matter what happened.

[Mock us, okay. Mock us as much as you guys like... what do you think...? You think that something embarrassing won't happen to you in future...]

Jun Xi Zhu restrained her laughter as she recited that poem and

that literary article. And, everyone laughed out loud as they held their bellies. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were taking more joy in others' misfortune. In fact, they laughed so hard that their tears almost came out.

After that, Young Master Yu took Chu Yang along with him to settle the agreement of the gambling debt. Jun Xi Zhu fished out a booklet from her bosom, and handed it over to Mo Qing Wu. This was what she had written in these days... this was also a purpose of her coming here... besides looking for Young Master Yu of course...

Then, Jun Xi Zhu stood firm. She extended her hand and pointed out towards Luo Ke Di and nodded. Then, she pointed towards Ji Mo and again nodded. She exposed a meaningful smiling expression. Then, her body floated up and flashed away amidst the snowflakes.

She had left. Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo sat down on the snowy ground. And, they repeatedly wiped their sweat as they constantly mumbled to themselves, "So hot! The weather is too hot today!"

However, everyone else looked at the snow under their feet, and became speechless.

...

"This is the White Crystal Mine," Young Master Yu pointed forth towards the white lustrous crystals and said. Both of them were passing through a deep and long tunnel at this moment. In fact, they were a thousand feet inside it by now.

There were eye-catching white crystals all around, and they were spread as far as the eyes could see. There were piles upon piles of big chunks. Some of them were inside the mountain walls, and hadn't been mined yet. Moreover, the quantity of the White Crystals continued to increase as they went deeper into the mine.

The Nine Tribulations Sword trembled and buzzed with excitement in Chu Yang's Dantian.

Chu Yang had been struck dumb by this!

Young Master Yu had said that the quantity of the White Crystal Ore wasn't much. So, he had expected a small-to-medium sized mine. But, what he was seeing at this moment was a very large quantity of mineral ore deposit. Moreover, one glance was enough to realize that these white crystals could be readily put to use!

If measured with the reference of the size of a palm of hand... then the number of white crystals here could be... in tens of thousands? Or several hundreds of thousands? Several millions...? Perhaps they could even be... several tens of millions...?

Chu Yang sucked in the cold air.

Young Master Yu smiled. His smiling expression was as free and easy as it had been before. He said, "You stay here. I understand... Um, I will go out first. I will tell them that you are undergoing closed-door practice here. Then, we will wait for you outside."

"Thanks a lot!" Chu Yang gratefully replied.

Young Master Yu faintly smiled and said, "I will go to them and exchange a few pointers with them... After all, I can't slack off since I'm their sparring partner... Ha ha..."

"Alright!"

Young Master Yu smiled. He then turned around and walked away.

"Brother Yu," Chu Yang called out to him.

"What? Is there something else?" Young Master Yu turned around and looked at him.

"These are a trivial gift of my regards. Please, accept it, Brother Yu." A core of the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and a core of the Mysterious Yang Jade were present in the hollow of Chu Yang's hand.

These were entirely different from the ones that Young Master

Yu had shamelessly snatched from Chu Yang during the gambling!

[I will pay you back with jades and pearls if you give me peaches and plum] Chu Yang was a kind of man who never suffered a loss. He was always very clear about gratitude and grudges. [I will be a hundred times more sincere towards you if you're sincere to me. I can't give you the equivalent value, but I will spare no effort in doing so.]

He had done the same thing for Xie Dan Qiong in Xie Clan that day. And, he was doing this for Young Master Yu as well at this time. Chu Yang had made a large benefit in the beginning when he was in the Xie Clan. But then, he had handed over the real Jasper Flower to Xie Dan Qiong. And, doing this wasn't beneficial for Chu Yang.

However, Xie Dan Qiong had understood this better than anyone else – [This is called friendship.]

And, it was the same today as well. The reason why Chu Yang had gifted the cores of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and Mysterious Yang Jade was because of his sentiments of friendship towards Young Master Yu. Young Master Yu might eventually make some plan against Chu Yang. But, the help that he was providing at present was matchless!

Young Master Yu's eyes filled with an emotional expression. He deeply looked at Chu Yang in the eyes. However, he didn't put out his hand to accept the jades. Instead, he asked, "Why are you giving these to me?"

He would've taken these jades shamelessly the day when he had made that bet. Moreover, these pieces were ten-thousand times better than those previous two. Such pure cores had been placed in front of him, and yet he had unexpectedly drawn a step back.

"Why not? I give ten times more respect to people who show me respect." Chu Yang seriously said, "Brother Yu, we made a bet and we argued too. Well, never mind. I considered you as a mysterious

but talented person back then. You were a stranger to me when I made that bet and commitment with you."

He seriously looked at Young Master Yu and said, "But, I am giving you these jades now... because you are... my friend." Chu Yang softly smiled, "Therefore, this has nothing to do with the commitment of favour that I've made for the future... it's only a kind regard."

Young Master Yu tightly twisted his brows. In fact, it seemed as if he hadn't even heard the last few words that Chu Yang had spoken. He looked deep in Chu Yang's eyes and softly said, "Friend... friend?"

A light seemed to be flashing in the depth of his eyes.

Then, he received these jade pieces and carefully put them in his bosom. He then insipidly smiled and said, "Perhaps, you will regret saying this word 'friend' one day."

"I won't regret it if Brother Yu doesn't," Chu Yang replied with a smile.

"I'm afraid that I will most likely regret this." Young Master Yu laughed out loud.

"It's your problem if you regret it," Chu Yang calmly said.

"It is my problem even if I regret...?" Young Master Yu murmured. He suddenly felt warmth in his heart, [It's your problem if you regret it. What does this have to do with me? I won't regret it no matter what.]

[We may become enemies in future because of you. But, I still won't regret it because of what you have done for me today.]

These were the words that Chu Yang hadn't spoken...

However, Young Master Yu had understood the unsaid.

Young Master Yu turned around and went away without saying anything further. His blue robe fluttered and he disappeared from

Chu Yang's sight in the blink of an eye.

Chu Yang exposed a smile on his face as he watched Young Master Yu going out. Then, he turned around and extended his right hand. The three fragments of the Nine Tribulations Sword suddenly appeared from his fingertips!

And, the Nine Tribulations Sword stabbed into the white crystal wall in front of Chu Yang the next moment!

It was a neat and clean job. It wasn't sloppy in the least. There wasn't much time at hand, and Chu Yang was impatient too.

It could be clearly seen with naked eyes that the lustre of the shiny White Crystals was going dull at a high speed... The Nine Tribulations Sword flew with 'clang' sounds, and advanced forward with irresistible force. And, the White Crystal turned dull and changed into dust wherever the sword went...

Three days later!

The entire mine of the White Crystal had become dark. The area inside the mine had become bigger, and there was dust everywhere.

The three fragments of the Nine Tribulations Sword were issuing bright radiance. The faintly discernable spirit energy was fluctuating on the sword's tip. It kept fluctuating like that for a while, and then eventually became motionless.

Suddenly, there occurred a burst of glare. And, the sword was restored to its original appearance immediately after that. And, it again burst out a glare not too long after...

This cycle went on for a while. In fact, it had flashed several dozens of times in a short while.

The Nine Tribulations Sword eventually restored its original appearance, and it started to seem as if it hadn't gone through any change at all.

The Sword Spirit said in Chu Yang's mind, "Make an overall upgradation! Apply the Sun and Moon Ointment on it. You don't need to save the ointment."

"Oh?" Chu Yang's mind immediately got excited.

First, he threw out the Sun and Moon Ointment. Then, he pierced the point of the Nine Tribulations Sword into the Sun and Moon Ointment with a 'shua' sound. It absorbed the entirety of the Sun and Moon Ointment in the blink of an eye, and left only a ball of powder behind.

After that, Chu Yang took out his collection of rare items and treasures. And later, he put the Nine Tribulations Sword in the Nine Tribulations Space, and made it absorb the items.

The Sword Spirit became very nervous as this happened.

Three more days passed like this. The Nine Tribulations Sword had absorbed all of the currently available resources by now.

The only things that were left were the materials that Chu Yang had kept aside for making weapons, and the items like Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and Mysterious Yang Jade that were under the protection of the Sword Spirit. Else, the Nine Tribulation Space had already been emptied...

The Sword Spirit had also ripened one petal of a Heavenly Orchid, and had eaten it in this time period of six days. His aura had become a lot weaker recently. However, his whole body emitted out a black fog that hung in the air as soon as he ate it. After that, this black fog condensed and went back into the Sword Spirit's body. His whole body had become congealed now!

The visibility of the Sword Spirit was ten-times stronger than how it was before he had eaten it!

"This is truly valuable!" The Sword Spirit heaved a long sigh. He looked at his arms and legs with satisfaction, and proudly shook them several times.

"What's next?" the Sword Spirit asked.

"Let's quickly cure the Three Yin Meridians to Qing Wu," Chu Yang said in a manner that couldn't be questioned. And, he hurriedly walked out while saying this.

"And after that?"

"Then, make the Nine Tribulations Sword prepare the medicinal pill to increase the strength of my brothers!" Chu Yang said without taking time to think, "Their current strength is too low."

"I won't suggest you to do so," The Sword Spirit had absorbed a petal of the Heavenly Orchid. The entire plant of the Heavenly Orchid was growing healthily in the Nine Tribulations Space. So, the Sword Spirit's mood was excellent. Yet, he had unexpectedly interfered in Chu Yang's decision, "Doing so will increase their strengths quickly. But... it wouldn't be a good thing for you."

...

Chapter 540: What is the Way of the Sword Master?

"Why?" Chu Yang gawked and halted his steps.

"Because your road is... different," the Sword Spirit had never been this cautious before. He said, "You are free to upgrade their strengths quickly if you only want a bunch of martial arts thugs... But... it's better that you don't if you want genuine brothers who stay with you forever!"

"Why? It is good... if their strengths upgrade, right?" Chu Yang was at a loss as he asked.

"In short... it's not good," the Sword Spirit replied, "I can't tell you why it is not good since my memory is sealed. But, I can faintly sense that... it would be best if it doesn't happen. The best thing for them would be to solidify their cultivation, improve their aptitude, and make them accumulate the martial power one step at a time so that they eventually reach the peak.

"This is the right way!" the Sword Spirit said, "I am saying these words at a risk... but, I must do it. It's because I will have to relive the fate of the last 90,000 years if you do what you intend to do for them..."

A mysterious light suddenly flashed in Chu Yang's mind. He raised his head and looked towards the Sword Spirit.

The Sword Spirit became agape and speechless. He immediately covered his mouth. He had realized that he shouldn't have said these last few words.

"Then, make the medicine that solidifies the foundation of cultivation," Chu Yang glared at the Sword Spirit as he slowly said.

The Sword Spirit's face filled with a happy expression, and he repeatedly nodded.

The reminder that he had given this time could genuinely be regarded as a big risk. But, Chu Yang could feel that it was the Sword Spirit's only hope! The Sword Spirit wanted to struggle free of his predestination... he wanted to break free from the cycle of reincarnation!

Therefore, the Sword Spirit didn't wish to let go of this opportunity.

An upgrade using a medicinal pill would make the Nine Tribulations Sword unintentionally leave a mark on the hearts and consciousness of Gu Du Xing and others.

As a result, Chu Yang would only end up walking on the same old road of the previous Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword by doing so!

Chu Yang's face was tranquil even though monstrous waves were raging in his heart!

"I will have to relive the fate of the last 90,000 years!" these words of the Sword Spirit had made Chu Yang nervous and frightened.

[The world will change when the Nine Tribulations Sword would appear. The Nine Great Clans of the Nine Heavens will become scattered ashes, and will vanish in a puff of smoke. They will be replaced by the new Nine Great Clans.]

[So... why are there Nine Great Clans? And not Five Great Clans...? Couldn't there be Ten Great Clans? Why nine...?]

[This nine... Does this have some relation with the Nine Tribulations Sword?]

[Another thing is — The Nine Tribulations Sword stays in seclusion in different places for ten-thousand years every time it comes into being! In other words... it stays hidden for ten-thousand years.]

[So, the Nine Tribulations Sword does the unification of the

entire Nine Heavens when the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword obtains the Nine Tribulations Sword... but, how long does it take? It certainly won't take too long this time for sure. May be up to a few hundred years at the most...]

[But then, the Nine Tribulations Sword will break into fragments, and remains in burial for ten-thousand years again... But, where does that Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword go during that period?]

These thoughts made the cold seep into Chu Yang's vest. In fact, it sent shivers down his spines! He felt as if an invisible and big net had shrouded him. He felt overwhelmed.

He had no place to go!

Thus, his destiny was set by the Heavens. And, the Heaven's wish was clear!

The road of the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword was similar to the road of life itself. The arrangement was so — One will grow old regardless of whether one is moving or motionless. Similarly, one embarks on the path of the Nine Tribulations Sword Master no matter one is moving or not!

We all live for ourselves. We work for our own selfish reasons. Everything that we do adds up together, and unwittingly leads us to the road the Heavens have set for us.

This is the Will of Heavens!

Chu Yang had obtained the Nine Tribulations Sword, and had then witnessed the death of Mo Qing Wu! He didn't want to let her die. So, his only option was to reverse fate. He had to reverse the destiny! He had to arrive at Iron Cloud. And then, he had to face Diwu Qing Ruo. Countless people of the two countries had suffered because of the war...

And, all of this had been consistent with the path of Nine Tribulations Sword's Master!

He needed to obtain the Nine Tribulations Pill in order to save Mo Qing Wu. For that, he needed to upgrade the Nine Tribulations Sword step by step. And, he had reached the present situation in the process.

And, the Upper Three Heavens was still waiting for him.

And, that's because Chu Yang's history was there. His parents were there!

He had been careless in his previous life because he had no responsibility. But, could he remain careless in this life? Therefore, Chu Yang was determined that he would go to the Upper Three Heavens... even if his body would be torn and bones were to get crushed.

However, he would get closer and closer to the road of the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword as long as he would go there! In other words... the heavens had set the road for Chu Yang... And, it was the same old road of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master!

One could see that Chu Yang's life had kept pushing him forwards as it had carried on. And, the progress wasn't a little bit either!

Chu Yang had started to stream with cold sweat as he thought of all this. In fact, he was absolutely terrified.

[Is it really irreversible?]

[I think it is reversible, but it would be a very long process.]

Suddenly, an idea came into Chu Yang's mind, [What if I go into seclusion along with Mo Qing Wu after she's cured? Then, I wouldn't need to worry about everything else, right?]

[Is it unavoidable?]

Chu Yang came out of the mine of White Crystals with a heavy heart.

The seriousness on Chu Yang's face was clearly visible when he

saw Gu Du Xing and the others. He still hadn't stopped thinking about these matters. The Sword Spirit hadn't spoken a word, and had remained silent. In fact, he hadn't dared to utter a word of disturbance.

"Big Brother..." Luo Ke Di cried out in a manner that made it seem as if he wanted to cry but had no tears to shed.

Chu Yang became dumbstruck.

His four brothers weren't in adequate conditions at the moment. The willpower and physical strength of everyone including Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had been exhausted by the undergoing training with Young master Yu.

In fact, Chu Yang could hardly recognise them when he saw them.

Young Master Yu's 'learning a few things from one another' was indeed very powerful.

In fact, it was direct and downright abusive.

However, the martial skills of Luo Ke di and Ji Mo had increased rapidly under such kind of abuse. They were already on the verge of making a breakthrough. Meanwhile, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had already broken through!

At present, Gu Du Xing was a fourth grade Sword King.

Dong Wu Shang was a fourth grade Saber King!

The cute little girl Mo Qing Wu had been holding the booklet that Jun Xi Zhu had given her this entire time. And, she was carefully studying it. However, she kept the booklet in her bosom when she saw Chu Yang coming back, and jumped over.

"These guys are incredibly amazing at adapting!" Young Master Yu continuously praised them. He had squeezed out the potential of Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others in his unique way over these six days.

The more Young Master Yu squeezed their potential... the more amazed he became! It was simply inconceivable for him to see ordinary human beings having such potential...

"Are the medicinal pills ready?" Chu Yang asked inside his mind.

"Yes, a total of ten Nine Revolutions Divine Pill." Sword Spirit said, "There won't be a direct upgradation or any special effect on the skills after they take this pill. But, it will increase the potential of whoever would take it. It will make their martial arts foundation more outstanding at deeper level. Their meridians will gain more power to withstand. Moreover, they will attain inherent comprehension ability towards heaven's principles. It will also help them make a breakthrough as long as there's an opportunity ..."

The Sword Spirit continued, "This is the mildest one among the similar medicinal pills!"

Chu Yang nodded and replied, "This is good!"

He called Gu Du Xing and the others as he said this in his thoughts. Then, he gave one pill to each of them. He explained the function of this pill in detail. And, Gu Du Xing and the others were left dumbfounded as a result. [Such a wonder-pill exists in the world...!]

Chu Yang then approached Young Master Yu and said, "Brother Yu, I want to inconvenience you for a few more days. Please, train them well until the medicinal power of this medicine dissolves. You have more knowledge than all of us in this regard. So, you must pay attention to this thing. Let the efficacy of the medicine dissolve in every meridian and muscles of theirs. Also, please check that the efficacy of the medicine reaches to their brains, Brother Yu."

Young Master Yu laughed out loud, "There would be no problem in this. I won't let them waste even a bit of it. Ha ha ha ha... I will make them wish they were dead!"

"How many more days do we have to go through this?" Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo miserably shouted in unison as they looked at each other in dismay. They wanted to cry, but had no tears to shed. Young Master Yu had already been making them practice very hard since the past few days. However, there were still several days left of this torture...?

"Has there been any activity of the ninth grade spirit beasts during these days?" Chu Yang asked. He was somewhat concerned about this matter.

"No. Um, someone ran into a Ninth Grade Wind Fox during the night time three days ago. But, that thing was too fast. It seemed as if it hadn't even appeared at all. Later, a few corpses were found. They were killed by the fierce claws of a ninth grade Fire Lion. So, it seems that ninth grade spirit beasts are present here. Also, there is more than one."

Young Master Yu continued in high spirits, "I feel relieved as long as the existence of this thing is certain. I am not impatient for the time being. Moreover... it is obvious that the ninth grade spirit beast isn't easy to cope with."

"Well! We will deal with it if possible." Chu Yang nodded in affirmation and said, "But, I am going to handle some matter first."

He held Mo Qing Wu's hand while he said this. He turned around and took her to the direction of the mine of White Crystals. It was because he needed an absolutely peaceful place to heal Mo Qing Wu. Also, only the White Crystal mine was sufficiently warm. Moreover, it was spacious enough, and there was no worry to be disturbed there.

Young Master Yu turned around and bared his teeth towards these youngsters when he saw Chu Yang leave. They had already taken the pill by now. He then spoke-up with an evil grin on his face, "Alright brothers, come on!"

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang sighed at the same time. Luo Ke

Di and Ji Mo lay fell flat on their faces and lay in the snowy ground.

...

"Elder Brother Chu Yang, where are you taking me?" Mo Qing Wu curiously asked.

"I am taking you to a fun place..." Chu Yang slightly smiled.

"Is it really so?"

"Yes, of course it is."

"Why are we going?"

"We are going to treat your injury."

"Ah...!" Mo Qing Wu exclaimed in surprise. She didn't know what to think. She suddenly became shy, and squeezed her little head in Chu Yang's arms.

"What's wrong?" Chu Yang was startled by this.

"Uh-huh... I feel shy..." Mo Qing Wu whispered. She was so shy that she could not say anything further.

"Why are you feeling shy?" Chu Yang was at a total loss. [Why is this little girl shy?]

"The wound is in my chest... humph..." Mo Qing Wu pouted and said, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, you are taking advantage of me..."

Chu Yang suddenly stumbled while walking. He couldn't set his footing on the icy ground steadily. And, he firmly fell on his back. His buttocks were caught off-guard, and fell flat on the ground.

Chu Yang crawled up, and looked at the cute little girl in his arms. He was somewhat dumfounded. [This little girl is so young, ah. And, she has already begun to think about such things...]

"Elder Brother Chu Yang, don't worry. Don't be surprised..." Mo Qing Wu moved her blushing face close to Chu Yang's ear and said, "I don't mind... I would've died before I would've let any other

person see my wound!"

The cute little girl had spoken unhesitatingly. She again casually said, "It's just that... I still haven't grown up yet... I have just begun to grow... So, Elder Brother Chu Yang... you may not like it..."

Chu Yang was left baffled by this. He wildly bolted in while carrying her in his arms.

[Oh my Heavens! You beat me up! Kill me by a lightning bolt! A beast like me...]

Mo Qing Wu shyly curled up in his bosom. Then, she quietly said, "I will grow up in the future..."

Chu Yang's feet stumbled again.

[Forgive me... Boohoohoo...]

...

Chapter 541: Heavenly Yin Body, Innate Spiritual Meridians!

The mentally devastated Chu Yang finally arrived at the mines of White Crystal not after too long. He was carrying Mo Qing Wu in his arms. His body flashed, and they entered into the mine-cave from the spot where Young Master Yu had opened the secret passage to the mines.

They arrived underground.

"This underground cave is very spacious!" Mo Qing Wu opened her big eyes and glanced around. She then exclaimed in surprise.

Chu Yang shook out his hands, and 3 Night Pearls got embedded into the stone wall. These aligned pearls then lit up, and gently illuminated the entire place.

Chu Yang conveniently brushed with his hand to clean a big and smooth stone that he had prepared beforehand. Then, he took out some bedding items from the Nine Tribulations Space and spread them on the stone.

"Come, Qing Wu. Take off your coat and lie down on this," Chu Yang beckoned with his hand. He suddenly recalled something, and took out a few Mysterious Yang Jades. He placed them in a circle, and this made the entire place warm and comfortable.

"Do I really have to take off my clothes..." Mo Qing Wu's face turned red. She tightly clenched the lapel of her dress with her small hands. There was a flickering look in her eyes, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... you're very bad..."

Chu Yang began to sweat profusely. [I'm bad...? There are still several years before I can go bad on you, you know... You still have a small body right now... In fact, it would be very difficult even if I think of accomplishing the so-called 'really bad' scenario.]

"Hurry up." Chu Yang had no other alternative but to put on a

serious face.

"Humph..." the cute little girl slowly came over. Her eyes were fixed on Chu Yang from the corner as she walked over. Then, she started to untie her belt with her little hands...

She took off her overcoat... then her small coat inside of it... then her small leather jacket... then her furred sleeveless jacket... Then, she took off her little cotton-padded jacket... then her cotton-padded sleeveless jacket... And then... finally her little bellyband was left...

There were dozens of layers of clothing on her...

Only a small red bellyband was left on her upper body. It was wrapped over her frosty-snow like white skin. The little girl had covered her chest with her hands...

Chu Yang sighed. [Her little chest has just begun to brave outward... Also, no sharp cone is visible on the little lotus. Even a little fat boy would have a bigger chest than that of this little girl's... And, she still treats it as such a big treasure that she's this nervous to let anyone see it...]

"Is this enough?" Mo Qing Wu became shy.

"Take this off..." Chu Yang replied in bafflement.

"Eh... I feel embarrassed..." Mo Qing Wu covered her face with her hands.

"Alright, I'm coming. I'll do it..." Chu Yang didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he stepped forward to go over to her.

"Wait, I will do it myself!" The little girl quickly jumped and kicked away her little leather boots. Then, she jumped onto the bed and extended her petal-like small feet in front of Chu Yang. Then, she spoke-up in a victorious manner, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, your feet stink. But, my feet aren't smelly."

"Hmm..." Chu Yang couldn't help but look at his own feet. He was

also very depressed about this in reality. [I have already attained an innate body. So, the impurities of my body have been drained out. Then, why do I still have this 'smelly feet' problem? This is very unusual. It shouldn't happen, ah.]

He came out of his thoughts, and looked at the little girl who had already taken off her bellyband. The upper part of her body was bare at this time. She then lay down on the special 'bed'. But, she still covered her small chest with her hands from nervousness...

"Oh dear..." Chu Yang heaved a sigh. He extended his hand, and moved Mo Qing Wu's right hand away to look at the spot of her injury.

A trace of dark red mark was present there. But, it couldn't be seen if it weren't looked at in a careful manner. Moreover, this mark had become prominent since this little girl had been constantly overexerting herself and draining out her physical strength of late. Otherwise, it wouldn't have been visible right now.

Mo Qing Wu felt the warm touch of Chu Yang's hand on her body. She tightly closed her eyes in response. She also stretched her little body perfectly straight. It was evident that she was overly nervous at this moment.

Chu Yang felt both happy and ridiculous.

He genuinely couldn't understand why this little girl was so nervous.

The Nine Tribulations Sword instantly set into action as per his order. And, a pure medicinal efficacy concentrated on Mo Qing's Wu's body through Chu Yang's palm.

The Sword Spirit rubbed his hands together inside Chu Yang's mind. A mysterious spiritual power crazily poured out from Chu Yang's consciousness and blended with the medicinal efficacies which were present inside the Nine Tribulations Sword.

Chu Yang stretched out his left hand. There was a Purple Crystal box in his hand. He opened the lid of the small box with a 'pop' sound by snapping it with his thumb. And, a fragrance wafted out of it as a result.

It was the previously prepared Nine Tribulations Pill!

The sword point of the Nine Tribulations Sword let out a long cry. It suddenly ejected from Chu Yang's fingertip. Then, it transformed into a streamer of light and sneaked into Mo Qing Wu's meridians.

Mo Qing Wu felt her body getting more and more heated. Afterwards, she felt a burning sensation in her chest. Then, a kind of piercing pain suddenly rose up in her chest. She suddenly puckered up her brows in pain. Her throat was also aching as she groaned.

This feeling was even more painful than the time when she had been stabbed by a sword. In fact, this pain was much more intense than that pain! Moreover, this pain was gradually intensifying...

Chu Yang was staring at her steadily. He saw that the pink scar on Mo Qing Wu's chest gradually bulged up. And, her whole chest was filled with a red translucent light as time passed. In fact, he could even see Mo Qing Wu's internal organs faintly...

"It's very painful... Elder Brother Chu Yang..." Mo Qing Wu wrinkled her brows in pain as glistening teardrops flashed in her eyes. She pitifully looked at Chu Yang with a sad look on her face.

"It's all right. Just bear it. Xiao Wu is the strongest... Just bear the pain. You will be alright. You would be able to practice martial arts later on..." Chu Yang consoled her in a gentle voice.

Mo Qing Wu's spirit aroused, "Yes... I want to practice martial arts. I will practice well to protect Elder Brother Chu Yang... It doesn't hurt... It doesn't hurt..."

She was saying that she didn't feel pain. But, she had clenched

her teeth tightly so that she wouldn't make a sound. Moreover, soybean-sized sweat beads were continuously emitting out on her forehead.

Chu Yang looked at her, and felt extremely distressed in his heart. But, he couldn't do anything about it. In fact, he couldn't even dare to finish it any faster...

Mo Qing Wu's scar finally surfaced out in its entirety at this moment. It was floating out on the surface of the bulged out skin.

Chu Yang was about to give the Nine Tribulation Pill to this little girl.

"Wait!" the Sword Spirit shouted to stop him. The Sword Spirit had been constantly burning his spiritual power. So, he also looked somewhat tired at this moment.

"Why?" Chu Yang asked.

"What situation do you want this little girl to be in?" the Sword Spirit asked in a deep voice, "This is a good time if you only wish to fix her Three Yin Meridians. But, this isn't a good time if want to make her physical aptitude to go a step further."

"A step further...?" Chu Yang frowned.

"The practice of martial arts has always been quicker for females than it has been for males! In fact, the female is always faster among a male and a female with the same aptitude. Moreover, women have far more enduring capacity than men do... despite having a weaker physique. You're already aware of this," the Sword Spirit said.

Chu Yang slowly nodded. A lot of other things would make sense if it were to be seen from this perspective. For example, a female gets bound in the shackles of feminine nature once she gets to a certain age. And, these aspects slowly lose these superiorities after they give birth to a child after their marriage.

The Sword Spirit slowly said, "Women can have many peerless

body types. And, these physiques can deliver double the result with only half the effort... no matter what cultivation method they practice! And, they can promote with leaps and bounds if the cultivation method is also compatible! Your Senior Martial Sister Wu Qian Qian in the Lower Three Heavens in an example of this situation. She has the Mysterious Yin Female Body!"

"But, Mo Qing Wu has an innate Three Yin Meridians. You must know that the Three Yin Meridians would become world's number-one body type if it goes a step further. In fact, it would become stronger than the Mysterious Yin Female Body!" the Sword Spirit explained in a heavy tone.

"What physique?" Chu Yang nervously asked.

"Heavenly Yin Body, and Innate Spirit Meridians!" the Sword Spirit spoke out these words without pausing.

"Heavenly Yin Body? Innate Spirit Meridians?" Chu Yang repeated in a puzzled manner. He was hearing about such a physique for the first time.

"Haven't you seen Young Master Yu's physique?" the Sword Spirit snorted.

"You mean..." Chu Yang asked since he was pleasantly surprised.

"Yes. This Heavenly Yin Body, and Innate Spirit Meridians... runs neck-to-neck with the innate Spirit Physique of Young Master Yu's! In fact... it will become stronger than Young Master Yu's physique if a suitable cultivation method is found. It's because... this physique is mainly for females!"

The Sword Spirit snorted and continued, "Moreover, it can be remodelled using the power of nature's law and the Nine Tribulations Sword!

"Reformation with the power of nature's law... furthermore, it is the most primordial power in the universe. Young Master Yu's aptitude is surely special, but it's only because of the power

granted by his race. That's all... How can it be compared by the power granted by the nature's law?"

The Sword Spirit mischievously laughed. His words were full of temptation as he said, "Moreover, her Three Yin Meridians are anyway getting repaired at this time. So, we mustn't miss this opportunity. Such opportunity might never come again if it is missed once. In fact, she might not have the slightest hope of getting the 'Heavenly Yin Body, and Innate Spirit Meridians' even if she receives the same kind of injuries at a later time since she will have been healed by the Nine Tribulation Sword right now. Therefore, I am telling you this right now. You can consider it carefully."

"Do it!" Chu Yang made a prompt decision.

Heavenly Yin Body, and Innate Spirit Meridians! This was a golden opportunity for Mo Qing Wu. Such an amazing opportunity was available at hand. So, how could Chu Yang miss it?

[Mo Qing Wu would be safer if she's stronger...]

"But, the pain would be greater than the pain she's bearing right now..." the Sword Spirit slowly added.

"Short-term pain is better than prolonged agony." Chu Yang's eyes reflected the pain of his heart. But, he added without hesitation, "Start it immediately."

"Alright!"

The Sword Spirit complied, and immediately notified the Sword Point of the Nine Tribulation Sword. The Sword Point flashed brightly within Mo Qing Wu's body as a result. It then changed into countless fragments and infiltrated throughout Mo Qing Wu's body.

In fact, a peculiar flash of light of the Nine Tribulation Sword also twinkled at the top of Mo Qing Wu's head.

Mo Qing was still clenching her teeth. She groaned in pain. Then,

she ferociously spurted out blood from her mouth. She weakly looked at Chu Yang. Her usually bright eyes had also become ash grey by now, "Elder Brother... Chu Yang..."

"Everything is okay... you will be alright soon..." Chu Yang felt an ache in his heart as he held this little girl in his bosom. He stuck his face close to her face, and consoled her in a soft voice.

"... Cough... Cough..." Mo Qing Wu slightly coughed, and lost consciousness.

"Hurry up," Chu Yang couldn't help but roar.

The scar of the Three Yin Meridians had appeared clearly on Mo Qing Wu's chest. Even Chu Yang could see what sort of damage that sword had done to her innate meridians...

A starlight-like sword-light was rapidly connecting together inside that small and damaged section of the meridians. It looked like thousands... or even ten-thousands of silk threads were being easily severed ahead of the Sword Point of the Nine Tribulations Sword.

Finally... the terrible scar slowly disappeared.

From the crown of Mo Qing Wu's head to the tip of her toes — every inch of her body had started to sparkle like starlight. It looked intense. It seemed that the starlight of the entire universe had shifted to the lotus-like tender and spotless body of Mo Qing Wu!

"Now is the time! Give her the Nine Tribulations Pill! Hurry!" the Sword Spirit shouted in Chu Yang's mind.

...

Chapter 542: The Goal is Accomplished!

Chu Yang didn't dare to neglect, and hastily moved the Purple Crystal bottle close to Mo Qing Wu' mouth.

However, Mo Qing Wu was already unconscious. Moreover, her teeth were tightly clenched. So, the Nine Tribulations Pill couldn't go inside.

Chu Yang wrinkled his brows. He circulated his martial power to form a vacuum cavity in his mouth without the least bit of hesitation. Then, he put the Nine Tribulations Pill in his own mouth, and moved closer to Mo Qing Wu. Then, he gently began to open Mo Qing Wu's jaw with the tip of his tongue.

The flexible tip of his tongue slowly started to open her soft lips...

Mo Qing Wu's mouth had been tightly shut, while her teeth had been tightly clenched. But, she suddenly felt as if something was gently moving on her lips, and this made her feel a little ticklish. So, she couldn't help but gently open her mouth...

Chu Yang seized the opportunity and shoved the Nine Tribulations Pill into her mouth using his tongue. And, the pill finally went in!

He heaved a sigh of relief.

But, an accident happened at this moment – Mo Qing Wu was unconscious, but she instinctively discovered that something had been forced into her mouth. So, she subconsciously clenched her teeth again.

"Ah~~~" Chu Yang screamed miserably. His scream sounded muffled, and vague — Mo Qing Wu had bitten his tongue, and had cut out at a section of his tongue...

Minister Chu was in a tragic mess as a result.

He was stuck to the front of the little girl with his tongue

stretched out... Moreover, it was being nipped...

He started to sweat all over. He wanted to pull out his tongue... [For goodness sake! She bit it so hard that it's bleeding... but, no martial power can be circulated to this wounded area...]

Mo Qing was biting it very tightly. The little girl had closed her mouth, and had clenched her teeth very firmly...

Minister Chu repeatedly sighed in his heart. He didn't have any better option than to try to pull out his tongue. But, that didn't work. Therefore, he moved his tongue back-and-forth in the mouth of this little girl, and poked his tongue up-and-down while enduring the pain...

Mo Qing Wu felt a little weird because of the tickling in her mouth. And, she unconsciously opened her mouth as a result...

"Sss~~~" Chu Yang finally saved his tongue. But, he felt a lot of pain. He stuck out his tongue and touched it. [So much blood...]

"Dis lil gal is quie stong..." Minister Chu stretched out his tongue and mumbled in a weird manner. He had a painful expression on his face.

The Sword Spirit was fully aware that he shouldn't laugh because this was a very important and crucial moment. But, he couldn't help it, and started to sway back-and-forth while laughing.

The Nine Tribulations Pill changed into countless channels of pure spiritual power as soon as it entered into Mo Qing Wu's body. It then rushed in all direction inside Mo Qing Wu's body. And, the dots of starlight started to shine magnificently on Mo Qing Wu's body in the blink of an eye as a result!

The starlight shone brightly. It seemed that the whole universe had shrunk and centralized in Mo Qing Wu's body.

"A person's body becomes the universe! You can see, right?" the Sword Spirit said very lightly, "This saying definitely wasn't just for show."

Chu Yang looked at the starlight on Mo Qing Wu's body. Then, he imagined the twinkling stars in the sky, and suddenly realized something.

"This is indeed the instance of a person's body turning into universe. But, no one can bring out its true potential without achieving the power of the nature's law!" the Sword Spirit added, "Therefore, innumerable almighty expert with great wisdom and knowledge have stubbornly tried to pursue the nature's law since ancient times! Many people have sought after the nature's law, but they didn't know how to pursue it... In fact, there are many people who believe that the nature's law... is actually a form of power!"

Sword Spirit said disdainfully, "But, the fact is... the true pursuit of the nature's law rests in the opening of a universe of nature's law in the person's body! Henceforth, it makes that person self-sufficient. It helps the person get detached from shackles of the nature's law. And, they get detached from the cycle of life and death, and they attain true transcendence!"

"What happens after attaining the transcendence..." Chu Yang asked in a deep tone, "Who can guarantee... that this so-called 'transcendence' is perhaps another beginning in itself? Or maybe... it's the real beginning...?"

Sword Spirit was startled by this, and said replied, "This sounds rational!"

There was a fit of silence as Chu Yang pondered over these words. Then, he suddenly spoke-up, "This actually makes a lot of sense!" Then, he again continued to ponder...

Mo Qing Wu's body whole body felt to be as light as feather as soon as the Nine Tribulations Pill entered it. Moreover, that indescribable pain seemed to have faded away...

She regained her consciousness with a soft humming sound.

She felt her body to be incomparably relaxed. The scar on her

chest had been aching before. But, she felt very comfortable now. Moreover, she couldn't feel any pain. In fact, her whole body had become as light as feather, and she felt as if she could fly...

She felt extremely happy. She turned over, and was about to sit up. But, Chu Yang stopped her and ambiguously said, "Do no... oove..."

"Elder Brother Chu Yang...?" The cute little girl opened her round eyes wide, "What are you saying? And, what's wrong with to your tongue?"

"Do... ot oove! It is no don ye..." Chu Yang's tongue trembled. He sucked the air while making 'sss' sounds. And, he vigorously used hand gestures to indicate to the little girl – [Do not move!]

"Oh..." The little girl blinked her eyes, and obediently lay down again. But, her heart was filled with concern, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, your tongue...?"

Chu Yang wanted to cry, but had no tears to shed... [My tongue...? Weren't you the one who bit my tongue? Don't you know that I... I almost became a mute person after nearly getting my tongue cut off...]

The timid girl changed her line of sight, "Ah, ah! How come there are so many stars on my body... they look so pretty! They are so beautiful..."

The starlight on Mo Qing Wu's body had slowly started to dim. Then, the original appearance of her skin gradually reinstated.

Her pinking white complexion made her look very tender and lovely.

"Very well! You can let go now," the Sword Spirit reminded, "The little girl just needs to expel something now..."

"What thing?" Chu Yang asked in his thoughts. The injury to his tongue obviously hadn't affected his speech in his thoughts.

He hadn't even finished the sentence when he saw that the face of the little girl had turned red, and her brows had wrinkled up. She exerted all the strength she had in her legs to stand up...

She looked at him with an expression of shame in her eyes. Her voice seemed to be squeezing out of her throat, "I, I, I... I want to..."

Chu Yang got scared, and he quickly let go of her.

The little girl reacted with lightning speed. She jumped up from the bed like an arrow, and rushed out...

Chu Yang touched his nose. Then, he heard coughing sounds from afar...

A good while passed before the little girl's weak and soft voice was heard again, "Elder Brother Chu Yang..."

"What happened?"

"I haven't brought... that..." Mo Qing Wu felt extremely shameful. She hadn't brought anything clean to wipe to go to the bathroom... So, she didn't have any other way now ... And, this was making her very anxious...

Chu Yang burst into laughter.

The cute little girl became shy and ashamed at the same time, "Quickly bring something for me, boohoo..."

Chu Yang hurriedly passed a clean cloth over to her...

The little girl rushed over like a gust of wind after some time passed. Chu Yang only saw her fair and tender body flash. The little girl then grabbed her clothes, and desperately covered her body...

Her charming face had turned red!

Chu Yang laughed in a discourteous manner. [You may wear your clothes if you want, but I tell you... there's no point. In fact, you would be better off not wearing them because you will need to take

them off soon...]

A gurgling sound came from Mo Qing Wu's stomach after a short while. Her complexion changed. And, she again ran away like a gust of wind...

This continued to happen for five or six times. Her whole body felt powerless as she leant on Chu Yang's bosom once she was done. Her small face had turned pale. She weakly said, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... this diarrhoea was very difficult to deal with..."

[Do you think it is diarrhoea...? This is the purification of your dilapidated marrow...] Chu Yang sighed.

"Alas..." Mo Qing Wu sighed. Her mood had become gloomy.

"What's the matter?" Chu Yang asked. He had applied an ointment on the wound on his tongue during this time. So, he was feeling much better now. In fact, he could now speak in a manner that was easier to understand.

"I have always made fun of Elder Brother Chu Yang's smelly feet. But now... I stink so much that Elder Brother Chu Yang would die..." Mo Qing Wu pouted her mouth, and said embarrassedly.

"Ha ha ha..." Chu Yang rubbed the little girl's hair in an affectionate manner.

Mo Qing Wu's injury had finally been cured. So, Chu Yang's mood was good and bright at this time.

However, the little girl was pouting her mouth even though she had heard that her injuries had been healed. In fact, she hadn't shown any happy expression on her face. And, this had left Chu Yang confused, "Qing Wu, what's up with you?"

"Boohoo..." the little girl didn't seem to have cared about what he had asked. She only started to cry in Chu Yang's bosom.

Chu Yang hopped up in fright, "Are you homesick??"

"No..." Mo Qing Wu cried for a moment, and then said, "Boohoo... Mother says that the girl's body is a precious treasure. No man must see it... But, you, you... Elder Brother Chu Yang... you saw everything... boohoo~~"

Chu Yang was petrified when he heard this.

"What do I do now... boohoo~~" The cute little girl was very heart-broken. Then, she said while sobbing and sniffling, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, you will take responsibility, right?"

"Hic..." Chu Yang bounced his eyebrows twice... as if he had woken up from a dream, "Yes, I will take responsibility. I will definitely take responsibility..."

He wiped the cold sweat. [The Mo Clan's family education is really... strict, ah! Such a small girl knows how to compel others to take responsibility for her...]

The little girl continued to sob. But, she had proudly raised her eyebrows in a place where Chu Yang couldn't see. She stroked the booklet that Jun Xi Zhu had given her in her pocket...

The booklet continued the experiences of the chief of the underworld — Jun Xi Zhu. It also contained information about many agility skills, sword arts, and various other insights. Naturally, the thing that attracted this little girl the most... was none of these things. Instead, it was the education that Jun Lu Lu had written at the back of the booklet...

Jun Lu Lu liked this little girl a lot. She knew that Mo Qing Wu had left her home, and she was very young as well. So, she figured that this little girl would inevitably suffer unless she was taught a few girly things ...

Therefore, this Zither Master... who was a motherly figure from head to toe... had eloquently written several pages on girly education. There were numerous instructions to teach Mo Qing Wu the ways of women. Most of the pages were filled with the

instructions on how to guard against men... in fact, things like these were in great abundance.

However, this Zither Master would never have thought in her wildest dreams... that the piece she had put her heart and soul in writing..."Ways to guard against Wolves" was just a "How to trap a man" guidebook for the cute little Mo Qing Wu...

Especially, there were instructions about keeping men at a distance of an arm, avoid meeting men, keeping them at a long distance etc... But, Mo Qing Wu was doing the exact opposite with Chu Yang...

[Humph, Elder Brother Chu Yang is mine anyway!]

The little girl had a proud feeling in her heart.

Chu Yang began to test this little girl over the next few days. After that, he explained a few things to her. He conveniently tested the condition of her body. In addition, the marrow purification had also advanced a step further...

It had been eight days by the time they exited the caves! Majority of the manpower from most of the influential clans had arrived in the Great Northern Wilderness by now.

A ninth grade Green Rainbow-Blooded Snake had been seen getting chased by people a couple of days ago. It was heard that the beast was injured very seriously. Young Master Yu had also gone to chase after the beast along with Gu Du Xing and the others. And, they had left behind a King Level Expert of the Gu Clan to wait for Chu Yang. This man would obviously deliver the news to him after he would return...

Chu Yang didn't delay after he heard this news. He immediately pulled Mo Qing Wu, and rushed in the direction as indicated by that King Level Expert.

Two people's shadows – one with tall stature with a carefree attitude, and the other with delicate stature and exquisite bearing –

blew over the ice-field like two streams of cold breezes...

There was a person's shadow in the sky. He was flying over from a distance, and was coming towards Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu. This person seemed unaffected by the snow that was filling the air. This individual was floating in the air like snow itself. And, this individual was approaching at an extremely fast speed...

This individual glanced at Chu Yang on the snowy ground.

This person focused their vision, and thought aloud with a smile, "Such quick and efficient agility skill at such a young age..." But, this person didn't think much. Instead, this person simply went past over the heads of these two people.

Chu Yang didn't sense anything.

However, this person suddenly revealed an expression of intrigue after they flew past them. They then murmured, "There is something fishy about this little girl..." Then, this person unexpectedly changed their direction, and turned around.

...

Chapter 543: Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake!

Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu were rushing forwards as if they were as light as feather. Mo Qing Wu's injuries had been completely healed. So, it was the happiest time for both of them. Both of them felt light along this journey.

Mo Qing Wu was particularly feeling as lithe as a swallow while walking since her blood vessels had been invigorated. And, it seemed that her strength was increasing every moment.

Her body felt more and more agile, and her spiritual power had been continuously increasing as well. This had left her to feel increasingly comfortable throughout her body.

Her entire body started to emit heat after she had walked for some time at a fast pace. In fact, it had steamed to such a degree that it had started to give off mist.

Chu Yang intended to make her adapt to her body in the shortest possible time. So, he had intentionally increased his own speed so as to make her push herself to catch up.

Mo Qing Wu had also become competitive and excited in her heart. She had chuckled and flown up. Then, she had overtaken him while gliding forward.

That mysterious expert in the sky above both of them exposed an increasingly satisfied look in their eyes. They then muttered to themself, "The steam from her head is loaded with Yin energy. This is the Three Yin Meridians... such a physique is rare to come across!"

Mo Qing Wu was chasing him with 'whistling' sounds. And, she had an expression of happiness spread over her face. She had managed to catch up with him after they had covered twenty-five to thirty kilometres. So, she had proud expression across her whole face.

But, she suddenly stumbled with an 'ah' sound at this moment. And, a mouthful of blood was spurt out of her mouth!

This blood seemed to be coagulated. It was purple-black and coagulated. It didn't even splash out as it fell on the snowy ground! Instead, it looked like a paste that had clotted together.

Chu Yang was taken aback. The Sword Spirit took a deep breath of satisfaction in Chu Yang's mind, "Very good! Finally, the Heavenly Yin Body and Innate Spirit Meridians are completely linked together along with the throwing up of this bloody lump!"

Chu Yang said 'oh', and opened his eyes wide to take a good look.

However, Mo Qing Wu became panic-stricken after she saw the blood she had puked. In fact, she somewhat lost her head out of fear. But, her rosy complexion hadn't changed even a bit. She walked two steps, and felt lighter and livelier than before.

Mo Qing Wu was baffled by this!

[How come vomiting blood didn't affect me at all?] She tried to jump up. Then, she ran again for a short distance. However, she was left at a loss as she looked up, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, what is happening? How come I don't feel sick after vomiting blood?"

Chu Yang forced a smile and replied, "This was an issue regarding your physique. But, you have vomited out this lump of blood now. So, you won't feel sick anymore!"

"I too feel that way," Mo Qing Wu chuckled. She tilted her head and blinked with a cheerful expression in her eyes. She then said, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I feel very strange..."

"Strange?"

"Yes, that's right." The cute little girl swiftly walked and somersaulted once. She then said, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I suddenly feel that this world is so warm and friendly. I feel very warm... I feel as if you have taken me in your arms as I am walking in this world."

"Eh?" Chu Yang was puzzled, "You are feeling something like that?"

"Yes." The cute little girl happily spread her hands and formed a circle. She then said, "I feel that the spirit energy of the world is automatically running towards and into my body. Hee hee... this feels so good."

She extended out her fair and tender little hands while speaking. It seemed as if she was showing off some treasure. She then glanced at Chu Yang with her pretty eyes, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, quickly come and see."

Chu Yang went close to her. He couldn't help but open his eyes wide in a stare.

He saw Mo Qing Wu circulating her martial power. Then, the spirit energy of the world rushed over and gathered hurriedly around the fair and delicate hands of Mo Qing Wu... as if they were taking orders from her. And, two pillars of spirit energy were formed over her fair and delicate hands in an instant!

Moreover, these pillars could be seen with naked eyes as they wormed their way into Mo Qing Wu's meridians with a fast speed...

"Hey, hey... what's going on?" Chu Yang wasn't smiling. Instead, this sentence had unconsciously come straight from his throat.

"I don't know." Mo Qing Wu happily waved her hand, and the pillars of spirit energy scattered with a 'pop'. Then, she again beckoned with her hands, and the spirit energy that had been scattered got assembled again. It then transformed into the hazy shape of a lotus...

"Wow..." The cute little girl's hands danced and feet tripped. "I can do such tricks too!"

Chu Yang was stunned by this.

The old man in the sky almost staggered and fell down! He

looked-on as this little girl continuously made a lotus, small birds, pillars etc. from spiritual energy. And, this old man couldn't help but open his eyes wider and wider...

His eyes almost popped out of his eye sockets!

His breathing became increasingly rapid, and his eyes turned red.

"What am I seeing... what am I seeing?" The old man's hands trembled. His complexion made it seemed as if he wanted to cry out, "What am I looking at... it turns out that this physique... exists in this world..."

The big and small figures of those two had changed into two small dots and had gone far into the distance by the time the old man came out of shock.

The old man stopped in the sky.

He just stood there in a daze for a long while. Then, he suddenly opened his mouth and sucked in cold air with a hissing sound.

The spirit energy from above the heavens and under the earth rushed over towards his mouth... as if it had been sucked by his mouth! And, it suddenly took shape of a storm of spirit energy...

Far away, Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu suddenly felt somewhat suffocated. In fact, they even found it hard to breathe for a moment! It seemed as if the spirit energy in the air had suddenly disappeared...

Both of them were greatly baffled. They had to endure this uncomfortable feeling until they rushed out to a section of the road. Then, they felt that their breathing had become easy...

"What was that just now?" Chu Yang wondered in his heart. He turned around and saw. But, he could only see boundless land; he didn't see anything else.

"That was very strange," Mo Qing Wu also pointed out.

They looked at each other and smiled. Neither of them knew

what had happened a moment ago.

Mo Qing Wu jumped up and hugged Chu Yang's neck, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I am tired. Carry me and run."

"Very well!" Chu Yang laughed out loud. He held the delicate and soft body of Mo Qing Wu, and rushed flying along the way.

However, they didn't know that someone was controlling this on a whim. In fact, he was creating all this with a mere deep breath!

This old man didn't have any intention to, but he had actually sucked the spirit energy from the air within a radius of hundreds and thousands of feet! And, he had made this vast area devoid of energy as a result!

What kind of cultivation was this?

However, even this old man with such a terrifying cultivation had been frightened and scared out of his wits by what he had witnessed!

He muttered to himself after a long time, "My Heavens! My earth! My God! What did I see? Heavenly Yin Body! Innate Spirit Meridians! My, my, my... My eyes have been dazzled..."

He remained expressionless for quite a while. Then, he came back to his senses, "I will catch up and take a look again..." he moved forward as he spoke. He set the footing in the air, and suddenly disappeared from there without a trace.

He had left a large passage of vacuum behind his body.

...

Sounds of fierce fighting could be heard from ahead in the snow and wind. A clear and explosive shout was heard. But, it soon changed into the sound of thunder in this snowy wind!

It was Young Master Yu's voice!

A long and loud shout sound was heard immediately after. It was filled with vigor. It wasn't inferior to that of Young Master Yu's.

However, it was a clear sound... and was slightly gentle too.

Moreover, this voice was of a female. It belonged to Jun Xi Zhu!

Suddenly, a scolding sound echoed and fiercely shook everything in a radius of fifty kilometres!

Chu Yang gasped. [Damn, this big sister of the Middle Three Heaven's underworld is fu*king awesome! It looks like she's no less than Young Master Yu.]

They approached further and saw that many people were gathered in a large circle. All of these people were King Level Experts. Gu Du Xing and the others were also present in that circle.

Moreover, people of several great clans were also there. They were nervously looking the scene in the field.

The people of the Meng Clan were present in a remote corner far away from all of this.

It had become impossible for the people of the Meng Clan to take advantage slyly after Chu Yang had passed their information to Young Master Yu! So, they had no other choice but to carry out their evil plans out in the open. But, they didn't have enough strength to pull that off...

Therefore, they had no other choice but to foolishly wait on the side-lines. They would then look for leftovers... if any. Moreover, their original purpose was to obtain a few drops of blood of a spirit beast; that's all.

Three figures rolled up together like a tornado in the battle field. One of them looked as elegant and pure as a spirit. Her attacks were fierce, and each attack was as heavy as a mountain. Her black robe was fluttering, and her long hair was flying upward. It was obviously Jun Xi Zhu. There was another person in a fluttering black robe. He seemed to be handling everything skilfully and easily even in such a fierce fight. In fact, it seemed as if he was leisurely strolling in a park. Every gesture and every movement of

this person seemed devoid of anger. This person was Young Master Yu!

The two bigshots of the Dark Bamboo were attacking a ninth grade spirit beast. So, it wasn't surprising that the others weren't daring to interfere. After all, who in the Middle Three Heavens could dare to use force for snatching something when the Dark Bamboo wanted it?

Many King Level Experts of the aristocratic clans of the Middle Three Heavens had gathered here. However, they were merely looking for the drops of blood that would drip from the body of this ninth grade spirit beast during the fierce battle with Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu!

As for the rest of the ninth grade spirit beast... such as its body and its inner core... It was rather obvious that no one would dare to think about having them!

The target of Young Master Yu and Jun Xi Zhu's attacks was a blood-red monster snake!

"This snake should be Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake..." Chu Yang muttered. Mo Qing Wu rolled the pupils of her eyes as she looked towards the field. Then, she stuck out her tongue, "This snake is very ugly."

The monster snake was only around ten feet long, and its whole body was covered in blood-red scales. It had three heads, and each of them looked very fierce. It had two terrible claws under its lower abdomen. Its tail was an even more powerful weapon! It had never landed on the ground during the fight, and had continued to fight-back while being in the air. It had six eyes, and all its eyes were fierce, ominous-looking, and fretful!

This snake seemed helpless while encountering such fierce attacks. Therefore, it was angry!

The monstrous snake was continuously puffing out frost energy

from the mouth of one of its heads. It also emitted 'hissing' sounds. Even the air would freeze for a moment wherever the frost energy would go. Then, the air would disintegrate with a 'pop' sound the next moment! Moreover, it was spurting out flames from its other head. The flames were combusting in the air with a shiver. In fact, even the air would tremble and get ignited in the wake of the flames. The third head was expanding and shrinking from time to time. It could stretch its neck to more than a hundred feet in the blink of an eye every time it lengthened it. A foul stench would fill the air whenever it would expose its ghastly white teeth. However, it would retract its head after one strike. It moved like a thunder, and with the speed of lightning!

And, its flexible tail was swinging back and forth. This was keeping its body in equilibrium. The snake would occasionally make attacks with its tail. Then, it would immediately retract it! Its formidable might was shocking to the eyes and astonishing to the heart. Chu Yang saw this and noticed that he would have no choice but to face its attacks if he were to be present within its attack-range. He would have no second means to dodge its attacks!

Green fog was continuously emitting out from the body of this blood snake while the battle was going on! And, the snowflakes in the air were also getting dyed in green along with the surging of this light green fog. The battle ground had also turned into dull green jade! Many places in the field had already corroded, and this had formed gigantic holes in those places. The battlefield had mostly been damaged.

Obviously, this fog was highly toxic!

So, Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu had no other choice but to fight while floating in the air. They couldn't dare to land on the ground because of this!

Chu Yang looked at this green poisonous fog. He thought, [It's not surprising that this guy is known as Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake. I see. Its body is of the color of blood, and the poison-fog

that it emits is green in color, ah...]

Chapter 544: Indescribably Strange!

The green fog gradually filled the air. Even the people who were outside the encirclement slowly drew back. And, they all kept a distance of several hundred feet from that green fog!

The men of Dark Bamboo had obviously overtaken everyone from three directions. Their swords flashed in their hands as they were eyeing the beast covetously. It seemed as if a tiger was watching its prey. They seemed prepared to attack at any time!

Chu Yang gazed at the beast with rapt attention. He was secretly startled in his heart!

[The ninth grade spirit beast is truly worthy of its name! It can withstand the combined strength of Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu! It is at a disadvantage right now. And, it can't run from their ferocious attacks either. But, it still hasn't sustained any injuries!]

[The terror of the ninth grade spirit beasts can be inferred from this!]

Suddenly, a loud and hoarse roar was heard from the field while Chu Yang was still thinking about this. The roar was powerful and strange. Chu Yang hurriedly looked-on, and saw that the monster snake had suddenly let out that severe roar. It had started to soar upwards, and the red shadows had begun to wave around it!

Everyone heard the sharp roar of that monster snake, and couldn't help but feel dizziness in their heads. In fact, they felt that an illusion had started to spread out everywhere!

Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu whizzed at the same time. They went in different directions, and launched a pincer attack from two sides!

Three undistinguishable shadows rushed up in the air at the same time. All of them were very fast. So, they were leaving countless afterimages in their wake. And, this had created a

wonderful visual illusion!

The people who didn't get the time to raise their heads to look up could see that the three shadows were still engaged in battle on the ground. And, the one who had looked up to some extent could see that the three figures were fighting in mid-air. However, those who had fully raised their heads upwards were clearly able to see the three figures fighting high up in the air at this moment!

The Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake wanted to escape!

Everyone present on the scene could see this clearly.

Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu were also aware of this. Therefore, they had intensified their attacks! It seemed that they had wanted to capture the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake alive. Else, these two experts would've killed this snake a long time ago by using their true strengths!

However, both of them had understood this by now — [It seems that it's impossible to catch this ninth grade spirit beast alive!]

Young Master Yu let out a long cry and shouted, "I will smash it down! You quickly go and take a breath!" his voice hadn't even faded when his blue shadow flashed. Suddenly, a blue robed-silhouette covered the whole sky.

Jun Xi Zhu flew so fast that she left a trail of black line as she rushed outwards. She went about a thousand feet away from the fight in a flash. Then, she finally let loose of her mouth and nose, and breathed-in a mouthful of the spirit energy from the world. Then, her body transformed into a rainbow as she ferociously flew back into the area!

[I see! So, both the experts had been holding their breaths while fighting with this Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake! It seems that the green fog is so poisonous that these two individuals don't dare to breathe it despite having such great cultivations!]

Chu Yang secretly pondered in his heart.

Young Master Yu suddenly exhaled loudly like a bull while Jun Xi Zhu was flying back. He then shouted, "You are going down now!"

His blue figure fiercely flew up and went over the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake in the sky. Then, a palm ruthlessly slapped the fire-emitting head of the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake. And, a dozen or more palms wantonly pounded on all the three heads of the Green Rainbow Blood Snake immediately after!

The Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake let out a pitiful scream as its body started falling down! However, Young Master Yu fell towards it from high altitude while it was in the midst of the falling process, and used both his feet to firmly kick the Green Rainbow Blood Snake's body in an unbroken succession!

All three heads of the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake spurted out arrows of blood with a 'puff' sound!

Three blood-fountains were spurt out in such a way that they fell in three directions on the snowy ground! And, the ground was dyed scarlet as a result...

Many experts of the aristocratic clans were present on that scene. And, all of them revealed greedy looks in their eyes as they looked at these three pools of blood!

[Yes, we need this blood! We would be returning home from a rewarding journey if we obtain even half of it.]

The Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake fiercely fell on the ground with a 'Bang'. Fragments of ice swirled in the air as a result of the impact. The blood that had just fallen also splashed up. And, people's shadows ran back-and-forth in chaos as they went flying above the three pools of blood!

Mixed up sounds of cussing were heard, "It's mine! Don't snatch it!"

"Get lost! What do you mean 'snatch', huh?"

"Kill this bastard!"

"I got a little bit, ha ha ha..."

...

A King Level Expert of the Meng Clan managed to get hold of some blood. And, dozens or more King Level Experts arrived there in a flash to distribute the blood. Everyone had come to have greedy-red eyes in front of such a strong temptation.

"You bunch of bastards!" Jun Xi Zhu shouted loudly in anger, "All of you are dead!"

These people were trying to get hold of the ninth grade spirit beast's blood at this time. So, the scene had become very chaotic. And, this had given the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake an opportunity to escape. It issued a strange cry, and attacked with all its three heads at the same time. Then, it hit Young Master Yu hard using its tail with a thumping sound. Then, it rushed out at a lightning speed!

Young Master Yu roared, and quickly flew out to chase after it!

The direction in which the Green Rainbow Blood Snake had escaped... was actually the direction in which Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were present! It seemed that this bastard also knew to bully the weak and fear the strong. This direction had the minimum number of people among all directions at present. The monster snake was hurriedly moving away, and it had its back towards Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu. And, they were rushing over with a sort of reckless speed and power!

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang shouted loudly and attacked using their weapons!

They went forward to face the approaching enemy!

The saber-light was like the vast galaxy, and the sword-light was like a shooting star in the sky!

The sword-move was so sharp that it seemed as if it would pierce the blue sky. And, it was so vigorous that appeared as if it would

chop down the earth!

All six eyes of the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake exposed a look of astonishment, [Crap! How did the direction I picked to run turn out be the strongest blockade?]

The Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake would've spoken out these words in a sorrowful manner if it had been capable of talking! [Those people who are flying-about in chaos and fighting over my blood are far inferior to these two... Fu*k me...]

It took longer to describe, but the attacks of the Saber King and Sword King ferociously came in contact with the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake in the blink of an eye!

An explosive sound was heard!

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang spurt out blood from their mouths as they were sent flying upside-down in the backward direction. But, the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake was also brought to a halt even though it was going with irresistible speed! It stopped in mid-air!

It was this little time that declared the death penalty of this Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake!

Young Master Yu let out a long and loud shout. He extended his foot with lightning speed, and suddenly stamped on the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake's tail with a very large force. A saber-light flashed in his hand at the same time. And, violent sounds of 'bang' were heard in a row thereafter!

Young Master Yu was continually slashing his saber on the necks of all three heads of the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake! However, the layer of its scales was so hard that Young Master Yu's saber couldn't chop it off. So, he kept attacking it nonstop!

The Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake was screeching in pain. And, it continued to struggle as blood flooded out of it little by little.

Jun Xi Zhu's shadow flew and slammed the Green-Rainbow-

Blood Snake using her sword-like palm. Then, she clenched her fist, and fiercely pounded it on the snake! The three heads of the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake were shoved into the ground with three sounds of 'Bang'!

She then shouted, "Little Yu, you're an idiot! Pound its heads into the ground first. Why are you trying to chop its neck? Its neck is the hardest part of its whole body. There is almost no weapon in the world that can break its defence. You're simply wasting your strength..."

She landed dozens of thunderbolt-like punches on all three heads of the monster snake with a very large force while she said this since it was trying to lift them up!

Young Master Yu exposed an expression of ridicule on his face. [Dammit! This magnificent Young Master got scolded, and also got called an 'idiot'... And, I can't even dare to answer back... After all, she's my sister-in-law. So, I can't afford to offend her...]

Chu Yang was struck dumb when he saw this happen. He even raised his eyebrows in shock...! [This woman is really fierce...]

Young Master Yu and Jun Xi Zhu continued thrashing of snake kept producing 'bang' sounds...

The two big shots of the Dark Bamboo continued to hammer it like it was a punching bag. They had pounded god-knows-how-many punches on the monster snake. The Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake had been struggling and swaying from side to side since the beginning. And, it was constantly trying to lift its heads from underground, but they continued to pound it down with tremendous force!

This happened seven or eight times in a row. Then, the Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake gradually stopped moving.

"Almost done." Jun Xi Zhu gasped for breath. She straightened her body. Then, she grabbed the tail of the Green-Rainbow-Blood

Snake. And, she pulled the snake out from the ground since its whole body felt to have already become limp. The impact of the punches had already shattered its internals into pieces...

[Has it already died? It can't die 'just' like that!]

Jun Xi Zhu suspiciously looked at this dead Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake. She then wrinkled her brows, "How did it die so easily?"

Young Master Yu went close to it. He also stroked his chin, but remained puzzled after much consideration, "Something's fishy. How did it get killed so easily? Moreover, it seemed to have a weakened appearance since the beginning of the fight..."

Chu Yang had also come over. He secretly clicked his tongue, "This is such a mighty and overwhelming ninth grade spirit beast. And, they say... it looked weak from the beginning?"

Jun Xi Zhu wrinkled her brows. She flipped her palm over, and a delicate dagger appeared in her hand. A cold light flashed as she slashed it with a 'shua' sound. And, the snake-skin was conveniently cut open even though it had appeared extremely hard before!

Jun Xi Zhu's complexion became more unsightly! She cut-open the joints of the snake with the dagger, and moistened her hand with its blood. Then, she put it in her mouth. She tasted it, and suddenly stormed in anger, "Bastard! Who took out half of this snake's blood essence?!"

Young Master Yu was greatly surprised, "What?" He also extended his finger, moistened it with the blood, and then tasted it. The expression on his face became strange as a result, "Blood essence is taken away? Oh my... Who has such great ability? Someone captured it alive, and took blood essence from it. But, the person didn't even scar this snake's body! This snake was still alive and kicking even after losing so much of its blood essence..."

This was a strange fact! Half of the blood essence was missing from the body of a healthy and active ninth grade spirit beast? What kind of magical power... or remarkably talented person could pull this off?

Jun Xi Zhu's face got filled with a murderous look!

"Dammit!" The hand of this Dark Bamboo Overlord went out like electricity. She smashed all three heads of the snake with three 'bang' sounds. Then, she took out the three inner cores. They were white, red, and green in color. Then, she raised her leg and kicked at the corpse of this monster snake even though it weighed several hundred pounds!

This kick was very ferocious! And, this kick sent the corpse flying to a distance of more than a thousand feet. Then, the corpse blasted in the sky...

[Crude! Valiant! Bold and powerful! Overbearing! Fu*king awesome!]

Chu Yang and his brothers – who had just gathered around here – remained silent out of fear!

Even Young Master Yu's brows and eyes throbbed in a crazed manner since he was dumbstruck as well. The muscles on his face got twitched. A good while passed, but there was still a lingering fear on his face as he tilted his head, [Fortunately, the woman that this Young Master has found is her younger sister... and not her... she's indeed very scary...]

[Oh god! You're a very lucky person...]

"These three inner cores are far from meeting my requirement!" Jun Xi Zhu sighed and said, "How can the blood essence be lost..."

Suddenly, she turned around and shouted in a stern voice, "That bunch over there has spoilt the plan! These bastards only know how to take unfair advantage. Kill them for me! These shameless bastards! I wanted this thing, and you had the guts to come and

snatch it? These dogs have become very gutsy!"

She became angrier as she continued to speak, "Kill them! Kill them all! You people want the blood of the spirit beast, right? I will make you drink your own blood!"

[That person was able to capture a ninth grade spirit beast empty-handed. Moreover, that person extracted its blood essence without injuring it... Such a person is definitely a legendary existence.] Jun Xi Zhu admitted in her heart that she couldn't afford to offend such a person. She had no way to release the anger that she held in her heart as a result of this realization. So, she flared up on these people instead!

The subordinates of the Dark Bamboo ferociously threw themselves at these people as per Jun Xi Zhu's order. Those King Level Experts fled in all directions like crying ghosts and howling spirits.

Young Master Yu angrily shouted, "Especially, these people of Meng Clan...! Wipe them out for me! They were the first ones to interfere! They thought that I wouldn't see them..."

Tragedy fell upon the people of the Meng Clan as a result. In fact, they almost shat their pants in fear. However, they also felt sad since they thought that they were being treated unjustly... [So many people had acted together... But, you only saw us?]

Chapter 545: Reforms the Heavenly Armaments!

Other people felt relaxed as they heard this. They knew that Young Master Yu would be engaged with the Meng Clan. So, he wouldn't come after them. Consequently, only the people of the Meng Clan would be surrounded by the people of Dark Bamboo.

However, those eight or nine individuals of the Meng Clan were left dumbfounded. [God knows what offence our Meng Clan has committed against Young Master Yu? Crap! We're done for. We haven't fulfilled the purpose we had come here for. And, we are even going to lose our lives here...]

They didn't know why they had met with such a bad luck. After all, they had committed no offense against Young Master Yu. But, they had offended King of Hell Chu!

The Meng Clan's people were in crisis because Meng Luo had wanted to lay his hands on Mo Qing Wu. Perhaps they would've returned to their clan to discard Meng Luo's evil technique if they had known about this matter...

However, they had no chance of doing so now!

"Minister Yu! You... you can't do this, ah!" the Elder who was leading the Meng Clan's group shouted in sobbing tone. "When did we offend the friends of Dark Bamboo? We have always..."

He hadn't even finished his sentence when Young Master Yu waved his hand with a frost-cold look on his face, "Slaughter them!"

"Hah!" several hundred experts of Dark Bamboo bellowed loudly as they rushed out. And, the surroundings were suddenly filled with screams!

"Let's fight together!" The Elder of the Meng Clan shouted in a desperate manner. He knew that they weren't going to be lucky

this time. In fact, the others didn't even know how to respond to his words. [We are facing several hundred experts of Dark Bamboo. There are a hundred or so King Level Experts among the ones who are about to besiege us... And, you say that we will fight together? Fight together with what?]

Jun Xi Zhu tilted her head. She seemed to be smiling... and not smiling as she said, "Little Yu, you seem to abhor this Meng Clan a lot, don't you?"

Young Master Yu faintly smiled, "I don't give a shit about them. The people of this world are the same in my eyes — totally worthless. They are like pigs and dogs! But, that King of Hell Chu wants them dead."

Jun Xi Zhu said 'oh', and further added, "They are genuinely in a tragic situation since King of Hell Chu wants them dead..."

Young Master Yu smiled.

At this moment, Chu Yang came over along with Gu Du Xing and the others. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had been ruthlessly shaken up a moment ago. However, they had returned to normal by now.

"We need to take our time to think carefully about this matter." Young Master Yu tightly wrinkled his brows and said, "Chu Yang, I need a help from you and your friends!"

"What's up?" Chu Yang asked.

"I believe that you have also seen that our purpose was to get the blood essence of the ninth grade spirit beast! It's very useful to me and Lady Zhu!" Young Master Yu hesitated for a moment at first. He then said, "But, the situation has turned out differently now. It seems that someone has extracted most of the blood essence from that ninth grade spirit beast! And, we can't stand against the power of this person!"

Young Master Yu gently let out a sigh of relief. Gloominess and

sullenness flashed through his eyes. He perhaps would've been an equal match to the person who had extracted the blood essence of the ninth grade spirit beast if his cultivation hadn't been destroyed in the past. But, he was much inferior as this time. So, how could he not be sullen?

"I guess its okay to tell you that..." Young Master Yu spoke while weighing every sentence and word, "I need a complete inner core of the ninth grade spirit beast to treat my injury. I have been forcibly upgrading my strength ever since I have received this injury. My strength falls down unevenly because of this uncured injury. Each year, there's inevitably a period of time when my strength ferociously drops down to Emperor Level. And, I proceed to regain my lost strength after this 'phase' is over. And, I need the inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast to make up for this condition!

"Lady Zhu needs the blood essence to upgrade her cultivation and break through the current bottleneck of her cultivation!"

Young Master Yu continued in a deep voice, "Therefore, our Dark Bamboo has made so much fuss over this matter by arriving in this Northern Wilderness. In fact, our strengths would've been enough to enable us to capture the ninth grade spirit beast on a normal day with ease... as long as it had made an appearance. But, this unexpected occurrence has happened at this critical time! Someone is going about extracting the blood essence from the ninth grade spirit beasts!

"Moreover, we can't use the spirit beast whose blood essence has been extracted... Just like this Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake!"

Chu Yang nodded since he had finally understood the reason, "I see!"

"Therefore, we need help from you and your brothers." Jun Xi Zhu picked-up on it, "King of Hell Chu, I will divide our manpower in eight squads after a while. Each team will need a leader. But,

most of our men fear the name of the ninth grade spirit beasts... So, it is impossible for other people to lead the teams. Only Little Yu and I can do that. But, you guys can do this..."

Jun Xi Zhu had a faint trace of envy in her eyes as she looked at Chu Yang and the others, "It's because you people have heavenly armaments in your hands!"

"You want each of us to lead a team of yours, right?" Chu Yang asked in a frank and straightforward manner, "There won't be any problem in that!"

Chu Yang had already seen the moves that Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had made a while ago. So, he knew they were Fifth Grade King Level Experts now! It was hard to say whether it was the elixir or the coaching that Young Master Yu had given them... But, this was enough to indicate that everything had produced great results.

In fact, Chu Yang would've separated his brothers, and would've made them go to train and gain experience at times like this even if Jun Xi Zhu hadn't requested it. He would've asked them to survive on their own so that they could touch upon their very own avenue in life!

"Good! I will give one Induction Purple Crystal to each of you. You will need to input your spiritual power into the Induction Purple Crystal when you find the ninth grade spirit beast. And, we will immediately receive the signal when that happens!"

Jun Xi Zhu continued, "Moreover, I will place cores of Mysterious Ice Jade Lotuses amidst the thick ice-field of Northern Wilderness to lure-out the Wind Fox. And, we will surround the Wing Fox from eight directions when it appears. Then, it won't be able to run away..."

She deeply sighed and said, "The Wind Fox is the quickest among all the ninth grade spirit beasts. It is the most elusive, and hardest to catch. But, we have no other choice but to lock the target on this

Wind Fox. This person who extracts the blood essence from the ninth grade spirit beasts is seriously annoying!"

Chu Yang had understood this... [The Wind Fox is the quickest. So, it's obvious why Jun Xi Zhu doesn't seem that optimistic. But, there's a possibility that the entirety of its blood essence is safe because it is the quickest!]

"Very well!" Chu Yang readily agreed. Gu Du Xing and the others were also eager to give it a try.

"Moreover... you must pay attention to this thing. Don't get involved in any dispute with a man having a big mole on his face if you come across him... He's a short and stout man... Just avoid him at all costs. There's a possibility that you may not be able to avoid him. But, don't enrage him at any cost."

Jun Xi Zhu hesitated for a while at first. Then, she finally said, "He's a man from the Xiao Clan of the Upper Three Heavens... Remember — don't get into a conflict with him."

"The Xiao Clan of the Upper Three Heavens..." Chu Yang silently repeated these words.

"Also, a ninth grade spirit beast has never appeared in the Middle Three Heavens before. This is the first time so many have appeared here all of a sudden. So, many mysterious experts will certainly appear. Therefore, you guys must take care of yourselves."

Jun Xi Zhu repeatedly warned.

"I will keep that in mind," Chu Yang solemnly replied.

"Good. We must set into action as soon as possible since there's a risk that this person will act first if we delay!" Jun Xi Zhu made a prompt decision. She then issued a series of orders. She made the arrangements in clear diction, and the groups of people were divided in a flash. She then said, "Good luck!" Then, she went away like wind with her team.

Young Master Yu laughed out loud. Then, he floated up and said with a smile while being in the air, "King of Hell Chu, this is the first time we are working together..."

His voice hadn't even faded at this time. However, his body had already disappeared in the midst of the boundless heavy snow.

Gu Du Xing cupped his fist in his other hand, "Big Brother, take care of yourself!" He was about to leave when Chu Yang hastily called out to him, "Everyone wait a moment!"

"What's the matter?" Dong Wu Shang halted his footsteps.

"Let me have a look at your weapons. I need to see if they have been damaged in the recent fights..." Chu Yang softly said.

"Yes, they have received some damage... But, it is nothing serious." Gu Du Xing smiled. He took out the Black Dragon Sword, and handed it over to Chu Yang.

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo also handed over their swords. Dong Wu Shang was standing on one side with his saber in his hand. Chu Yang stroked the weapons one by one. And, he spoke-up after a good while had passed, "There's no problem with them. I can rest assured now. Ha-ha, you guys need to go now. We can't be late for this one."

The four of them set out on their journeys in different directions with their teams. However, everyone's hearts were filled with doubt – [Big Brother, what was that about? Did you take our weapons just to have a look? Just to touch them...?]

They felt their weapons to be somewhat different ever since Chu Yang had stroked them. But, none of them was able to tell how their weapons felt different. So, they could only mutter in their hearts... [It seems to be my illusion...]

They disappeared without trace with these thoughts in their minds.

Chu Yang had a faint smile on his face as he saw them leave from

far away.

He had secretly reformed these weapons using the Nine Tribulations Sword a moment ago. He had gently applied the Sun and Moon Ointment on these weapons, and had infused the essence of 'genuine weapon' into these weapons. Therefore, these weapons would no longer be ordinary!

Instead, they had turned into heavenly armaments! They would now be capable of giving birth to spiritual intelligence of their own!

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others would able to make use of this advantage in certain situations only. Moreover, these weapons would reflect more and more of their true abilities once they had drank blood and claimed more lives.

"We should set out as well." Chu Yang pulled Mo Qing Wu's small hand, and nodded towards the forty people he was going to lead. He said, "Follow me."

Then, they all sped along the direction he had chosen.

There were twenty King Level Experts among the forty people. The others were Ninth Grade Revered Martial Artists. They obviously weren't very convinced on why Minister Jun had assigned this youth as their leader. But, they still resolutely followed his orders and sped along as he took the lead.

Wind and snow filled the air. This left the horizon to appear hazy.

The old man who had been chasing them arrived here soon after. However, there wasn't a soul in sight... only corpses were left. He sniffed the smell, and suddenly said in anger, "Who is this person? He has unexpectedly deployed troops to mislead me! There are several teams, and they comprise of dozens of people of same number. Moreover, they have gone in different directions... Are they trying to torment my old and weary body?"

He then rose higher in the sky with a soaring sound and chased forward while galloping. In fact, he seemed to be 'break dancing' as he mumbled, "I am not willing to believe that I can't find you..."

He limitlessly complained to himself, "You said back then... that you... you would only follow them, and that this matter would be over at once. But, look what's happened now. Looking for her is like finding a needle in a haystack... Why were you just gawking back then? Why didn't you act then itself? You have brought this upon yourself... Now suffer! Everything would be finished if some other old guy saw her..."

It hadn't been too long since Chu Yang had rushed out. Suddenly, he felt that the Induction Purple Crystal in his hand had started to heat up. So, he put it forward and looked at it. There seemed to be a vague white line on the crystal, and it was pointing westwards.

Chu Yang changed his direction, and followed the direction that the Induction purple crystal had pointed towards. He had suddenly become somewhat curious about this Induction Purple Crystal.

[It is indeed a very good item. I'm not worried about losing contact with my brothers because I have this thing. I can promptly go and save them in case any of them comes across any danger...]

He groaned in his heart as he madly rushed forwards. He sped along for several dozen kilometres, but stopped all of a sudden. Some people were clearly lying in wait up ahead... It was evident that they were waiting for something...

...

Chapter 546: Experts Gather!

A King Level Expert behind Chu Yang had already stepped forward before Chu Yang could open his mouth. The King Level Expert then yelled, "I am a subordinate of the Dark Bamboo Group of the Middle Three Heavens. We would like to take the path ahead! Which of our friends are hidden there in the snow?"

His voice sent vibrations in the air like the sound of a copper bell, and crushed the snowflakes.

A white shadow flashed in front of Chu Yang and his team. The shadow replied in cultured and refined voice, "I am Ao Xie Yun of the Ao Clan. I have come here to hunt ninth grade spirit beast. The Dark Bamboo wants to take this road. So, my brothers will make way for them!"

The levelled snowy area to the front tumbled over to the sides as he issued the order. And, dozens of people stood up. Their whole bodies were draped in white snow. Then, they retreated to both sides.

"So, it's Young Master Ao Xie Yun of the Ao Clan!" that King Level Expert spoke-out in a deep voice, "Thank you!"

Chu Yang cupped his hands in greeting towards Ao Xie Yun. Then, he sped along while taking the lead.

They faded away in the wind and snow in the blink of an eye.

"Wasn't that King of Hell Chu? What is he doing here?" Ao Xie Yun muttered to himself while looking at the back profile of forty or so people. His heart was full of doubts.

Then, he waved his hand, "Go on and hide! The ninth grade spirit beast would appear here when it's being chased by people. And, we will act according to the plan when that happens!"

Everyone complied with his order. They scuttled around the snowy ground for a while, and eventually concealed themselves

inside the snow.

It was obvious that Ao Xie Yun didn't have any confidence of tracking down a ninth grade spirit beast at this time. So, he had chosen the stupidest method to catch one — put trust to chance rather than show initiative!

This method was very silly. But, it was quite effective in this part of the world.

They couldn't capture the ninth grade spirit beast if it didn't pass from here. And, they could only meet it head-on if it came across them. It was also possible that their luck may not favour them. And, they may not be able to obtain the blood essence of the beast in that case. But, it was still possible that they might be allowed to take a little blood from the body of the beast if they could land a good impression on those who were chasing after the spirit beast...

A white shadow seemed to be coming over like a hurricane from the distant west. The road along which the shadow was rushing seemed to have personified. In fact, that road seemed to have the eyes made of wind, and a mouth made of hurricane!

Moreover, this white shadow moved two times faster than the wind it was carrying along! The shadow would suddenly scuttle in the east sometimes. And then, it would suddenly be in the west. It had formed a dazzling white shadow in the sky by doing this.

In fact, this white shadow would've already run away to gods know how far away by the time a person would look at it...

Such a speed could shock anyone!

However, this white shadow was clearly frightened and anxious to the extreme. Also, it seemed to be confused as to which road to choose. In fact, it seemed to have lost its head. It was occasionally issuing squeaking sounds in fright while dashing madly.

A quick and agile silhouette was chasing after it in the sky far behind it. The agility skill of this person seemed free and at ease.

His speed didn't seem that high at first sight. In fact, he appeared to be moving at a moderate speed. But, this person's shadow was covering a distance of thousands of feet each time it flashed!

A hand came over to grab that little white shadow!

The white shadow became panic-stricken, and fled away with all its might. But, that person's shadow followed after it all the way. "Don't run, my little darling! I only want half of your blood essence. I won't take your life... Oh child, don't run."

But, how could this white shadow dare to stop running? It would continue to run until its last breath...

The white shadow turned over since it didn't have a chance. It suddenly got down, and dug under the snow. Consequently, it disappeared without a trace.

The person's shadow coldly snorted in the sky. He suddenly extended out his hand, and fiercely grabbed downwards in the emptiness. And, an explosive sound resonated as his hand went a thousand feet deep into the ground. Moreover, it had covered the surface area of a hundred feet.

The entire section of the ground had been grabbed out by this person! And, this had exposed a pitch-black big hole there.

The white shadow flashed. It panicked and ran out of the big hole. It changed into a streak of light with a flash, and accelerated into the distance.

"Oh little child... Don't run... don't you understand that you can't run away from my hands..." That person's shadow shook his head and faintly smiled. There was look of helplessness in his eyes. Then, his body streaked across the sky with a flash as he continued to pursue.

A sky-shaking roar was heard from the direction at this time. It had come from the direction in which the white shadow had fled. A red shadow had soared up in the sky, and it seemed as if it would

set the sky on fire.

The white shadow became overjoyed, and swiftly rushed towards that direction. In fact, it would've spoken-out while crying tears of joy if it had possessed the ability to speak... [Oh dear mother! Finally, a scapegoat has appeared...]

However, that person who was chasing it was clearly startled by this. He said, "How come a Fire Lion has also appeared here? Well, I guess I would have to take a scoop of it too!" The silhouette accelerated to chase over.

A sky-shaking roar was again heard not too long after. However, this sound had come from another direction.

"Eh? It's being very strange this time... how many ninth grade spirit beasts are here in total? Three of them have suddenly appeared in this place? A Single-Horned Dragon has also appeared here..." the person's shadow muttered to himself, "This is also good. This has saved me from a long and wearisome journey..."

He chased for another few dozen kilometres, and suddenly had a realization, "No wonder this seemed so strange. So, someone has put the core of Mysterious Ice Jade Lotus in the middle of the wilderness."

He no longer held back his strength when he realized this, and he let out a loud cry. He had been going as fast as lightning until now. However, his speed had suddenly become even faster.

"This is too bad! That bastard has arrived here too!" The old man who had been looking for Mo Qing Wu was also coming from behind. However, his complexion had changed by now. In fact, he was becoming increasingly discomfited as he rushed forwards, "I have discovered one with great difficulty. I won't let him snatch it away at any cost..."

A few 'smack' sounds came as he was speaking. He struck three or four slaps on his own face while he was still busy rushing, "You old

fool! You allowed yourself to be confused at the crucial moment and made a mistake. Look, this has created such a problem now..."

He flew past with a 'whistling' sound.

A short and stout guy was sniffing the air again and again at a place far away in another direction. He had a big mole on his forehead. He seemed alert. He looked up and started to listen carefully. Then, he held out his hand, and pointed in a direction as he said, "Over there! Go!" A group of three people changed their direction and madly rushed over when they heard his order.

A white-clothed man helplessly shook his head and muttered from his position in the far north direction, "These guys are so idle. They have nothing to do. They have come running to the Middle Three Heavens to hunt a ninth grade spirit beast... are there not plenty of them in the Upper Three Heavens? Is there some other purpose behind their arrival? This doesn't look good. I must go and take a look!"

He was about to leave. But, he again cussed and muttered to himself, "I don't know why those two old guys have come down. I'm no match for them... Should I go after them? Should I really go after them? Or maybe... I shouldn't go? Fu*k it! I will go after them!"

His slim body rose up in the air, span like a gyroscope with a whistling sound, and disappeared without a trace.

...

Young Master Yu's black robe was fluttering at an unknown location in the wilderness. He moved his hand towards a spirit beast that had a blazing body! Young Master Yu didn't show any mercy this time. He was putting all of his strength in every move!

That blazing spirit beast was pounded. And, it let out an awkward scream 'ahwooh ah oh wooh'! Young Master Yu's complexion turned more and more red. His movements became

more and more heavy, and his agility skills also became more and more quick!

A blue and a red shadow were whirling around each other. Their wild movements were hitting the snow in the surrounding as if sky and earth were turning upside down.

A long shadow was coming over flying from afar. It was a fantastic creature with a long and strange horn on its head! It nodded its head and wagged its tail, and rushed into the battlefield Young Master Yu was still fighting in!

There was a dreamy lotus in that place. Moreover, it was in its full bloom. It was the Mysterious Ice Jade Lotus! The lotus core!

"Evil creature!" Jun Xi Zhu's silhouette rushed in the air with a shout. She left thousands of afterimages in her wake as she wildly swept over. She took a risk, and snatched the Mysterious Ice Jade Lotus from below the teeth of this Single-Horned Dragon. Then, she turned over her hand, and put it in her bosom!

Such a good item had flew away from its claws? How could this Single-Horned Dragon endure this? It became angry! It opened its big mouth, and let out a loud and angry roar! Its four stake-like legs stepped upon this thin ice-field, and shook it out!

Jun Xi Zhu knitted her elegant eyebrows. The situation that had unfolded was beyond her expectations. She had originally wanted to lure-out one beast. And, her plan was to team up with Young Master Yu to quickly capture that one beast by using their combined strength.

Who would've imagined that they would get two beasts at a single time?!

Unexpectedly, this Single-Horned Dragon didn't go away. It was instead roaring while nodding its head and wagging its tail. It looked towards Jun Xi Zhu like a creditor. And, it seemed as if it was demanding her for its Mysterious Ice Jade Lotus to be

returned!

Suddenly, Jun Xi Zhu felt ridiculous and happy at the same time! [Does this Single-Horned Dragon wish to die for this Mysterious Ice Jade Lotus?]

However, the Single-Horned Dragon flew into a rage when it saw that its demand wasn't fulfilled. It rose up and curled its body in mid-air. Then, it suddenly stretched out. And, its more-than-a-hundred-feet-long plump body came scuttling down!

Unexpectedly, it had taken the initiative to attack!

"This evil creature is acting very recklessly!" Jun Xi Zhu became furious. She brandished her hands, and unleashed her palm-shadows as she resolutely went up to meet force with force! She didn't even draw back a single step!

And, that was because Young Master Yu was on the verge of completing the task behind her. So, she couldn't draw back at this time!

The Single-Horned Dragon howled with an explosive sound. All four of its claws flipped over and turned towards the sky as it was slammed backwards by the collision. Jun Xi Zhu also bellowed loudly at the same time. The snow around her body suddenly dispersed outwards as she fiercely recoiled backwards. And, her body suddenly went cutting into Young Master Yu's fighting circle like a lightning bolt. Her palms were bleeding due to that collision. However, she merely shook her hands, and crazily pounded several hundred slaps on the head of the Fire Lion!

Young Master Yu also attacked it at the same time!

They had clearly felt those formidable auras swiftly and violently approaching this place from all directions!

Therefore, they knew that they had no time to lose!

They wouldn't be able to monopolize these treasures even if they delayed for one moment! Therefore, both of them had to stake

their lives on this one moment!

It could be said that this was bad luck for this Fire Lion. It had gotten enticed by an elixir, and it was about to get killed for it. The outer skin that it had always been proud of had been cracked open! In fact, it had been beaten to a pulp from top to bottom!

The ninth grade spirit beasts were supposed to be powerful. But, how could they withstand besiege from two Saint Level Experts? It didn't even get any time to scream. Flames were still blazing on its damaged body, but it had already lost its life!

It had gotten deeply buried in the ground.

Jun Xi Zhu took out an enormous Purple Crystal Jade Bottle, and got ready to extract. She used her hands to draw out the blood essence from the fractured spinal column of the Fire Lion. She then exposed an expression of happiness on her face. After all, the blood essence from this beast hadn't been extracted previously. So, it was completely intact.

She extracted the entire blood essence from this beast, and took the inner core as well. She then saw that the Single-Horned Dragon and Young Master Yu had already engaged in battle!

The Single-Horned Dragon cried out strangely when it saw that Jun Xi Zhu was looking towards it. It had been withstanding Young Master Yu's attack so far. But, it had been using its entire strength to do that. It tumbled backwards, and suddenly got panicky. It seemed like it couldn't decide which way to run to.

It was already unable to handle one... So, how would it handle two of them? These two people had genuinely scared this dragon!

The elixir had also been forcibly taken away from it. And, it had become so angry that it hadn't even thought of the consequences when that had happened. But, it had come back to its senses now. It was true that this ninth grade spirit beast had the dignity of a nine grade spirit beast. So, it would be very humiliating if it had to

run away. But, it would still be far better than that foolish lion which had been skinned a moment ago, right?

However, it didn't pay attention that it had deviated from its direction when it decided to run. Therefore, it didn't flee in the direction from which it had come. Instead, it had started to flee towards the east.

And, a very small white shadow was crazily rushing over from the east. In fact, this figure was so fast that it seemed as if it was howling in the wind like a tornado.

...

Chapter 547: So Powerful!

This delicate white shadow quickly and skilfully swept past from under the body of the Single-Horned Dragon with a whooshing sound. It then madly dashed away while taking help of the impeded line of sight that was provided by the gigantic body of the Single-Horned Dragon...

Suddenly, it sensed that a person with as great a formidable aura as its pursuer was coming from the front. This meant that two people with formidable auras were approaching it from two sides!

[Is this a trap?]

The little white shadow lost its head out of fear upon this realization. In fact, this strong creature unexpectedly felt weak in its paws in this split second! It rolled its eyes a few times. Then, it sensed a friendly aura coming from a certain direction. So, it fled in that direction without the slightest hesitation.

In that direction...

Chu Yang was rushing over while carrying Mo Qing Wu. Chu Yang's heartbeats fastened as he heard an earth-shattering sound from afar. And, he immediately accelerated his pace.

That white shadow flashed past with a 'shua' sound. It's speed so fast that it was difficult to see it with naked eyes. In fact, the white shadow disappeared before Chu Yang could even react.

Then, a large hurricane with formidable power came sweeping along with the whiz of the wind. One couldn't even open their eyes in the face of such powerful wind. In fact, one would even feel empty under feet... as if they were being thrown up towards the sky.

Chu Yang shouted loudly. He held Mo Qing Wu tightly in his arms as he used his entire strength to stand firm on the ice-field.

The hurricane blew past them, and eventually formed a tornado

behind the two of them. It then went further into the distance in a straight line!

"What just happened?" Chu Yang opened his eyes. He puffed out a piece of snow that had gone inside his mouth because of the hurricane. He then shook his head to shake off the ice and snow.

Mo Qing Wu obviously didn't understand what had just happened. So, she could only shake her head blankly.

Neither of them noticed as a small white head peeked out from the pocket of Mo Qing Wu's loose-fitting sable-fur coat in a careful manner. It rolled its eyes in a circle. A section of snow-white tail was emerging from the back of its head. Its tails stood erect, and were swinging.

However, the little head went back inside Mo Qing Wu's pocket immediately-after. And, only a small section of its flagpole-like tail was left outside now. Then, it immediately extended out its delicate white claw, and quietly pulled its tail inside...

However, Mo Qing Wu and Chu Yang were completely unaware of this...

Chu Yang had especially prepared this furred-coat for Mo Qing Wu. And, he had then wrapped Mo Qing Wu's petite body inside it. He had also made a big pocket in the coat; it was meant to carry food and snacks...

However, neither of them could've ever expected that a formidable ninth grade spirit beast would take refuge in such a small place.

The delicate head moved slightly inside the pocket. It had made itself comfortable therein. In fact, it had lied down, and had covered its whole body with its tail. [I've blended into the color of this sable-furred coat. No one would think that a ninth grade spirit beast is hidden here as long as I don't move my tail...]

This little thing comfortably breathed a sigh of relief. Then, it

looked around its new abode. And, it realized that many sweets were present there... on its side.

It tried to un-wrap a candy. And then, it put the candy into its mouth.

[Wow!]

[It's so delicious! So delicious!]

[Is this place paradise...?]

The pure aura that was coming from Mo Qing Wu's body had made this little beast very comfortable. In fact, it couldn't help but close its eyes in contentment. [Hm? Something doesn't feel right! How is this girl's body is gathering spirit energy?]

[Isn't this the purest form of spirit energy? Wow! It's very comfortable, ah...]

This tiny spirit beast had already approved of this place in this short period of time. It didn't wish to leave it. It looked at a pouch that was full of colorful candies... [Humph! I won't get so many good things to eat if I leave this place...]

[Moreover, this small girl can gather spirit energy... So, wouldn't I soon have more than one tail if I practice while staying by her side?]

[Plus, no one would be able to recognize my true identity if I have a human as a cover... This will be like shooting two birds with one stone.]

[But... for how long can I stay at her side?]

This little guy anxiously rolled its eyes... [This matter is going to get messier.]

...

A thunderclap-like explosive sound echoed in the sky!

Everyone lifted their heads to look at it... and were left stunned

by what they saw!

Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu were even more stunned than the others!

The Single-Horned Dragon that was 'alive and kicking' a moment ago... had gone limp! Moreover, it was letting out painful wails from its mouth...

A white-robed man was causally carrying it by its tail. This white-robed man stood in the emptiness high up in the sky. However, it seemed as if he was standing on the summit of some mountain, and that there was solid and stable platform under his feet. He gently swayed his hands, and it seemed as if that Single-Horned Dragon – a ninth grade spirit beast with formidable power – was being swung around by him like a horsewhip...

This man had a casual and carefree appearance!

The Single-Horned Dragon cried 'boohoo' sounds from its mouth. The white-robed man spoke-up in a mocking way, "Haven't I only extracted a little bit of your blood essence? Look at your pathetic appearance!"

The Single-Horned Dragon wailed twice. It let out two 'boohoo' sounds. It then hung its head in low spirits... [I accept my misfortune... as decreed by fate.]

Jun Xi Zhu's eyeballs almost popped out as she looked at this scene.

[This man... is so powerful!]

[Is he a Supreme Expert?]

The white-robed man seemed to be finished dealing with this beast. So, he casually tossed it away. However, the Single-Horned Dragon was thrown away at a very high speed... And, it went flying to a distance of thousands of feet!

"I've spared your life!"

The white-robed man said indifferently. Suddenly, he erected his eyebrows and shouted loudly, "I said that I've spared its life! Is it possible that you want to kill it, you bastard?!"

His voice wasn't too loud. In fact, the people who were present there didn't even feel anything. But, the voice had somehow travelled to the west like an artillery shell...

A short and stout man was about to chase after the Single-Horned Dragon over that side. However, he let out a pitiful scream when this happened. His body suddenly fell down on the ground from the mid-air, and went rolling over!

It turned out that the words of that white-robed man had changed into a powerful spiritual energy attack. They had then flown out to a distance of over a dozen kilometres, and had suddenly exploded near the ear of this short and stout person. Consequently, he had listened to the words very clearly. But, these words had left him to suffer an unprecedented jolt!

This level of controlling capability was simply beyond imagination!

The seven apertures of this short and stout man's head had started to bleed by the time he stood up. He also had a big mole on his forehead. So, his present appearance seemed even more terrible than a normal person's would have!

The two people who were following him also became gobsmacked. They hastily stepped forward, "Sixth Master! What happened, Sixth Master?"

The short and stout man revealed an extremely frightful look in his eyes. The look in his eyes flickered with uncertainty as he looked in the direction this voice had come from. He could've gotten that Single-Horned Dragon by simply extending his hand. However, he had no desire to put his hand on it anymore!

"Come over here!" the white-robed man coldly said.

This message also travelled to a distance of over a dozen kilometres through the air to arrive to the front of the short and stout man. The air in front of the short and stout man densely vibrated as a result. And, three words appeared out of nowhere, "Come over here!"

Suddenly, a voice transmitted out of the three words that were written in the air. And, these were the exact-same three words, "Come over here!"

They were full of power and authority that could not be refused! This person obviously possessed the power to dominate the world!

The legs of the short and stout man became so numb that he nearly knelt down. He endured it with difficulty as he said, "Follow me. Be careful... Don't make any irresponsible remarks."

He mumbled in his heart, "Dammit! It seems that I've run into a monster this time... Fu*k! I've never met him once in the Upper Three Heavens, but I ran into him after I arrived in the Middle Three Heavens... Why the fu*k did this have to happen? I've run into such a master now. Do I have no other choice but to acknowledge my bad luck..."

He walked along with his two subordinates, and proceeded towards the direction from where the voice had come. However, he had hung his head in very dispirited manner.

That white-clothed man who was hurriedly rushing here from the north smiled wryly, "You have indeed run into a monster! How can this be good?"

This white-clothed man heard a voice as he was thinking this, "What are you doing there? You also come to me!"

The white-clothed man forced a smile at first. Then, he also rushed over due to the lack of a better option.

Winds rose and clouds scudded in the south as a frantic person's shadow came rushing over from the horizon. The sight of his

incredible momentum made it seem as if the whole sky had arrived along with him!

Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu looked at each other, and felt shocked in their hearts!

These two individuals were already standing on the peak of the Middle Three Heavens! In fact, it could be said that there was no third person who was more powerful than Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu!

However, this white-robed man had appeared at this time. And, he was far more powerful than these two. Moreover, the cultivation of this frantic figure that had arrived wildly a moment ago seemed evenly matched with the white-robed man...

They looked at each other again, but they only saw tranquillity in each other's eyes.

The matter had come to a point that no disaster would occur if they were lucky. But, they would have nowhere to hide if the disaster came for them. It would just happen!

The man who had come from the south was the old man who had been chasing after Mo Qing Wu. He had arrived here as well. He looked at the white-robed man. Both of them stood floating high up in the sky. However, one of them stood a little lower in altitude. Then, their eyes met.

The spirit energy in the atmosphere began to produce dense sounds of collision in the moment their eyes met. Suddenly, the sky seemingly cracked. In fact, it seemed as if a black hole had opened in the sky, and had then begun to expand. The crack then went spreading downwards until it reached the ground. It seemed as if the zone between these two men had gotten divided into two parts!

A crack of undeterminable depth was suddenly split open in the ground with a 'bang' sound! It was three feet wide, and

immeasurably deep! A wave of cold and gloomy wind blew out from the crack. It seemed as if it was coming straight out of hell!

These two had merely glared at each other. However, that had given rise to such an incredible impact!

Chu Yang's heart started to beat loudly at the sight of this.

Monsters!

Real monsters!

Then, Chu Yang looked at the expression on the faces of Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu. And, he became more certain that these two people were Supreme Level Experts!

The Supreme Level was an existence that had been standing on the peak in the Nine Heavens Continent since the ancient times!

No one could possess such incredible power... except for a Supreme Level Expert!

"Why have you come here!" the white-robed man wore a warm smile on his face as he asked. He had lowered his head, and was looking at the people on the ground like a supreme sovereign looks at his subjects. It seemed that he was talking to the people who he had his eyes on. But, he had instead spoken these words to that man who was standing opposite to him in the air.

The spatial crack in the air had already disappeared. A faint stream of energy slowly rose up in the air as he spoke these words. Then, a dense voice suddenly echoed him, "Why have you come here?"

Then, the voice suddenly jumped up. It seemed as if countless people were speaking at the same time... in a chaotic and disorderly manner!

"Why have you come here?!"

"Why have you come here?!"

"Why have you come here?!"

"Have you come here?!"

"You come here?!"

...

Chapter 548: Unexpected Arrival of Supreme Level Experts?

The white-robed man had spoken alone, but it seemed that the entire world was repeating after him. It seemed that everything was complying and coordinating with him. Even the mountains seemed to echo in order to respond to him!

The sounds of booming and rumbling filled the air. Even the snowflakes high up in the sky stopped falling after these words were spoken! Instead, they merely stayed afloat in the air...

The other strange old man grinned high in the sky. He then said, "Why have you come here?"

This voice was very ordinary, but it was filled with arrogance! One spoke first and the other spoke later, but the two voices still collided in the air!

A dull sound of 'bang' was heard. The solid snowflakes in the air crashed down with a 'shua' sound. In fact, they fell on the ground like a snow-wall.

The weight of the accumulated snow in the sky had increased due to abundance of snowflakes because many of them had stayed afloat for some time. However, the snowflakes in the air again went back to falling with their normal speed after this snow-wall fell down.

The bodies of these two men didn't shake even a little bit. They remained unaffected. It was evident that they were evenly matched. One of them had stood high in the air, while the other one a little lower as they confronted each other from a distance.

"I have come to extract a little bit of the blood essence of ninth grade spirit beasts to refine elixirs," the white-robed man softly smiled and said, "Apparently, your cultivation hasn't reduced even after so many years. It seems that the fight a few years later will

make it clear as to who among us is the number one in the world."

"Number one in the world..." the grey-robed man smiled and said as he stood above in the air, "I would've killed you with bare hands if that bastard Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword hadn't injured my meridians. Would you have stood a chance to compete me to become the number one in the world in that case?"

"That's utter nonsense," The white-robed man felt neither offended nor furious. He mildly scolded with a polite, modest, and reasonable attitude, "He injured your meridians during that time. Did he not break my legs too? The difference between the healing times for our injuries wasn't more than a year. So, why are you still bringing up this old topic?"

These two didn't pay attention to what the others would think of them. They were causally talking as if they were chatting about family gossip.

Chu Yang suddenly opened his eyes wide! He felt as if a thunderclap had rumbled in his ears!

[That must be the previous Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword!]

[These two people have fought with the previous Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!]

[Doesn't it mean that these two old guys have been living for more than ten-thousand years? My goodness! What's the cultivation level of these old monsters?]

Chu Yang became alert. [It's not surprising that the Sword Spirit warned me... These two chaps will figure out that I am the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword if I expose it in front of them!]

Chu Yang strictly ordered the Sword Spirit to not move randomly as he thought of it. In fact, he told him to refrain from interrupting him, or getting in touch with him. He also warned the Nine Tribulations Sword to not move heedlessly. In fact, he

ordered everything to stay dormant, and not to freak out by any chance!

These two people were competing for the title of being 'number one in the world'! So, couldn't it be said that the cultivation of these two men was the strongest in the entire Nine Heavens? There was no one who could surpass these two!

They were indeed valiant! No one had expected that they would run into such people in this Northern Wilderness. This was extremely unexpected!

Mo Qing Wu didn't know what the 'Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword' was. However, Jun Xi Zhu, Young Master Yu, Gu Du Xing, and the others were startled even more than Chu Yang. Even the other King Level Experts were no exceptions. Their jaws dropped in fright. In fact, several of them painfully groaned since they had dislocated their jaws.

[These two had fought with the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword ten-thousand years ago! My goodness...]

That grey-robed old man snorted and spoke, "Strangely, that bastard suddenly disappeared. Otherwise, I would've made him pay!"

The white-robed man chuckled. He lowered his head while shaking it, and said, "Ning Tian Ya, you're boasting so shamelessly. You're talking impractically... you're seriously getting on my nerves."

The grey-robed man replied angrily, "Bu Liu Qing, don't you want to take revenge from that sword guy? Or... are you pretending to be magnanimous? How would I have known your true colors you treacherous, murderous, mean, senseless, dirty, filthy bastard?

The white-robed man Bu Liu Qing simply and elegantly shook his head, "Of course, I want to. But, I think that he has either gone

missing... or died. So, what was the use of talking about it over and over if he can't be found? It only made me angry; that's all. It had no other use except for making one angry. Ning Tian Ya, I tell you that you should learn from me. You're so narrow-minded."

He sincerely sighed after he was done saying that. It seemed that he felt pity towards this old rival who had been tangled with him for more than ten-thousand years...

They had been tangled with each other for more than ten-thousand years. So, how could Bu Liu Qing not understand the character of this rival? Moreover, he knew that these words would make his opponent angry. So, he was ready, and was seeking for a good place to have a fight with this old fogy...

However, he hadn't expected that Ning Tian Ya would mischievously laugh and say, "You don't worry about my narrow-mindedness... And, one would only learn nonsense if they follow your suit," he sat down in the air as he said this. Then, he started to look at the snowflakes falling from the sky. He spoke-up after a moment's pause, "Finish your work and get lost from here. I want to bask in the sun in peace."

Bu Liu Qing was stunned by this! [How did this old bastard suddenly change his temperament? This is not how he behaves...]

Bu Liu Qing had been left very confused by his old rival's reply. [Bask in the sun... you have come to the northern wilderness in the Middle Three Heavens to bask in the sun...? So, you think the sun will especially appear for you, old bastard! This place is covered with snow and clouds throughout the year. Where would the sun come from?]

[This old bastard is very bad at telling lies!]

He then saw that a big meat ball was coming over from a faraway distance. It was making a wheezing sound since it was gasping for breath.

This meat-ball approached closer, and one could finally tell that it was that short and stout master. His flat head was pressed in his neck. His potbelly was quivering up and down. His small and short legs were hardly visible. Moreover, they were continuously intertwining as he was running over...

In fact, it seemed as if two chopsticks had been inserted under a watermelon. And then, a smaller melon had been placed on the top of the watermelon.

He came closer. And, it could be seen that his face, his eyes, his nose, and his mouth... all were round. The strangest thing was that he had a big round mole on his forehead...

"Senior... Senior..." The short and stout man had arrived here tumbling the entire way. And, he hadn't dared to use spiritual power in doing so. His brows had gotten beaded with sweat by the time he reached below the white-robed man. He then spoke while gasping for breath, "I – Xiao Chang Feng of Xiao Clan – pay respect to the senior."

This short and stout man had taken such a creative, yet confident and easy name. Everyone almost burst into laughter when they heard this. But, no one dared to laugh... [Xiao Chang Feng of Xiao Clan! Does his name genuinely mean 'Strong Wind'...]

[A man of Xiao Clan – one of the nine Great Ruling Clans of the Upper Three Heavens!]

The arrival of a person from the Nine Great Ruling Clans of the Upper Three Heavens in the Middle Three Heavens was similar to the arrival of an Imperial Minister! How could anyone dare to offend him?

The white-robed man was somewhat startled as he looked at this short and stout man. He shook his head after a long while. Then, he gently scolded, "Motherfu*ker. It's such a waste that someone like you has such a creative and exquisite name..."

"Yes. Yes." Xiao Chang Feng bowed his short and stout body. He wiped the sweat from his face and said, "It is my fault. I shouldn't insult such a fine name... I will go back to my clan, and report to the Clan Lord. I will get my name changed!"

"Change it to Xiao Fat Pig!" Bu Liu Qing insipidly suggested.

"Many thanks to the senior for bestowing this name upon me! I will be called 'Xiao Fat Pig' from today onwards!" Unexpectedly, Xiao Chang Feng excitedly turned his head and shouted, "Did you hear it? Senior has changed my name. Call me 'Xiao Fat Pig' from now on, okay?"

The short and stout man had heard the words of the white-robed Bu Liu Qing. He obviously knew that this white-robed man was the topmost personality of the Nine Heavens! So, how could he dare to disrespect this man in any way? He didn't even feel mocked by the words of the white-robed man. In fact, he would've delightedly gorged himself on dog-shit if this white-robed man had asked him to do so!

He wouldn't have dared to hesitate!

Everyone was dumbstruck!

[Is he genuinely from the Nine Great Ruling Aristocratic Clans of the Upper Three Heavens? How can he be this spineless?!]

Only Young Master Yu stared at this 'Xiao Fat Pig' with a complex look in his eyes. [This Xiao Fat Pig can't be taken lightly. He's a treacherous and sinister man. He changed his attitude the moment he noticed that a very powerful expert is here. He didn't even hesitate to become soft-spoken and submissive for the sake of his survival!]

However, it was somewhat certain that everyone present here would have to suffer from the violent treachery of this 'Xiao Fat Pig' once Bu Liu Qing had left the place! In fact, they would be killed to prevent the leakage of this incident!

This treacherous man wouldn't leave these people alive. Else, they could go and publicize that he had shamelessly bowed his head and bent his knee. Then, the world would know that he had acted servilely without having any trace of shame!

Bu Liu Qing looked at him with some disgust and said, "You wait on one side for now!"

Then, Bu Liu Qing turned his head and looked at Jun Xi Zhu. Then, he spoke-up with a sweet smile, "Little girl, I know that you have obtained the blood essence of a ninth grade spirit beast. But, this old man wants to refine elixirs. So, I urgently need a large amount of blood essence. Would you be willing to part with that? Don't worry. I will give you a fair deal!"

Jun Xi Zhu hesitated. She had contradictory thoughts in her heart. She struggled for a good while, and finally made up her mind. Then, she looked up and replied, "You are omnipotent, Senior. So, I assume that you can also see that I have arrived at the bottleneck. And, I need blood essence of a ninth grade spirit beast to break through it. I am drooling with desire for the promise that the Senior has made... but... I'm afraid that I can't accept it."

Chu Yang couldn't help but smack his lips.

[This woman is very brave!]

[A Supreme Level Expert wants something that she has. And, she rejected to his face without even beating around the bush...]

Bu Liu Qing hadn't anticipated that Jun Xi Zhu would reject his request. In fact, he had thought that he would receive the blood essence the moment he would say those words. In fact, he had already started thinking about what he should give to Jun Xi Zhu as compensation. But, he hadn't expected that she would throw such harsh words of rejection at him.

"You mean... you're refusing me?" Bu Liu Qing puckered up his brows. The color of his face slightly changed. This was somewhat

unbelievable for him... So, he asked this to confirm.

Jun Xi Zhu nodded and replied, "Yes, this junior is declining!"

She smiled and added, "This junior doesn't know why so many ninth grade spirit beasts have appeared in the northern wilderness... But, I think it has something to do with you, senior. I guess the senior needs the blood essence of these ninth grade spirit beasts. And so, these ninth grade spirit beasts have appeared."

Bu Liu Qing slightly nodded. He squinted and said, "You're right!"

"This junior doesn't know what the consequences of refusing the senior would be..." Jun Xi Zhu lifted her head and resolutely said, "And, I also know that it's you who has attracted these spirit beasts here. But, I wouldn't be able to advance in my whole life if I miss this opportunity!"

She solemnly continued, "Please Senior, try to understand and forgive me."

Young Master Yu faintly smiled. He took a step forward and stood alongside her. He didn't have the least bit of fear in his sharp eyes as he looked up to Bu Liu Qing. Young Master Yu's strength was far too inferior. However, he had displayed such a confidence at this moment that it seemed as if he had the potential to match Bu Liu Qing.

[I'm inferior to you. You're a Supreme Level Expert... But, I am ready to go for a war with you if it comes to that!]

...

Chapter 549: The Anger of Supreme!

Jun Xi Zhu was startled. She shouted, "Little Yu, step back!"

Young Master Yu smiled faintly. But, he didn't speak anything. His blue robe fluttered in the air as he stationed himself in front of her.

Xiao Chang Feng angrily spoke-up, "Nonsense! The Senior wants the blood essence of spirit beast you have in your possession. He's giving you face since you possess it! You filthy woman, you fail to appreciate the Senior's kindness!"

He took a step forward... as if to attack her!

Young Master Yu sneered. He insipidly spoke-up before Xiao Chang Feng could step further, "You fat pig, this Young Master guarantees you that you will die in front of us if you dare to take another step!"

Xiao Chang Feng was startled by this. He looked at Young Master Yu with a gloomy and cold expression in his eyes. He was about to scold Young Master Yu loudly. But, a strong energy suddenly came down from the sky. It grabbed Xiao Fat Pig by the nape, and threw him away. A hundred or so continuous slaps were struck on his face with 'bang''bang' and 'smack''smack' sounds until his somewhat pig-looking head started to look exactly like a pig's head.

However, he could only hear Bu Liu Qing say, "Why are you speaking out of turn in my matter? Don't you have any manners... you despicable and shameless dwarf melon? I will pull out your tongue if you dare to speak another word!"

Xiao Chang Feng kept quiet out of fear. He stood still there, and lowered his head. A strange light of maliciousness had also flashed in his eyes, but he didn't dare to let anyone see that.

A loud 'ha-ha' laughing sound was heard from the sky, "Bu Liu Qing! You need to grow up. There are so many ninth grade spirit

beasts here. It would be enough for you even if you casually catch a few of them. But, you fu*king want to snatch this little girl's thing. Don't you have any shame?"

Bu Liu Qing coldly snorted when he heard this. However, he didn't reply. He only saw that Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu didn't have any fear in their body language. Instead, they stood perfectly straight, and didn't appear to be intimidated.

"Never mind!" Bu Liu Qing coldly snorted and said, "I won't force you. I mustn't let others say that I bullied the weak. It won't be good for my reputation."

Bu Liu Qing was about to go after saying this. After all, he had opened his mouth... only to face rejection despite having such a high status. He felt humiliated as a result. And, he didn't wish to stay here any longer...

Energy fluctuations appeared in the air at this moment, and a white-clothed man came floating from the sky. A white shadow appeared and arrived in the area. He gently bowed in cultured and refined manner, "Senior, receive my greetings. I have answered your summons, and have come here to visit you. I am glad to see that Senior Bu and Senior Ning are safe and sound!"

Bu Liu Qing coldly snorted. He rolled his eyes and said, "Do you Law Enforcers also need ninth grade spirit beast? Why have you come here?"

The white-clothed man replied with a smile, "No. However, it's this... Brother Xiao. He has violated the rules of the Law Enforcement. He has arrived in the Middle Three Heavens for his selfish interests. So, I didn't have any other choice but to come here and observe."

He paused for a while and continued, "And, as for the ninth grade spirit beasts... I won't dare to make one move."

Bu Liu Qing coldly snorted. He glared at Xiao Chang Feng and

said, "This fatty is very attractive. He has even attracted the Law Enforcers of the Nine Heavens to track him."

Xiao Chang Feng had already been quiet out of fear. He was even sweating profusely. He himself didn't know that the Law Enforcers of the Nine Heavens were following after him.

Mo Qing Wu had hidden behind Chu Yang. However, she saw Xiao Chang Feng's appearance at this time. He was in a distressed situation since he was angry, but he wasn't in a position to speak out. Moreover, he had lowered his head. So, his body was looking like a ball at the moment. And, Mo Qing Wu felt that it was very laughable. So, she moved closer to Chu Yang's ear and whispered, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, this dwarf looks very funny, hee-hee..."

She had spoken these words in an extremely lowered voice. In fact, even Chu Yang had also heard them very vaguely!

However, Xiao Chang Feng was on God knows what cultivation level... He heard each word of Mo Qing Wu's loud and clear. And, he became very angry as a result. He looked towards Mo Qing Wu with a sinister and cold look. And, he thought, [Wait for these two men to leave. I will teach you a lesson, little girl.]

The little thing in Mo Qing Wu's pocket also heard Mo Qing Wu's words. And, it couldn't help but become curious in its heart. So, it peeked half of its head out from the pocket because it secretly wanted to take a look at this dwarf...

Xiao Chang Feng was already looking at her. So, he saw the small beastly head in Mo Qing Wu's pocket even though it had drawn back in a flash.

[Can it be... the Wind Fox?]

[Wouldn't my purpose be fulfilled if I obtain this thing?] He turned his eyes away, and lowered his head as this thought came to his mind.

"You may leave!" Bu Liu Qing looked at Xiao Chang Feng. He then

indifferently said, "Don't think that I don't understand the intentions in your heart. So, quickly get lost!"

Xiao Chang Feng's plumy body shivered. He said, "I will sincerely obey the Senior's order." He didn't even dare to turn his eyes as he said, "It's just that there are... orders from my clan to arrest this little girl. So, this junior wants to take her along. Please Senior, help me fulfil my purpose."

He had pointed towards Mo Qing Wu while speaking.

Chu Yang became angry the moment he heard this! He stepped forward. However, he saw Bu Liu Qing puckering up his brows before he could speak anything. The old man then looked at Xiao Chang Feng, "Does your clan wish you to arrest this little girl and go back?"

"Yes." Xiao Chang Feng respectfully replied, "Senior, please help me for the honor of the friendship you had with my ancestor-grandfather Xiao Chen Yu."

The Xiao Chen Yu he had talked about was the founder of the Xiao Clan – one of the Nine Great Aristocratic Clans! He had been friends with Bu Liu Qing in those days. But, he had gone missing after some time.

Bu Liu Qing had suddenly heard the name of an old friend from ten-thousand years ago. So, he couldn't help but feel nostalgic in his mind. Apparently, the old days from ten-thousand years ago had come to the present time in his mind. He couldn't help but heave a deep sigh and said, "Morning rain and evening sun don't regret to clash. Autumn leaves and spring waves face the wind together. Seasons keep changing, and time flies by before one realises... ha-ha, Ten-thousand years... very well, this old man agrees to help you!"

Xiao Chang Feng couldn't help but feel ecstatic in his heart, "Thank you very much, Senior!"

Bu Liu Qing coldly snorted and said, "However, what you really want is that Wind Fox in her pocket, right? He-he... but, I will help you because you mentioned the name of a friend from ten-thousand years ago. It has incited my mood. I'm helping you. But, that doesn't mean that I will not punish you! You took me for a fool! Wouldn't I lose face if everyone in the world thinks that I'm a fool...?"

He angrily snorted while he said this. His 'humph' went up in the sky like a giant mallet, and arrived near Xiao Chang Feng's left shoulder. And then, the force of this sound suddenly shattered that man's shoulder. A tragic and sharp sound resonated as a result. Xiao Chang Feng's complexion became deathly white. He shivered and said, "Thanks a lot for the lesson, Senior!"

"Go ahead," Bu Liu Qing coldly said.

Xiao Chang Feng turned his head and set forth. He was a Monarch Level Expert. So, these handfuls of King Level Experts were nothing in his eyes even though his arms had been crippled a moment ago.

Clang clang clang!

Gu Du Xing, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo took their swords out of their sheaths. Suddenly, the snow that filled the sky began to seem chilling. Then, a vigorous and dense imposing aura broke out. It had happened because Dong Wu Shang had slowly pulled out his Black Saber!

Gu Du Xing raised his eyebrows. He had sword-like sharp eyebrows. His vision was also as sharp as a sword. His tall and straight body resembled a sword as well. And, the long sword in his hand seemed to have changed into an inseparable body-part of his'. It even emitted out a cold 'killing intention'. Moreover, he had locked his killing intention on Xiao Chang Feng!

Dong Wu Shang raised his eyebrows, and it seemed as if two precious sabers had been drawn out of their sheaths. His gaze

resembled two slash of throwing knives as they'd criss-cross and fly out. His entire personality seemed to have changed into a saber that was ready to chop down the whole world. His body was slightly bent, but it seemed similar to that of leopard which was ready to hunt down its prey. He had also locked his killing intention on Xiao Chang Feng.

Chu Yang took a step forward, and stood in front of Mo Qing Wu. He clasped his hands behind his back, and looked unyieldingly at Xiao Chang Feng. The Sword Spirit had received Chu Yang's instructions with rapt attention — He was to take control over Chu Yang's body. Then, he must perform all sixteen moves of the Nine Tribulations Sword in one go to kill this disgusting dwarf!

He mustn't hesitate... even if his true identity would be exposed in front of these two Supreme Level Experts while doing so!

Bu Liu Qing became surprised when he saw this. He couldn't help but mutter, "Five top-notch foundations! They are unyielding and brave. What a pity..." It was evident that he didn't believe Chu Yang and the others to be a match for Xiao Chang Feng. But, he had already made a commitment. So, he couldn't go back on his word...

Xiao Chang Feng ferociously shouted, "Attack." And, he and his subordinates set into action.

"Fu*k your attack!" a voice suddenly transmitted down from the sky. And, the voice then shouted, "Fat pig! I dare you to put a finger of yours on this little girl. Why don't you try?!"

However, this sound was a bit late. Xiao Chang Feng had already thrown his stout body over. He wanted to take the little girl, and he had no intention of turning back.

In fact, no man would have worried about this action if they were in his place! It was because... Bu Liu Xing had promised to help him. And, who could dare to oppose his promise? Therefore, Xiao Chang Feng hadn't thought that this incident could bring any

complications.

He obviously knew that Ning Tian Ya was also present there. But... Bu Liu Xing had promised to help him. So, wouldn't Ning Tian Ya show respect towards his commitment? He obviously must! Anyone in Ning Tian Ya's place would've done it!

Therefore, he had swiftly thrown himself at them with a force as powerful as that of a thunderbolt!

However, so had his tragedy...

He didn't expect that Ning Tian Ya didn't care about giving face to Bu Liu Qing in this instance!

Ning Tian Yan had been waiting high up in the sky. He hadn't come down since he had feared the exposition of his true purpose. He obviously knew how precious the 'Heavenly Yin Body, and Innate Spirit Meridian' was! He had feared that Bu Liu Qing would've noticed Mo Qing Wu's aptitude if his goal were to get exposed. Then, his rival would've tried to snatch her away as his own apprentice...

It was because these two had been living on the principle of 'better to have nothing than substandard choices' even though they had lived for so many years. So, they hadn't taken any disciples. But, a matter had always gnawed at their minds... [The things that I have learned all my life wouldn't be passed on to anyone? I will leave the world one day. Would these earth-shaking skills only remain in the legends?]

Ning Tian Ya knew it for a fact that he would've tried to snatch her away if he were to be in Bu Liu Qing's place.

Therefore, he hadn't wanted to act blindly without thinking. After all, everything would be fine as long as he would be able to drag Bu Liu Qing away from here!

Who could have thought that Bu Liu Qing would decide to take this fatty's side... after seeing that he might lose face if he didn't!

Moreover, this fatty had even planned to attack Mo Qing Wu!

Ning Tian Ya's anger suddenly became so intense that it seemed as if his belly would explode. He would have bitten this fatty if he could eat human-flesh. In fact, he would've chewed his flesh... and would've gulped it down!

[Fu*k it! This wretched dwarf deserves to be killed with a shit-stirring stick!]

How could Ning Tian Ya remain calm after seeing that this fatty was plunging towards his potential apprentice? He had even shouted to make the short and stout man stop. However, it hadn't had any effect on this guy?

Anger suddenly rose in Ning Tian Ya's heart. In fact, it instantly rushed towards his guts!

Therefore, he immediately set into action.

Xiao Chang Feng was about to catch Mo Qing Wu, but Gu Du Xing and the others arrived with their weapons prepared... When...

Xiao Chang Feng's body suddenly disappeared.

It could be seen that a grey-robed old man had lifted Xiao Chang Feng in the air with one hand. Then, he slapped him thrice with his other hand with three 'bang' sounds, "Were the words of this old man not audible enough?"

...

Chapter 550: Stroke of Luck!

Xiao Chang Feng was left confused and disoriented by this sudden change. He had been scared out of his wits. In fact, his entire body had turned ice-cold. [I somehow handled Bu Liu Qing. So, why is Ning Tian Ya troubling me now? I am finished this time...]

"Senior, please spare my life..." Xiao Chang Feng was about to beg for forgiveness. But, Ning Tian Ya threw him up. Then, he grabbed his ankle, and suddenly smashed him on a big boulder like a meteoric hammer. Then, he angrily cussed, "Did you think that this old man wouldn't dare to touch you because you have Bu Liu Qing's support?!"

Xiao Chang Feng only got the time to say half of the sentence, "... Please Senior, I beg you to reconsider. Give face to my Xiao Clan..." And, he was swung again onto that big rock. The flesh of his body got smashed and scattered before he could speak the second half of the sentence...

"I should reconsider because you are from the Xiao Clan? ... because you are surnamed Xiao? You are just a bastard. Everyone in the Nine Great Ruling Clans of the Upper Three Heavens has bastards like you. See... this old man has smashed you!" the old man Ning Tian Ya was abusing him while recounting this argument. He smashed Xiao Chang Feng on the stone a third time. And, Xiao Chang Feng's body was changed into minced meat as a result. Only a smelly foot was left intact in Ning Tian Ya's hand.

Ning Tian Ya threw away that smelly foot with a 'bang'. However, he was still angry, "He thought that he could threaten me with the name of one of the Nine Great Ruling Clan? This world is full of crazies."

Then, Ning Tian Ya extended his hands and furiously shouted, "Die!"

Two sharp and strong energies were issued from his hands with loud rumble. The remaining two individuals of the Xiao Clan didn't get enough time to utter a voice or beg for mercy. They both exploded like firecrackers with loud 'bang' sounds.

Bu Liu Qing squinted with mysterious look, [This Ning Tian Ya has a habit of making big fuss in day to day life. But, he has never shown such fury before... So, why now?]

However, he then saw Ning Tian Ya standing like a shield in front of the little girl. And, he couldn't help but think, [Does it have something to do with this little girl?]

He then saw Ning Tian Ya wave his hand and address the Law Enforcer of the Nine Heavens, "Well, you don't have to settle the matter now. Your responsibility was to observe this dwarf. And, he's dead now. So, you can return to the Upper Three Heavens."

He had shouted in such an arrogant and bossy manner that it seemed as if he was the boss of the Law Enforcers.

"Yes. I take my leave now." The white-clothed man forced a smile and bowed towards both of them in greeting. Then, he turned around and left. He thought, [The Xiao Clan will have no choice but to suffer this grievance without being able to speak out. Xiao Chang Feng died by the hands of Ning Tian Ya. So, the Xiao Clan wouldn't dare to bring this up even if they would want to. They would only have to pinch their noses and make peace with this...]

[If they come to deal with Ning Tian Ya... Ahm Ahm...] the white-clothed man thought. [The Xiao Clan still isn't that powerful... They could perhaps ask several ancestors to come and besiege this old man... However, their chances of success wouldn't be too high in that case either.]

[Let it be. What do I have to do with this matter? I will only bring this news to the clan and my work here would be done...]

Thus, the white-clothed man left...

Ning Tian Ya stood upright before Mo Qing Wu. He didn't pay attention to the grateful expressions of Gu Du Xing and the others. He then said, "You also go." He had spoken these words to Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu. Then, he added, "Little girl, you're surnamed Jun, right?"

Jun Xi Zhu replied, "Yes... how do you know, Senior...?"

"Um, you're the descendant of the Jun Clan. Um um," Ning Tian Yu waved his hand, "Leave now. And, tell that old ancestor of yours that Ning Tian Ya wants to drink wine with him."

Jun Xi Zhu remained silent. She wanted to say, [I don't know where that legendary old ancestor is at present. Also, the Jun Clan had ceased to exist a long time ago.] These thoughts revolved in her mind. But, she swallowed them back. She had a feeling that she would be in a great trouble if she were to speak this out aloud. And, Jun Xi Zhu didn't like this feeling. So, she respectfully and sincerely bowed and said, "This junior takes her leave. I will surely relay your message if I meet my old ancestor."

She nodded towards Chu Yang to greet him. Then, she said something to Young Master Yu, and they left along with the subordinates of Dark Bamboo.

"You haven't left yet?" Ning Tian Ya had cleared all the obstacles in an unshakable manner. So, he finally addressed Bu Liu Qing, "Leave quickly. I will look for you to fight when the time comes."

Bu Liu Qing coldly snorted. He looked at his old rival in a very amused manner and replied, "Why do you want to wait? We can have the fight right now if you want! Perhaps... we should both go to the Wind and Thunder Arena to have a fight now?"

"I don't have the time for that right now," Ning Tian Ya responded with no trace of politeness, "You leave quickly." Instead, he continuously urged Bu Liu Qing to leave.

However, the more he urged... the more suspicious Bu Liu Qing

became! He obviously didn't leave either. Instead, he said, "You don't have time, you say? How come I don't see you doing anything?"

"I have some matter to deal with," Ning Tian Ya shouted back.

Bu Liu Qing stroked his smooth chin with a look of contemplation in his eyes as he said, "Old Ning, don't tell me that you have taken fancy to these five youngsters? These five young guys have a very strong foundation to be honest. Especially, the one next to you... who uses the saber, and this one who uses the sword... they are god-gifted geniuses! Um... do you want to take them as your disciples?"

Gu Du Xing and the others became nervous as soon as he said these words. [Are we going to be received as disciples of a Supreme Level Expert?]

The eyes of Luo Ke di and Ji Mo lit up. They were visibly eager to give it a try. However, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang looked at each other, and saw strong determination in each other's eyes.

"You're talking nonsense!" Ning Tian Ya's heartbeats fastened. He said, "I am not looking at these five kids in that way."

"Ha-ha... these two kids wouldn't go with you even if you were!" Bu Liu Qing laughed mischievously, "Unless you ask for those other two swords guys as well."

Ning Tian Ya was startled since he had sensed that there was some special meaning to Bu Liu Qing's words. He turned his head and looked towards Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang. He sized them up thoroughly, and heaved a sigh. He then said, "You're right. They won't follow anyone!"

Chu Yang was also somewhat puzzled by this. So, he asked, "Senior, where do these words stem from?" It was true that Chu Yang didn't wish to separate from his brothers. But, he also knew that this was an enormous opportunity for them. The future

progress of Gu Du Xing and the others would be limitless if these two Supreme Level Experts decided to take them as their disciples. Moreover, it would take less time than usual.

Ning Tian Ya moved his eyes to Chu Yang and said, "Kid, it's obvious that you can't see it with your strength of vision! These two kids have the bones of swords and the blood of saber in their bodies. They don't have any special physiques of God-gifted geniuses. But, they possess embryonic form of great scholars of Sword and Saber respectively. They can follow us, and they can practice our martial arts. However, they would have no other choice but to cripple themselves in the process!"

He continued in an indifferent manner, "People like them only fight with sword and saber in the Jianghu. They must go through the important experiences of life and death. And, they will continue to walk on their own roads to becoming great scholars as long as they don't die!"

Bu Liu Qing chuckled in the sky, "There have been many of such people since the ancient times. But, only a few have been able to become great experts at the end! It's because the path is full of thorns. There are grave dangers on every step!"

"Embryonic form of great scholars...!" Chu Yang's eyes flashed as he looked at his two brothers. He couldn't help but feel proud in his heart.

"As for the other two... there's nothing special to point out," Ning Tian Ya looked at Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo from the corner of his eyes, "These two are only glib-tongued. They are fickle-minded. No one can keep their hands on these fickle-minded persons. They are two big slicks... they are lazy from head to toe. Anyone who'd take them as a disciple would die from anger sooner or later... even a Supreme Expert..."

Bu Liu Qing laughed out loud in the sky. He then approvingly said, "That's right. The aptitude of these two kids isn't good either.

Their foundation is also somewhat stereotypical. And, they won't be able to change this unless they work hard. They aren't the 'good disciple' material..."

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo's faces suddenly turned black. They were unconvinced, and couldn't accept this in their hearts. [We two can't attain such achievements? Huh... one would die from anger because of us... We two are no match for you right now. But, we would've beaten you two bastards to death if we had been strong enough to fight with you. And, we would've done it right here and right now. Why choose for dying from anger? Wouldn't that be too slow?]

[Foundation is also somewhat stereotypical? We won't be able to change this unless we work hard...? Then, we shall do the impossible!]

That feeling of revere towards these two Supreme Level Experts vanished like smoke in thin air from the hearts of Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo. They straightened their backs, and raised their heads. In fact, they had tilted their heads to look at one side since a feeling of rebelliousness had started to surge within them.

[You say that the two of us can't accomplish anything? We will accomplish it first. And then, we will make you look at our accomplishments. Motherfu*kers! We will make the whole world realize that two Supreme Level Experts... can also misjudge people! You two old bastards! Dammit, pooh!]

Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tain Ya looked at each other.

Chu Yang pondered for a while. However, he had lowered his head because he didn't want Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo to notice that look of gratitude in his eyes. After all, he was very thankful to Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya!

Chu Yang had always been worried about Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Rui Bu Tong. The foundations of these three were on an upper level, but hadn't been able to reach to the top by any mean. But,

Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing had incredible aptitudes. In fact, their aptitudes simply couldn't be challenged!

These brothers seemed to be equally matched at present. They didn't have too much difference. But, these three would certainly be left far behind when their martial powers would reach a profound level. And, no one would be able to help them in catching up. In fact, even Chu Yang wouldn't be able to keep them at the same pace... even if he were to use the Nine Tribulation Pill for continuous upgradations. Also, using too many elixirs could cause harm to them...

Rui Bu Tong was still a little stronger. But, Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo were very lazy by nature. Moreover, they belonged to the category of playboys. Also, they were the type of people who didn't have any goals in life; they'd only eat recklessly and wait for death. Chu Yang had always wanted to change them. But, he didn't know how to go about it.

However, these two Supreme Experts had 'incidentally' turned them to the direction of work hard for their entire life! In fact, they had changed them from the root to the top. These few words were seemingly insignificant, but their impact had been incomparable!

The impact of these words would've been entirely different if they had come from the mouth of someone else.

For example... Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di would've held a life-long grudge if these words of Ning Tian Ya and Bu Liu Qing had been spoken by Xie Dan Qiong or Ao Xie Yun instead. It was because it would've been their contempt towards others' jealousy. In fact, these two would've come to have a thorn in their hearts if Chu Yang had spoken these words... [Does it mean that we aren't good enough?] Therefore, Chu Yang would never say such a thing.

However, these words had come from the mouths of Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya. So, these words had become like 'the final

word'. Consequently, these words had aroused a strange fighting spirit inside Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di that could make them soar to the heavens!

Now, Ning Tian Ya and Bu Liu Qing looked at Chu Yang and shook their heads. They were somewhat confused. It was because they couldn't see through... the physique of this youth!

[It's obviously a very wasteful foundation. But, it also has too much uncertainty... What's all this about?]

However, Bu Liu Qing moved his vision away after he had looked at Chu Yang for a while. Then, he spoke-up with a smile, "Ning Tian Ya, step aside. I want to take a look at that little girl behind you."

Ning Tian Ya jumped as if he had been stung by a scorpion on the buttocks, "Why?"

In fact, he had become mad and anxious in his heart, [I knew that this wasn't going to work if this bastard stayed here instead of leaving...]

...

Chapter 551: I've Decided to Receive this Apprentice!

Ning Tian Ya became very gloomy. He had constantly been hoping for Bu Liu Qing to hurry up and leave. However, Bu Liu Qing had continued to chat with him here instead. It had to be mentioned that these two had maintained friendly relations for ten-thousand years. And, Bu Liu Qing had asked him to step aside at this instance. So, how could Ning Tian Ya ignore on the face of the request?

Bu Liu Qing had even spoken a few sentences of instructions to these kids in passing. And, Ning Tian Ya could clearly see that these kids were very concerned about his little apprentice. It could even be said that Ning Tian Ya had genuinely appreciated Bu Liu Qing's concern.

However, Bu Liu Qing had suddenly mentioned that he wanted to take a look at his little apprentice. How could this turn out to be good?!

Ning Tian Ya had blocked away Mo Qing Wu from Bu Liu Qing's sight. In fact, Ning Tian Ya would instantly block her whenever Bu Liu Qing would try to sneakily take a peek on the little girl out of curiosity. But why was Ning Tian Ya doing this? Why was he trying to prevent Bu Liu Qing from observing this girl?

[You're trying so hard. Do you want to take a look that badly? Crap! Do you think it will be that simple for you to take a look at her? Do you think it's that easy? But, what happens if you aren't able to take your eyes off her?]

He firmly rejected!

A smiling expression flashed through the eyes of Bu Liu Qing. He had intentionally mentioned about the topic of taking these kids as disciples. It was because he had wanted to see Ning Tian Ya's

reaction.

And, this old fogy had immediately become anxious as per Bu Liu Qing's expectations!

[Humph! Isn't it obvious that he has taken a fancy to this little girl?]

[But... what does this girl have? Why is this old bastard using tricks to keep her away? You think I can't see?] Bu Liu Qing became more curious.

[I must have a look!]

"I won't snatch your disciple from you. So, what are you afraid of if I only take a look?" Bu Liu Qing spoke-up in an annoyed tone. Then, he sighed and continued, "Only our disciples will continue the dispute between the two of us once we've left this world. The disciples of Chen Feng and Liu Yun had also fought for the reputation of their masters. But, how can I take a disciple with confidence if I don't assess your disciple first?"

"Well..." Ning Tian Ya had been cornered into a dilemma. He battled with conflicting notions in his head for a while. Then, he eventually asked, "You genuinely won't try to snatch my disciple from me?"

Bu Liu Qing became enraged and annoyed when he heard this. So, he retorted, "You old bastard! You can be very narrow-minded in certain situations. I – Bu Liu Qing – am a reputed man of the Nine Heavens. Why would I fight over a classless case concerning an apprentice?"

Chu Yang was anxious as well as happy in his heart... [I see... So, this Supreme Level Expert had a taken a fancy towards Mo Qing Wu.] However, what worried him was – [I won't be able to see Mo Qing Wu for a long time if he takes her away.] But, what made him happy was – [Mo Qing Wu will get instant success.]

Ning Tian Ya eventually stepped aside with reluctance, and

revealed the little girl he had been hiding behind his body. But, he still didn't feel relieved in his heart. So, he said, "We have reached an agreement. You won't snatch her from me!"

Bu Liu Qing indifferently nodded, "Okay, I won't snatch... eh?!"

His eyes suddenly lit up. He emitted two completely substantive white lights from his eyes. Then, he exclaimed softly, "Icy Muscles Jade Bone?" as he rushed down from mid-air with a 'shua' sound.

However, Mo Qing Wu hadn't been able to help herself from tightly grabbing onto Chu Yang's lapel when she had heard these two seemingly having argument over her. Therefore, only a small section of her fairer-than-snow wrist was left exposed to Bu Liu Qing's vision as a result.

And, Bu Liu Qing's eyes had fallen on that wrist as a result. And, this had left him dumbstruck!

Ning Tian Ya's complexion changed. He took two steps closer to him and warned, "You have given your word... that you won't snatch her from me."

Bu Liu Qing ogled at Mo Qing Wu's body as these words unconsciously came out of his mouth, "Are you kidding me...? She doesn't just have the Icy Muscles Jade Bone... She possesses the Heavenly Yin Body too? Sss! And, she also has Innate Spirit Meridians..."

Bu Liu Qing finally discovered something when he felt the changes in the spirit energy around Mo Qing Wu's body. He sucked in cold air with a hissing sound since he had been startled out of his senses.

A good while passed. Then, Bu Liu Qing suddenly looked up and burst into loud laughter.

[It's not surprising that this old bastard Ning Tian Ya was hiding her, and wasn't letting me have a look. She's such a treasure! He he, Ning Tian Ya... you want to keep such a treasure to yourself?

How cheap can one be!]

"You... why are you laughing?" Ning Tian Ya shot him a glance of vigilance. He gritted his teeth and said, "Old bastard, you said that you won't snatch her from me."

"I have decided to take this disciple!" Bu Liu Qing's eyes glistened as he announced. He had spoken this out in a resolute and decisive manner! Then, he said in a soft voice, "Little girl, he-he, do you accept me as your teacher? This teacher of yours is very powerful; he's the number-one in the world! Accept me as your teacher, and this title –'number-one in the world' will be yours in time!"

Ning Tian Ya almost vomited blood. He angrily said, "Bu Liu Qing! You've given your word. Are your words are as good as nonsense?" He firmly stared at his old rival. A mountain of anger had started to bubble up in him, "You promised that you won't snatch her!"

Bu Liu Qing rolled his eyes and replied, "Do you have so much faith in what I say?"

Ning Tian Ya staggered in anger when he heard this. And, his response sounded similar to the sound of blood being vomited out, "You are... very... shameless! Bu Liu Qing, how can you be so shameless?!"

Bu Liu Qing rubbed his hands together. He also felt a little embarrassed as he said, "Old Ning, you can't blame me for this... how would I know that the person you picked has Icy Muscles Jade Bone of the highest quality? Moreover, she has the Heavenly Yin Body? Also, she has the Innate Spirit Meridians! That's an immortal physique...? I said that I won't fight with you over her. But... what kind of man would I be if I don't fight with you over such a rare talent?"

Ning Tian Ya's body trembled with anger, "You had said that yourself...! How can you say this so shamelessly?"

However, Bu Liu Qing replied in cultured and refined manner, "Old Ning, don't mind me. Both of us are ten-thousand years old. Anger doesn't suit us. It's bad for our health... you tell me... what are your conditions to let me take this disciple?"

"I don't have any conditions!" Ning Tian Ya bellowed.

"I will give you the seed of a ten-thousand-years-old Snow Lotus Herb! I will also give you the Heavenly Armament 'Mysterious Soul'! I will give you the Nine Heavens Green Grass. What do you say?" Bu Liu Qing offered with a smile.

"You take those things... to your grave with you!" Ning Tian Ya became furious, "How can I let you snatch my disciple?"

"I will acknowledge you as 'Number-one in the world'! I will proclaim you as the strongest expert, okay?" Bu Liu Qing said, "I will do it tomorrow. I will make an announcement in the Upper Three Heavens that Ning Tian Ya is the number-one expert in the world. I will also mention that I fell into a difficult situation while fighting with you. So, I had to escape from the fight. Is it good enough?"

Bu Liu Qing added with a lot of sincerity, "Old Ning, I am a very sincere man... very sincere! I will no longer have the same reputation. I will no longer have the same honor. You can't say that this sacrifice would be small..."

Ning Tian Ya spat out saliva with a 'bah' sound. His face had turned red in anger, "You have the reputation and face of a bird. You broke your promise a moment ago! And, you're still bragging about your reputation and your face..."

He took two heavy breaths before he continued in a loud voice, "I used to think that you have a character. But, it seems to be a grave mistake. I was simply blind! Your reputation and face are inferior to the hair of my feet!"

Bu Liu Qing's complexion gradually changed. He coldly said, "Old

Ning, let's talk straightforwardly. Would you let me take this disciple or not? How do I make you agree to let me take her?"

Ning Tian Ya firmly replied, "Over my corpse!"

"You seriously won't let me take her?" the expression in Bu Liu Qing's eyes had become increasingly dangerous.

"I won't let you take her... no matter what happens!" Ning Tian Ya gasped for breath.

"You and I will become enemies forever if you don't let me have her today!" Bu Liu Qing became somewhat anxious.

"When were we friends?" Ning Tian Ya sneered. He then added in disdain, "How come you still don't know?"

Chu Yang and the others were watching these two Supreme Experts quarrelling. And, they were somewhat left to stare like fools.

Chu Yang suddenly had a realization. So, he moved closer to Mo Qing Wu's ear and whispered, "These two want to receive you as their disciple..."

Mo Qing Wu pitifully whispered in reply, "But, I don't want to be their disciple... I don't want to leave you... Elder Brother Chu Yang..."

Mo Qing Wu's voice was very low. But, the cultivation level of these two old fogies was exceptionally high. How would they not have heard it?

They immediately turned their heads, and looked towards the cute little girl.

Chu Yang's purpose was obviously to take the maximum benefit out of the situation. He had seen that these two old guys had heard Mo Qing Wu. So, he didn't say anything further. He only stood to one side with a smile on his face.

The more fiercely they would strive to win the argument... the

more benefits the cute little girl would get.

The cute little girl pouted her lips. Then, she made a sad face. The rim of her eyes also became a little red. She looked at the two Supreme Experts with resentment in her eyes. Then, she pouted her mouth, "Humph!" And, she squeezed her little head it into Chu Yang's chest.

Ning Tian Ya was somewhat petrified. [I haven't misheard her, right? Both of us are almost ready to beat each other here. And, this little girl doesn't want to be our disciple?]

"Ha ha ha..." Bu Liu Qing held his belly and burst into loud laughter. "Old Ning, I had thought that you had already received this little girl as a disciple. But, it turns out that I've spent such a long time in arguing with you for no reason. A very long time has passed, and you still haven't gotten this girl, ah... it's good, it's very good!"

"'Good'... My ass!" Ning Tian Ya took a long breath and turned his head. Then, he spoke-up in a friendly manner, "Little girl, you see... pay me respect as your master, and I will help you fulfil all of your wishes."

"And... you see that person over there...? He looks like a human. But, he's a monster who eats a man and doesn't even spit its bones out. He's very frightful. You will not have a good day in your whole life if you become his disciple." Ning Tian Ya was prepared to commit all manner of crimes to frighten her.

"I want to be with Elder Brother Chu Yang... this is my wish..." the little girl shook her head with all her strength. She was desperately clenching onto Chu Yang's lapel, "My wish is already fulfilled... I don't need your help..."

Bu Liu Qing also went closer to her. He thought for a long time. Then, he suddenly took out something from his bosom. After that, he kindly smiled, "Come, little girl. This is for you. He-he... it is very amusing, okay? Tell me, what's your name?"

"My name is Mo Qing Wu..." Mo Qing Wu became somewhat scared and shrank back. Then, she curiously sized up the small figurine that was in his hand. It was made of Purple Crystal Essence. It was emitting bright lights, and it seemed to be very interesting...

"Mo Qing Wu? That's such a good name," Bu Liu Qing profusely praised her. He then said while demonstrating, "You see. This small figurine starts to fight by itself if you move it like this. And, it will somersault if you move it like this. And, if you move it like this, it will..."

Mo Qing Wu curiously looked and her eyes lit up more and more, "Wow! It's so much fun..."

Ning Tin Ya became anxious when he saw this. He groped all over his robes with his hands, but couldn't find anything... he was away from home, and he hadn't even brought any of his weapons along. So, why would he have bothered to bring toys to amuse kids? Therefore, he became angry and anxious when he saw that Bu Liu Qing was forming bonds with the little girl.

Bu Liu Qing asked with self-satisfaction, "Mo Qing Wu... um, would it be okay if I call you Little Wu?"

"Okay!" Mo Qing Wu nodded. She fiddled with that small figure made up of Purple Crystal Essence. Then, she added without lifting her head, "My mother calls me that too."

"Eh... Mother..." Bu Liu Qing felt a little awkward. Then, he said in a soft voice, "You see this thing... isn't it a lot of fun? You can come with me. I have many such toys at my place."

...

Chapter 552: Wind Fox Acknowledges its Master!

It was a very tough job for these Supreme Experts to coax this disciple. They were improvising tricks to amuse a child... But, it seemed to be considerably more difficult for both of these ten-thousand-year-old freaks...

"This isn't good!" Ning Tian Ya rushed forward as he worried himself sick. He then pushed Bu Liu Qing to stumble aside without any trace of politeness. Then, he squatted down, "Come with me. I have more fun stuff in my place than he does."

"But, I don't want to go anywhere..." Mo Qing Wu timidly replied. She somehow hated to part with the Purple Crystal figurine. But, she still handed it over to Bu Liu Qing.

"It's a present for you," Bu Liu Qing affably insisted, "Keep it. He-he... I have plenty of those back home."

"Really?" Mo Qing Wu blinked and asked.

"Of course!" Bu Liu Qing replied in a serious tone. He secretly felt proud of himself. It seemed as if half of his work to get this disciple was done.

Mo Qing Wu happily put the Purple Crystal figurine in her pocket...

"Ah! What is this?" Mo Qing Wu suddenly trembled from head to toe. She screamed in a petrified manner as she pulled out a furry and snow-white... small fox... from her pocket!

This fox was only palm-sized. It was naively squatting on Mo Qing Wu's hand. Then, it slowly wiggled. Its whole body was snow-white. It had two shiny black eyes. It then lifted its head and looked at Mo Qing Wu. Then, it squeaked twice. It seemed to have a very adorable and pitiful appearance.

"Wow... such a cute little thing..." Mo Qing Wu became very happy. She had taken a liking to this little thing at first glance. She held it in her hand and lifted it up, "It's so cute... Little thing, what's your name?"

She extended her other hand while she said this, and she started to caress it gently. The little thing timidly stretched its snow-white little claw, and gently shook hands with her. Then, it again shrank back, and shyly issued squeaking sounds.

Mo Qing Wu felt very happy with this new development. So, she asked, "Little thing, where did you come from? How did you get into my pocket?"

The little guy couldn't make sense of her words. So, it issued squeaking sounds as it innocently looked at her.

Mo Qing Wu was instantly defeated by such gazes. She held it up in both hands. She seemed to adore it too much to part with it. So, she asked, "Would you like to come with me? Little guy, I will give you a name... I will call you... I will call you... Little Snowy... okay?"

The little guy tilted its head and looked at Mo Qing Wu. It moved its body and climbed one step on Mo Qing Wu's hand. And, it again issued squeaking sounds. After that, it stretched its limbs and comfortably lay down on her hand.

It seemed as if it had approved of this name.

Chu Yang's eyes lit up. Gu Du Xing and the others also felt flabbergasted... [This little thing seems to have no attack power. But, it's so witty and adorable. Moreover, it's so pure... but... how did it suddenly appear from Mo Qing Wu's pocket?]

Ning Tian Ya and Bu Liu Qing looked at each other. [Ninth Grade Spirit Beast – Wind Fox! It has restored itself in its most primitive appearance. And, it is trying to please this little girl now?]

[Damn it... even spirit beasts know who is worthy of flattery?]

"Little thing!" Ning Tian Ya opened his eyes wide in a stare. And, the Wind Fox started to shiver out of fear. "Do you want to stay with her?"

He held the Wind Fox in his hands, and spoke-up in a fiendish manner, "You needn't play silly games with me. Do you think that you can take unfair advantage of this little girl in front of us? I will tear you into pieces! Say yes... or I will tear you into pieces."

Mo Qing Wu felt sorry for it, and hurriedly called out, "Give it back to me. Don't bully my Little Snowy... okay?"

Her voice hadn't even faded when a fearful cry was heard.

She believed that this little thing didn't understand human language. But, it looked at her with eyes filled with the expression of being treated unjustly. Then, it nodded while feeling aggrieved.

"It... it can understand human language?" Mo Qing Wu was stunned to see this. And, she opened her beautiful eyes wide. She extended her hand towards the little thing, and started to tremble as she asked.

"It's a ninth grade spirit beast... how would it not understand the human language..." Ning Tian Ya rolled his eyes.

"Ninth grade spirit beast?" Gu Du Xing and the others cried out in alarm. "But, it isn't even as big as a fist. This harmless little thing can only be treated as a toy by humans and animals. And, it's unexpectedly a ninth grade spirit beast?"

These words clearly left the Wind Fox in a bad mood. But, it didn't dare to retaliate in anger. It only rolled its eyes and firmly stared back at Gu Du Xing in reply.

Two Supreme Level Experts were present there. It would never be able to escape... no matter how great its skills were...

"Would you do it now? Yes or no?" Ning Tian Ya bellowed.

Wind Fox felt wronged... [Didn't I nod a moment ago? So, why

are you asking again?]

It again nodded since it didn't have a better choice.

"Humph! What are you waiting for? Do you think that you can be an unruly and wild pet like those other wild animals?" Ning Tian Ya puckered up his eyebrows and shouted, "Why haven't you recognized your master already? Do you want this old man to break a few bones of yours?"

Wind Fox swayed for a while in his hands. Then, it pitifully looked at Mo Qing Wu. It saw that Mo Qing Wu was looking at it with eyes that were filled with expressions of cherish and adore. It looked at her for a quite a while. Then, it heaved a sigh like humans do when they feel helpless...

[It seems that I – Lord Wind Fox – will be reduced to a wisp of fox spirit if I don't recognize this little girl as my master...]

The Wind Fox trembled with rustling sound as it closed its eyes. After that, it started to issue a white energy from over its head. This energy gradually became denser and denser, and finally took the shape of a circle. The circle was full of strange patterns. A tiny pocket-sized version of the Wind Fox was sitting at the centre of the circle. In fact, it was only the size of a finger.

A strong fragrance suddenly dissipated from the body of the Wind Fox. This scent then started to spread...

"Girl, quickly bite your finger and drip blood on the forehead of this tiny Wind Fox in the circle. Do it quickly!" Ning Tian Yan urged her.

"Why?" the little girl tilted her head and asked.

"This little thing will become yours if you do this." Ning Tian Ya felt like a fool. [Anyone would kill for such an opportunity. And, this little girl is still asking... why?]

Ning Tian Ya would've sent any other person flying by a slap. But, he didn't wish to lose this little girl...

"Really..." Mo Qing Wu complied and happily proceeded to bite her finger. But, she then spoke-up in a tone of misery, "But... it will be very painful..."

Ning Tian Ya felt helpless. So, he simply grabbed her little hand, and cut into the surface of her skin with his fingernail. A drop of blood seeped out from her finger. Then, he clenched her little finger and pressed it on the forehead of the tiny Wind Fox in the circle...

A white light suddenly came out of the Wind Fox's body as soon as the blood came in contact with that tiny Wind Fox. This light then enveloped Mo Qing Wu and its small body. A myriad of abstruse symbols flew out from the inside of the circle. They rotated with a great speed for a moment. Then, they slowly merged into Mo Qing Wu's body with whooshing sounds.

Chu Yang was looking at all this very intently. In fact, he felt very relieved in his heart. [How do I say it...? Does this mean that a ninth grade spirit beast will act like a super bodyguard for the little girl? It could protect her until she reaches the Monarch Leve at least...?]

"This is a Spirit Beast Contract. It is an extremely rare thing in the Nine Heavens Continent." Ning Tian Ya explained in a flaunting manner, "This ancient contract can only be formed if a spirit is willing to offer their spirit. But, it is impossible to obtain this using external force!"

[I see.] Chu Yang nodded in silence. [No wonder I've never heard of this thing before... So, it is so difficult to achieve. What kind of spirit beast wouldn't be too proud if they were so powerful? So, which spirit beast would happily agree to offer their spirits?]

"It is done!" Bu Liu Qing went closer to her. He clicked his tongue in wonder, "My disciple is outstanding. She hasn't even started her apprenticeship, and she has already subdued a ninth grade spirit beast and made it her pet..."

Ning Tian Ya interrupted without any trace of politeness, "What do you mean 'your' disciple? She is 'my' disciple!"

The Wind Fox gloomily rolled its eyes. [What do you mean 'she subdued a ninth grade spirit beast and made it her pet'? This is because of you two old bastards. Could this little girl have tried to subdue me if you two hadn't been here?]

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo looked at Mo Qing Wu with envy. [This little girl is very lucky, ah! Two Supreme Level Experts are fighting to take her as their disciple. And, she has subdued a ninth grade spirit beast and made it her pet...]

Luo Ke Di recalled his barely alive pet – that little leopard cub he had been raising... And, he felt solemn and hurt at the thought of it... [Can difference among people can be that great?]

Mo Qing Wu felt a slight dizziness in her head. Things seemed a little out of focus for a second. Then, she again looked at the Wind Fox, and felt more and more amiable towards it. Suddenly, she heard a thought in her mind, "Master..."

The voice was soft and tender. It was adorably immature...

"Wow! Are you talking to me?" Mo Qing Wu jumped up thirty feet in the air. She held the Wind Fox in her hands. She cherished it very much, and started to play with it.

However, she suddenly found herself being pulled by Ning Tian Ya. The Wind Fox also went into Mo Qing Wu's pocket like a wisp of smoke when this happened...

"Little Wu, quickly accept me as your master. I have given you this Wind Fox in present as your master!" Ning Tian Ya anxiously urged.

Wind Fox put out its head from Mo Qing Wu's pocket. And, it looked at that old guy in despise. [What? You gave me as a present...? Can you even afford to give me – Lord Wind Fox – as a present?]

"No. Accept me as your master! He's no good. You see... he's such a sloppy old man. A beautiful girl like you will turn ugly if you become his disciple..." Bu Liu Qing approached her.

Mo Qing Wu was in a dilemma. She bit her lips and said, "But, I don't want to accept a teacher..."

Chu Yang patted on her shoulder and said, "Little Wu, but this is your chance. You mustn't miss it. Moreover, would you not protect your Elder Brother Chu Yang when you come back after learning the martial skills? Your Elder Brother Chu Yang is waiting for you to be able enough to protect him..."

A mysterious light concentrated in Mo Qing Wu's eyes. She bit her lips after a good while, and spoke-up with glistening teardrops in her eyes, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, you're right... this would be good... But, I won't be able to see you from now on. What should I do?"

Chu Yang responded while guiding her patiently, "Think about it. You want to protect me for a lifetime. You won't be able to see me for a few years. But, you would be able to protect your Elder Brother Chu Yang for a lifetime... how worthwhile would it be!"

How could Chu Yang possibly let go of this opportunity for the little girl's sake. Both the Supreme Level Experts were making efforts to get her as their disciple! Chu Yang also wasn't willing to part with her, but such an opportunity wasn't easy to come across.

These ten-thousand-years-old freaks rarely come out in the open. They had bumped into them with great difficulty. How could he let them go?

"I won't be able to see you for a few years, but I can protect you for a lifetime..." Mo Qing Wu bit her lip and thought for quite a while. She was hesitant and uncertain. She had naturally ascertained the importance of this chance because of her intelligence. But, a lot of reluctance still resided in her heart.

...

Chapter 553: Little Girl Becomes an Apprentice

Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu discussed in a low voice as the argument between the two Supreme Level Experts became very heated. In fact, it seemed that they would start a big fight very soon. Chu Yang persuaded Mo Qing Wu to listen to both of them very carefully. She was still reluctant, but it had become a foregone conclusion that she was going to become an apprentice.

The only question that remained was... who should she choose as her master?

"She will be my apprentice!" Ning Tian Ya gasped for breath.

"Stop your nonsense! Do you think you're worthy?!" Bu Liu Qing angrily shouted, "She's mine!"

The two Supreme Level Experts were quarrelling and staring at each other... as if they were in the middle of a cock-fight. In fact, the frightening aura from their bodies could explode any time now!

Who was willing to give up at such a critical moment? Such a superb physique had only existed in the legends of martial arts! These two old men had always been unpleasant to the eyes of each other, and they were bursting out more than a few words at this time...

"You step aside! I will give a generous reward if you do that!"

"You step aside. I will give anything you want!"

"Why should I step aside?"

"Then, why should I?"

Neither of them was ready to let go. The intensity of the conflict continued to become stronger and stronger. Eventually, they put forward a settlement-plan in unison...

"We will have a fight! Whoever wins will take the girl as apprentice. And, he shall also take the title of being the number-one in the world!"

"Let's get on with it!"

Their silhouettes staggered with 'shua' sound. One of them stretched out his left hand, and the other one stretched his right hand. And, the spiritual energy suddenly gathered in the air in a frightening manner.

"Ahm Ahm... this junior has a better idea," Chu Yang coughed twice. He had realized that these two were about to cause a big calamity here. So, Minister Chu had no other choice but to come over to broker a compromise.

"What idea?" Both the old fogies turned their heads and looked at him. Was a fight going to help either of them? They had been fighting for more than ten-thousand years. However, they still hadn't been able to decide the winner. Therefore, it would be of no help... if they were to have a fight now.

"I have a good way to decide who can have her as their apprentice... and decide the victor. This way no one's morale or body would get hurt..." Chu Yang slyly smiled.

"What is that good way? Is such a good way even possible?" The eyes of Ning Tian Ya and Bu Liu Qing lit up. Four substantial white lights firmly emitted out of their eyes, and shone intensely on Chu Yang's body like four searchlights.

"In this way... both the seniors can take her as apprentice... Um... In other words, she can accept both of you as her master. How about... she would be with one of the masters this month, and she would be with her other master the next... Then, she could compare the advancement of both the months. The outcome would become obvious at one glance in this manner. Moreover, the same process of comparison can be restarted in the third month if the final outcome would be somehow unacceptable... wouldn't you

be able to decide the winner at the end of her apprenticeship in this manner?"

Chu Yang smiled slyly at first. He then mischievously laughed twice at the end of his long speech.

"Good kid..." Ning Tian Ya stroked his chin and said thoughtfully, "You want us two old fellows to compete among ourselves, and work our hearts out for this little girl? And, being inattentive would be out of question while doing so...? Wouldn't it be like enslaving the both of us? Huh? Well, you are very gutsy!"

Chu Yang smiled in a ridiculing way.

"This kid is too clever!" Bu Liu Qing squinted and looked at Chu Yang, "This idea is too bad!"

Chu Yang smiled and said, "What's wrong? Would you not dare to compete? Are you both afraid to lose to your opponent?" he sighed and continued, "I understand. Practicing skills and teaching apprentices are two different things... So, not having that kind of confidence is normal! The one who isn't confident can back off. After all, what's the point of arguing over it?"

The two Supreme Level Experts opened their eyes wide in stare.

They clearly knew that Chu Yang was provoking them by making negative remarks. But, who would be ready to admit defeat at this moment? Whoever admitted defeat would lose the apprentice with a physique that had appeared for the first time since ages!

Ning Tian Ya opened his eyes wide, and spoke in a weak tone, "But... this can be considered a good idea..."

However, Bu Liu Qing was sullen over it. He repeatedly nodded in confusion, "Right. This is a good way. A good way..." He observed Chu Yang's eyes, and found it hard to digest that smirking face of his'.

Both of the Supreme Level Experts were somewhat depressed.

They had thought of keeping her to themselves. But, it turned out that they would have to be share her instead...?

Ning Tian Ya was particularly feeling so regretful that he wanted to hit a wall. [This wouldn't have turned into such a messy matter if I had managed to obtain this apprentice back then. But, the situation is different now. So, I would have to carefully understand the system of this apprentice. Moreover, I would have to train her with all my heart. I will have to supervise her with all my strength. Also, I would have to rack my brains in order to keep my apprentice under my control and not my rival's...]

[But, most of the right to decide to stay under whose mentorship... isn't in my hands... Instead, it is in the apprentice's...]

[But, this apprentice is a little doll with powered makeup and jade-like features... I can't beat her up. I can't scold her. In fact, she might start crying even if were to talk to her in a strict tone...]

Both the Supreme Level Experts sighed in their hearts. They looked anxious... [How will this ever turn out to be good?]

However, they looked at each other, and saw that the person opposite to them also had a confused look on his face. So, they got excited, [Is he also confused? This can be a good time to deal with him.]

"I won't let you have control over her!" both of them exhaled fiercely from their nostrils like a bull as they resolutely declared.

"Then, I will take her for the first month!"

"Nonsense! Why would you?"

Both of them again stood in front of each other... as if they were in a cock fight.

"Oh my... You can use rock-paper-scissor to decide..." Chu Yang couldn't help but interrupt. He had merely wanted to settle the dispute.

"You shut up!" Both of them turned their heads and shouted loudly, "You brat... you are the one who put us in this trouble...!"

However, both of them discussed this matter further. And, they agreed to make decision by a childish game like rock-paper-scissor since they didn't have a better option...

Thereupon, Bu Liu Qing won! He laughed heartily thrice.

Ning Tian Ya lost. He touched his nose since he felt upset. He then suddenly declared – He would go wherever Bu Liu Qing goes from now on... And, he would watch over to prevent Bu Liu Qing from treating her badly and so on...

Obviously, the general orientation had been decided. The rest were mere minor details and trivial matters...

These two planned for some time, and they haggled over every cent. They divided the practising time of Mo Qing Wu's. After that, they unleashed a belly full of grievances and insults at each other to coax their endless depression and frustrations. And then, they shook hands symbolically...

Then, there appeared another issue after the cute little girl had become their apprentice.

Two masters were taking turns to teach her. So, who would be the Great Master? And, who would be the Second Master?

Chu Yang put forward a suggestion while braving the danger that might spurt out, "Both of you would be called masters. Um, Master Ning, Master Bu... like that...? Let the little girl finish the apprenticeship first. Then, she will decide who would be the Great Master and who would be the Second Master..."

Thus, Minister Chu had placed the authority to deliver the right of attribution of the 'number-one in the world' in the hands of the cute little girl with words as light as feather. However, the girl was obviously still naïve, and didn't understand anything.

[Don't you dare show a little bit of negligence while training

Little Wu? He-he... I will see how you two won't put all your heart into this! After all, this is the issue of ten-thousand years of fame and reputation...]

[I am not willing to believe that you two don't care. And, how would you have gotten the title of 'number-one in the world' if you didn't care? Which of you would've been fighting for ten-thousand years if you didn't care?]

"You ruthless little!" The two Supreme Level Experts sullenly pinched their noses and restrained themselves.

Both of them were wise and experienced. They could see that this boy was the backbone of this little girl. [We wouldn't have gotten Little Wu as our apprentice if this boy weren't in a good mood. This small girl would've lifted her hands and feet in disapproval for sure. And then, she would have turned back and walked away without the slightest of hesitation...]

Consequently, both of them would've suffered from a dead loss. And, neither could've gotten this apprentice...

Both of them kneaded their fingers, and two high platforms rose up from the ground. They both sat on the platforms side by side in dignified manner. Then, they received the nine respects that were paid by the little girl. Then, they both spoke up while attempting to outdo the other, "Little apprentice, please get up!"

These words already seemed to be somewhat doting in mannerism. The masters had used the word 'please' while talking to the apprentice...

"We will leave now. It will good to set the foundation of this girl as soon as we return." Bu Liu Qing was somewhat impatient. After all, this month was his turn...

'Elder Brother Chu Yang..." The little girl made a sad face, and tears started to stream down her face. She spread her hands and hugged him tightly. "I can't bear to leave you..."

"It's all right... it's only for a short time, isn't it?" Chu Yang was upset in his heart. But, he forced himself to wear a smile as he said, "You can request your master to take you to meet me if you miss me and can't take it anymore."

"Ok," Mo Qing Wu's eyes lit up. She heavily nodded.

She let go of his hand, and slowly drew back. Her big eyes were filled with unwillingness to let go. She withdrew a few steps at first. But, she then suddenly leapt up and threw herself in Chu Yang's arms. She sobbed as she exerted her all strength and kissed Chu Yang on the face with her petal-like lips. However, she felt that it wasn't enough... So, she kissed several times more.

She moved closer to Chu Yang's ear and said, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... you won't forget me, right?"

"Of course not." Chu Yang replied, "How can I forget my Qing Wu?"

"Then, you kiss me." Mo Qing pouted her mouth. Then, she titled her head and looked at him.

Chu Yang moved his mouth closer to her, and kissed her cheek twice with smooching sounds. Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya looked at this, and felt anxious and conflicted. This was obviously complete jealousy. [This bastard kid is kissing my apprentice! My apprentice is so little...]

Chu Yang tightly held Mo Qing Wu in his arms. He rapaciously breathed-in the fresh scent of the little girl a few times. A while passed like this. Then, he endured the pain of parting, and put her down with a heavy heart. After that, he said, "Leave, now. Elder Brother Chu Yang will wait for you to come back."

"Um," The cute little girl turned around and walked a few steps. She turned her head around after three steps. Her eyes were full of tears.

"You must not..." The little girl didn't speak after that. She only

looked back foolishly towards Chu Yang. She had an expression of overwhelming sadness in her eyes despite her young age...

"Let's go." Ning Tian Ya was somewhat impatient. He waved his hand. He wanted to take away the apprentice.

"Hey!" Chu Yang coughed and said, "Two Supreme Seniors, I have helped you get such a good apprentice. And, I've also solved a big problem for you. Do you have nothing to say?"

"To say?" Bu Liu Qing looked at him very fiercely, "Boy, don't be so cheap. We have already been cheated by you for the rest of our lives... And, you still want more benefits?! Put a check on your wild intentions..."

"What do you mean by more benefits? I have been helping you out for so long! Are you telling me that it all went in vain?" Chu Yang's face had somewhat depressed and ridiculing expressions. The little girl's also giggled even though her eyes were full from the pain of separation.

"Hurry up and leave..." Ning Tian Ya stared at him.

Chu Yang shouted at the top of his voice, "Qing Wu... You have to get some good things out of your both masters when you get there. The things that you wouldn't need would be very useful to your Elder Brother Chu Yang. The more the better! These two masters of yours have plenty of good things, ah."

Mo Qing Wu firmly raised her little clenched fist and waved, "Don't worry, Elder Brother Chu Yang. I will wipe them clean! And, I will give everything to you, Elder Brother Chu Yang!"

The two Supreme Level Experts stumbled, and nearly fell on the ground. [Have we received an apprentice or a hungry wolf?]

...

Chapter 554: Heavenly Armament Pavilion's Influence Rises in the Wilderness

The two Supreme Level Experts couldn't dare to stay any longer. After all, they were afraid that perhaps their old and weary bodies would've been taken away by their apprentice, and would've then been given to someone else...

[I have to go back and start the teaching her. How can I give my treasures to outsiders? Moreover, this boy is particularly full of dirty tricks. So, I certainly can't give them to him...]

Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya hurriedly bade goodbye to everyone. Mo Qing Wu also waved and bade goodbye to Gu Du Xing and the others. Glistening teardrops started to twinkle in the eyes of the little girl as they started to leave. However, Bu Liu Qing hurriedly held Mo Qing Wu and sped along to leave first. Ning Tian Ya closely caught up with them. In fact, he didn't dare to stay an inch far away from them. After all, he feared that Bu Liu Qing would snatch the apprentice for himself if he were a step late...

Their silhouettes had disappeared. But, Mo Qing Wu's loud voice still transmitted in the mid-air, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, wait for me... I will come back to protect you..."

Chu Yang still had a smile on his face. He looked into the emptiness in front of him, and gently waved his hand.

He felt more emptiness in his heart. He felt a sense of loss... And, he felt a reluctance to part with her. But, he didn't express any of it. He just faintly smiled with a warm and determined look in his eyes.

[Qing Wu, I will wait for you!]

[You don't know this... But, I've been waiting for you my whole life!]

[Qing Wu, I've finally reversed your destiny! I finally feel relieved

about your destiny since these Supreme Level Experts have taken you away!]

[This life is going to be different now!]

"They will probably go to the Mo Clan." Ji Mo wiped his eyes and laughed. He wanted to show that he didn't feel the pain of parting with her... and that he was strong. But, this laugh sounded like a ferocious scream that had come from a duck; it was unpleasant to hear.

It could be assumed that everyone would've teased him if it were some other time. But, they didn't laugh at him at this instance. Instead, they only nodded in silence.

The little girl who loved to laugh and loved to talk wasn't at their side anymore. They certainly weren't habitual of this setting.

It was impossible for Mo Qing Wu to go on a trip without settling the quarrel with the Mo Clan. First, she would go back and bid goodbye to everyone. And, she would also take her Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber with her.

Chu Yang indifferently spoke-up after a long time has passed, "We should also leave. There are so many things that are waiting for us in this Northern Wilderness."

Everyone complied with him. They then turned around, and started with their journey. There was an unusual silence among everyone along the way. Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di would always be doing comedy on normal days. However, they were also silent... to an extent that it was frightening!

"Big Brother, I want to do extra practice." Ji Mo had walked out far away when he turned his head and looked back at Chu Yang. He then spoke-up in a desperate manner.

"Extra practice...?" Chu Yang wrinkled his brows.

"Yes. I also want to do extra practice!" Luo Ke Di also joined in.

"Others look down upon me. In fact, those Supreme Level Experts said that we don't have a future..." Ji Mo gritted his teeth and said, "I will fight for a bright future, and I will show everyone that even the Supreme Level Experts can be wrong."

"Right!" Luo Ke Di added. The pupils of his eyes filled with blood as he said, "A man must strive for vindication! I'm afraid there would be no hope left for us if such harsh criticism doesn't make us work hard."

Chu Yang sighed and said, "Then, you need to be mentally prepared for this. This isn't the kind of decision you can make in the heat of the moment! This decision of yours will certainly endanger your lives... Moreover, we won't be able to help you two in those situations!"

"Yes! I have thought it through!" Determination flickered in Ji Mo's eyes. "I will either die of torment in this life... or I will become a Supreme Expert!"

"Me too!" Lou Ke Di also spoke-up with determination.

"Very well!" A cold light glittered in Chu Yang's eyes. He said, "You two have made a decision. So, you can't back down now! Also, you don't need to wait for tomorrow. You will start your training today! In fact... right now!

"This Great Northern Wilderness is our battlefield! Go nuts and kill them all... show me what you got!" A killing intention flashed in Chu Yang's eyes. "No matter if it's any man... no matter if it's any spirit beast! Remember that you won't get our help in any fight from now on. You will face a life and death experience many times... But, stay alive and you will upgrade... or you will die!

"Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang! You must remember that you're not allowed to rescue Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di even if they are to die in front of you!"

Chu Yang harshly stated, "A man must face his battles alone!"

"Yes!" the four of them revealed a look of determination in their eyes.

How can one rely on the others' help if they are to walk on the road to becoming a powerhouse?

They silently rushed out for a moment. Then, they suddenly saw a dense crowd in front of them. It was a group of Dark Bamboo experts, and it was being headed by two individuals. These two people were Young Master Yu and Jun Xi Zhu.

"Where is Little Wu?" Jun Xi Zhu swept her eyes around, and noticed that a person was missing. So, she couldn't help but enquire.

"She was taken away by her masters," Chu Yang was somewhat dispirited and downcast as he said, "She has acknowledged Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya as her masters."

"Sss~~~" Jun Xi Zhu sucked in cold air. "She has paid respects to two Supreme Experts at the same time?"

She pondered in her heart, [Is it possible that the spiritual power that was left behind to preserve Little Wu's Three Yin Meridians belonged to those two Supreme Experts?]

This possibility seemed the most plausible explanation of facts as she considered things carefully. She couldn't help but feel happy in her heart. [Luckily, I didn't have any ideas about exploiting that little girl. Ahm ahm ahem, I would've been done for if I had sent her home... After all, she's with two Supreme Level Experts now!]

"Chu Yang, we have been waiting for you to discuss some important matters." Young Master Yu insipidly said, "We have obtained the blood essence and inner core of ninth grade spirit beasts. So, Lady Jun and I must begin our closed door practice. But, it could take a while for us this time."

"Oh?" Chu Yang had an expression of doubt in his eyes.

"All transfer of Dark Bamboo's authority will lie hidden in the

dark once we go into seclusion. Ah Lu will undertake the task of full power management! I have also passed an order to the subordinates of Dark Bamboo. So, none of them are allowed to stir up trouble in our absence."

Young Master Yu looked at Chu Yang with a faintly ambiguous smile as he spoke-up in a very meaningful tone, "We two won't be disturbing you for a while in the Middle Three Heavens."

The sound of these words went into Chu Yang's ear; they were sharp and clear.

He moved back two steps after he had said this. Then, he loudly said, "Wait for me to come out. And, I will again start training them for you!"

Young Master Yu and Jun Xi Zhu took a step back as he was done talking. Then, they bade goodbye to Chu Yang and the others. After that, they sped along the way with their men, and didn't look back. They had soon disappeared from the line of Chu Yang and the others' sight.

Things had happened so fast, and had concluded in such a straightforward manner. It was somewhat too much to take-in for Gu Du Xing and the others. [Does this mean... that the most powerful underworld organisation of the Middle Three Heavens is going to take a break from society for a short period of time?]

[There has already been a lot of chaos in the Middle Three Heavens. How would it not be more chaotic in a situation wherein the Dark Bamboo isn't around?]

"Chaos is good! Heroes rise when the world is in chaos!" Dong Wu Shang snorted and said, "So, let's fight to our heart's content!"

"Right. One can simply kill to their hearts' content during these days!" Gu Du Xing let out a loud cry, and a heroic aura flew upwards. He then said, "Our Heavenly Armament Pavilion must show it's brilliance since the Dark Bamboo isn't operating!"

The five brothers looked at each other, and they were smiling in an understanding manner. They then took out their Heavenly Armament Pavilion masks from their bosoms!

There was a lot of chaos in the Northern Wilderness over the next several days. All those who had come here were each other's enemies by default. The extermination of one team was inevitable if two of them ran into each other...

There was no need for a reason to explain this!

However, the Heavenly Armament Pavilion had caused a terrifying turmoil in its wake during the past few days. They had again displayed the brilliant prestige and ambition of this organization!

Several strange and masked people would go on trips in the Northern Wilderness. And, they would kill people to plunder their possessions. In fact, there was nothing that they didn't do.

Sometimes, two persons would come together. Sometimes, only a single person from the gang would come. Sometimes, they would appear in a group of four or five. They would come howling, and would leave howling. Whoever would run into them... would only see one outcome – they would be robbed, killed, or crippled!

They were moody and totally unreasonable. They had become the headache for the experts of Middle Three Heavens who had come here to look for ninth grade spirit beasts and hunt for the blood of the spirit beast. These masked men had slowly gained a reputation... However, it was a notorious reputation.

Chu Yang sped along the way in the face of wind and snow. His sword flashed. He cut open the throat of an expert in his front. And, the person vanished without a trace along with the sword-light.

It was the seventh day since his brothers had separated to gain battle experience!

Chu Yang had continuously followed the directions of the Nine Tribulations Sword during these seven days, and had sought for elixirs and rare treasures. He would often arrive to certain places, and would find that he was the first one to have arrived there. However, that didn't mean that he didn't come across battles at times!

Almost no one could be his match considering his current cultivation and the sharp edge of the Nine Tribulation Sword! However, Chu Yang would immediately turn around and flee if he would run into one or two Emperor Level Experts since he would be no match for them.

His agility skill was unparalleled. So, he basically didn't have to worry if an expert below ninth grade Emperor Level chased after him.

Besides, he had also the 'killing machine' Sword Spirit ready all the time. So, it wouldn't matter if the other person managed to catch up with him. Sword Spirit would attack and kill the pursuer!

Consequently, Minister Chu would be left satisfied with the good stuff he would receive on his journey. He was going with the flow...

In fact, he shouldn't be called Minister Chu any longer. He should be called 'Great Lord Chu'!

The only thing that had displeased the Great Lord Chu was that he was yet to find the soul fragment of Sword Spirit.

However, how could he let go of the main purpose he had come here with? Therefore, he had continued to look for it...

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had intentionally increased their practicing time during these days. But, they had decreased their fighting time instead. After all, they had come to realize the limitations of their sword and saber.

However, Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had increased their fighting time

recklessly! In fact, they looked like two insane tigers. They would toss challenges everywhere they went... without the slightest hesitation. They would go plundering wherever they went. And, they would get riddled with scars every day. They would have countless of moments when they'd swing between life and death every day. But, they had slowly become self-disciplined. Moreover, they had become increasingly tenacious!

Both of them had firmly remembered Chu Yang's words – [You'd be able to become a powerhouse only after you've survived a hundred deaths!]

Heavenly Armament Pavilion! This ominous name became infamous henceforth!

Chu Yang had picked an ice-cold spirit fruit from under the layer of ice a moment ago. Suddenly, the sound of fluttering of clothes came from the outside. Chu Yang's spirit roused up, [Has another fat sheep come to be looted?]

He quietly looked out to see. He saw that those people were wearing black robes and shady golden masks. It was an eerie and frightening bunch of people. However, that unique aura made Chu Yang's killing intention rise. [People of Black Devil Organization!]

He saw that they were trying to find some hiding place. It seemed as if they wanted to ambush someone...

Chu Yang pondered whether to take the shot or not. However, that was when the voices of two people were heard along with the whistling sound of the wind. Chu Yang was startled. Then, a mysterious light of excitement emitted out from his eyes! And, the blood in his whole body started to boil.

"Master... Where has that bastard Chu Yang gone? It has been so long. How haven't we been able to find him..." this sound had resembled the squeaky voice of a duck mixed with the howl of a wolf. But, there was a somewhat thick sense of 'shock' in this voice!

Chu Yang heard this voice, and immediately understood who it was. But, he remained puzzled after much thought. [The matter that leaves you dissatisfied and complaining doesn't require you act 'shocked' you know. So, why do you sound so...'shocked'?]

...

Chapter 555: Dragon Meat Falls From the Sky!

Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan had come across great fortune.

The master and disciple duo was travelling very leisurely. In fact, it seemed as if they were going for a scenic tour. They would beat the beasts they would run into. And, they would run and hide if they couldn't...

They would engage any people in fights if they were confident. Else, they would hide...

One individual in this pair was calm and tranquil, and didn't take anything to heart. However, the other one was undisciplined and out of control. One of them would fight in a cool and unrestrained manner, and would also draw back as care-freely. However, the other one would run into a fight valiantly, and would also hide as valiantly...

They were indeed a perfect pair!

Meng Chao Ran was aloof in his heart. In fact, he had turned aloof to being called 'vile' and 'shameless' or 'noble and solemn' by others. Meng Chao Ran would kill anyone who would try to slaughter him without any restraint. He wouldn't wade in mud and water. He would simply destroy them.

It was the rule of the world! Everyone considered it proper and considered it as natural. And, Meng Chao Ran was no exception.

However, nothing was impossible in Tan Tan's eyes! He could do anything as long as Meng Chao Ran said: Fight! In fact, he wouldn't even back down against a Supreme Level Expert!

Tan Tan was bold and powerful. So, he was fearlessly rushing along the journey.

And, Meng Chao Ran's rich experience of Jianghu was fully

manifested along this journey. However, his experiences had been different from others. So, he didn't need to see to detect if there was any danger. He would merely evade the danger in advance if he had a feeling about it. Consequently, the oily skins of master and disciple didn't even get a scratch along their journey through this wilderness.

Tan Tan had often found that Meng Chao Ran would suddenly stop in the dark night during their journey. Then, he would take a long detour. And, Tan Tan would realize why his master changed the route after they had walked for a long distance... It was because there had been some powerful spirit beast or powerful enemies ahead on that way!

Tan Tan would often think that the road was tranquil because he could clearly see it to be so. But, the hair on Meng Chao Ran's arm would involuntarily stand on the end... And, it would always turn out that there was a great danger lying ahead!

Tan Tan's eyes had turned red in envy towards this ability of his master's. [This is too incredible. We will never encounter any danger with the help of such a powerful sixth sense...]

Meng Chao Ran would only force a smile at the sight of his disciple's reddened eyes. After all, he had sensed the reason why they were red...

Could anyone even guess how many times Meng Chao Ran had been chased down for certain matters during in his life? He had developed this sixth sense after coming out alive from those do-or-die situations. He had obtained such a keen sense because of the experience he had gained in those do-or-die situations!

How could this be attained from books?

They had run into two dying people that day. Those people were dressed in black. And, they were madly trying to rush to the hilltop... as if they were struggling for life. But, their strength got fully exhausted when there wasn't much distance left to their

destination. And, they fell down a small distance short of it. They had tried to crawl up, but couldn't...

Meng Chao Ran and his disciple were leisurely walking-about at his time. They had turned a corner, but saw that the two men were falling from the hilltop... the master and the disciple duo looked at each other in dismay.

These two black-robed people lay motionless in the thick patch of grass. So, Tan Tan wanted to go over to take a closer look.

One of the black-robed men groaned and said, "Save me..."

Tan Tan leapt up, "So, he hasn't died yet."

"Stop!" Meng Chao Ran shouted at his disciple. He then said in a mysterious voice, "I remember that a great person had said a long time ago... You may occasionally see a fainted person while walking in Jianghu. But, it is definitely going to be trouble. It could even be a trap! So, the best solution under these circumstances is..."

Tan Tan had erected his ears to listen. The black-robed people couldn't budge from the ground. However, they had also involuntarily erected their ears to listen to his words...

"...The best way is to cut off their heads without any delay! Then, you must check if they have died or not... You will first put an end to their trap by doing so. Secondly, you can also try to make friends with the people who were chasing after them! Things can still take a turn for the worse. But, you can at least make money from plundering their corpses in the worst case..."

Meng Chao Ran drew his sword with a 'clang' sound as he spoke.

However, Tan Tan was struck dumb... [Master is very talented. Check if the person has died after chopping off the head...? This... this is such a unique trick! He has a vast collection of secret tricks in his arsenal. He came up with such a wise remark! This matter reflects his great experience!]

Meng Chao Ran didn't hesitate one bit after he was done talking. Those two people had obviously opened their eyes wide in disbelief after they had listened to his remark! Then, a sword light flashed and cut their heads off!

Then, Meng Chao Ran put his sword back in its sheath, and said, "There shouldn't be any danger now. So, you can take a look now."

Tan Tan said 'oh' in a daze. Then, he walked over to the corpses. It was hard for him to imagine that his master... was so ruthlessly cool in making decisions...

[There was no reason to kill these two people, but Master even cited a quote by the ancients to back his action...] Tan Tan believed that this was a method he could show off. Consequently, he felt that he needed to learn it.

Tan Tan shouted in 'shock' not long after, "Fu*k me, Master! We got rich!"

Tan Tan had exclaimed with excitement. However, Meng Chao Ran retorted, "Nonsense! You're so foul-mouthed that I want to pull out your tongue as your master." Then he asked, "What do you mean by 'we got rich'?"

"This, this... this inner core is very big..." Tan Tan had fished out a jade-case from the pocket of one of those two black-robed persons. A fist-sized inner core was placed in it. It was so sparkly and crystal clear that it could dazzle the eyes.

"It is an inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast..." Meng Chao Ran turned pale in fright. He looked at the multi-coloured rays and rich energy it was giving off. And, he had immediately understood that they had made a fortune this time...

"We are very lucky!" Tan Tan was so fascinated by it that he didn't wish to part with it. So, he gently laughed out.

"Lucky, my ass! Let's go quickly..." Meng Chao Ran sucked in air from the corner of his mouth. It seemed that he felt as if a big

trouble was coming head-on. So, he pulled his disciple, and flew away like an arrow with Tan Tan in tow.

However, Tan Tan was still unwilling to let go. So, he turned his head, "Master... we haven't even searched the body of the other person... what if he also has an inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast...?"

"Do you think that inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast is a cabbage...? We would have to search for our lives in hell if we went back..."

Meng Chao Ran continued in a bad mood, "They had this inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast. But, it seems that the person who was chasing after them to steal it is an expert as well. Moreover, their wounds are fresh. So, the person who is chasing after them can arrive here any time. Do you still not wish to run fast?"

The master and disciple had run for a dozen kilometres by now. And, Meng Chao Ran had laid several trails to throw off the pursuers.

Then, he picked a direction, and hastened towards a remote and desolate area.

They had barely fled for a few breaths' time when a group of black-clothed people rushed over and arrived here. Those people turned over the two dead bodies. And, their complexions changed to agitation, "Someone has tricked us! The inner core is not here! There are sword marks on the necks of these corpses. And, the blood is still flowing. So, those two persons mustn't have gone too far! Quickly chase after them!"

Another man gnashed his teeth and said, "Who dared to take cheap advantages from our Black Devil Clan? We will chop them to pieces once we catch them! They have angered this old man!"

That crowd of black-clothed people flew out with 'whooshing' sounds. Everyone had gone to search after the ones who had stolen

the inner core with all their might; they were visibly burning with impatience. [Crap! We wasted so much time and effort. And, we succeeded with great difficulty. But, someone else has stolen the fruits of our labor?]

[This is so aggravating!]

Such an incident had happened to the infamous Black Devil Clan... it needed to be mentioned that this clan that was known for their villainy reputation. And, what was more shameful and humiliating was... that they had fought desperately hard for this. But, they had still let some thief take it away... Moreover, they didn't know who that other thief was...

This was unbearable!

The heavens had witnessed that this whole incident had been totally a coincidence.

This inner core belonged to that unlucky Single-Horned Dragon!

Bu Liu Qing had extracted half of its blood essence that day. And, it had become very weak after that. Then, he had thrown this poor guy away. And, it had fallen god knows where...

How terrifying was the strength of a Supreme Level Expert...? The Single-Horned Dragon had remained dizzy for a long time after it had fallen down. And, it hadn't been able to move. Moreover, it had lost half of its blood essence. So, it wasn't left with much vitality in its body. And, it didn't have any fighting power either...

But, what was even more unlucky for it was — it had fallen behind a big mountain! And, dozens of experts of a mid-tier clan of the Middle Three Heavens were waiting to make a cheap profit there...

The Single-Horned Dragon had fallen at the exact centre of their ambush circle! So, it had been battered to death on the spot...

However, the even more miserable thing was — it had tried to

move after it had fallen, but it hadn't been able to. It had been able to blink its eyes, but it couldn't even burst into tears...

[I only need half-an-hour to recover a little. I only need half-an-hour, ah...] The Single-Horned Dragon madly shouted in its heart. But... who would've given it half-an-hour? It wasn't even given half-a-breath to rest...

This clan set into action with their utmost strength to try out their luck. There were only two King Level Experts among them. They also had several Revered Martial Artists. So, these experts would've been swallowed alive like dregs if they had fought this ninth grade spirit beast head-on at an earlier time. And, this was the reason why they hadn't dared to go participate in the frontal battle...

Who would have imagined that this was their day of ill-gotten gains? Who would have imagined that a barely-alive ninth grade spirit beast would fall from the sky in broad daylight? How can there be such a favourable incident? Those several dozen experts of that clan had been left dumbstruck by this pleasant surprise!

Their mothers used to tell them a poem — [When one would lift one's head with a hungry stomach; dragon meat will fall from the sky!]

How could they be polite at such a good occasion? Thereupon, everyone swarmed around the dragon. They peeled its skin and scooped out its meat. They extracted its blood essence, and took its inner core...

These people obviously didn't know that the blood essence of this ninth grade spirit beast was incomplete... and thus was useless. Therefore, they were so happy that they were unable to hide their happiness. [Oh shoot! We only wanted to get a few drops of its blood, but we luckily got the whole beast...]

This formidable and matchless ninth grade spirit beast didn't die by the hands of a Supreme Level Expert at the end of it. Instead, it

got killed by the hands of a colony of ants. This could only be described as 'divine intervention'!

This manner of death was obviously too aggrieving for a powerful ninth grade spirit beast!

This grandiose ninth grade spirit beast had been turned into spoils of war once this toiling was over. Nothing was left except for damaged meat.

These experts hadn't sensed any danger. So, they had become muddle-headed because of being pleasantly surprised under these circumstances. Thus, they basically invited a situation that could only be called as 'digging their own graves'— all of these fellows revealed greed in their eyes. They then pleaded the two Elders to use the meat of the ninth grade spirit beast. They wanted to roast its meat so that they could eat it! This was a ninth grade spirit beast. Where else could they get to eat the meat of a ninth grade spirit beast in their lives?

[I would die with no regrets if I get to eat this meat!]

The two Elders were in an excellent mood. They weren't able to conceal their happiness either. So, they waved their hands and approved of it without giving it much thought.

Therefore, these people arranged firewood, and lit a fire to roast the meat of the dragon. Everyone was in a full swing, and they showed their hundred percent enthusiasm.

The dreamt about obtaining many good items and making their clan rise in the Middle Three Heavens as they ate.

However, the brutal reality struck at this point of time. The 'Extreme joy turned into sorrow'– this is the best explanation of what happened there afterwards!

How could the flames rising from roasting the dragon's meat not have thick smoke? The thick smoke rose up and collected... The Black Devil Clan had been running around, but hadn't gained any

profits of late. However, they were quick to discover the smoke...

...

Chapter 556: I am Looking for a Wife, Not Meat to Eat!

The reason why the people of the Black Devil Clan were hiding in the peripheral area was because... Black Devil Clan was always ready to loot any clan's victory gains... This had been a consistent tradition of the Black Devil Clan — Charge and break through the lines of the other clans. You obtain the gains from victory first. And then, we will snatch it and flee...

They couldn't eat cooked food since their operations depended on ambush strategy. After all, smoke would rise from the cooking. And, those great clans had plenty of old foxes. So, who would the Black Devil Clan loot if people didn't pass from here?

Therefore, they could only eat raw rations.

Dammit! The people of the Black Devil Clan had been eating raw food in this Northern Wilderness. However, they discovered thick smoke rising in the sky from a not too faraway place... [Crap! Someone is roasting meat?]

Therefore, they came over here by following the smoke, and hit the jackpot. [These idiots have dared to roast meat here? You're roasting and cooking meat here...? Wouldn't it hinder the operations of our Black Devil? Moreover, this area is a peripheral area. So, which big clan can be here?]

[Big clans generally go into the inner parts of the wilderness.]

[So, which ordinary clan has dared not to give face to the Black Devil Clan...?]

Therefore, the people of Black Devil felt much relieved and relaxed when they were rushing here. They finally arrived here and looked around. And, the first thing they noticed was that the blood was still flowing from the corpse of the Single-Horned Dragon...

[Fu*k!] The ten or more King Level Experts of the Black Devil suddenly became wide-eyed.

[This is a fu*king gift bestowed upon us by heavens. How can such a small clan get such a precious thing...? Doesn't this mean that the heaven has bestowed this upon us? Why else would there be such a coincidence?]

Thus, the people of Black Devil Clan confidently and boldly rushed in with their sleeves rolled up for a battle.

Consequently, the people who were jubilantly eating the dragon meat were forced to face their bad luck!

A fierce battle ensued, and the people who had eaten the meat of dragon died in it. This proved the saying – A dragon's meat can't be eaten causally! It was surely a Single-Horned Dragon, but it still had the word 'dragon' in its name.

All of the blood essence, dragon muscles, dragon bones, dragon skin, and other things were stolen. However, the two King Level Experts took the inner core, and desperately broke out of the siege. But, they burned their vitality in the process, and got riddled with scars as they made it out and bolted.

The people of the Black Devil Clan were unwilling to let go, and chased after them. However, the vitality of the two King Level Experts got used up quickly as they ran for a distance of thousand miles. And, they ran into Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan when they had fully exhausted themselves...

It could be said that this bizarre coincidence wouldn't have taken place if they had even a little bit of strength left!

However, the Great Young Master Tan didn't need to spend any strength in getting his hands on this inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast; he got it free of cost! It was equivalent to an undeserved profit coming flying from beyond the heaven...

He then stuffed the undeserved fortune in his pocket, and made a

run for it!

And, this master-and-disciple duo was successfully able to run away owing to the extraordinary sensing abilities of Meng Chao Ran. Three days passed by, and they weren't being pursued anymore! They had surely been intercepted several times. But, they had taken advantage of the enemy's lack of besieging prowess, and had successfully fled at each instance...

The experts of the Black Devil Clan had obviously been angered by this...

Therefore, they had let off the news – all the squads of the Black Devil must get ready to rob a victim after beating him unconscious with a club. Consequently, they started to focus on pursuing and attacking the targets. Moreover, they had two Emperor Level Experts in their ranks...

This increased Meng Chao Ran's difficulties on their escape route.

Then, an unexpected incident happened at such a frightening time. This accident was sudden, and came without warning. In fact, it even left a man of Meng Chao Ran's forbearance dumbfounded. Moreover, he was so perplexed that he simply failed to understand the reason behind it!

This accident had happened to Tan Tan.

Great Young Master Tan had obtained a ninth grade spirit beast's inner core. And, it was similar to finding the most precious treasure for him. He would often hold it and take a look at it with pleasure. However, one noon... the Great Young Master Tan tried to bite it for some reason...

Tan Tan had taken a vow that he wouldn't exert himself! But, he had to try...

It was only for his research. Everyone knew that Tan Tan's craving for researches had always been very strong...

In fact, Meng Chao Ran was at his side at that time. But, he only shook his head with a smile on his face. After all, he had tacitly accepted that his disciple was mischievous... [Tan Tan can't go without being mischievous...!]

He hadn't even bitten it; he had only kept it in his mouth... However, that ninth grade spirit beast's inner core suddenly came to life. Then, it suddenly rushed into Tan Tan's mouth with all its might.

It was a fist-sized inner core...

Tan Tan let out a sudden strange scream. His eyes then rolled back, and revealed the whites! He didn't get anything out of it. Moreover, that fist-sized inner core of the ninth grade spirit beast got stuck in his throat...

Tan Tan was left to scream in pain...

He opened his mouth, and it stayed open...

Meng Chao Ran turned pale with fright. He hastily went to take it out... but, he couldn't take it out no matter what he did. Meng Chao Ran became very anxious as he watched his disciple choking to death. So, he straightforwardly took out his sword to lever it open...

The inner core stuck in Tan Tan's throat seemed desperate to go down. It seemed desperate to get inside Tan Tan's body... Therefore, Meng Chao Ran pushed it down since Great Young Master Tan was going to die of choking... And, it somehow turned out to be effective!

This inner core ferociously drilled inwards with the help of the external force... And, Tan Tan's throat forcibly widened to twice its size. Then, this inner core entered Tan Tan's belly at a leisurely pace...

Meng Chao Ran's eyebrows trembled, and his hair stood on end. In fact, he almost fainted. It looked as if a finger-thin snake had

swallowed an egg. Tan Tan's neck bulged up to an awful extent... as it went down.

The master and the disciple were as if struck by lightning!

There was distress on Meng Chao Ran's face... [Ninth grade spirit beast's inner core ah! Even an Emperor Level Expert won't be able to stop himself from exploding if he eats it raw, right? My disciple... my poor little disciple...]

Tan Tan also became anxious. He tried to vomit it out, but couldn't do it. So, he took off his pants, and tried to take it out from below by using a twig as a 'hook'...

His belly was overwhelmingly hurting as he tried to take it out from under, but the inner core didn't come out. It seemed as if it had settled down in his belly...

Meng Chao Ran gave Tan Tan a laxative. However, it didn't work on Tan Tan. So, Meng Chao Ran increased the dosage at a gradual pace. He had eventually given Tan Tan about ten times the normal dose of laxative... It could be assumed that the Single-Horned Dragon would've gotten diarrhoea if it had taken this much laxative...

However, there was some reaction this time – Tan Tan had eaten up ten times of a normal laxative dosage. So, he let out more than a dozen or so smelly farts... one after another...

However, there was no response down below. And, it seemed that ten times of laxative... had only induced these farts.

Meng Chao Ran couldn't find a solution either. He deeply sighed since he felt helpless. [Dammit! I have only received two disciples. One is Chu Yang... who already exists as in defiance of nature. However, I didn't expect that this little disciple of mine will have the physique of an evildoer...]

[He should still get diarrhoea after taking this medicine even if he has a monstrous body... right?]

Fortunately... Tan Tan's body didn't undergo the terrible phenomenon of exploding even after two days had passed. So, Meng Chao Ran felt relieved in his heart.

But, Tan Tan started to have a fever.

Moreover, this fever was different than an ordinary fever.

His body temperature was getting higher and higher and higher! However, the feverish Tan Tan's spirits had also gone up a hundredfold. Moreover, the feverish Tan Tan was somehow healthy and active. In fact, the feverish Tan Tan... didn't even need to sleep...

Tan Tan's body temperature eventually rose to a frightening level... In fact, Tan Tan could've evaporated if Meng Chao Ran hadn't circulated his martial power after putting his hand on Tan Tan's forehead! But, the person who had the blistering fever felt as if nothing was wrong.

It had never been heard that eating a ninth grade spirit beast's core could have such effects...

Meng Chao Ran was rich in knowledge and experience. However, even he had never heard of such an incident...

Tan Tan had eaten an inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast. But, no growth could be seen in his spiritual power. Instead, his body was heating more and more. His vitality had also increased more and more. In fact, he would be so active the entire day that it seemed as if he could swallow a mountain whole...

However, burning like this was obviously not a good thing. Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan also understood this in their hearts. So, Meng Chao Ran left the hiding place along with Tan Tan. And, he took his disciple towards the mysterious ice plane.

[The mysterious ice plane hasn't melted for ten-thousand years. So, it should defuse Tan Tan's body temperature, right?] – This was Meng Chao Ran's only hope.

As a result, they got caught up in the chasing and killing when they came out of the hiding place. However, Meng Chao Ran only focused on advancing forward for his disciple's sake. And, he ended up exposing his own traces in the process...

Tan Tan had been excited for several days at first. But, he became anxious later on.

"Master, what to do about this...? My body is so hot..." Tan Tan lay on his stomach. However, the ice that hadn't melted in years suddenly changed into a pool. And then, it began to emit steam like a hot spring... Tan Tan leapt up from the pool with splashing sound. Then, his body emitted out steam, and his clothes dried up in an instant.

Tan Tan wanted to cry, but had no tears. "My laundry would be done without drying my clothes under sun. I would only need to stick the clothes to my body. In fact, I wouldn't even need to waste spirit energy..."

"It won't matter if your body continues to remain hot as long as there's no change... and your body doesn't show any abnormality..." Meng Chao Ran had no other choice but to console his disciple, "It's all right. It's only high temperature... and nothing more. You will get used to it after a while."

"I can get used to it... But, the problem is that others cannot." Tan Tan became sullen. He said, "I will get married to Xie Dan Feng in future. But, what would I do when I take her into the bridal room...? She will get roasted when her body would be under mine. In fact, one would be able to eat her roasted meat if this problem isn't dealt with... Master, boohoo... I am looking for a wife, and not human meat to eat! You have to solve this for me!"

"Get lost!~~~" Meng Chao Ran kicked his disciple to a distance of several hundred feet with a bang sound. After all, he was at the end of his patience. Tan Tan got embedded in the mountain wall. Meng Chao Ran gritted his teeth and cursed in a low voice, "You want me

to solve this for you? Come here and I will solve this for you, you chicken!"

Tan Tan slid down from the mountain-wall. This action left the big outline of a body in the wall. After that, he turned over trembling. He then happily yet shamelessly ran over, "Master, I have thought of a solution."

"What solution?" Meng Chao Ran curiously asked.

"I will give her an ice crystal if my body is still hot when I enter the bridal room... Then, I will cover her whole body... except for down there..." Tan Tan suggested in a serious manner.

Meng Chao Rao faced upwards and heaved a long sigh... He looked at the mountain wall, and felt an urge to bang his own head against it!

"Oh, it won't do... she wouldn't get roasted elsewhere, but she will get cooked down there..." Tan Tan sighed in despair. He had discovered the loophole in his own plan. So, he couldn't help but seethe in anger. He felt so aggrieved that he wanted to vomit out blood. He crazily cussed, "Why is the goddamn heaven toying with me? I have fu*king turned this way. How will it be easy to fu*king look for a wife now..."

Great Young Master Tan became very furious!

Meng Chao Ran was also angry. He grabbed his disciple's lapel, and started to cuss for the first time in his life, "Are you fu*king going to stop talking right now...? Or do you want me to kill you? Can't you shut your fu*king mouth for once? You motherfu*ker... Do you want me kill you?"

Tan Tan suddenly became startled.

"Master, you swore at me... boohoo... Master, you're abusing me... boohoo..." Tan Tan covered his face and started crying.

Meng Chao was so much in pain that he didn't wish to live. So, he squatted down, and held his head.

...

Chapter 557: Kill People in a Way That No One Hears a Sound!

Meng Chao Ran was so grieved that he wish he were dead. [This Tan Tan can even force a sage to turn into a villain if they stay with this guy! This is even worse than how I felt when I was forcibly separated from my beloved... this is fu*king unbearable!]

[What fu*king sin have I committed that I've received such a disciple...]

Meng Chao Ran had always been cultured, refined, and aloof towards everything. However, he had been compelled to turn nefarious by his own disciple! Moreover, he couldn't even do anything to fix it...

...

"The Mysterious Ice Level is up ahead," Meng Chao Ran spoke up in a weary manner, "I can't do anything if this place turns out to be useless as well. So, you will just have to deal with your 'heating up' issue..."

Suddenly, he made a blank face, "Pay attention, there has been no sound of activity from the people who were chasing after us. However, they must've known that we will come here. So, they must be lying in wait up ahead to ambush us! So, keep up your spirits for me!"

"How would they know?" Tan Tan was at a loss as he asked.

"Bastard! Do you have a pig's brain?" Meng Chao Ran became angry, "You think they haven't seen that you've come here steaming the entire route? And, what else besides the Mysterious Ice Layer can eliminate this kind of temperature? Are you willing to die because of your own damn stupidity?"

Chu Yang had heard Tan Tan's voice from a distance. So, he had obviously understood the situation... [These people of the Black

Devil Clan wish to ambush my master and junior martial brother!]

[I haven't even settled the account for the time when you guys hurt my Mo Qing Wu... And now, you're targeting my master and junior martial brother?]

Chu Yang felt extremely angry in his heart!

He looked the location where they had laid out the ambush, and secretly counted their numbers. There should've been about twenty people at this side! Moreover, the overall strength of these people made it obvious that there was no hope for Chu Yang, his master, and his junior martial brother to emerge victorious...

In fact, there would be very low chances of a successful escape if they were to fall into their ambush.

After all, the Black Devil Clan had sent these people here. So, it was obvious that none of these people would be weaklings.

This was a major event which related directly to the decade's worth of future prospects of the Black Devil Clan. How could they be reckless in these circumstances?

Therefore, Chu Yang felt that he couldn't act rashly either. After all, the three of them would have their graves dug here in case he acted without thinking...

Chu Yang gazed around. Then, he submerged into the layer of ice.

He then stealthily made his way to the back of these Black Devil Clan's people, and nobody was able to discover him.

It must be mentioned that everyone had been focusing on the two people who were about to arrive here from the front...

[Ninth grade spirit beast's inner core, ah! It's with these two people!]

Many experts of the Black Devil Clan were so angry that they had almost collapsed from excessive anger in the backdrop of this

incident!

They were two mere King Level Experts! And, the Black Devil Clan had dispatched a troop of five famed individuals to chase after them. But, these two small loaches were crafty in many ways. They also had very high sense of vigilance. And, this had irritated their pursuers to death!

They had tried to besiege them, pursue them, and block them on many occasions. They had set up countless of traps for them. But, these two people had still managed to escape and hide every single time! In fact, it was like these two had some kind of foresight since they seemed to be predicting everything.

Therefore, the Black Devil Clan sent out another forty experts as time passed. However, they still couldn't catch these two! This was simply unimaginable...

However, they got lucky when they discovered a phenomenon afterwards. And, it made everyone very certain their hearts – [One of these two has either a very high fever... or he has been poisoned by fire.]

[There was always water available in the places they've passed through.]

[However, these two have turned towards the direction of Mysterious Ice Level... So, they probably intend to neutralise the issue with the mysterious ice.]

Therefore, the Black Devil Clan's people arrived here in advance to ambush these two. And, they had been waiting there for the exhausted enemy in a kingly manner ever since. However, how could someone be burning up so fiercely in the cold weather of this Northern Wilderness... Everybody remained perplexed about this despite much thought...

Every person of the Black Devil Clan was gnashing their teeth... [I will do that once I catch those two... I will do this... and that as

well...]

[I will torment those two to death! Giving them an easy death would be unfair to the tiredness and pain that I had to bear in past few days because of them...]

The experts of Black Devil Clan lay on their stomachs, and focused their eyes. They saw two silhouettes slowly coming here from far away. Their bodies were embedded finger-deep into the mysterious ice.

[You two have come a little too quickly.]

[But, the anxiety was killing me anyway!]

Everyone was feeling anxious. But, they didn't dare to act rashly. [We have encountered them several times at this distance. So, we know that they will run away if anyone of us moves even a little.]

[And, we won't be able to overtake them even if we chase after them!]

[So, we need to stay steady for now. Let them come closer and closer...]

This King Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan was anxiously waiting. His body seemed like an arrow nocked on a pulled bowstring. It was all-set to set off!

Suddenly, he felt something peculiar under his body... But, he didn't pay attention to it. [This Mysterious Ice Level has stayed unchanged since ages! What can possibly be down there? It's not like someone drilled their way down there or something, right?]

Even he smiled at this idea of his own.

But then...

A transparent thing suddenly rose up from under the layer of mysterious ice. Then... the section of a sword point silently appeared under his neck...

His head was raised at this moment, and he was trying his best to

keep watch in front. So, this posture was very good! In fact, he appeared like a chicken that was waiting to get slaughtered. After all, the skin of his throat had become tight because of this posture...

Puff!

The sword point suddenly pierced through his throat like a thunderbolt. And, the sword energy flowed into his body like tides. The first thing it did was... it took over his brain, and destroyed it!

Then, it took control of his body, and ruptured his meridians and Dantian.

This King Level Expert only got time to stick out his eyes... However, he didn't even get enough time to show any reaction after that! His body still appeared to be in its original posture. But, it had changed from the stretched and taut one into a soft one lying on the ice. A pool of blood gushed out from the wound on his throat in silence. It dyed the mysterious ice under his body in red, and got frozen immediately-after...

"I've used too much power. Too much blood has flowed out. There will be too much trouble if someone discovers the smell of blood," Chu Yang sighed under the layer of the mysterious ice since he was upset with the result. [I should've acted with restraint while going for the first kill. I shouldn't have put so much strength into it...]

He had the help of Nine Tribulations Sword Point and the strength of Sword Spirit. So, he had quickly sneaked to here from the spot where he had mined the ice cold spirit fruit. Then, he had acted stealthily at the first opportunity, and had violently killed the King Level Expert!

However, his whole body had almost frozen still because of the extreme cold.

This kind of stealth-kill movement required full assistance of

Sword Spirit and the Nine Tribulations Sword. But, it wouldn't protect him from the cold. His Seven Yin Cold Energy was still in the Nine Tribulations Sword...

He had resisted the cold by relying on the help of the spiritual power in his body... But, this was a ten-thousand-years-old mysterious ice!

However, there wasn't enough time to consider anything. Chu Yang took control of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and secretly went to the ambush spot of another person. Then, he hurriedly took a Mysterious Yang Jade Core from the Nine Tribulations Space, and slid it into his bosom. And, he felt a little warm and cosy because of it effect.

A slightly inaudible 'puff' sound came out as a tiny blood scar appeared on the throat of another King Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan. This man had also been lying there with his full concentration fixed thirty feet away. He lowered his head without making any noise, and died.

Even the wildest dreams of these experts of the Black Devil Clan couldn't have imagined that there was someone hidden below the surface of this ten-thousand-years-old mysterious ice. Moreover, he was moving stealthily, and was attacking them one after another.

Their ultimate goal was to keep their focus on the two people who could be seen approaching from a distance...

That side, "Master... you don't worry. I will hug the enemy if they come!" His sound felt to be getting closer and closer. He then happily said in a shrill voice... like that of a male duck, "I will burn them!"

"Hmm," Meng Chao Ran powerlessly responded.

This side, another 'puff' sound came...

Chu Yang had cold expression in his eyes. And, his body moved

again like lightning.

...

That side, "I don't know where Chu Yang has gone. It is very strange. I just hope that I don't end up burning him out of sheer happiness when I see him," his voice was still like the mixture of a male duck's scream and a wolf's howl.

"Ugh," Meng Chao Ran rolled his eyes.

This side, another 'puff' sound came!

Chu Yang shifted places again. He was under the mysterious ice, but his warm blood was boiling. After all, he was filled with killing intention! Moreover, the sneak attacks had been going smoothly. So, his nerves were filled with delight.

...

That side, "I feel sorry for my Xiao Dan Feng... I haven't seen her for quite a while. I will surely want to kiss her lips when I meet her... but, I'm afraid that I will end up scorching her delicate lips..." that strange voice approached even closer.

"..." Meng Chao Ran didn't utter a word in response.

This side, two 'puff' sounds came in a row.

...

That side..."Sigh, I think it will be a tragedy. There's a chance that Xiao Dan Feng may have a problem with my fever... I think I will be the number-one man in the world who got shoved into bachelorhood by a fever if she backs out of the promise... But, being number-one in the world would also be an honor..." his voice chattered on.

This side, 'Puff!'

...

That side..."I somewhat regret it, Master. I am definitely not as

good as Chu Yang. I can't go to the Iron Cloud Nation and work as a minister there. Also, I will make the worst general... And... and, now I've got this fever... I have a very bad luck..."

Meng Chao Ran's complexion became deathly white...

This side, 'Puff!''Puff!'

There was a bunch of nonsense and daydreaming going-on on one side. Tan Tan was immersed in whimsical thoughts that made no sense. And, he was chattering on and on. It could leave any with an urge to commit suicide.

However, murders were taking place on the other side. In fact, these kills were so silently executed that no one had heard a sound. The murders were happening again and again. And, Chu Yang was chopping lives without creating mess. In fact, every King Level Expert had silently died in an unjust manner.

Consequently, this quiet Mysterious Ice Layer had turned into a graveyard without anyone realizing it!

Chu Yang had killed ten people in an extremely short period of time! This was the highest speed he could achieve! But, it was far from enough if the numbers of the enemy's team was taken into account. In fact, this couldn't even eliminate the threat!

However, his good luck had also come to an end because he didn't have enough time now.

However, Meng Chao Ran suddenly seemed to have discovered something when Chu Yang was about to start again. He then fiercely pulled Tan Tan, and stopped his footsteps.

A proud laughter was sent out from the ground. Then, a voice darkly said, "You two are very difficult to wait for. But, you have finally taken your first step on this road to hell!"

The people of the Black Devil Clan stood up from the ground as this dark voice echoed.

Actually... only the ones who were alive had stood up. However, ten people hadn't stood up.

Chu Yang also silently drilled out of the ice, and hid behind a big stone. His complexion became tensed as he looked at the situation in front of him. He moved his vision vigilantly and randomly. He looked around to size up the terrain in search for things he could take advantage of...

[I've only killed ten of them. And, there were twenty people on this side. So, only half are remaining.]

In addition, ten individuals came out from the other two sides! The particularly serious matter was that there were two people who had very formidable auras. They were clearly Emperor Level Experts!

The three teams had formed a three-side pocket.

Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan were at the entrance of this pocket.

They didn't have enough time to run away from this distance. So, they would voluntarily give the enemy a chance to kill them if they tried to turn and run.

The severity of the circumstance had indeed reached its worst.

...

Chapter 558: This Sword is the Best of Ancient and Modern Times!

Meng Chao Ran's complexion was still aloof. He felt a little regret in his heart. After all, Tan Tan had made his mood very chaotic. So, he had sunken into a deeply dumbfounded mental state, and this had left his sharp perception ability to decrease very substantially. Consequently, he couldn't detect this ambush in advance. Then, they realized that it was too late by the time they had reached here. And, this held true despite the fact that they hadn't truly landed into the enemy's encirclement yet.

However, Meng Chao Ran instantaneously regained his aloof mood when faced with powerful enemies that were dozens of times more in number. So, he slightly smiled and replied, "We aren't walking on the road to hell; at least not today. We will surely walk on it when the right day comes. But, you guys have still been waiting here for us in this world of ice and snow. It must've been very difficult for you guys. I feel somewhat sorry for you..."

His voice was natural, and his tone was relaxed. In fact, it seemed as if the people in front of him were his old friends, and he was merely having a heart-to-heart conversation with them. The people of Black Devil Clan heard this, and felt as if they had bathed in spring breeze.

In fact, everyone felt guilty for a moment. [This man is so cool even in the face of death!]

[Only three kinds of people can remain calm in such a dire situation — First, the ones who know that they have a lot of strength, and are confident that they can easily get away. Second are the ones who are detached from the bindings of life and death. And third... are the one who have gone crazy.]

[But, this man clearly doesn't possess that kind of strength. And, he doesn't seem like a madman from his mannerisms. So, this

means... he stands detached from of life and death!]

[He has transcended life and death!]

[Birth and death are no more than external ornaments of life in his eyes. So, they don't matter much.]

[Such a man can't be considered scary because he doesn't have strength. But, he's respectable! In fact, he commands respect!]

The people of Black Devil Clan looked at the lazy and dull warmth on Meng Chao Ran's face. And, those thirty experts of the Black Devil Clan didn't get to experience the thrill of 'ultimately blocking their targets'!

Not only him, but his thoughtless and unsightly disciple was also looking at them with slanting eyes. It seemed as if he didn't give a damn about those twenty eight King Level Experts and two Emperor Level Experts.

In fact, the expression in his eyes was like that of a preying eagle looking at a herd of rabbits!

"Sire, hand over the ninth grade spirit beast's inner core first," an Emperor Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan exposed admiration in his eyes as he said, "Your death is unavoidable. But, I can promise you that your death would be painless since I admire your aloofness."

Meng Chao Ran shook his head, and was left incapable of holding back his laughter. He slowly pulled out his sword and softly said, "Why would I cherish my body in the face of a battle? Everyone eventually dies. So, there's no need for you to make my death painless."

He looked at the shiny blade of his sword. He then said with a sigh, "And, as far as the inner core of nine grade spirit beast is concerned... it's impossible to give it to you!"

"Why?" That Emperor Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan became angry. He was somewhat astonished and didn't know what

to ask. After all, he had felt that these words had some special meaning. In fact, it had seemed as if they had some secret problem, and that's why they couldn't hand over the inner core.

"I mean... you can't get the ninth grade spirit beast's inner core by any means," Meng Chao Ran faintly smiled. He then said in a gentle temperament, "Only one good-quality head lies here. Who wants to take first?"

The pupils of the Emperor Level Expert of Black Devil Clan shrank as he looked at Meng Chao Ran. A killing intention came out and filled the air. He waved his hand, and shouted, "Kill!"

Suddenly, a scream resounded.

"Ah!~~~" The leader of one of the three teams was a ninth grade King Level Expert. He had turned around, and was about to give orders to attack. But, he had suddenly realized that ten individuals were mysteriously missing from his side!

"Where are our men? Wang Erhei, Zhao San Niu, Sun Wu Dan... where did they go...?" the formation of Black Devil people became disorganized along with his shout.

Moreover, his shout went unanswered...

Several people turned back and leapt up to look. Then, several fearful cries were heard in a row, "Emperor Master! They... they... all... are dead!"

After that, those several people came over trembling. "Dead... they are dead... they were killed from underground..."

"Stop your fu*king nonsense!" the Emperor Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan became angry. And, he flung a slap on his face as he scolded, "There's a ten-thousand-years-old mysterious ice beneath us! Do you understand what ten-thousand-years-old mysterious ice means?"

The body of the King Level Expert revolved once because of the slap. He felt dizzy as he replied while crying, "It's true... Emperor

Master..."

The Emperor Expert of the Black Devil Clan concentrated his vision. He then flew over there and examined the ten frozen bodies. And, his complexion became more and more unsightly as a result. Then, he suddenly stood upright and shouted, "Where is the bastard who has stealthily attacked our men? Come out and have a fair fight with me if you have the guts!"

However, silence prevailed once his voice had faded. Heavy snow fluttered down, but there was no response.

He carefully examined the surface of the ice around his body as he cussed. However, he still couldn't believe that someone had carried out assassinations while hiding underground!

[But, this is mysterious ice ah! How can someone go inside of it and hide?]

"Everyone beware. There's a mysterious enemy hiding beneath us!" The complexion of the Emperor Expert became cautious. At present, the most worrying thing for him was that this hidden enemy could sneak underground, and could move about stealthily.

Meng Chao Ran and his disciple were already surrounded. And, it could be said that they couldn't escape by any means. But, this mysterious underground killer had appeared at this time. And, he seemed to be after these people's lives! This man was a senior Emperor Expert in own merit. However, he wouldn't dare to say that his life was safe in the face of this bizarre assassination method.

In fact, the Emperor Expert had found himself covered in cold sweat when he had examined the sword-cuts on the throats of the ten corpses.

[This person seems to be a cold-blooded murderer! Moreover, he's an extremely experienced cold-blooded murderer. He has killed ten of our people under our nose, and nobody noticed it!]

[I've never heard of such assassination technique!]

Everyone looked under their feet once they heard this warning. It seemed as if they were hoping to tackle this enemy. It was evident that they were afraid that a sword might drill out from under their feet if they didn't pay attention.

But, Chu Yang wasn't present under the ice at this time.

Instead, he had quietly come out long ago. And, he was now moving in the direction he had selected.

He would occupy a high ground as long as he would arrive at that designated spot. Then, he could unleash the bigger killer move in one-go. He could tear open an opening in the enemy's formation, and could use it to flee with his master and junior martial brother!

Chu Yang already knew the nearby terrain by heart.

People of the Black Devil Clan remained very careful and vigilant for a long time. But, they didn't notice anything. Finally, Tan Tan couldn't help but smile, "Master, look at these people. Their eyeballs are attentively gazing at the ground, but don't they look exactly like a bunch of dung beetles looking for human shit?"

Meng Chao Ran replied to it in a serious manner, "Don't make irresponsible remarks."

He paused and further said, "You brat, when will you drop this bad habit? Why do you always have to speak the truth at the worst moment?"

He then continued to give honest instructions, "Tan Tan, remember this for the future — the truth always offends someone. You can't recklessly tell the truth to the people of Jianghu. In fact, you must tell the lie when it comes to it. We can see that they look like dung beetles, but we shouldn't speak it out loud. You know? Wouldn't they get angry if you call them dung beetles to their face? Put yourself in their shoes. Wouldn't you get angry if someone called you a dung beetle?"

Meng Chao Ran understood that they didn't have any chance of making an escape while confronting these people! Therefore, they simply let loose of themselves. Consequently, these two were left to ruthlessly mock their enemies on their faces.

"You're right, Master." Tan Tan became a yes-man and said, "Master, this disciple won't dare to speak the truth from now on. In fact, I will especially tell lies..."

The thirty people shot sixty rays of vicious lights from their eyes when they heard this doctrine!

"Look, the dung beetles got angry, right?" Meng Chao Ran stared at his disciple.

"That's not very surprising. After all, there's no dung here. So, they obviously can't find it, and must've become angry as a result," Tan Tan replied very understandingly. Then, he foolishly smiled towards those King level Experts and said, "You tell me... I'm right, right?"

"Capture these two first!" The complexion of the other tall Emperor Expert of the Black Devil Clan had become purple out of anger. He shouted loudly, "I will grab the tongue of this talkative bastard with my own hands!"

"Kill!" More than twenty people flew forwards.

"Well, come on." A detached expression flashed in Meng Chao Ran's eyes. He gently smiled and pulled out his sword. He launched the Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement skill at full speed. And, he changed into a crisscrossing sword-light along with his sword.

Tan Tan let out a mad cry. He too suddenly pulled out his sword. And, he rushed out following Meng Chao Ran.

Suddenly, an unexpected event occurred!

A fierce and swift sword-light suddenly fell like a thunderbolt from the Ninth Heaven! It then slashed diagonally like the glowing tail of a meteor. It had come slashing down from high above!

This sword strike had come without any prior warning. In fact, everyone had experienced a strange and frightening illusion when it had appeared in their peripheral visions with a flash!

Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword – Chu Yang – had used his entire strength. He had charged this sword move before he had unleashed it. 'What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world'!

He had attacked with his full strength; he hadn't held anything back!

He had silently launched the attack!

The first King Level Expert could only get time to cry out in fear by the time it arrived. After all, Chu Yang had pierced his body! The speed of this sword was so high that this King level Expert didn't even get the time to block!

The sword-light slashed three people as Chu Yang rushed into the encirclement. Then, he coldly shouted, "Follow me!"

He had hardly covered a distance of seventy feet when he shot towards another King Level Expert! This King Level Expert became scared out of his wits. After all, he didn't have the time to dodge. So, he could only pull out his sword and face the energy's attack...

However, the sword of this King Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan changed into scraps and filled the whole sky when the two swords came in contact. Then, the body of this man was also torn to pieces. Moreover, Chu Yang had already rushed towards his next target!

Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan also reacted very rapidly. They followed this stunning sword-light, and rushed outwards with their full strength!

Chu Yang's timing wasn't necessarily the best. However, the positioning of his attack was the optimal option in this setup.

It was because the two Emperor Experts of the Black Devil Clan were standing on the either sides of Chu Yang. He had assessed

what these two could see from their lines of sight when he had launched this move. And, he had realized that their attacks would get obstructed by the bodies of their own subordinates in case they decided to make a move!

'What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world'!

This fierceness and swiftness of this more was indeed the best of ancient and modern times!

It wasn't until Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan had rushed out of the encirclement that the remaining strokes of this sword-move manifested — A long sword streaked across the vast sky, and it suddenly issued loud 'boom' and 'bang' sounds!

A stuffy yet thunderous sound spread out.

The might of this sword was too frightening!

A sword-light was obliquely sent out from behind the encirclement. It killed the first person in the encirclement. Then, Chu Yang turned around and killed the second person. He had had already moved partly sideways by this time. So, he killed the third person as well. Then, he again turned over and killed the fourth person. Then, he killed the fifth person who was standing right across the fourth person... and moved a little sideways from his body!

Sixth... he didn't strike the sixth!

The sword-light flashed like a thunderbolt as it rushed out of the encirclement! The sword-light was still courageously moving forward with its residual power like a lightning...

...

Chapter 559: I Will Handle Them!

The shadow of this calamitous sword was still flickering in the eyes of the experts of Black Devil Clan! Moreover, nobody had been able to see who was hidden within this bundle of sword light!

A silence spread!

Both the Emperor Level Experts had sunk into a shock after they had witnessed the might of this frightening sword. In fact, it seemed as if it was a nightmare. They then reacted and looked towards Tan Tan; he had just run out of their encirclement.

The King Level Expert who was nearest to Tan Tan reacted, and quickly thrust his palm to attack in an instinctive action.

His palm patted on Tan Tan's back with a 'bang'!

Suddenly, an 'ah' scream was issued as a burst of green smoke rose up. Tan Tan did two somersaults after getting hit by this man. Then, Tan Tan crawled up as if nothing had happened, and started to rush out wildly once again...

Everyone saw that this King Level Expert was looking at his hand in disbelief! So, everyone looked at his hand, and saw that his hand was giving off steam. Moreover, the smell of roasted meat was coming from it. A layer of blisters had also appeared on his palm...

Everyone was overwhelmed with shock when they saw this. [The King Level Expert had condensed his martial power on his palm when he had hit that guy. So, how did these blisters appear on his hand? After all, this is the hand of a King Level Expert!]

[Is this bastard carrying a volcano on his back or something? Does magma flow in his veins instead of blood?]

Both the Emperor Level Experts drifted over as lightly as smoke, and left an ice cold order in their wake –"Chase!" Their robes fluttered in the wind as they covered a distance of a hundred feet.

Both the Emperor Experts felt ashamed and resentful! It was because a thought had spontaneously arisen in their hearts when they had seen the performance of the sword a while back... [I would have been done for if this sword had been aimed at me a moment ago...!]

[This sword is the best of ancient and present times... we've never seen something like this!]

A galloping dragon-like sword-light turned around a corner along with Tan Tan and Meng Chao Ran. Then, it finally came to a stop. Chu Yang fell down to the ground with a 'thump' sound. And, his whole body became powerless after that!

This sword attack had exhausted his strength. He had displayed his entire power; he hadn't held anything back! Therefore, he had next-to-no strength to get up now...

"Chu Yang...?" Meng Chao Ran stared at him. He hadn't expected that the one who had come to save him at this critical moment would turn out to be his own disciple!

"Master..." Chu Yang powerlessly smiled. He quickly swallowed an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill to restore his strength.

Meng Chao Ran nearly choked with emotion! [I had given in to desperation. I was ready to give up and meet death. But, my disciple came out of nowhere and saved my life!]

Meng Chao Ran's train of thoughts had started to surge like a tide.

However, he still reacted quickly. He carried Chu Yang, and dragged Tan Tan. Then, he ferociously took a deep breath. His white jade-like face had suddenly turned blood red. Then, he puffed out a breath. And, his body went out flying like an arrow.

His current speed was three times more than his max speed on usual days!

He was burning his vitality to achieve this...

To rush wildly at extremely highest speed!

It was the same method those two dying King Level Experts had used in order to run from the pursuit of the Black Devil Clan. And, Meng Chao Ran was also using this method now...

Meng Chao Ran had always looked at 'life and death' indifferently. But, his two disciples were at his side at this time. So, he couldn't afford to die! He had to stay alive... Moreover, he also had to save his disciples from danger!

Even if it meant that he would have to stake his own life!

Meng Chao Ran suddenly accelerated. He was carrying a man and dragging another. He rapidly pulled away to a faraway distance, and it seemed as if the God of Wind had been helping him. He turned a corner like lightning, and his figure disappeared with that.

The Experts of the Black Devil Clan angrily chased over. It seemed as if they had lost their minds.

There were forty experts in the beginning! However, ten of them had been secretly killed. Then, five more were killed by the sword... So, only twenty-five were left!

This was unendurable for both the Emperor Level Experts of the Black Devil Clan. After all, they had always been proud and arrogant. However, such an incident had happened under their leaderships... So, their eyes had turned bloodshot.

"From where did this Sword King come?!" One of the Emperor Level Experts was seething in anger. This Emperor Level Expert was named Qian Wan Tong. He also used swords for weapons. However, he wasn't a pro at using sword. Consequently, he obviously understood the level of terror that sword had induced.

[That sort of swift and fierce sword was moving-about after being paired up with a body. That was clearly the unification of man and

sword. Moreover, the sword was moving against the wind in the same manner that lightning streaks across the sky. No one below a Sword King can make a sword move like that one!]

[I'm afraid that none of us thirty people would've survived if it were a Sword Emperor! So... it can only be a Sword King!]

The other Emperor Level Experts Wu Jiang was also forging ahead, and was keeping pace with his colleague. He coldly said, "It doesn't matter if it was a Sword King or a Saber King; he's going to die today! Brother Qian, you don't need to worry so much!"

They looked at each other, and their silhouettes sped up in unison.

They had been tracking Meng Chao Ran for a while now. So, both these Emperor Experts knew that they couldn't let them to escape beyond a certain distance. Else, this man would use his methods of going stealth, and would become untraceable. And, these three people would disappear without a trace if that happened.

The blue-robed Meng Chao Ran ferociously flew forwards like a steamer of light.

He recalled everything he had learnt his whole life, and didn't hold back from displaying it along the whole way.

A group of snow and ice flew out in the forward direction with a slight tiptoeing, and several dozens of tracks were made in the snow with 'pop' sounds. It seemed that someone had passed through here...

However, he turned his feet, and took another direction in a flash. He stepped on the surface of snow. Then, he made several traces of 'running fast' using his strength. And, he left behind false traces by the time he finally disappeared from here...

This needed one's brain to be as calm as ice and snow!

Moreover, his actions were back by a purpose every time he had placed the false traces. The directions that the false traces directed

to had certain deceptive effects. In fact, those directions had unseen obstacles lying ahead...

Meng Chao Ran had been holding Chu Yang in one hand, and had been dragging Tan Tan with the other. Moreover, his eyes were scanning all the directions at the same time. And, he was hurriedly making accurate judgements at the right time. He was simultaneously analysing the distance of the pursuers as well. And, he was leaving false traces and changing his directions at the same time...

This kind of a 'reaction capability' could only be regarded as a mixture of innate talent, experience, intuition, and comprehension; not a single aspect was dispensable!

Even Chu Yang wouldn't have been able to handle matters the way Meng Chao Ran was at this moment! In fact, it would've been impossible for him!

He was in the arms of his master. He looked behind towards the marks that his master had placed in crisscross manner, and it seemed as if he had arranged some traps. Chu Yang couldn't help but open his eyes wide in amazement. After all, he had never imagined that his master knew such a skill as well...

[How many life and death experiences would someone have to go through before such experience and reaction abilities are materialized?]

Chu Yang felt somewhat sorrowful in his heart. [Master is a lot more experienced that he has ever told us. He has always kept everything hidden deep inside his heart.]

[But, such experiences can't be attained through cheating. Moreover, it's impossible to figure them out on one's own if these near-death experiences haven't been engraved in one's heart and carved in one's bones...]

Meng Chao Ran had left the enemies far behind in a very short

period of time! He finally stopped after they had passed a mountain pass. And, he suddenly spurted out blood from his mouth as soon as he stopped.

Chu Yang repeatedly requested him to put him down. But, he didn't listen.

"Listen!" Meng Chao Ran's face had turned red. He looked at both of his disciples with a fierce expression in his eyes. Then, he hurriedly said in an anxious voice, "Here's the way out! You two must exit from there. Use the tip of your toes to create that splashing effect in the snow. Leave from here as quickly as possible. And, you have to keep on living after that; no matter what happens! Remember! You must live on! No matter what means you have to use... You must live even if your knees turn to dust... You must live!"

This man had always been indifferent towards life and death. He had been aloof from the outside. However, he was the one saying these words to his loving disciples at such parting moments...'You must live!'

"Master, what about you?" Tan Tan anxiously asked.

"Me? I will obviously survive as well..." Meng Chao Ran coldly smiled. Then, he indicated with his hand, "I will take that path. We will move separately... we will take two different roads. In fact, I will stay away from danger if the enemies chase after you two. But, I can't say for sure! Now leave; quickly."

"Master..." The rim of Tan Tan's eyes had turned red.

He and Chu Yang knew that Meng Chao Ran had said this to make them feel relieved. They were certain that their master would make some sounds of activity to attract the enemy once they had fled. And, he would do this so that these two would get a chance to survive!

Meng Chao Ran was clearly not afraid of dying for these two

disciples of his'...

"You still haven't gone? What are you waiting for?" Meng Chao Ran strictly asked in a low voice.

"Master..." Chu Yang somehow supressed the overwhelming emotions that were erupting in his chest like a volcano. Then, he said, "There's no need to do this. I can handle them!"

He had an ultimate move — Let Sword Spirit take possession of his body!

Chu Yang didn't wish to use it. After all, it would increase his sense of dependence if he were to use it once. Moreover, there would also be an enormous wear and tear on the Sword Spirit's spiritual power!

Chu Yang would've never thought of using this method even if he were at a risk of life...

However, he was prepared to use this ultimate move at this juncture!

He couldn't watch his master die... no matter what!

[I will use my last resort if this move doesn't work. 'Ten-thousand tribulations will collapse with the blood of my heart'!]

[I won't hesitate!]

[Even if I have to reincarnate once again...!]

"You have a way?" Meng Chao Ran focused his attention and looked at Chu Yang.

"Yes," Chu Yang stood up and swayed a little. He felt the efficacy of the Nine Tribulations Pill surging up violently within his body. His complexion changed to rosy in an instant. And, he regained his exhausted martial power.

"Don't try to be stubborn. There is hope where there's life," Meng Chao Ran said in deep and low voice. His complexion was becoming more and more miserable with each passing moment.

It was obvious that the result of burning his vitality to escape had taken its toll on him!

"Master, it seems that the hope has already died. We won't have any self-respect for our whole lives if we leave you behind. How disloyal and unfilial would it be if we got to live in-exchange for the life of our master?" Chu Yang said in one stretch.

Meng Chao Ran heaved a deep sigh. He knew that Chu Yang had understood his plan.

"You were doing well while lying low back there. Why did you have to run out?" Meng Chao Ran looked at Chu Yang with deep regret.

"Master still hasn't reunited with his wife. This is a big reason for you to live on," Chu Yang slowly said, "Don't worry about the people who are chasing after us. Let your disciple take care of them!"

"My wife...?" Meng Chao Ran exposed a startled expression in his eyes, "What do you know?"

"Master's mistress...?" Tan Tan was shocked, "Master also has a mistress...?"

Tan Tan's words left Chu Yang and Meng Chao Ran speechless in this solemn and tragic atmosphere. 'Does Master have a mistress?'

These words didn't designate the positions of Master and Mistress in the family hierarchy correctly. In fact, they indicated direct infidelity...

Meng Chao Ran's face turned dark.

Chu Yang didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he shook his head. He took out an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill, and stuffed it into Meng Chao Ran's mouth. Then, he gave a firm glance to Tan Tan and shouted, "I will come back to settle the account with you once I am done killing the group of these bastards."

Tan Tan said, 'yeah, right!', and rolled his eyes, "I am so scared, ooh..."

The sound of fluttering clothes resounded. Then, a voice spoke-up in a furious tone, "I will see where you guys run off to!"

However, this man then saw that Chu Yang had stood up. Then, Chu Yang suddenly faced upwards and let out a loud and long howl!

This howl was bitterly solemn and soul stirring. However, the sound of the howl then suddenly acquired a strange bleakness midway. It then underwent a strange, abrupt, and uncanny transformation. And, a kind of loneliness, a kind of quietness, and a kind of tyranny reverberated from the howl!

...

Chapter 560: Behead the Whole World Without Intention, Slaughter the World For No Reason!

The Emperor Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan — Qian Wan Tong was the first one to discover this place. But, he got scared by this frightening howl, and began to tremble.

In fact, Qian Wan Tong had thought in disdain when the half part of this long scream had sounded. [Motherfu*ker! Death is near at hand! What are you howling about?]

However, this howl changed midway. And, an endless murderous aura had gushed out! Qian Wan Tong felt that his hair had suddenly stood-up on end. He felt that his blood had run cold. Suddenly, his scalp also started to feel tightened. A chill rose straight up from his tailbone, and travelled up his spine to his brain. It left him quivering, and made him shiver.

He had never heard such a voice!

Even Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan became surprised. They inexplicably looked at Chu Yang. They were at a complete loss. But, both of them clearly felt, [This Chu Yang isn't the same person he was a moment ago!]

This feeling seemed utterly unreasonable, but they still felt so...

Chu Yang had turned his back towards Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan, and he was standing with his hands clasped behind his back. He was facing Qian Wan Tong. He had an expression of indifference in his eyes as he was looked at him disdainfully from the corner of his eyes. His face was still the same. His body was still the same. However, an endless stream of 'vicissitudes of life' was gushing forth from his facial expression!

It seemed as if this figure had been standing in the world alone

without moving... for millions of years!

The figure that stood here wasn't Chu Yang anymore. Instead, it was the Sword Spirit... who had already been at the top of all existence for ninety-thousand years!

The people of the Black Devil Clan shouted out loud. Then, they flew over with 'shua' sounds from all the directions... as if they had received the orders to assemble. The twenty-five people gathered in the same place as a result. In fact, all of them had come here without any delay.

However, Chu Yang wasn't concerned in the least, and had an expressionless face. He very lightly stepped forwards, and insipidly asked with his hands clasped behind his back, "You want me to take care of these people?"

The twenty-five people felt the same thing as he spoke this; [The heavens have fallen, and the earth has crumbled!] The two Emperor Level Experts were no different.

They felt as if an invisible vortex had formed, and had drastically drowned their souls into despair. The felt as if there was a never-ending bottomless abyss in their minds!

They firmly shut their eyes, and shook their heads. However, they still felt haziness when they opened their eyes again. In fact, there was misty snow swirling in front of them!

Every scene was undoubtedly different from before.

But, why had they felt such a horrifying sensation a moment ago?

"Brat, you're playing tricks on us!" a King Level Expert angrily yelled and cussed.

Qian Wan Tong and Wu Jiang looked at each other, and saw indefinite fright and uncertainty in each other's eyes. [Can this kid be a great expert in disguise?]

[How can he have such a frightening aura on his body?]

[Is it a trap? It's impossible ah... it wasn't there when they were in a troubled situation.]

Qian Wan Tong rolled his eyes and said, "Old Third Shen! You go and cripple this boy!"

He first sent out a man to go and check what the real situation was. He wanted to see if Old Third Shen could cripple the boy, or the boy would cripple him instead... this wasn't something he could decide beforehand.

After all, losing a man's life to see the situation of enemy was a trivial matter for Qian Wan Tong...

Old Third Shen went over. He lithely span in the air, and drew out a sword whilst being in midair. He shouted from midair, "Draw your sword! I will teach you a lesson!"

"Huh?!" Chu Yang slowly turned his head and opened his eyes wide to take a glimpse. A frightening aura came out from his body, and gathered together. In fact, it had seemingly taken form. It then shrouded Old Third Shen in midair!

The incoming Old Third Shen had assumed a confident and carefree posture in mid-air. However, he was left to scream at this moment. His consciousness sank into a primal sense of fear, and it seemed as if his body had suddenly been trapped inside the darkness of infinite hell.

Everything turned dark before his eyes. He let out a pitiful screech, and fell down with a 'thump' sound. However, his body assumed a kneeling position due to some unknown reason when he fell down. And, he fell to kneel in front of Chu Yang.

His whole body shivered, and his complexion turned pale.

"Teach me a lesson..." Chu Yang listlessly raised his head. Then, he softly and inaudibly muttered, "It has been a hundred-thousand years since I've heard these words... they sound very fresh."

He didn't seem to be guarded as he stood there. He looked upwards and sighed; it seemed as if he was lost in recollection. In fact, it seemed that the kneeling Old Third Shen's sword would pierce through Chu Yang's throat if he were to raise a hand. But, Old Third Shen had firmly knelt down on the ground, and his head was lowered even firmer. Moreover, his whole body had been left to sweat. And, his face had turned red... as if it was bleeding. In fact, he couldn't raise his head even if he wanted to.

Old Third Shen suddenly regained control over his senses at this time. And, he felt extremely ashamed when he realized that he had been kneeling before the enemy in front of many staring eyes. In fact, he felt so ashamed that he wanted to commit suicide; he had no alternative...

Qian Wan Tong and Wu Jiang were watching this scene, and they suddenly felt that their eyes had popped out of their heads. They couldn't help but fiercely suck in cold air!

Who was Old Third Shen? He was a seventh grade King level Expert! Even these two Emperor Level Experts couldn't beat him so easily.

However, he couldn't even start fighting when facing this boy. Instead, this boy had forced him to kneel on the ground by his imposing aura alone...

Chu Yang's vision suddenly turned scary!

However, Chu Yang was still facing upwards. He heaved a deep sigh and slowly recited, "This body has long discarded the mundaneness of life and livelihood. It has been 90,000 years since I've left the human world. ...drifting over the pinnacle of human civilization... without experiencing the vicissitudes of life... without meeting any immortals!"

He slightly lowered his head after he was done speaking. Then, he gently sighed and helplessly shook his head. He said, "I don't wish to kill anyone." Then, he stretched out the fingers of his right

hand and gently dropped them on the head of Old Third Shen. And, he pulled out Old Third Shen's head from his neck with a snapping sound. In fact, it had seemed as if he had pulled out grass from the ground...

He lifted his head, and heaved a long sigh. He had committed a murder with a mere lift of hand. There had been a sense of 'bemoaning the state of universe and pitying the fate of mankind' in his words. However, he had still been merciless in his actions!

Then, he continued to say the words he hadn't spoken yet, "... But, it's a pity that this is my mission!"

'I don't want to kill anyone, but it's a pity that this is my mission' this was the complete sentence. But, it was a pity that Old Third Shen had only gotten to hear half of it. So, his soul had already regretfully returned to the heavens.

Blood gushed out from his headless neck with gurgling sound.

Chu Yang gently sighed and said, "It is so pitiful that he had to die like this... Oh my, decades of training and hard-work got destroyed in an instant. Was it worth it to come all this way?"

Qian Wan Tong and Wu Jiang felt a chill welling up in their hearts.

Chu Yang's mouth had previous said 'I don't want to kill anyone'. So, everyone had felt relaxed in their hearts; the now-dead Old Third Shen had been no exception. Therefore, they had heaved a long sigh of relief, [You don't want to kill anyone? That's good!]

However, this guy had pulled-out that man's head while they were thinking this!

[It looked like a farmer had pulled out the weeds from his vegetable field.]

[He did it so easily...]

[He killed the other guy with his own hands, and said very sadly,

'decades of training and hard-work got destroyed in an instant...']

[Crap, is he even a human being?]

Everyone felt dizzy.

Then, they looked-on as Chu Yang turned his head and looked at Qian Wan Tong. He then indifferently asked, "Are you the boss? Go ahead. Please, create a reason for me to kill you!"

Qian Wan Tong was scared out of his wits. He couldn't help but take three steps back. Then, he suddenly felt dizzy for some unknown reason. He bellowed, "Everybody, go together. He's just one person! We can kill him if we work as one!"

This order was full of decisive and murderous intent!

Everyone bellowed and ferociously rushed over under Wu Jiang's leadership.

"Kill him..."

Qian Wan Tong started to cry!

He had sworn to god to not to say those words a moment ago. In fact, he had wanted to say, [We can't deal with this enemy. Everyone, run away!]

However, he didn't understand why his head had suddenly felt dizzy; and, that erroneous order leading came out of his mouth as result...

His enemy had asked him to give a reason to kill him. And, he had given his enemy this reason in the blink of an eye.

[This, this... this is the reason that will bring us to our doom!] Tears streamed down the cheeks of Qian Wan Tong.

Chu Yang burst into loud laughter as the stream of people welled up. However, a kind of ancient loneliness derived from the vicissitudes of life was still congealing and rippling upon his person even though he was laughing.

Then, he tossed away the head he held, and shook his arms. The hair-knot on his head blasted open with a 'bam', and revealed a head full of black hair.

Suddenly, a savage murderous aura madly burst out! And, the entire Northern Wilderness had seemingly been shrouded by it!

The complexion of Wu Jiang and the others turned white. They had a look of extreme fright in their eyes. They couldn't help but halt their steps.

Chu Yang slowly walked forward. His black robe suddenly turned dark like the night itself. Countless seemingly substantial sword energies were emitting out of his whole body. He stretched his right hand, and a shiny sword appeared in his hand with a clanging sound. It then issued a lively sword-cry!

Chu Yang had conveniently pulled out the sword. Then, he recited loudly, "Lone person moves unhindered in the mortal world. What difficulty there can be with a sword in hand? Behead the whole world even without the intention, and slaughter the world for no apparent reason!"

Chu Yang's black form drifted forwards as he recited these few sentences. He looked at the experts in front of him as if they were nothing. His loose and long hair floated upwards as he slowly walked forward. However, he looked like an elusive wraith in this world of snow to the eyes of the enemies.

"... The sword falls and a thousand-feet-high wave of blood surged forth. A ten-thousand feet mountain is built on the foundation of the bones of the dead. Completely slaughtered 90 million lives. And, not even a single drop of blood has turned cold yet! Ha ha ha... this is fun!"

He severely roared, "This is fun!"

Suddenly, the sword-light rushed straight to the sky, and covered it in its entirety. It then continually to split-open the snow-laden

dark clouds with a rumbling sound!

A ray of sunshine came in from the opening! The sunshine faintly glittered. And, the falling snow of the Northern Wilderness fluttered and floated densely. It seemed to be dazzling and colourful under the blurred illumination of the sunshine...

This Great Northern Wilderness hadn't seen sunshine in the past ten-thousand years!

The sword energy had broken through the cloud and mist that were spread over the entire sky! And, sunlight had spilled in from the opening.

Tan Tan had stood behind Chu Yang. And, nobody discovered that he had suddenly emitted out red light from his eyes at this moment. He looked straight at the exceptionally extraordinary sword energy, and blanked out.

The red light flashed past. And, Tan Tan gently fell and sat down on the ground. He lost consciousness. But, his whole body had been so hot that it could burn even his friends. However, it had now cooled down in this moment. The fever had vanished like a miracle!

It seemed that the frightful sword energy had aroused something. It seemed to have awakened something. Or maybe... touched upon something...

Another sword-energy similarly soared up from a distant area at this moment! It majestically surged up and pierced open a big opening in the sky. It was like a demon of ancient times had suddenly been reborn!

The sunlight spilled in once again. These two rays of sunlight in this gloomy weather made it seem as if a monster had woken up from slumber, and had suddenly opened his eyes.

That sword light then disappeared with a flash.

Chu Yang swiftly turned and looked in that direction. He then

revealed a look of eagerness in his eyes as he said in a voice that could be barely heard, "There..."

Then, he slowly turned his head, and slowly lifted his head. He looked at the twenty-four people before him. His hair fluttered about as he faintly smiled, "Come on! Come and die!"

...

Chapter 561: Spare None!

The whole bodies of Qian Wan Tong, Wu Jiang, and the others turned ice-cold. Their hearts, guts, and everything else were left to shiver!

They screamed and scattered in all directions with the intention to escape.

Who could dare to fight a decisive battle with such a monster...? Only a brainless person would think of handling this matter... They were indeed out of luck. And, it could be seen clearly. They were about to get the ninth grade spirit beast's inner core, but it got stolen from under their noses. They were about to get it again soon after. But, a guy came out of the blue, killed fifteen people, and ran away... They were about to get it this time as well... but, they had instead fallen into a deadly trap!

[Run away ah!]

Their hearts felt like crying as they ran. [You should've said that you are an unmatched expert. Why were you toying with us by not fighting back? Motherfu*ker, you teased everyone, and made us excited by pretending to be something you are not...]

[We would've eaten lard and ignored the urge to pursue if we had known that you would turn out to be such an expert. We wouldn't have dared to provoke such a Death God even if we became too gutsy...]

"You guys want to run away?" Chu Yang raised his eyebrows. A dense energy dissipated everywhere, "You guys think you can get away?" He took a step forward, and slashed his sword without any style or order!

He seemed to have suddenly jumped across the void with this step. He covered a distance of five-hundred-feet and reached in front of Qian Wan Tong. Then, he coldly looked at him.

His vision seemed as cold as ice as his sword fell down like lightning!

Qian Wan Tong let out a desperate and horror-stricken howl. He activated his Emperor domain-field with the entirety of his might in desperation. He then used his lifetime of martial power to block this blow!

However, this sword-blow disregarded his domain-field and defense as it slashed down. It cut through Qian Wan Tong's sword. It then slashed his body into two halves! His corpse hadn't even landed when two 'swoosh' sounds were heard. Two King Level Experts had also been chopped into two pieces out of the blue even though they had been at a distance of a hundred feet! This had obviously created a bloody mess!

The remaining people became terror stricken, and tried their hardest to run away!

However, Chu Yang caught up with them in no time. Then, he pointed his sword and sword energy flew out of the Sword Point. A bowl-sized bloody hole appeared on Wu Jiang's chest even though he was at a distance of a hundred feet from him. This action turned the surroundings bright red...

The sword energy went through Wu Jiang's chest, and bombarded on a mountain with a 'bang'. And, this resulted in the creation of a big hole in the mountain.

Chu Yang then turned around whilst in midair. The sword-light was issued out like white silk. And, it neatly divided nine King Level Experts – who were fleeing away desperately – into two parts from their waist. The upper parts of their bodies were sent flying up. And, the lower parts continued onwards in a mad rush for a hundred feet even after they had lost their lives...

The vegetation and rocks of the vicinity were neatly cut off as well! In fact, the entire forest had gotten destroyed!

Chu Yang's body had flashed and vanished from that place in the instance the sword-light had flown out. In fact, he had already arrived in the south by now. One man had killed five fleeing King Level Experts with one single sword. He let out a loud shout at this moment. His bellow made his valor and killing intention to shoot up to the skies. He flew to several hundred feet in the sky like a rampaging and crazed devil. He then chased down the remaining seven King level Experts of the Black Devil Clan in the smoke and mist!

'Shua'!

One of the King level Experts fell on his back and faced upwards with a look of disbelief. A faint glow of blood appeared between his eyebrows. Then, blood gushed out from there with a 'pop' sound. Blood spurted out from his forehead to his groin with a gushing sound. His body then slowly parted from middle, and everything inside his body was cut off into two halves like a watermelon.

However, Chu Yang went around this endless wilderness like a streamer of light as this man's body parted into two parts and fell on the ground. He obviously beheaded the remaining King Level Experts one by one.

His kills were clean and efficient; and, there had been no trace of mercy!

"The smell of blood always excites me," Sword Spirit deeply exclaimed, "Unfortunately, I can't always stay out in the world... Much of my spiritual power has already been used up."

His body flashed and left that spot. And, he arrived in front of Meng Chao Ran in another flash. Then, his body trembled ferociously, became limp, and fell down.

He had become unconscious, but his teeth were still tightly clenched!

Meng Chao Ran was in a state of extreme shock at this moment!

He had never imagined that his disciple could use such a terrifying and earth-shaking method!

He had slaughtered each one of those thirty people from the Black Devil Clan in a matter of moments! He had spared none!

Moreover, he had only seen the sword-light dancing like a divine dragon... And then, the heads had gone rolling, and blood had scattered everywhere. The fight had ended in an instant!

He had seen Chu Yang flying around in this state of stupefaction. And, he was about to go up and ask him how he had turned the tables. But then, he saw his disciple falling. He saw that his disciple's body had started to convulse. After that, some foam came out of his mouth, and he lost consciousness...

Meng Chao Ran then turned around and saw that his other disciple was also convulsing and foaming at the mouth. Tan Tan had also lost consciousness...

Meng Chao Ran was at a loss and didn't know what to do...

"I guess I will have to nanny-you-two-around for your whole life!" Meng Chao Ran heaved a very deep sigh. He first plundered the spoils of fight. After all, Master Meng's mind was very meticulous; he absolutely couldn't let off this opportunity...

Then, he piled up his disciples in the same place. And, he carried the both of them on his shoulders like sacks. Then, he walked on a certain road while gasping for breath, and eventually found a cave. He then threw both of the brothers inside the cave, and sat down to catch his breath.

However, he found something strange once he had sat down... the serious injury that he had received while madly rushing by burning his vitality was already healed!!

[It has healed?]

Meng Chao Ran was left completely puzzled upon this realization, [But how?]

Then, he suddenly recalled that Chu Yang had stuffed a pill in his mouth before he had gotten into the fight. [Is it because of that pill? But, can such a wonder medicine even exist?]

Meng Chao Ran suddenly felt an incredible and mysterious energy filling his body. In fact, he felt as if he could even battle an Emperor Level Expert at this moment. He obviously couldn't help but be startled again...

He found that he was no longer injured. But, the oddest thing was... he seemed to have felt a hint that the hard-pressed 'primary force' of the 'ninth grade' of King Level which was keeping him trapped at the bottleneck had loosened up. He tried to circulate his martial power. Just then, an abundant power suddenly welled up from his Dantian, flooded into his meridians, and got poured back into his Dantian. And, this cycle happened three times...

Meng Chao Ran was amazed when he discovered that he had broken through to the ninth grade of the King Level so easily! Moreover, that primary force had continued to increase without letup. In fact, it had given rise to a pain in his whole body. But, he continued to circulate his martial power and brought it into his Dantian...

Meng Chao Ran's complexion had become very strange by the time he had stood up after collecting his martial power. He felt like crying and laughing at the same time. He frowned for a moment, and then he blinked for a moment...

He had discovered that he had made another breakthrough!

He was a first grade Emperor Level Expert now! Moreover, his martial power was stuck on the peak of first grade Emperor Level at this time. So, he could breakthrough to the second grade of Emperor Level if he were to get an opportunity!

It left him to feel very dizzy!

[This has been lifelong desire. But, I've broken through... in such

a bizarre situation?]

[Moreover, I shouldn't have broken through just yet! How did I break through?]

Meng Chao Ran was so shocked and startled by this outcome that he couldn't even breathe for a long while...

Then, he remembered, [Oh sh*t! Why did I put Chu Yang and Tan Tan together? They're both unconscious. Chu Yang must've been roasted by now...]

He hurriedly ran-in and separated them. Then, he touched. [Eh? Chu Yang is okay? Can this elder disciple resist heat as well?]

Then, Meng Chao Ran touched Tan Tan. And, he was left to open his eyes wide. [How come he is not burning anymore?]

Meng Chao Ran touched him again. Then, he touched all over his body. And, Master Meng was left dumbfounded...

It could be said that these series of events were too much for his eyes to take. Master Meng's psychological forbearance had always been very strong. But, he had no means to explain these occurrences. Moreover, they were happening in such a compressed away...

He was genuinely helpless in the face of them.

Meng Chao Ran firmly pinched his own thigh. But, he suddenly felt pain as a result. So, he grimaced in pain, [I'm not dreaming!] He couldn't help but stay startled there.

A very long time passed before Chu Yang groaned. He then weakly crawled up. Meng Chao Ran was still immersed in these thoughts, and hadn't been able to free himself from them...

"Master, are you okay?" Chu Yang stroked his forehead. His head was somewhat aching. In fact, he felt as if countless needles had been pierced into his head. Moreover, there was a strong sense of powerlessness in his whole body. Every joint of his body was

aching, and he felt as if his bones were falling apart. In fact, it was as if this feeling of weakness had evolved straight from his soul.

This was the aftereffect of the Sword Spirit entering his body. And, it had left Chu Yang with an intense sense of lingering fear. In fact, this painful feeling had left Chu Yang with a desire to never try this again even though he had nerves of steel.

The Sword Spirit also felt unwell inside Chu Yang's mind. He had drilled into the mountains of Mysterious Yin Jade and Mysterious Yang Jade to restore his lost strength...

He had restored much of his strength during this period of time. But, this time's consumption wasn't small.

"Chu Yang..." Meng Chao Ran's voice was very heavy, "You seem to have so many secrets."

"Yes, Master." Chu Yang softly smiled.

"Well, you don't need to tell me since they are secrets." Meng Chao Ran warned him, "In fact, it's best not to tell anyone. Just let them rot in your heart."

He heaved a sigh and said, "These kinds of secrets are too formidable... if they got leaked... I'm afraid..." He exposed a look of deep worry on his face. Then, he solemnly looked at this disciple he was so proud of, "I don't know how many powerhouses are there in this world. The so-called King and Emperor Experts are as transient as fleeting clouds. Those other over-powerful experts are certainly elusive and the proof their existence is not known to us, but it doesn't mean that they don't exist... And, no one can protect you even if one exists and got to know your secret by any chance..."

Meng Chao Ran deeply looked Chu Yang in the eyes, "Do you understand?"

"I understand!" Chu Yang sternly replied.

Chu Yang was already familiar with Meng Chao Ran's nature, but he still couldn't help but be impressed by the fact that Meng Chao

Ran was opting to ignore so many things that he had witnessed today. In fact, Chu Yang felt a deep admiration for his master!

Even someone as strong as Young Master Yu would've asked for sure...

However, Meng Chao Ran wouldn't ask... no matter what! He would rather let the secret rot in the heart of his disciple than carry the burden of not letting the secret leak to the others for his whole life. After all, he must maintain his disciple's secrecy...

"Master, this disciple didn't know that your decision-making power is so outstanding," Chu Yang sincerely said.

"He-he... I'm a family man with wife and children... We – master and disciple – are like father and son. So, we can talk about anything. But, I might not be able to protect your secret if I run into someone as an expert... Everyone has a person that they can't keep any secret from. And, no secret remains a secret once it reaches the ears of a third party!"

Meng Chao Ran said, "Therefore, I don't wish to hear your secret even if you want to tell me."

"I get it, Master," Chu Yang respectfully replied. Then, he started to interrogate, "Master... there's a thing that I've never understood..."

Meng Chao Ran said, "What is it?"

Chu Yang thought for a while and said, "I can't be certain that Master's decision-making power is number-one in the whole world. But, I've never seen another person with greater decision-making power. I am just saying... but, you ought to have the cultivation to back it up under normal circumstances, right? But, why is yours lacking..."

He paused.

Meng Chao Ran chuckled and replied, "This is very simple... because, I got caught in a little something in the past... for your

master's wife's sake. I had got hit by the Melting Meridians Hand back then!"

"Melting Meridians Hand?" Chu Yang's whole body shook out. He exposed sharp and swift brilliance in his eyes, "Isn't it the unique skill of the number-one ruling clan... the Ye Clan of the Nine Heavens? The meridians of whole body vanish into thin air if no solution is found within three days. And, the victim is turned into the most miserable handicapped person of the world, right?"

...

Chapter 562: The Pain of Love

Melting Meridians Hand was a very sharp tool of the Ye Clan. In fact, it could even intimidate the Nine Heavens! Anyone would be finished by one mere slap of this hand on the body. This skill wasn't fatal. But, it was more malicious than any kind of skill that could kill people!

It was because one's meridians would be demolished within three days... regardless of one's cultivation level if one was slapped by the Melting Meridian Hand. How would the spiritual power operate... without the meridians?

The person hit by the Melting Meridian Hand would gradually turn into a living corpse as time would pass. In fact, the victim wouldn't even be able to move a finger. But, their consciousness would stay active. In fact, it was also said — it would be impossible for one to open and close their eyes after three days!

This was truly horrible! In fact, it would be worse than death... especially for an expert!

"Right." Meng Chao Ran faintly smiled. A deep sign of pain reflected between his eyebrows, and it seemed as if his soul had just experienced a deep shock. He said, "Your master's wife... had agreed to return to her clan in exchange of an opportunity for me to live. But, two-and-a-half days had already passed by that time. So, my meridians became rigid even though I took the antidote."

Meng Chao Ran stared lankly in a daze. He let out a breath and said, "Therefore, I had no other choice... but, to temporarily reside in the Beyond the Heavens Sect since I could barely manage to maintain a feeble existence ..."

"I... see..." Chu Yang had a cold expression in his eyes as he slowly said. There was a chilliness and heaviness in these words... In fact, he-himself couldn't feel it...

[Ye Clan!]

[Ye Clan!!]

"But, two strange events have happened since last year. And, these two strange events have given me a little hope." Meng Chao Ran warmly looked at Chu Yang. "Furthermore, one of these two strange events has stemmed from you, while the other one from Tan Tan..."

"Two strange events? And, they've stemmed from me and Tan Tan...?" Chu Yang was at a loss, [What kind of strange events...?]

"Yes. The first one happened with Tan Tan's Divine Chi Gathering Fish..." Meng Chao Ran heaved a sigh and said, "I accidently found out that the Divine Chi Gathering Fish grew very rapidly when Tan Tan nurtured it. Moreover, the Divine Chi Gathering Fish could absorb the spirit energy of the world. And, this special type of spirit energy didn't suffer the constraints of the Melting Meridians Hand! Thanks to that, I became capable of promoting my cultivation again. Moreover, that mysterious spiritual energy was especially quick, and it could condense too! Therefore, I could cultivate to the eighth grade of King Level in a short period of just over a year!"

"I see. It's the effect of the Divine Chi Gathering Fish," Chu Yang silently pondered.

"The second unexpected event happened today." Meng Chao Ran continued, "And, it stemmed from the medicine that you gave me. I found that my injuries were healed after I took it. Moreover... I had abundant energy to break through to the ninth grade of King Level. Then, I even broke through to the first grade of Emperor Level Expert in one spurt of energy!"

Meng Chao Ran chuckled, "This is simply a miracle!"

"Miracle..." Chu Yang was dumbfounded, and stared blankly. He had undoubtedly given his master an incomplete version of the

Nine Tribulations Pill. So, it was only effective to restore health and heal injuries. How did it enable Meng Chao Ran to promote his cultivation level?

[What is this about? Did I make a mistake?]

[It is impossible. Because... the last complete Nine Tribulation Pill has been taken by Mo Qing Wu.]

Therefore, Chu Yang didn't have any complete Nine Tribulations Pill at present...

[What's the matter with this?] Chu Yang was at a loss.

The Sword Spirit was meditating at present. So, Chu Yang also couldn't ask him either. Therefore, he had to keep this matter suppressed in his heart for the time being. However, he had secretly decided in his heart, [I must make Sword Spirit concoct a complete version of Nine Tribulations Pill after he finishes his meditation. Then, Master will recover completely, and that will enhance his strength. And, I will also ask about the matter of this incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill at that time...]

"Is Master's wife now... in the Ye Clan?" Chu Yang cautiously and solemnly asked.

Meng Chao Ran had a gloomy look in his eyes as he replied, "Yes." However, he didn't speak on this matter further.

Therefore, Chu Yang had no other choice but to become silent. Meng Chao Ran's eyes were enough to tell that there must've been too many stories! But, Chu Yang couldn't get to the heart of the matter if Meng Chao Ran wasn't ready to tell.

[However, this is the heartache that master will have for his lifetime.]

Meng Chao Ran remained silent for a while. He unconsciously looked at the fluttering snow outside of the cave. Then, he softly whispered, "Wind and rain can't wash the scars in one's heart. The Vicissitudes of life can't wipe out emotional scars. We must not

speak of the past, but the separation leaves us desolate. I remember that we had pledged of eternal love, and enduring while the world lasts... Our life would've been like a spring dream, and we would see fairies dancing and flying around. We would've chanted the songs of love. And, we would've shared the sufferings of life together. We wouldn't have let each other's heart's break. And, our soul would sail through the Nine Heavens... Alas!~~~"

Suddenly, he profoundly sighed. His expression became sad, and he didn't speak a word further.

A long while passed before he stood up feeling desolated. He then walked out, and stood motionless amidst the dense snow. He looked up to the sky, and calmly gazed at the sky. It seemed as if... he could see his lover in the Upper Three Heavens through this hazy sky. He was looking up there so devotedly and so attentively...

He kept standing like this for a long time. Then, he deeply sighed in his heart. There was a silence in his heart as he whispered, "Chu Chu... you wrote this poem... Chu Chen, are you okay?"

Meng Chao Ran felt that his heart was ripped into two pieces while he was still alive as he remembered this name.

He groaned from heartache and curled up in the snow. He had suddenly felt so much pain in his heart that he couldn't breathe. His heart felt to be burning. And, it was getting more and more intense. In fact, he felt as if his soul was burning...

"Chu Chu... Chu Chu... Chu Chu..." Meng Chao Ran continuously murmured in his heart. He didn't feel alive in this world when he wasn't calling out this name. But, it felt that a knife was ruthlessly cutting through his heart every time he called out this name...

"Chu Chu... What should I do? You had promised me that our souls will sail through the Nine Heavens together. I can't take this anymore... Even hoping to die together with you has become too much to expect..."

He slowly closed his eyes. And, two teardrops dripped down from his face. A man who wouldn't change the look in his eyes even in front of death was crying now...

This was the extremity of the pain of love! A person who had never experienced the bitterness of love couldn't understand the pain in Meng Chao Ran's heart...

Chu Yang was silently sitting in the cave, and was keeping watch on Tan Tan. He didn't turn his head to look outward since he knew that Meng Chao Ran didn't wish anyone to see him like that.

He could understand the despair of Meng Chao Ran's heart. [This feeling must be similar to the one that I had felt when Mo Qing Wu had died in my previous life, right?]

[True and deep love only turns as a torture to oneself if it isn't realized.]

[It is true that it's the biggest tragedy in the world if parents fail to live with their kids and don't get to raise them. But, isn't it that the same as love that can't be realized that makes it the biggest tragedy of life?]

[How many people in the world live with their lovers since the beginning of their love, and till the end of their lives? But, what do the people in love do if that doesn't happen? They keep the love buried deep in their heart... to let it rot! And, the painful memories of that life eventually take everything away, and leave only endless emotional torment for the rest of their life!]

Chu Yang had become somewhat sentimental. He recalled that a wise philosopher had once said, [Man is the weirdest creation of God. It's not necessary that the name a man unconsciously whispers while being dead-drunk is his last wife's. And, it's not necessary that the deepest sorrow in a woman's heart is for her husband...]

[But, they can't help but call out their true love's name when they

are in their midnight dream and have completely lost control over themselves. But, who can say that they aren't loyal?]

[But, who has felt this kind of pain?]

[Who has felt this kind of helplessness?]

[Who has felt this kind of bitterness?!]

Chu Yang sadly sighed. [Master is in the prime of his life. Ye Chu Chen is also in her prime. Why can they not be together? Can't I help Master... to fulfill his wish?]

Chu Yang was silent. But, he had silently made this decision in his heart!

...

Three days had passed. Chu Yang had completely recovered. However, Tan Tan was still unconscious.

Meng Chao Ran and Chu Yang were extremely worried.

It was because Tan Tan had been in a very unusual coma this time. He was only drowsing when unconscious during the first two days. But, his whole body had been turning sometimes hot and sometimes cold on the third day. The stones of the cave would freeze and crack when his body was cold. But, it would become unbearable to stay at his side when it was hot. In fact, Chu Yang couldn't endure it even when he would circulate Seven Yin Cold Energy!

The master-and-disciple duo had never seen such a strange phenomenon!

In fact, they hadn't even heard of it before! Who could've imagined that a person's body-temperature could change like that? Stones would freeze when it was low. And, the stones would melt when it was high...

Damn, what goddamned matter was this?

"Master, is Tan Tan always like this?" Chu Yang finally couldn't

endure it. [What's wrong with him? I've even stuffed an incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill in his mouth. But, he vomited it out... Why did it not melt in his mouth and change into spirit energy?]

"Never..." Meng Chao Ran's complexion was serious. He looked at the unconscious Tan Tan as he replied anxiously.

"What is going on..." Chu Yang was troubled.

"He ate the inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast..." Meng Chao Ran heaved a deep sigh, "After that, his whole body started to heat up... it warmed up to such an extent that my hand would've blistered up if I had touched him. And, it wouldn't cool down either," Meng Chao Ran frowned.

"He ate an inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast?!" Chu Yang was gob-smacked. He opened his eyes wide. [This guy has swallowed an inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast... how come he hasn't exploded by now?]

"He swallowed it whole!" Meng Chao Ran was somewhat speechless as he added.

Chu Yang's jaw suddenly dropped.

[Generally, the inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast is at least as big as a fist. And, the biggest one can even be as big as a watermelon... And, he swallowed it whole? How did he even swallow it?]

"Like this..." Meng Chao Ran forced a smile and demonstrated with his neck, "... here, it swelled up all of a sudden... After that, it slowly went inside..."

"Ha ha ha..." it's true that Chu Yang was worried, but he burst into cheerful laughter when he saw the gestures his master made.

Tan Tan finally woke up after two days.

Sword Spirit had also recovered in the past few days. And, he had

been urging Chu Yang to try to look for his soul fragment. In fact, he was 10,000% sure — he had issued sword energy and changed the appearance of the sky during the battle. So, that sudden blast of sword energy from faraway must've been a reaction from his soul fragment!

However, Chu Yang had remained unmoved.

[The matter here hasn't resolved yet, and he wants me to go? It is out of question! He wants me to ignore such an enormous matter!]

However, Tan Tan had finally woken up on this day...

Tan Tan suddenly turned over, and sat on a small stone. Then, he let out a very long sigh, "Ouch, this sleep made my whole body hurt."

"Tan Tan, you woke up?" Chu Yang became pleasantly surprised and suddenly turned his head.

"Chu Yang...?" Tan Tan was even more surprised than him as he called out, "Come on, quickly. Take a look at me. Have I not become more handsome?" he had fiercely made a 'shocked' expression while speaking. He then spoke-up in a 'shocked' manner, "I look handsome, right? I look more handsome than you, right? Ha ha..."

...

Notes: There was a part in the chapter were the Author seemingly writes about his own thoughts surrounding the pains of love. It was left as it is in the original piece along with the Editor's comments, and we've left it as such as well.

Chapter 563: Tan Tan's Transformation

Meng Chao Ran turned his head away from the unbearably ugly sight.

Chu Yang scratched his head and asked with wonder, "Why are you shocked?"

"Stop your nonsense, and look at me. Haven't I become handsome?" Tan Tan 'shockingly' said.

"Yes! Yes, you look very handsome!" Chu Yang agreed. He then said confidently, "I believe that Tan Tan is the best-looking person in the world! The most handsome!"

Tan Tan felt satisfied. He laughed and looked overjoyed. However, his facial expression turned from that barely worth-seeing 'shocked' expression into his usual hideous one as he laughed. However, he was radiant with delight as he said, "I look more handsome than you, right?"

"Of course, you do!" Chu Yang let out a deep sigh and said, "You are far more handsome than me!"

"Wa ha ha ha..." Tan Tan was self-satisfied as he laughed and said, "Chu Yang, right? Master would never answer this question whenever I would ask..."

Meng Chao Ran looked at the two buffoons, and feebly sighed.

[I understand.]

[I completely understand now.]

[I understand where this character of Tan Tan comes from. It is because Chu Yang has spoiled him!]

Meng Chao Ran felt wronged in his heart as he looked at Tan Tan's satisfied and joyful look. [I thought that Chu Yang will be honest when Tan Tan would demand affirmation. But, how did I not imagine this?]

[However... I'd have to supress my conscience to tell him that he's handsome. It can't come out of my mouth. In fact, I will have to first let go of my conscience if I have to say that he's handsome...]

Tan Tan was grinning while being cocky. Then, he suddenly cried out in alarm, "Why am I not burning?"

He grabbed Chu Yang's hand. Then, he repeatedly asked, "Does it feel burning hot? Does it feel burning hot to you?"

Chu Yang smiled, "No. it doesn't feel hot."

"Hurray..." Tan Tan danced in joy. "I'm not burning. I'm not burning anymore. There won't be any problem in the bridal room anymore... I was so anxious that my bride would get roasted if I went burning hot in the bridal room... But, I'm not burning anymore... So, I don't need to make ice-cold armor for her now..."

A dark line formed on Meng Chao Ran's forehead as he shouted, "Shut up!"

Tan Tan became quiet out of fear when he heard that.

Chu Yang carefully sized up Tan Tan. And, he suddenly realized that his junior martial brother looked somewhat different.

His face still looked the same, but the tips of his eyebrows had turned faintly golden. Moreover, a tiny triangular mark had appeared in the centre of his forehead... This mark looked like a fragment of a disk, and was only soybean-sized.

It looked like a small scar that had been formed over a minor injury at first glance.

His chest also appeared to have undergone some change. But, it could only be seen a little.

"Take off your clothes," Chu Yang said.

"What?" Tan Tan grabbed his lapel in horror. Then, he cowered up with a shiver, "What do you want to do?"

Meng Chao Ran had also discovered the anomalies on Tan Tan. So, he shouted, "Take off your clothes!"

Tan Tan felt aggrieved. He desperately looked at his master and senior martial brother. Then, he exposed a solemn and tragic look in his eyes, and lowered his head. He then said with quivering lips, "Alright... I, I... I will sacrifice this once... just this once..."

Then, he took off his clothes with a 'brushing' sound. Tan Tan's actions were extremely fast. He then closed his eyes, and did it again. He had taken off all of his clothes... including his trousers, and became completely naked!

He looked like a new-born baby as he confidently revealed himself in front of both of them.

He had closed his eyes. However, his eyelashes were still trembling, "You both do it quickly... But, be gentle with me... boohoo... I'm doing this for the first time..."

Meng Chao Ran's face turned purple like an eggplant.

Chu Yang also stared at him with his tongue tied. He looked at his doo-hickey swaying down there. And, he couldn't help but feel like throwing up.

"Wear your pants! Who asked you to remove all of your clothes? You rascal! You're such an evil creature!" Meng Chao Ran's face became dark as he loudly scolded.

Chu Yang had never seen his master so angry, and was stunned by the sight of it. He only felt that the world was turn upside-down. [Isn't the Master always indifferent, aloof, and at ease? When did he ever talk in such a loud voice...?]

Tan Tan was also startled. He opened his eyes. It looked as if he was about to cry. He raised his pants, and brought it up to his waist. Then, he very carefully asked, "You... you're not going to..."

"Going to, my ass!" Meng Chao Ran was so angry that he wanted to beat him up. So, he maliciously smacked Tan Tan on his head!

"So, you don't want that, oh! I was scared to death," Tan Tan felt relieved. He felt somewhat embarrassed while putting on his pants. "I thought that you two haven't vented out for a long time, and couldn't hold back anymore... so..."

Shu!

Meng Chao Ran and Chu Yang unleashed their kicks. Tan Tan screamed and flew out. But, his body got pasted on the wall of the cave, and a mark of his outline got imprinted on the wall.

"Don't move!" Chu Yang and Meng Chao Ran grabbed him.

Both of them had noticed that there had seemingly been a flash of light from Tan Tan's chest a moment ago. They couldn't prevent themselves from being startled by the sight of it, and moved closer to him to examine...

They then saw that an incomplete triangular mark had appeared in the centre of Tan Tan's chest. Moreover, this mark was faintly issuing a golden light.

Chu Yang touched it. It felt hard, and didn't feel like flesh. But, he couldn't make out anything of it. So, he said, "Master, you touch it too!"

Therefore, Meng Chao Ran also touched it. He then spoke-up puzzled, "That's strange." Both of them had a good understand of Tan Tan's body. So, they knew that there was no such thing on his body before. But, how did such a thing appear on his body now?

Tan Tan remained stuck against the stone wall of the cave. He saw Chu Yang and his master moving closer to him, and not being able to take their eyes off of him. He then looked-on as they touched his body. His whole body turned numb as a result. In fact, he felt as if his whole body was turning cold. He then squeezed his butt-cheeks tightly, and started to scream uncontrollably, "Help... I'm being raped..."

...

Master and the other two were walking in the heavy snow. Meng Chao Ran was in the forefront. Chu Yang was in the second place, and Tan Tan was behind him. However, Tan Tan looked like a beaten-up stuffed bun.

This guy's mention of 'rape' had stirred-up the anger of his master and his senior martial brother. So, they had beaten him up! In fact, he had nearly died of the beating...

Chu Yang and Meng Chao Ran were somewhat equally depressed at this time. Tan Tan's physique seemed to have changed. In fact, they had realized that this guy didn't even feel pain when they were beating him up. So, they had increased their strength, and had even used up to seventy to eighty percent of their strength later. But, Tan Tan had remained calm... as if nothing had happened!

His body had turned black-and-blue. In fact, it was too horrible to look at his body. But, this had no effect on his bones and internal organs.

They had both gasped for breath after they had beaten him up. Then, they looked at Tan Tan and became indescribably surprised. [How did this bastard not die after receiving so much beating?]

Then, Tan Tan put on his clothes, and the three of them set out their journey. Chu Yang, Meng Chao Ran, and even Tan Tan himself didn't pay any attention to that the incomplete triangle on his forehead even though it was flashing and issuing faint lights. The tips of his eyebrows were also glowing. His chest was covered with clothes, but that triangle on his chest was also glowing endlessly under his clothes...

Then... the bruises on Tan Tan's body also slowly disappeared. They slowly vanished into nothing... they hadn't even walked to several kilometres by the time it happened. He was still tragically screaming in pain, but there weren't any scars on his body anymore...

Chu Yang and Meng Chao Ran were left to click their tongues in wonder after they discovered this!

However, Chu Yang suddenly had a strange feeling when he looked at the face of that narcissistic and naughty Tan Tan, [My junior martial brother seems to be no ordinary person...]

The Sword Spirit also came out to examine him after he listened to his screams. However, it seemed that he wasn't familiar with the situation either, "I have never seen such a body; I've never seen such an ugly person."

Therefore, Chu Yang had no better option but to give up. Consequently, he gave up on investigating Tan Tan's situation.

The Sword Spirit had also been very sullen since his spiritual power had recovered. After all, he had promptly requested Chu Yang to head into the direction from where the sword-light had emerged. But, he had gotten coerced and ordered by Chu Yang to make a complete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill. So, the Sword Spirit had no other option but to pinch his nose and comply.

Regarding the explanation as to how Meng Chao Ran's martial power got promoted by an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill — Sword Spirit merely snorted disdainfully.

"Isn't it obvious? Your master's meridians had become frigid after he was hit by Melting Meridian Hand. And, it was supposed to be like that for forever. But, your master didn't give up, and continued to try hard for all those years! He kept on cultivating! So, his body contained too much of spirit energy. But, his meridians couldn't hold the spirit energy. So, he couldn't change it into spiritual power.

"However, he later cultivated with the help of the Divine Chi Gathering Fish. This phenomenon makes it more obvious. The incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill not only healed his injuries, but also had an impact on the effect of the Melting

Meridian Hand. So, parts of its effects have already been washed away. The pill is surely for healing injuries, and isn't meant for increasing the spiritual power. But, it opened the meridians that had been blocked for so many years. So, why wouldn't the accumulated spiritual power well up once this had happened? Why should the promotion of cultivation in such situation be any surprising?"

The Sword Spirit then concluded his speech with a few words by counter-attacking Chu Yang's coercing attempts, "You're a typical country bumpkin. You haven't seen the world. You don't know that this matter isn't unusual."

[Dammit!] Chu Yang rubbed his nose. He forced a smile and endured the insult.

They walked for two days. They then finally saw a sky-piercing ice-capped mountain; it was only faintly visible amidst the mist and snow! But, the Sword Spirit became very excited, [It's exactly the place!]

Chu Yang got excited and rushed forwards.

Suddenly...

"Be careful!" the Sword Spirit warned in Chu Yang's mind.

They then heard an angry howl coming through from faraway! This howl had seemingly shaken up the whole area.

"There's a ninth grade spirit beast!" the Sword Spirit said.

The voice hadn't even faded when a red light soared to the sky; several screeches were also heard from faraway.

Then, a red shadow came out flying from a distance.

"It is a ninth grade spirit beast. Fire Thunder Tiger!" the Sword Spirit warned, "Don't mess with it. This fellow is very bad-tempered..."

Chu Yang informed about this to Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan.

And, they sought for a corner to hide.

They had barely hidden when they saw that a big and flaming silhouette was fiercely rushing over from several thousand feet away. It was madly rushing at the altitude of more than a hundred feet.

"Such overwhelming power!" Meng Chao Ran praised.

The voice hadn't fallen yet when the silhouette of a flying sword was seen approaching from a not-too-far place. Its rumbling sound was similar to the sound of thunderclap. In fact, there was a man joined with the sword as well. They had together turned into a white light, and he was heading straight towards the Fire Thunder Tiger!

"It's an Emperor Level Expert!" the bodies of the master and the disciples shook. And, they became extremely puzzled!

[An Emperor Level Expert can't match the Fire Thunder Tiger! So, why would he overestimate his capability and intercept this angry-looking Fire Thunder Tiger? And, he's even alone? Isn't it akin to throwing away one's life?!]

Then, Chu Yang and Meng Cha Ran were soon overwhelmed with shock... [It's obvious that this Emperor Level Expert has blended three types of energies of his whole body into this sword-blow along with his soul! Moreover, he's burning his vitality too!]

[Why?]

[Has he enjoyed enough days of high status and great wealth? Is this why he has come to the Northern Wilderness to get himself killed?]

A big and a small silhouette clashed in the mid-air in the blink of an eye.

That Emperor Level Expert let out a loud scream with the sound of an explosion. And, his body was ferociously sent flying backwards. It flew up to several hundred feet and split up into

pieces; his entire body had changed into chunks of flesh in the blink of an eye!

Chu Yang was in a daze. His body trembled in shock. [Crap! He genuinely threw his life away?]

Tan Tan opened his eyes wide and sighed, "This man's way of committing suicide is very unique... but also very alluring..."

Meng Chao Ran shouted at him, "Shut up!"

...

Chapter 564: A Wisp of Sword Spirit!

The Fire Thunder Tiger furiously let out a long roar. It had been stabbed, and this had left a bloody hole on its body. And, blood was dripping down from the large wound.

It had roared in rage, and it seemed as if it was discontented with itself because it had been injured by someone who was far inferior to itself. Its eyes scanned everywhere, but it didn't find anything. So, it hatefully soared up with a red flash, and disappeared without a trace.

Nobody noticed that the strange mark on Tan Tan's forehead had shone when that ninth grade spirit beast had appeared. However, it had dimmed after the ninth grade spirit beast had vanished.

Several silhouettes rapidly flew out from the place that the Emperor Level Expert had leapt out. They came with the quickest speed possible, and hastily collected the blood that had been spilled from the Fire Thunder Tiger's wound. They didn't leave even a single drop of blood, and collected two bottles full of the blood. It was obvious that everyone had harboured a sense of constrained ecstasy within their hearts.

Chu Yang suddenly had a realization.

[I see. These aristocratic clans are collecting the blood essence of a ninth grade sprit beast. It is somewhat sorrowful that these clans only have this method to collect the blood essence of a ninth grade spirit beast.]

[An expert sacrificed himself so that he could make a big wound on the body of the ninth grade spirit beast. However, the others wouldn't have to do anything. They would only have to wait for the spirit beast to go away, and they would then come out and collect the blood essence of the beast... They can obtain the blood by sacrificing only one life in this way...]

[But... how f*ked up is this?]

A lean silhouette silently flew out. He took off his clothes and spread them on the snowy ground. Then, he collected the scattered bones and flesh of that Emperor Level Expert's corpse piece by piece, and put them in his clothes. He had a trace of repressed sorrow on his face as he went about this action in a silent manner.

[Ao Xie Yun!]

[So, these are the Ao Clan's people!]

Chu Yang remembered that he had seen the Ao Clan's people ambushing like that earlier. This meant that the Ao Clan had been planning on this the entire time. Chu Yang had an inexplicable feeling when he saw Ao Xie Yun silently packing the bones of the dead Emperor Level Expert.

[The Evil Young Master still has a bit of conscience left, I see... It's very hard to show such genuine concern in an artificial manner.]

Ao Clan's people had collected the spilled blood essence of the ninth grade spirit beast.

Then, they knelt on the ground under Ao Xie Yun's leadership. They silently knocked their heads nine times in front of the corpse's remains. Then, they stood up.

"Return to the clan. And, beware of the Black Devil's people!" Ao Xie Yun ordered in a heavy voice.

The numerous experts of the Ao Clan complied and quietly left.

Ao Xie Clan was the only one left in the end. He was hiding the tearstains on his face with a cold and firm complexion. He walked a few steps at first, and then turned around once. But, he then finally walked away, and soon faded into the distance.

Suddenly, he returned. He then knelt down and kowtowed. He banged his head three times with 'thump' sounds in the direction

of that dead Emperor Level Expert! And, he stayed knelt down in that place without uttering a voice.

The experts of the Ao Clan calmly waited for their young clan lord; they didn't say a word.

Ao Xie Yun eventually stood up and let out a loud scream. Then, he left without turning his head again. The troop slowly faded and vanished in this world of mist and snow.

"This is an Aristocratic clan! This is the true legacy of a Great Aristocratic Clan!" Meng Chao Ran sighed and said.

Chu Yang remained silent for a long time. Then, he finally spoke-up, "Yes, this is an aristocratic clan! This is a true aristocratic clan!"

An aristocratic clan needs various people to work together in order to develop. Only then could it slowly build the so-called 'legacy'. Legacy doesn't necessarily depend on the number of experts in a clan. But, it depends upon an idea — a common belief.

Having the legacy can make the ancestors of the family have a sense of identity in their hearts. It makes them have a sense of belonging, and a feeling of glory. And, having this kind of a feeling should be a pure delight... regardless of what kind of things they must do for the clan's sake!

Just like the sacrifice that this Emperor Level Expert of Ao Clan had made today...

Such a clan truly deserves to be called an aristocratic clan!

"I understand it now. A clan can be called an aristocratic clan if someone from their clan commits suicide," Tan Tan didn't understand the gist of the story. But, he still drew out a conclusion in a very serious manner.

Chu Yang and Meng Chao Ran remained aghast.

...

The master and the disciples finally arrived in front of the icy

peak. And, they were left to gasp in admiration when they looked upwards.

High!

Steep!

These words would automatically come to one's mind when they'd look at this icy peak.

"This mountain peak looks like a sword." Tan Tan shook his head and stretched out his tongue as he said, "But, who can use such a big sword?"

Chu Yang felt moved in his heart. He turned his head to look at him.

Sword Spirit became somewhat shocked in Chu Yang's thought.

"There must've been a fight here. Otherwise, that Fire Thunder Tiger mustn't have run away like that. But, how come everything is so peaceful here?" Meng Chao Ran was concerned about this matter. However, he and his disciples had no other choice but to be cautious now.

Meng Master would become nervous at the mere blow of wind and movement of grass.

He wouldn't consider the cultivation level of his disciples. He only believed that he must protect them at any cost as long as they were at his side. In fact, it was almost as if they were his own children!

[It's my responsibility to protect them!]

"The Fire Thunder Tiger has run away. So, those people wouldn't have stayed here any longer," Chu Yang said, "Master... there are only a few people in the Middle Three Heavens who can make a Fire Thunder Tiger flee. Moreover, I know only Young Master Yu and Jun Xi Zhu are capable of pulling this off this. But, they've already gone into closed-door practice. Therefore, any person who

is capable of compelling a Fire Thunder Tiger to come out must've been an expert from the Upper Three Heavens. But, they've violated the rules of the Nine Heavens by appearing here.

"Therefore, they won't wait here. Instead, they would've run back before it's too late. After all, staying here would mean big trouble if they got discovered by the Law Enforcers of the Nine Heavens."

Chu Yang tactfully explained.

"Well... it's good that they didn't wait here to ambush." Meng Chao Ran nodded, "Are you sure that you want to go in by yourself?"

"Yes." Chu Yang pursed up his lips.

"Alright. Tan Tan and I will wait over there for you," Meng Chao Ran pointed towards a nearby cave and said.

"Alright."

Tan Tan became somewhat restless as he watched Chu Yang turning around and going. So, he stuck out his head, looked around, and said, "Master, why can't I go with him?"

"What would you do... by going with him?" Meng Chao Ran looked-on as Chu Yang's figure gradually faded. He then said, "Tan Tan, this is something you must remember — A person will inevitably have some secrets that they don't want others to know! And, you don't need to inquire anything if this person doesn't mean to harm you. After all, the other person can also feel hurt because of your needless inquisition. And, you will suffer more loss if that happens.

"The curiosity of a human is vast and limitless. Therefore, one must control one's curiosity... just like one must control one's greed!" Meng Chao Ran deeply said, "In fact, this is more important for us to remember while we are present in this world. An ordinary person can face difficulties because of their curiosity. But, a person

of Jianghu can end up losing their life because of their curiosity!"

"Yes, Master." Tan Tan's head drooped down.

Meng Chao Ran nodded and exposed a faint smile on his face.

Chu Yang obviously wouldn't harm Tan Tan. But, Meng Chao Ran wanted to teach precautionary measures to his disciple so that he wouldn't hurt others.

[I can't protect them forever. They will have to walk on their paths by themselves.]

...

The more Chu Yang approached the mountain peak... the more excited the Sword Spirit became in Chu Yang's mind.

"In here! In here!" Sword Spirit excitedly repeated the same thing. His whole body was shivering.

"From where do I go in?" Chu Yang was also somewhat excited.

"Move forward... Go around the corner, go downwards..." Sword Spirit kept directing him...

"Forcefully go in from here!" Sword Spirit impatiently shouted when he had come to the halfway of a small hill.

"Go in from here. Then, dig to the base of this mountain using the Nine Tribulations Sword!" Sword Spirit was excited.

"Alright."

Chu Yang drew out his long sword. The Nine Tribulations Sword fragments were urged by his thought, and quickly got attached to the sword. Then, the sword inserted downwards!

....

"How long will it take?" Some time had passed, and Chu Yang had already gone deeper into the ice. However, he had been feeling more and more chill gathering around his body. So, he couldn't help but ask.

He had no other choice but to ask because the Nine Tribulations Sword was somewhat slacking. The Nine Tribulations Sword felt that this excavation had no use for itself. So, it was somewhat discontented. Its efficiency had also reduced greatly. So, Chu Yang had to promise to feed it innumerable martial treasures. That's the only way he could get the Nine Tribulations Sword to work...

Sword Spirit felt somewhat embarrassed during this whole process. So, he sealed his lips, and didn't utter a word. [Ah! Sir Sword Master is going in debt because of me...]

"Go even further down... to several thousand feet." Sword Spirit felt excited and said, "I can feel that the wisp of remnant soul is also excited and expecting us..."

"Several thousand feet more downwards?" Chu Yang's heartbeats fastened up. "I've already dug to nearly ten-thousand feet, but I still haven't reached the end...? Don't tell me that I have to dig till I bore through the earth?"

"How can you bore through the earth by digging for only several thousand feet?" the Sword Spirit earnestly replied.

Chu Yang rolled his eyes and continued to toil hard.

He again went three-thousand feet downwards. He dug up this solid and thick icy ground. However, soil had started to appear beneath the ice by now.

"There is soil in this Northern Wilderness as well..." Chu Yang was surprised.

"This region is located on earth... So, why would it not have soil?" Sword Spirit said somewhat disdainfully.

However, the Nine Tribulations Sword was also very excited while digging in this place. Its appearance was way different from when it was slacking off earlier. In fact, it was happily and excitedly digging with 'swoosh' sounds.

"What happened?" Chu Yang was somewhat puzzled.

The Sword Point, Sword Edge, and Sword Spine of the Nine Tribulations Sword danced and trembled in excitement.

Sword Spirit eventually raised his eyebrows, and let out a sigh and said, "I think that there's a good item down there. What else could make this gang of greedy bastards so excited...? Also, do you think that the Sword Soul would fall in some ordinary place? It's like you have no insight..."

Chu Yang was stunned.

[The reaction of Sword Spirit and Nine Tribulations Sword is amazing. Could it be that we've come across some awesome martial treasure?]

Chu Yang's heart became fiery at this realization.

[The item that can make Sword Soul reside in this place, and can make the Nine Tribulations Sword so excited... is it one of the Nine Great Legendary Herbs?]

He kept digging as this thought crossed his mind.

They continued to dig for another three-thousand feet. Then, the Nine Tribulations Sword suddenly started to dig down in a crazed manner. It wasn't known for how long it dug down...

They uncovered the layer of stone. They then saw that there was a big dry space underneath it.

A sword light was dancing around unhindered in this area like a mysteriously Divine Dragon.

Chu Yang entered into this space.

The sword light that was swimming around in this space suddenly stopped. It then issued a ray of seven-colored light. It slowly solidified and rippled several times. Then, it changed into an illusory shadow clad in a white robe which had sword pattern on it. Its physical features also emerged from the shadow.

Chu Yang noticed that this appearance was almost the same as

that of the Sword Spirit in his mind.

This shadow carefully examined Chu Yang with its sharp sword-like eyes. Then, it asked, "This... is the current Master of Nine Tribulations Sword?!"

There was clear element of disdain in its voice...

...

Chapter 565: Battle of Sword Spirits!

"Yes," a voice rang forth from Chu Yang's body; it was the voice of Sword Spirit. However, there was a hint of scepticism in that voice, "It is this era's Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword! You... you are only a soul fragment. So, how do you have your own consciousness?"

"He's too weak!" That wisp of soul disdainfully looked at Chu Yang out of the corner of its eyes. It even ignored the Sword Spirit's question. Sword Spirit was its main body, but it still hadn't given him any importance?

Sword Spirit became silent. He obviously felt that there was something fishy.

Chu Yang could sense that the Sword Spirit was very angry in his mind. In fact, he seemed to be extremely furious!

"Which generation's Master of the Nine Tribulation Sword is this?" the wisp of Sword Spirit asked in a bossy and arrogant way. In fact, its attitude was very rampant.

Chu Yang looked at this wisp of Sword Spirit with interest since he felt that this guy had a nature opposite to what he had expected.

Sword Spirit coldly and heavily retorted, "Don't you know how many years you've been staying here?"

The wisp of Sword Spirit sneered in reply, "I followed the First Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword. But, I didn't follow the second one. Then, I followed the Third Master, and I didn't follow the fourth one. Then, I followed the fifth one too. However, I came here after the fifth master... So, how the fu*k would I know which generation he comes from...?"

"It is the Ninth Sword Master!" the Sword Spirit deeply said, "And, this is the chance for both of us!"

"What chance?" The Sword Soul sneered, "I became very excited

when I sensed that the main body was coming. But, this Sword Master is so damn weak... it has left me extremely disappointed!"

"Don't be impudent!" the Sword Spirit shouted, "Wouldn't you return to me? For how long do you want to stay here like this?"

"Return...?" Sword Soul hesitated and sighed, "Allow me to enjoy my freedom here. I genuinely don't see any hope if I were to stay with him!"

Chu Yang's body shook fiercely. It turned out that the Sword Spirit had abruptly come out of his body. A dark shadow separated itself from the surface of Chu Yang's body, and went over to catch the Sword Soul, "You come to me!"

The illusory white shadow dodged him. It again changed into sword light, and started to move around as it said, "You can't force me!"

The Sword Spirit became angry and said, "You're a wisp of my soul. And, you can attach yourself back to the main soul now. So, what's wrong?"

"I too wish to move unhindered in this world with you. But, this Sword Master is too weak! I too wish to smile arrogantly in the Nine Heavens with you. But, this Sword Master is too weak! I too wish to go with you, but..."

The incomplete Sword Soul recited this in poetic manner at first. Then, its voice suddenly became serious, "So, I think it would be better that you leave him and stay here with me. Then, you and I will become one entity and our own masters. And, we will make our personal empire in the Nine Heavens!"

"You are thinking of going solo?! So, you attracted me here so that you could swallow me?! Are you thinking of becoming the main Sword Spirit?!" Sword Spirit was unable to restrain his anger. He jumped and threw himself over to it. His body swung in mid-air, and changed into a dim sword-light!

Both the sword lights started to battle intensely!

Chu Yang sighed. He felt speechless. He had put a lot of hard work into getting down here, but it had unexpected turned out to be such a matter...

[So, this fellow wants to swallow the Sword Spirit. It's the opposite of what it should be!]

The Sword Point of the Nine Tribulations Sword appeared in his Dantian with a 'clang', and sparkled!

The Sword Edge soared ferociously, and appeared on Chu Yang's forehead. Then, it also shone brightly...

The Sword Spine flew and affixed itself to Chu Yang's chest with a violent and boundless force!

The three sword fragments aligned themselves in a straight line. Then, a dreadful murderous aura swarmed out from the fragments to protect Chu Yang's body.

The two sword lights were playing the cat-and-mouse game in that space. However, it couldn't be ascertained who had gained the upper hand. The whole space was instantly filled with rays of lights that flashed about in chaotic manner, and it seemed as if countless twinkling stars had suddenly gathered in this narrow place.

The dark Sword Spirit floated backwards with a loud 'Bang'. And, the white sword-light rolled backwards tumbling. So, it seemed that the main body of Sword Spirit was slightly superior...

The white sword-light staggered as it withdrew. Even the brightness of sword-light had somewhat dimmed.

It then suddenly turned over and went to a corner in this space like lightning. After that, it issued a 'buzzing' sound along with the sound of splashing water. Then, the white sword-light suddenly flew out of the corner, and burst into loud laughter, "Main Body, you had better listen to me. You can't defeat me here!"

The Sword Spirit was startled by this. He even started to shake in fright as he said, "Soul Quenching Spring? No wonder you intentionally made me come here. So, there's Soul Quenching Spring here!" he had gritted his teeth as he had spoken the last part.

"I will use the Soul Quenching Spring every time I suffer damage, and I will recover in an instant! But, you can't do that!" The incomplete Sword Soul happily laughed, "I have the control over this spring water behind me. But, you have no chance of utilizing it!

"Moreover, nothing besides a soul body can touch or obtain this Soul Quenching Spring!" The Sword Soul suddenly issued a brutal sword cry and said, "There will be times when you will become exhausted. But, I can maintain myself in peak condition all the time. You're surely stronger than me. But, do you think you have a chance? What are your odds of winning?"

Sword Spirit – who was transformed into a sword-light – scattered disorderly in apprehension. It was evident that he had been hit on a sore point!

A thought welled up in Chu Yang's mind. [What exactly is this Soul Quenching Spring? Can it genuinely quench a soul?]

Sword Point sneakily throbbed in his Dantian, and hinted him to go over there.

Chu Yang smiled wryly, [It has been made clear that nothing can touch this Soul Quenching Spring except for a soul. So, what's the use of me going there?]

But, Sword Point was continuously insisting him, and had started to throb more and more intensely.

Chu Yang sighed. He thought, [I can only go and take a look at that. But, I can't do anything about it. I can't do anything about it!]

He moved his feet to walk towards that place.

The incomplete Sword Soul saw Chu Yang walking over towards the Soul Quenching Spring. It issued an ominous aura and said, "Might as well eliminate this body of residence first. Then, there would be no hassle!"

An electric spark suddenly lased over!

Chu Yang suddenly felt icy chill on his whole body! Then, an icy-cold murderous aura enveloped his heart. Chu Yang's whole body became so stiff under this strike of the incomplete Sword Soul that he couldn't even move a finger...

However, the Nine Tribulations Sword had jumped into action in advance as if it had anticipated this. The Sword Point of the Nine Tribulations Sword issued a long cry, and jumped out of the Dantian. The Sword Edge also kept pace with it, while the Sword Spine frantically flew up in the air. The three segments of the sword then made a complete formation in the air and flashed. A tens of thousands year old 'ancient demonic aura' ferociously rippled in the air. It then changed into a black energy, and forged ahead towards that wisp of Sword Soul.

The incomplete Sword Soul fiercely drew back. It seemed to have become a little hesitant. So, it snorted and said, "It's hard to believe that this guy has already merged three segments... And, I can't do anything to him if he has you all to protect him. Humph, do you think that he would be able to touch the Soul Quenching Spring with his human body even if he reaches to that place? He won't even be able to see it! Ha ha ha..."

However, his voice suddenly changed as he said, "But, this boy is something for sure. To even think that he has managed to make the Nine Tribulations Sword so obedient... He-he, I haven't seen such a thing in these ninety-thousand years. Let's do it like this kid... You are very weak, but I will stay in your Nine Tribulations Space if you let me swallow that guy over there. I will help you dominate over the Nine Heavens, and break through the shackles of the Nine Heavens! What you do you say?"

It then revealed a grotesque smile and continued, "You must know, and I must tell you this... you won't be able to achieve that with the help of this good-for-nothing guy even if you want to."

Chu Yang straightened up his body. His eyes flashed like electric sparks as he indifferently replied, "It doesn't matter whether I'm strong or weak. I'm the Sword Master! And, you're only Sword Soul... not to mention that you're incomplete. So, it doesn't matter whether I'm weak or strong. You are a Sword Soul that doesn't listen to my command and intends to conspire against us. I would reject you even if you were stronger... In fact, I would rather exterminate you! You don't deserve to stay with me!"

The incomplete Sword Soul issued a sharp scream in midair. Then, it furiously shouted back, "I don't deserve...? I don't deserve?"

It suddenly changed into sword-light and wildly rushed over, "I will kill you first! You puny and powerless man..."

The Sword Spirit issued a sword cry with a 'clang'. Then, it ferociously rushed over like a streamer of light, and caught up with the incomplete Sword Soul. He blocked it in the mid-air. And, the two sword-lights again entangled together.

This time, the battle got even more intense than before!

Chu Yang gently shook his head. He insipidly and softly said, "You don't deserve it if you don't deserve it. You're very strong, but you still don't deserve it! This is my journey. How can I let you influence it?"

He coldly snorted and silently said in his heart, "It's out of question... even if it's a God!"

Then, he no longer responded to the Sword Soul. He hurriedly sprang up and rushed to that corner. He found that there was a vaguely visible tiny fountain in that corner. It was the size of a fist, and the water was flowing out of it with a gurgling sound.

It could be said that... this 'water' barely resembled water because it was coming out like vapours. It could even be dispersed with a mere blow of breath. But, it was indeed water...

[What is this? Is this water?] Chu Yang stroked his chin. He looked at this fountain and thought, [How can I put an end to its power source? What can I do to prevent the Sword Soul from quenching itself from this?]

[Also, didn't that Sword Soul say that I can't see it? Then, why can I see it so clearly?]

The Sword Spirit was in the middle of the fight. However, it looked at Chu Yang as he arrived in front of that Soul Quenching Spring by taking advantage of the Sword Soul's carelessness. The Sword Spirit couldn't help but become very happy at this. He then loudly called out, "Jam the fountain with your palm, and move it inside the Nine Tribulations Space!"

"Jam it with the palm...? Ha ha ha..." the incomplete Sword Soul burst into loud laughter, "Do you think he's a soul? You have become delusional!"

The Sword Spirit sneered in reply. He looked at Sword Soul with pity and hatred in his eyes. Then, he mischievously laughed and said, "I forgot to tell you... this Master of Nine Tribulations Sword has taken rebirth! This is his second life. In other words, his soul is the superimposition of the souls of his two lives. The soul of his previous life has returned to the seventeen-year-old self in this life... with the memories intact! So, his soul hasn't gone through the cycle of reincarnation!"

The incomplete Sword Soul stumbled and drew backwards with a 'ding' sound. It became extremely shocked as it said, "He's a Nine Tribulations Sword Master who has experienced rebirth?"

"Yes!" However, the Sword Spirit didn't stop there. Instead, he kept pressing onwards, and his attacks became increasingly intense. He spoke-up with a sneer, "This means that he can also use

items like Soul Quenching Spring... like a spirit can! He see them, and he can touch them too!"

"Ah~~~" the incomplete Sword Soul let out a pitiful yell at first. It then said while being in daze, "How can this happen? How can this happen?" Suddenly, the sword-light flashed and restored to that illusory shadow. It then pointed towards the Sword Spirit and angrily shouted, "You you... why didn't you tell me this before?"

"Tell you before? How would you have shown your evil ambitions if I had told you?" the Sword Spirit coldly replied.

Chu Yang had covered the Soul Quenching Spring with his right palm by this time. He contemplated in his heart, "Receive!"

However, he suddenly felt his own soul being exhausted. In fact, he felt so exhausted that it seemed as if he had crossed ten-thousand miles of mountains and river without eating or drinking anything! Even his consciousness felt somewhat fuzzy at this moment!

However, a spring appeared in the Nine Tribulations Space. It got placed right next to the mouth of the Vitality Spring. The vapored spring water rose in spirals, and covered the mouth of the spring. But, it didn't disperse for a long time.

This was the Soul Quenching Spring!

Chapter 566: Soul Quenching Spring

"Ah~~" the incomplete Sword Soul bellowed in sorrow and despair, "It's gone. It's gone... my Soul Quenching Spring is gone! My..." It suddenly changed into countless sharp and swift 'sword-lights', and dashed towards Chu Yang.

Sword Point, Sword Spine and Sword Edge also fought back at the same time!

The incomplete Sword Soul was suddenly sent out flying with a loud bang. Then, the Sword Spirit winded around it like a shadow follows a body. And, both the souls started to fight while issuing 'slam' and 'bang' sounds.

The incomplete Sword Soul desperately yelled, "Spare my life! I surrender! I'm ready to follow Sir Sword Lord everywhere. I'll serve him faithfully and laboriously like a dog and a horse...

"Please forgive me! Don't beat me. Don't swallow me..." The incomplete Sword Soul became frightened as it shouted, "I, I... I have been here alone for more than sixty-thousand years... more than sixty-thousand years...

"I have followed the previous Sword Masters too, and I've performed great deeds for them!" The incomplete Sword Soul was doing its utmost to dodge the attacks of Sword Spirit. It was in utter panic. The arrogance and the acute anger it had shown a while ago had vanished without trace by now.

One could've easily seen tears and snot streaming down his face if it had been in a human form...

However, the Sword Spirit didn't relax. He instead continued to chase after it.

"I gave you the chance! But, you had the ambitions of a wild wolf. You betrayed the Sword Master, betrayed the sword, and even betrayed your main soul!" Sword Spirit bellowed as he continued

to launch waves of attacks, "I won't show you mercy. I must permanently take you back today!"

"Spare my life... Sir Sword Lord. Sir Sword Lord, please forgive me..." The incomplete Sword Soul had clearly understood that it wouldn't get any mercy from the Sword Spirit. So, it begged Chu Yang for mercy instead, "See, it took me sixty-thousand years to attain spiritual wisdom..."

"Ah~~~" suddenly, his mournful scream changed into a sword-cry of hopelessness.

Sword Spirit was already entangled with the incomplete Sword Soul. And, it was clearly visible that both the sword-lights were struggling with all their might. One of them was trying its hardest to swallow the other. And, the other one was trying its hardest to flee from this entanglement...

But, how could the Sword Spirit show leniency?

The two sword-lights were twisting and tangling together. They were rolling from east to west, and from south to north.

The sounds of struggling eventually reduced. Then, the Sword Spirit proudly said, "It's only sixty-thousand years of cultivated spirit wisdom... What are you being so cocky about?"

The transformation of sword-lights became grotesque and variegated in the air.

Sword Spirit appeared in front of Chu Yang with a 'shua' sound. However, he had appeared alone!

That incomplete Sword Soul had been swallowed-whole. So, the spiritual wisdom that it had cultivated over sixty-thousand years had disappeared as well; it didn't exist anymore.

Chu Yang looked at the Sword Spirit, and felt that he had changed from what he was a while ago. He had become a lot more solid than he had been. Chu Yang knew that he was a spirit. Else, Chu Yang would've believed that the entity standing in front of

him was a living human being made of blood and flesh.

"My soul is complete now." Sword Spirit exposed an extremely humanly expression of smile on his face. He then said to Chu Yang, "But, I still need to warm and nourish for some time to assimilate this fellow in a proper manner."

"I see." Chu Yang asked, "What is this Soul Quenching Spring?"

The Sword Spirit remained silent for a while at first. But, he eventually replied, "The Soul Quenching Spring is something that doesn't belong to this world."

He thought for a moment. It was a while before it started to seem that he had arranged the train of his thoughts. He then said, "There has long-been a legend in the Nine Heavens Continent. It is... The souls remain even after people die! And, there's some other world for souls! And, common people call this world 'hell' or 'netherworld'!"

"Hell...? Does the hell really exist?" Chu Yang was somewhat flabbergasted as he asked.

"Hell doesn't exist." Sword Spirit replied, "But, the Netherworld does!"

"What does this mean?" Chu Yang became a little confused. [Aren't they are the same places?]

"Netherworld is netherworld. But, it is different from the hell from the legends." Sword Spirit casually said, "It's true that the soul of a person remains after their death. But, the soul of an ordinary person dissipates at the boundary of the Netherworld. Therefore, only a few comparatively valiant souls can reach there... it's obviously a very strange place as well! And, nobody can describe the definite appearance of that place."

Sword Spirit forced a smile and continued, "I haven't been there. But, I've once heard Sir talking about it."

"Sir?" Chu Yang sensitively caught this word and asked, "Who

Sir?"

"Sir... is..." Sword Spirit mumbled as if he was hiding something and said, "Sir, ah... I'm sorry Sword Lord... I can't tell you this. You haven't reached that level yet."

Chu Yang looked at him with his falcon-like sharp eyes. However, he eventually closed eyes and nodded in clear understanding. Then, he said, "Continue to speak."

"The Netherworld is responsible for souls. There's a fountain there known as 'Ascending Spirit Pond'. Some lucky souls are promoted by the Netherworld, and are given jobs. They are then allowed to go and soak in the 'Ascending Spirit Pond'. Their soul becomes much more solid than ordinary souls after they've bathed in it. And, these souls become administrators after that..."

The Sword Spirit was explaining things to him in a very brief manner. And, it was evident that he was skipping many things. But, Chu Yang didn't interrogate in detail either; he only listened calmly.

"And, this spring water is a part of the 'Ascending Spirit Pond'. I don't know how it has appeared here... and has changed into Soul Quenching Spring. However, this Soul Quenching Spring also works as Ascending Spirit Pond. And, this means that it can also solidify a soul!"

Sword Spirit spoke till here in a sluggish manner. However, he became much more fluent after that, "Sir Sword Lord, don't underestimate this Soul Quenching Spring. It's very beneficial for you as well. In fact, its benefits are simply incomparable."

"It's very beneficial for me as well?" Chu Yang curiously asked.

"Yes." Sword Spirit said, "You have lived two human lives. But, it's only like a dream since the two of your lives are overlaid on each other. Therefore, your soul can bathe in this Soul Quenching Spring, and that will consolidate your spirit!

"A soul lives on as a divine spirit after its body dies." Sword Spirit said, "And, the divine spirit's function is to dominate the fate of a person... In fact, you will also have various benefits from this... on your journey in the future!"

He again started to mumble as if he was hiding something.

Chu Yang slightly smiled in an enigmatic way as he insipidly said, "I understand Divine Spirit. I also understand the benefits in case the Divine Spirit solidifies. This Soul Quenching Spring seems to be a rare treasure as well! In fact, I can also refine the Nine Tribulations Sword by putting it inside this spring. I understand these matters.

"But, I didn't expect that you'd hide so many things and so many secrets from me!" Chu Yang indifferently said, "This makes me feel very uncomfortable."

Sword Spirit remained silent for a moment. Then, he said, "Sir Sword Lord, I understand your concern, but try to understand. I don't have any evil desires in my heart even though I've hidden these things from you." He raised his head and softly said, "I've been with each of the previous Sword Masters. And, I have lived for ninety-thousand years. I've never done anything to let down the previous Nine Tribulations Sword Masters.

"I would've been obliterated long ago if I had some evil intention," the Sword Spirit desolately smiled. There seemed to be endless helplessness and secrets in this smiling expression. And, it felt as if he couldn't speak about them...

Chu Yang merely said 'hmm', and refused to comment on that.

"There are a lot of things that I can't tell you right now. It is because your cultivation level is still too low and your Divine Spirit is also unsteady. Moreover, your soul hasn't solidified either. So, it will only hurt you if I tell you."

Sword Spirit heaved a deep sigh, "There are a few places where

Martial Great Master is considered paramount in a world like the Nine Heavens. And, there are a few places where Revered Martial Artists are considered to be the peak. However, one can only discover how big this world is once they've gone beyond these stages... After all, Martial Great Masters and Revered Martial Artists are as good as trash from a wider perspective!

"A King level Expert is considered to be a supreme expert in the Lower Three Heavens! Diwu Qing Ruo only led four King Level Experts and established the world-sweeping Golden Horse Riders Department!"

"However, King Level Experts... are everywhere here in the Middle Three Heavens. And, they also die every day!"

Sword Spirit smiled, "The power level in the Middle Three Heavens is quite average. But, personalities like Young Master Yu and Jun Xi Zhu are here as well. Every great clan here has Emperor Level Experts! In fact, some clans secretly have Monarch Level Experts too!

"These things would've been hard to imagine for you when you were in the Lower Three Heavens. But, this world is still very small. You will only know how big this world is once when you get to the Upper Three Heavens and experience a few things. Anything can happen in the Nine Heavens!

"But, these things are extremely distant (/too far away) from you!" Sword Spirit looked at him sincerely. "Knowing a lot of thing (/too much) would not be good for your mental state.

"A Martial Pupil will only treat Supreme Level as legend if he hears about it. He will only have one thought — it's too far away, and I will never be able to reach such a point in my life. And, such kind of mind-set only gives rise to bindings on one's heart!"

Sword Spirit continued, "Besides... there are some things that I can't speak about."

Chu Yang remained silent for a long while before he said, "I get it!"

[One must have a certain level of cultivation, a certain status, and a certain level of perspective in order to know to certain things... or to enter a particular group. For instance, a beggar can never imagine the lifestyle of a landlord. And, a landlord can never imagine the life of high officials. And, the luxurious lifestyle of an imperial family would be even more unimaginable for the beggar.]

[This is so-called 'level', right?] Chu Yang quietly sighed.

The Sword Spirit heaved a sigh a relief. He then changed into blue smoke and floated into Chu Yang's body. He occupied his spot inside Chu Yan's sea of his consciousness.

The Sword Spirit could've gone in without giving an explanation if Chu Yang hadn't agreed. But, this was the Sword Spirit's nature. It didn't matter whether Chu Yang believed him or not... The Sword Spirit felt that it was necessary to make this matter clear to him.

The Sword Spirit used the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal to craft a pool once it had entered the Nine Tribulations Space. Then, he pulled the vapour-like spring water of Soul Quenching Spring into that pool. After that, he dived into it with a 'splashing' sound.

He then issued a satisfied moan.

The Soul Quenching Spring was a thing from the netherworld, but the Sword Spirit became the in-charge of this thing the moment it entered into the Nine Tribulations Space. So, it wasn't surprising that he feeling extravagant...

A light flashed, and the Sword Point, Sword Edge, and Sword Spine of the Nine Tribulations Sword also impatiently lined up outside the pool. They then sneaked into the Soul Quenching Spring with 'splashing' sounds.

"You three thieves!" the Sword Spirit cussed in anger.

Chu Yang was contemplating with rapt attention. This matter of the Sword Spirit was making his heart race. But, he didn't wish to think much about it. After all, the Sword Spirit was in his mind right now. What could Chu Yang do even if he were dissatisfied? He couldn't even expel the Sword Spirit even if he wanted to.

However, he had also started to think about another thing that the Sword Spirit had mentioned.

Moreover, those words had left him to feel somewhat rattled... and even a little frightened.

"You have lived two human lives. But, it's only like a dream since the two of your lives are overlaid on each other."

'The two of your lives are overlaid on each other.' These words had made Chu Yang frightened.

[This life isn't related to the first life if it's a second one...? Then... what about Qing Wu?]

[Is this life's Qing Wu the Qing Wu from my previous life?]

[If not... then who is this Qing Wu?]

[If not... then where's the Qing Wu of my previous life?]

[Wouldn't the existence of this life be in contradiction with the previous one?]

[If not... who do I love – this life's Qing Wu... or the previous life's Qing Wu?]

....

Chapter 567: Previous Life and This Life

Chu Yang was confused. He felt pain in his heart. He had clutched his hair, and a painful expression could be seen on his face.

"Sword Lord, you can enter the Soul Quenching Spring now," the Sword Spirit's voice was passed over.

"How do I enter?" Chu Yang care-freely and unconsciously asked.

"I can take your Divine Spirit into the Soul Quenching Spring after you fall into deep sleep," Sword Spirit said, "However, it can be estimated by your present Divine Spirit that you can only soak every once in a three-day time period. And, you would have to continue this for a month. After that, you can achieve the former stability of your Divine Spirit. However, you would need to arrive at the cultivation of Monarch Level if you want to go a step further. And, you would be able to solidify further after that..."

"Oh... I see!"

Chu Yang complied and lay down in this space.

He wanted to bathe in the Soul Quenching Spring. And, he also wanted to ask the Sword Spirit a question he had lately been very concerned about. So, he lay down despite knowing that Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan were waiting for him outside, and must be very worried...

His consciousness soon became blurred. Chu Yang felt that he had started to whirl. He felt as if his soul had been pulled out from his body. And, this left him to feel an inexplicable lightness.

Chu Yang suddenly realized that he had appeared in the Nine Tribulations Space. Moreover, he was still in human form. However, his body was very feebly visible. In fact, it was so weak that it seemed as if it might get blown off by one blow of breath.

His form looked god-know how many times weaker when

compared with the Sword Spirit whose form looked nearly like a normal human's.

He saw the pool in which Sword Spirit was soaking his body. This pool was much bigger than an ordinary pool. Water vapours were rising from its surface in blurry colours. It seemed as if he had entered in his own dream.

Sword Spirit indicated Chu Yang to lie down to enter the pool.

Chu Yang merely thought to go forward, and he suddenly felt that he was floating in the air. He slowly floated towards this Soul Quenching Pool. Then, he stopped above this Soul Quenching Pool, and slowing floated downwards. He eventually touched that dense-fog-like spring water. And, it felt like a thick and viscous liquid had surrounded his Divine Spirit. Then, an acute pain piercing into the depths of his spirit!

This pain diffused into his entire body in a moment!

There was no part of his body that didn't hurt. Chu Yang nearly wanted to jump out because he couldn't endure it. But, he couldn't jump. His body was moving slowly, but it was firmly sunk into the Soul Quenching Pool until he touched the 'Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal' base of the pool. Then, he rose up a little, and started to float in the middle of the pool.

His entire body was hurting. Moreover, the pain was becoming more and more intense. This spring water seemed to induce immeasurable pain in him. In fact, it seemed that all the pain he had ever felt from his childhood to adulthood in both of his lives had come back to him at this moment!

Chu Yang felt this pain tumbling in this water. However, he didn't make a sound. He felt his body being disintegrating and reconstituting. In fact, it felt as if something was growing in his body, and something was vanishing from his spirit... repeatedly!

The only thing that Chu Yang could do was tightly hold his

tongue and not let a sound come out of his mouth. Were these thousand kinds of pain in his body more excruciating than the helplessness of watching himself shatter into a million pieces? Was this pain worse than the one... when Mo Qing Wu had died in his previous life?

Chu Yang didn't say a word!

[Pain! Kill me if you have the ability to! But, I will endure this pain if you can't kill me!]

[I will pass through it!]

[I will endure it!]

...

This torment continued for half-an-hour before it weakened to some extent. And, Chu Yang continued to bear it as if he was enduring the pain of a death from a thousand cuts! Moreover, he was fully awake when he experienced this death from thousand cuts... hundreds of times over!

However, he firmly willed through it!

In fact, Chu Yang took this pain as a challenge for himself! [How would I ever be able to defeat anyone if I can't even beat my own pain? I must win this!]

"This is the suffering of Divine Spirit. Your willpower is astonishing. This kind of pain is even intolerable for the Divine Spirit of an immortal! I didn't expect that you would be able to endure it without uttering a sound," the voice of the Sword Spirit sounded in his ears.

Chu Yang wanted to smile. But, he then found that his face had become stiff because of the present state of his Divine Spirit and the pain that he endured. He couldn't smile or talk because his tongue has also become stiff...

He was slowly recovering now.

So, he could only listen to Sword Spirit say, "A person is always born with his innate energy. And, his Divine Spirit is perfectly complete at the time of his birth."

Sword Spirit understood Chu Yang's present state. So, he didn't wait for his reply, and further said, "A person's Divine Spirit begins to wear out when they come in contact with this mortal world. The Divine Spirit wears down little by little until it is reduced to a typical soul that can adapt in the mortal world. And thus, the transformation ends.

"This transformation occurs so that it can adapt to the mortal world. But, it also causes brutal injuries to the Divine Spirit! But, whatever the person loses during this process is far more than the gains they will ever receive later in their life! A person's Divine Spirit almost exhausts by the time their body dies! Only his soul's shell remains, and there's no 'divinity' within!"

Sword Spirit slowly continued, "Therefore, the soul gradually dissipates in the world and changes into pure spirit energy after the death of the body. Legends state that a person reincarnates after the death of their body. But, this isn't true. Or, perhaps you can say that it isn't that common because there are only some who are qualified enough. However, most of the people aren't qualified for reincarnation.

"A person may be a powerhouse, or may have a formidable Divine Spirit... or may have a grasp on the method of quenching his Divine Spirit... But, his Divine Spirit will remain incomplete forever! It is because he loses too much of Divine Spirit in the process of forming it! This is a major weakness. However, you will be invincible by the time you would've attained a certain level of strength if you can get hold on this weakness...

"But, you have the Soul Quenching Spring now. So, things will be different for you. You are feeling this pain now... because you have been obsessed with this mortal world. So, you're feeling the spiritual sacrifices you've incurred. The Soul Quenching Spring's

function is to replenish your Divine Spirit! And, restore it to its original state — your inborn Divine Spirit!

"One can only start the true cultivation of Divine Spirit after their Divine Spirit returns to its original state!

"You are the most fortunate because your Divine Spirit hasn't worn down in its entirety yet. It may perhaps be because of your dedication after your rebirth. After all, your dedication makes you keep everything under your control. Other people come to you and fit in accordingly. But, you don't go to other people and try to adapt in their world. Therefore, your Divine Spirit is closer to completion than that of an average person! And, you've also obtained the Soul Quenching Spring now...

"So, it will help you become a matchless powerhouse with a formidable foundation!"

The Sword Spirit's tone was heavy. But, it seemed to have a strange charm and went directly into the depth of Chu Yang's soul.

"However, you've lost a lot of your Divine Spirit even after these many things. Therefore... you would have to go through such painful processes once in three days every month to make up for the deficiency at your present level. However, you can reclaim your complete Divine Spirit after this ends..."

Sword Spirit sighed in his heart while saying all this.

[When did the previous Nine Tribulations Sword Masters have such luck to mend their Divine Spirits? In fact, some of them couldn't even obtain the incomplete Sword Soul!]

[However, Chu Yang's luck...]

Sword Spirit somewhat sobbed. [All men genuinely aren't created equal.]

This torment continued for an entire hour. Chu Yang's stiff body also gradually loosened up. He eventually came up to the water's surface. And, he felt as if his whole body was filled with vitality; it

felt a lot different than how he had felt when he had first come in...

Finally, he could open his mouth now and speak.

"I fully understand this whole 'Divine Spirit' deal now. But, I have a question for you, Sword Spirit. And, I need you to explain that to me that now..." Chu Yang spoke-up in a serious tone. However, he hadn't realized that his voice had somewhat trembled while he had spoken this.

"Please ask."

"You said that I've lived two lives! And, both my lives have been superimposed on each other. What does this mean?" Chu Yang slowly asked.

"Do you need an explanation for... this?" Sword Spirit became somewhat confused. "Don't you know this already? You've taken rebirth."

"I mean... how's this life different from my previous life?" Chu Yang asked in a worried tone, "In other words... does the timeline of my previous life still exist?"

Sword Spirit stared blankly for a long while. However, he eventually understood that this was a question with a profound meaning to it...

"This is very difficult to explain," Sword Spirit thought for a long time, but he still didn't know how to answer this question.

"That timeline? Does it still exist...?" Chu Yang felt cold in his heart.

"Yes. That timeline still exists," Sword Spirit replied affirmatively, "It's because your origin is from that timeline. Where did you come from if it doesn't exist? How could you even have existed?"

"It exists?!" Chu Yang suddenly felt that he didn't have any

strength in his body. He muttered, "So, doesn't it mean that Qing Wu has still died regardless of all the hard work that I've done? She is already dead in that timeline, right? And, the present Qing Wu is a different person no matter how I make up to her... or how dearly I love her...? She isn't the Qing Wu that I loved from my previous life?"

"Wrong!" Sword Spirit seriously replied, "This conclusion of yours is a blunder and gravely mistaken!"

"Wrong?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes." The Sword Spirit remained silent for a long while this time. He then said, "Let's take an example... Let's suppose that this life of yours originates this way — you had a dream one evening when you were sixteen years old. And, this dream makes you experience everything that would eventually happen in your life... all the sorrow, all the happiness, all the anger, all the regret, all the love, and all the hatred...

"And, you see your conclusion in this dream. And, that's how your dream ends. Then, you wake from this dream and discover you're still alive in this reality..." Sword Spirit cautiously said, "You understood what I said, right?"

"Yes." Chu Yang nodded. Then, he continued to listen in a serious and attentive manner.

"You wake up, and you experience a few things. However, you realize that they are the same as you saw in that dream," the Sword Spirit continued, "Therefore, you find that whatever you saw in that dream is real! And, those tragedies will sooner or later happen in your life for real.

"But, you still have enough time to change them! So, would you change them?" Sword Spirit asked.

"Of course, I will!" Chu Yang responded without taking the time to think.

"Therefore, you can take advantage of the foresight you had in your dream, and change all the harms and regrets that you are going to experience in your life. You will be more cautious throughout this life of yours since you had such a distinct dream to guide you. You won't repeat the mistakes that you had made in this dream. Also, you will think again and again before you make other mistakes too. You won't act blindly..." Sword Spirit said.

"That's right." Chu Yang acknowledged.

"Therefore, you will become a perfect man in this life after having such a dream! You will be perfect to a certain extent at least. You won't make mistakes, and you will progressively become stronger!"

Sword Spirit solemnly concluded, "This is the difference!"

...

Chapter 568: Undoes the Knot in His Heart, and Breaks Through!

The Sword Spirit heaved a long sigh. "There are many paths in one's life. And, you follow one of those possible paths in that dream of yours. So, you meet certain people, and certain things happen. Then, you wake up, and figured that this path is wrong. Will you still walk on that path?"

"I won't."

"Yes. Therefore, you change your path. Consequently, the end point and the course of events will be different even though your starting point is the same." Sword Spirit deeply said, "This is the difference between the paths.

"This is the reason why the people you come across are also going through different course of events.

"This is the reason why Beyond the Heaven Sect got destroyed in your previous life. And, Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang died. But, these two haven't died in this life. Moreover, Beyond the Heaven Sect has also become the number-one sect in the Lower Three Heavens.

"This is the reason why Wu Qian Qian agreed to Shi Qian Shan's marriage proposal and sacrificed herself for the Beyond the Heaven Sect in your previous life. But, she didn't do this in this life.

"This is the reason why Tie Bu Tian would've died in the previous life, and Diwu Qing Rou would've won. But, things are a lot different in this life.

"Gu Du Xing and the others would've become famous in the previous life. In fact, they would've become as famous as the Dark Bamboo some ten to twenty years later. But, things are a little too far ahead of time in this life.

"There are many things that didn't happen in the Middle Three Heavens in that life. But, they've happened in this life.

"Mo Qing Wu died in the dream. But, she has become a shared apprentice of two Supreme Level Experts in reality!

"You must know that these changes have occurred because of you!" Sword Spirit solemnly said, "It is because you had such a strange dream!

"Both of your lives aren't that different... The only difference is you! This life is still your previous life! So, your previous life does exist. But, it only exists in your dream."

Chu Yang had been carefully listening in silence. He had also been pondering deeply. But, he hadn't said a word.

"I only want to ask if this life's Mo Qing Wu is the Mo Qing Wu from my previous life..." Chu Yang asked in low and deep voice.

"You shouldn't ask this question," the Sword Spirit said, "Let me ask you one thing. Wouldn't Mo Qing Wu have died if you hadn't done anything different in this life, and had instead followed the path of your previous life by continuing to practice the same old 'ruthless sword way'?

"What would have become of Mo Qing Wu if you hadn't made those efforts in this life? Would she have been so lively and adorable? Would Mo Qing Wu have had any bright colours in her life if she hadn't got the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' Saber in Iron Cloud? She would have become that depressed Mo Qing Wu from the previous life! Then, she would have met you at a certain point in time, and would've died again! Tell me... why did you go to Iron Cloud in this life? Had you gone there in your previous life?"

Sword Spirit snorted and continued, "Let's count from now... you should've met Mo Qing Wu after eight-and-a-half years later in your previous life! Have you ever thought of these things?"

Chu Yang remained silent for a long while. Then, he suddenly

exposed a smiling expression on his face and said, "So that's how it is. So, I had indulged myself in a flight of fancy. But, it wasn't that big of a deal to begin with.

"The sky is still the same, the ground is still the ground, and Qing Wu is still Qing Wu! Nothing's changed... except for me!" Chu Yang softly said.

His heart suddenly felt relaxed as he spoke these words.

Sword Spirit gently smiled and said, "Right. Regarding your previous life and this life... or regarding dream or anything else... You will obviously know what the matter is in the future... You asked me one question, and I gave you so many answers. Now, can I ask you a question?"

"Go ahead," Chu Yang's mood had become excellent. So, he straightforwardly replied.

"Um, you always keep Mo Qing Wu in your mind. There is only Mo Qing Wu in your heart. In fact, you didn't hesitate to hide your appearance in the Lower Three Heavens because you didn't wish to make contact with any other woman. Even Wu Qian Qian had affection as deep as ocean towards you, but you maintained a respectable distance from her as well..."

Sword Spirit slowly asked, "You obviously think that whatever you do or have... is for Mo Qing Wu. The true love in your heart is only for Mo Qing Wu. But, would you still keep her in your mind with such determination in this life of yours if she hadn't died in your previous life, and the two of you had continued to live together?"

"What has more weight in your heart – Your guilt towards Mo Qing Wu... or your love towards her?"

Sword Spirit had asked slowly.

However, this had left Chu Yang startled!

In fact, he had been struck dumb!

He remained startled for a long while, and didn't say anything in reply. [Love? Guilt? Do I feel guilty because I love her? Or do I love her because I feel guilty?]

An adorable image of this life's Mo Qing Wu started to slide before his eyes...

"Elder Brother Chu Yang, I really miss you..."

"Elder Brother Chu Yang... will you wait for me?"

"Elder Brother Chu Yang... I am finally getting to meet you..."

"Elder Brother Chu Yang... it feels very good when you hold me."

...

A red silhouette floated over in his thoughts; it seemed as mesmerizing as a sunset. There was a faint grief and slight worry on the face of that shadow. Her whole body was graceful and elegant. She seemed gentle and soft from head to toe. Deep feelings of 'no regrets' were filled in her eyes. She was looking at him with an expression of 'foolish love' in her eyes.

"A lifetime without gentle dance is unbearable. But, to dance is to fall in love. And, love incurs a lifetime of bitterness..."

....

Chu Yang exclaimed out loud in grief!

Then, he found that his Divine Spirit had left the Nine Tribulations Space, and had returned to his body. He had fiercely sat up and his whole body was streaming with cold sweat. In fact, he was panting heavily.

Chu Yang kept thinking about this issue for a long time. Gradually, his mind regained tranquillity. And, he smiled softly.

He softly said to himself as he smiled, "Be it 'I love her because I feel guilty', or be it 'I feel guilty because I love her'. What is the difference? Two people must go through many ups-and-downs when they fall in love. But, they still go on together, and deeply

love one another.

"The so-called 'true love' must go through worldly torments to determine whether they are truly meant to be together.

"It doesn't matter if the love is there because of the guilt, or the guilt is there because of the love. After all... the present Mo Qing Wu is the Mo Qing Wu of my previous life. I will love her as long as she's Mo Qing Wu. And, that's enough.

"Why do I need to think so much?"

It seemed as if he was answering to the Sword Spirit's question while talking to himself. However, he felt unprecedentedly relaxed and pleased in his heart.

Then, he stood up and walked out.

However, Chu Yang discovered that he seemed to be different from before. But, he couldn't say what exactly this different was. The only thing he could determine was that the touch of his skin was fundamentally different...

He could feel the flow of air in this sealed place now. He even felt the strength and weakness of the current as the air flowed past his bare skin. In fact, he could clearly sense the spots where it was stronger at, and the places it felt weaker...

This was something he hadn't been able to feel in the past!

It felt as if some damaged nerves of his body had slowly been healed... as if it was slowly exuding vitality...

Chu Yang's body suddenly emitted an aura of breakthrough. And, the aura densely scattered-about! He suddenly broke through to the fifth grade of Sword King Level at this moment! Moreover, this breakthrough didn't have that tearing feeling of breaking through from a bottleneck!

It seemed as if he had broken through by some process of nature...

[Bathing in the Soul Quenching Spring also has such an incredible effect?]

Chu Yang was overjoyed!

He suddenly became eager to see the result after one month. [What would be my cultivation when that time comes...? Such a heightened sensitivity of touch would be greatly useful... while walking in Jianghu and facing enemies!]

[Because, I can feel every subtle detail in the surroundings! No hidden killer moves could be concealed away from me if I can make full use of this sensitivity...]

[There would be no enemy who could hide from my senses!]

[This is a supreme magical weapon that would help me control and defeat the enemy.]

[The magical effect of the Divine Spirit is very powerful!]

He felt pleasantly surprised as he walked out with quick steps.

[How long has it been since I arrived here? Master and Tan Tan... must be very worried.]

Meng Chao Ran was indeed anxious...

It had been eight days since Chu Yang had gone into that mountain. And, there had been no sound of activity since then. So, how could Meng Chao Ran be not worried? In fact, he was so worried that he had been pacing back-and-forth in a hysterical manner. Moreover, he had been wishing that he could just burstin and have a look...

However, Meng Chao Ran would get even more worried whenever he'd feel like bursting-in.

It was because Tan Tan had again developed a certain condition!

And, the condition was even more bizarre this time around...

Tan Tan didn't like eating food anymore. In fact, he started to

like eating some strange things! Moreover, he had developed an incomparable yearning for those bizarre things!

It started when it had been six days after Chu Yang had gone in. Meng Chao Ran had sent Tan Tan to hunt for three snow chicken that day. Meng Chao Ran would barbecue it after Tan Tan would come back. Then, they'd get to eat a hearty meal.

However, he suddenly found that Tan Tan was somewhat absent-minded when he was roasting the chicken. Tan Tan didn't have that look of greedy in his eyes which he used to upon seeing food. Instead, he burped as if he was bored...

[What's going on? Is it still that little disciple of mine who turns into a starving beast whenever he sees food?]

He called Tan Tan to take a few bites. But, Tan Tan couldn't even swallow one bite properly. This made Meng Chao Ran even more flabbergasted.

"What's wrong?" He touched his disciple's head, but it wasn't feverish.

"I don't want to eat this." Tan Tan was also depressed. [Why do I not want to eat meal? I am already hungry for a meal.] He clearly felt hungry in his stomach, but he burped as soon as he looked at the snow chicken.

This was too strange!

Tan Tan eventually sat on the baggage in a depressing manner, and groped his luggage. There were inner cores of spirit beasts in there. Tan Tan had collected them like some money-grubbing-maniac.

In fact, there were a hundred or so of them.

Tan Tan hadn't even realized that his eyes had suddenly emitted a green light of greed! In fact, this green light was similar to that of a pervert who had been thirsty for decades, and had finally gotten to see a naked beauty...

Then, Tan Tan impatiently turned his luggage over.

Meng Chao Ran had clutched the entire head of a snow chicken while eating the meat. He was looking at his disciple while being in a daze. He then saw him stuffing a fist-sized inner core of a spirit beast in his mouth...

Then, his disciple exposed a look of satisfaction on his face...

Meng Chao Ran's hand trembled as he looked at Tan Tan's neck. It had bulged like a small snake that was trying to gulp down an egg. So, Meng Chao Ran inadvertently stuffed that big head of the chicken whole in this state of daze. He unconsciously stretched his neck, and subconsciously attempted to swallow his saliva...

And, thus befell the tragedy of Master Meng – this snow chicken's head got stuck in his throat...

He tried to swallow it, but couldn't. He tried to spit it out, but couldn't. Then, his throat issued a cluck-cluck sound...

Tan Tan felt that his hunger had somewhat reduced. He was about to gulp down another piece, but he suddenly heard the sound of something... And, this sound was similar to the one which comes after a hen lays eggs...

He suddenly turned his head in amazement to see. And, he saw that Meng Chao Ran was looking at him with his mouth wide open. Moreover, there was a complete head of a chicken in his mouth.

...

Chapter 569: The Astonishment of Meng Chao Ran

Tan Tan became shocked. His eyes popped out of his head. "Master... you didn't need to stuff the whole chicken down your throat even if you're studying how hens lay their eggs..."

[I'm studying how hens lay their eggs?]

Meng Chao Ran spouted smoke through the seven orifices. He stretched out his hand and put it in his mouth. Then, he pulled out the snow chicken's head and threw it away with a 'whooshing' sound. He then clutched Tan Tan's collar, "You, you... why are you eating random stuff...?"

"Eating random stuff?" Tan Tan was astonished, "I'm not eating random stuff."

"Okay. What did you eat a moment ago?" Meng Chao Ran blew his top. He grabbed the bag as he trembled uncontrollably, "Would this thing be called casual eating material? You might as well eat a dead person's body too!"

"This thing...?" Tan Tan was shocked when he saw that the package was full of inner cores of spirit beast. In fact, he couldn't even believe it, "Did I eat this?"

Meng Chao Ran became shocked. [Tan Tan doesn't remember that he ate the inner core of spirit beast?]

[What's happening?]

"How could I possibly eat this?" Tan Tan fiercely jumped up. He had a look of panic on his face. He clutched his hair and stamped his feet. He shouted, "How can I eat this? I will explode now... what do I do?"

Meng Chao Ran looked at his disciple in astonishment, and felt like he would collapse at first. But then, he collected himself.

It was a long while before he powerlessly said, "You... don't remember?"

"I... I don't remember..." Tan Tan was anxious and perplexed as he repeated. He had become very frightened, "I would've killed myself before I had eaten this if I had known..."

"Then, you circulate your martial power now. Do you feel any abnormality?" Meng Chao Ran carefully asked. [Tan Tan's appearance doesn't leave me to believe that he's lying. So, what's wrong with him?]

[I've heard that some injuries can't be felt. And, the situation would've become incurable by the time they can be felt...]

Tan Tan sat on the ground with a 'thump' sound. Then, he started to circulate his martial power.

A long while passed. Then, he opened his eyes with a look of astonishment on his face, "I don't feel anything..."

"You don't feel anything?" Meng Chao Ran was baffled, "Not even a little bit?"

"Um..." Tan Tan tried to feel for a while. He then replied with pain in his expression, "I do feel..."

"What do you feel?" Meng Chao Ran hastily questioned.

"Master... I feel quite hungry..." Tan Tan scowled miserably.

Meng Chao Ran stumbled when he heard this.

Then, Tan Tan's hungry stomach made a growling sound. He held the roasted chicken in his hands, but looked extremely pitiful for some reason. He took a bite, and started to chew it. However, it seemed as if he was eating poison. He rolled-and-mixed it in his mouth, but couldn't swallow it down.

A long while passed like this. Then, he spat out the snow chicken's meat despite having chewed it to dregs. Moreover, it seemed that he was so frustrated that he didn't wish to live. He

heaved a long sigh, "Master, I'm starving to death. But, I can't swallow this..."

Meng Chao Ran heaved a deep sigh.

[How should I handle this? This guy... has become incapable of eating human food, ah!]

Tan Tan sighed in despair. He painfully stroked his belly and unconsciously looked towards that package full of spirit beast inner cores from the corner of his eyes. Then, a 'swoosh' sound came from the corner of his mouth. And, his shiny saliva drooled down from the corner of his mouth... drip drip...

"You're not allowed to eat these!" Meng Chao Ran yelled.

"I won't eat them! Master, don't worry. I won't eat these!" Tan Tan shook his head. The flesh of his cheek shivered as he solemnly said, "I will starve to death. But, I won't eat these!"

...

Meng Chao Ran had done many experiments by now. He had roasted the meat and had carefully prepared food for Tan Tan. In fact, he had even made a bowl of delicious meat soup for his disciple in such conditions of food scarcity...

Master Meng had spared no effort!

However, Tan Tan...

Meng Chao Ran was anxious in his heart. He was at a loss. After all, Tan Tan didn't feel like eating anything now. It didn't matter whether it was food made of rice or meat — he couldn't swallow any of it.

The only things he was interested in were the inner cores of spirit beasts! In fact, it seemed that he was craving for them.

Meng Chao Ran tossed from side to side in the morning. He tossed from side to side in the afternoon. He tossed from side to side because of the growling sound of Tan Tan's hungry belly.

Meng Chao Ran had eaten two more meals by now. But, Tan Tan's condition was still the same. His stomach was hungry, and was making growling sounds. His eyes were hungry, and seemed greedy. But, he was still unable to eat anything...

[Tan Tan's body has become powerless because of the hunger. But, he's still unable to eat anything... this is a very big problem.]

Meng Chao Ran locked his eyebrows tightly.

Tan Tan held his belly since it was endlessly growling in hunger. None of the two had realized that the golden color on Tan Tan's eyebrows, that strange mark between his eyebrows, and that mark on his stomach had become dull. They couldn't be seen flickering anymore. But, they were indeed flickering still...

Meng Chao Ran had no strategy left to try by the time it was evening. So, he made Tan Tan lie down in the cave since they didn't have a better choice. And then, he went out in snowy area to practice. And, he conveniently allowed the ice-cold snowflakes to cool his head down...

[It has only been a day that Tan Tan hasn't eaten anything. So, there shouldn't be any problem because of hunger even if he's starving for the time being. In fact, he wouldn't starve to death even if he doesn't eat for ten days... But, it won't be good if he eats the inner core of spirit beasts... After all, his body might explode!]

Meng Chao Ran would rather let his disciple's stomach remain empty. But, he wouldn't dare to let him eat things that could cause him harm...

Tan Tan had painfully covered his belly in the cave. However, greed had been sparkling in his eyes.

[I am going to starve to death... I will starve to death...]

Grumbling and rumbling sounds were coming from his stomach. Tan Tan was howling in grief. He was unable to endure it...

He couldn't help but look at the package. And, he felt hungrier

every time he looked at it. And, the hungrier he felt — the more thunderous those growling sound in his stomach became!

Meng Chao Ran heard the thunderous sounds of Tan Tan's belly even though he was outside the cave. So, he shouted, "You're not allowed to eat them!"

Tan Tan's body quivered when he heard this. He took a look at his hand, and found that it was already stretched towards the package. So, he withdrew his hand quickly... as if he had got an electric shock. Then, he muttered, "I must not eat these! I must not eat these! I must not eat these. I must not eat these..."

Tan Tan closed his eyes and continuously repeated, 'I must not eat'. Then, he lay down on the ground and went to sleep. Moreover, he even kicked the package to one side and sent it far away before he slept off...

He gradually slipped into in a daze, and fell asleep.

...

Meng Chao Ran couldn't practice even though he tried. He thought for a while, but he didn't understand anything. A long while passed like this. He then sighed and returned to the cave. But, he saw that his darling disciple was in a deep sleep... [He's holding that package in his arms?]

[Moreover... it is open?]

Meng Chao Ran's complexion changed. He grabbed the package from Tan Tan's arms, and looked into it. Then, he counted them. [As expected... three of the spirit beast inner cores are missing!]

[Obviously, the ones missing are the fourth or fifth grade ones...]

"Tan Tan!" Meng Chao Ran bellowed!

Tan Tan woke up from his dream, turned around, and sat up. He had a drowsy look about him, "Master, what happened?"

"What happened... you're the one to ask...?" Meng Chao Ran

ruthlessly looked at him, "Bastard! Why did you secretly steal and eat them?"

"I didn't do it! I haven't stolen and eaten anything!" Tan Tan felt wronged. Two teardrops twinkled at the corners of his eyes. "Master, you must believe me. I didn't eat anything, ah! Master, do you not trust in my moral standing... huh?"

However, he suddenly became flabbergasted and stroked his belly as he said this. Then, he giggled. He then said with some uncertainty, "I am not hungry...? Why don't I feel hungry anymore...?"

Meng Chao Ran's complexion turned black in anger, "Do you even have a moral standing?! Then, you tell me... you haven't eaten anything, right? So, how come you're not hungry anymore?"

"Right, I haven't eaten anything. So, how come I am not hungry then?" Tan Tan remained perplexed despite giving it much thought. He then gently stoked his belly, while his eyes filled with look of contemplation. Then, he muttered, "This is extremely strange..."

"Alas~~" Meng Chao Ran sadly heaved a deep sigh. Then, he blew his top and grabbed the package. You haven't eaten anything, right? Alright, then count these! How come three of these are missing? Where did they go – in a dog's belly?"

Tan Tan's complexion turned pale. He spoke-up in fright, "I didn't eat... I didn't..." He started to count the inner cores left in the package, and his complexion turned green. He then suddenly wailed, "Master, I wasn't awake... I was obviously sleeping! So, how can I steal and eat them...?"

Tan Tan rolled his eyes and said, "Could it be that this thing melts?"

Meng Chao Ran puckered up his brows at first. Then, he closed his eyes... wishing he were dead...

He stretched his hand, and held the veins of Tan Tan's wrist. Then, he circulated his martial power to examine. But, Meng Chao Ran hastily drew back as soon as his spiritual power went in. In fact, it seemed as if he had got bitten by a viper!

He opened his eyes wide and looked towards Tan Tan as if he had seen a ghost. [My spiritual power suddenly got pulled away like a tide the moment it came in contact with Tan Tan's spiritual power. It seemed like an abyss with a vast and limitless suction force...]

[Perhaps Tan Tan would've absorbed my entire life-worth of hard-earned cultivation if I hadn't pulled away my hand in time!]

Tan Tan was at a loss. So, he ignorantly asked, "Master... what happened?"

Meng Chao Ran looked at the innocent expression on Tan Tan's face, and nearly collapsed...

[How can this happen?]

"Tan Tan, you go out and circulate your spiritual power with all you've got. I've examined you, and there is something unusual," Meng Chao Ran used the most stupid way.

Tan Tan scratched his head in doubt and confusion. However, he went out dragging his shoes, and stood in the snowy area.

Then, he assumed a strange posture with a "Hey Ah~~" sound.

Meng Chao Ran attentively observed as Tan Tan practised. His complexion had turned solemn and respectful. But then, he ferociously slammed his mouth wide open. In fact, he had opened his mouth with such a strength that his jaw had nearly gotten dislocated!

Meng Chao Ran rubbed his eyes with all his strength. However, his eyes rolled backward, and revealed the white of his eyes instead as he almost fainted. A crown had gradually risen on the top of Tan Tan's head. It rose up to thirty feet. Then, it suddenly rose up to three-hundred feet in the air along with the eruption of Tan Tan's

aura!

[Second Grade King Level Expert?]

Meng Chao Ran was at a loss! [Tan Tan was barely a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist a few days ago... How can he suddenly become a second grade King Level Expert?]

However, Tan Tan again gave him a big shock immediately-afterwards. He loudly shouted, and his shout was like the roar of a wild beast. The energy in his Dantian ferociously erupted out. It even had the aura of Single Horned Dragon. Then, it faded away without a trace. In fact, it had changed into the mild and peaceful aura of Tan Tan by now...

However, the crown above his head had suddenly expanded to three times its size. Moreover, it had risen to more than a thousand feet with a 'whoosh' sound. In fact, it had risen high up in the sky like a splendid golden moon!

It became golden and dazzling in the surroundings!

The freely fluttering snow also caught a tinge of this golden brilliance!

'Ka-cha'!

Meng Chao Ran suddenly closed his open mouth. He then issued a strange "oh" sound. It turned out that he had firmly bit his own tongue. Then, his eyes rolled back, and he fainted!

He only had one last thought before he fainted, [This is impossible! This is absolutely impossible!]

[He promoted from a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist to a second grade King Level Expert. It seems like a miracle. But, how could it have happened? I've had such an enhancement myself a few days ago. So, I can say that I accept it... But, who has seen such a sudden upgradation from ninth grade Revered Martial Artist to second grade King Level Expert at once... And then, he only shouted once... and became a ninth grade King Level Expert?]

[A ninth grade King Level Expert?!]

[How in the world is this even possible? I will surely go insane!]

...

Chapter 570: Three Strangers!

Moreover, the crown on Tan Tan's head was bigger than that of an ordinary King Level Expert... Meng Chao Ran collapsed.

In fact, he didn't even notice that there was a radiant sun in the middle of the crown on Tan Tan's head. Moreover, it was radiating rays of light. There was a crescent moon on the left side of the sun. And, there was a star on the right side.

It looked like a crown of an ordinary King level Expert. But, it was far different from that! This was the shape of a real crown! Let's say that the crown of a King level Expert was a prince. Then, this crown above Tan Tan's head would be an emperor by that analogy!

Moreover, one angle of that star's light was faintly similar to that incomplete mark on Tan Tan's forehead...

"Master... Master, are you alright?" Tan Tan became anxious when he saw Meng Chao Ran faint. So, he rushed over.

Meng Chao Ran had been worried about Chu Yang and Tan Tan since the past few days. So, he was both mentally and physically exhausted. Both of these disciples had been like pieces of his heart. And, there had been unexpected incidents with both of them. Meng Chao Ran couldn't bear this. One of them had gone away, and hadn't returned yet. And, the other one had been succumbing to strange conditions one after another...

And, he had been left so severely frightened by this... that his mind couldn't take it anymore.

However, Meng Chao Ran finally regained his consciousness after Tan Tan cried out.

Tan Tan supported his body up once he had regained his consciousness. However, he then urged Tan Tan to show off his new powers once again...

The outcome of the demonstration made Meng Chao Ran roll back his eyes again... And, made him a little bit dizzy once again...

[He's surely a ninth grade King Level Expert!]

Meng Chao Ran weakly waved his hand with dull eyes, "You leave... Let me rest here alone for a little while... I will go crazy. I..."

[This is very strange! Even Chu Yang wouldn't have known what's happened to Tan Tan if he were present here...]

Tan Tan stood there at a loss, and didn't know what to do. So, he merely scratched his head. He wanted to smile, but couldn't since he felt embarrassed. He wanted to say something, but he didn't wish to say anything inappropriate. So, he was left to scratch his head without having a better option. And, he conveniently scratched his back as well while he was at it.

Master Meng lowered his head in misery, "There has been nothing in my life that I am proud of. I have only been proud of one thing in my heart — I have toughened my mental strength so that I can't be fazed by anything in the Nine Heavens. And, this is what a teacher can dare to boast about. After all, a teacher mustn't frown even if someone hacks him to pieces when he's fully conscious and clear-headed..."

"However... you two little brats have given me strokes, and have smashed my pride within several days by lashing me to no end! You startle me on one day. Then, you make my hair stand on end the next day. You even give me shock several times a day on some occasions... What do I call this?"

So, he downheartedly waved, "Go away. Go away. Let me calm down..."

Tan Tan blinked and scratched his head. He still didn't feel relieved. So, he stammered for a while. Then, he slowly said, "Master, I'm leaving..."

"Go," Meng Chao Ran didn't look at him; he only waved his hand.

"Master... So, I may leave..." Tan Tan had walked two steps and turned around.

"Just go."

"Master... then, I may leave..." Tan Tan took three steps, and turned around again...

"Go!"

"Master, I may really leave... Puff! Ah!~~~"

His last words changed into a scream. It turned out that he had been firmly kicked by Meng Chao Ran on the buttocks. Consequently, he was sent out flying like an artillery shell.

Meng Chao Ran's roar was heard the next second, "Get lost!~~~~~ You are fu*king annoying!!!"

Tan Tan was sent flying like a missile, and knocked against an ice prism with a 'bam' sound. Snow flew upwards from the result of this impact. In fact, it flew over to half of the mountain top with 'whoosh' sounds. Then, he bumped into a big tree with 'slam' sound. And, a big chunk of snow fell down with rustling sound from the tree he had bumped into. Consequently, Tan Tan got buried under the snow...

"Khoff, khoff, khoff..." Tan Tan coughed as he crawled up from the pile of snow by using his hands and legs. He wanted to cry, but had no tears to shed. "What the hell is this...? I've been a very obedient disciple, and I have cared a lot about my master. But, he still attacked me like that... Oh heaven, I have nowhere to go..."

He sobbed twice since he felt to be wronged. He then said, "I would've committed suicide if I weren't so handsome and carefree. Anyway, I don't wish to betray the kindness of the heavens..."

He stood up while speaking this. Then, he suddenly felt somewhat hungry. So, he scratched his head and said in his heart,

"Master can't see me now. And, he won't come back for a short while... So, I can go and attack a few spirit beasts, and eat their inner cores?"

Tan Tan stealthily turned his buttocks and looked towards the mountain top as soon as this thought crossed his mind. He was going to go in all the directions to look for spirit beasts...

However, he suddenly felt as if there was something fishy while he was walking on a section of the mountain path. He lifted his head and looked, but he only heard the whistling sound of the wind. He then saw three ghost-like shadows coming from three directions; it seemed as if they didn't have any visible form. Moreover, they were floating towards him at an extremely fast speed.

It could be seen that these three individuals had appearances of extreme anxiety. And, they were hastening-on with their entire strengths!

Tan Tan's scalp felt numb. He strangely cried out in his heart since he felt very miserable. [Why the fu*k did I come out at such a moment? How will I deal with these three formidable monsters? Just look at the appearance of these three monsters... I know I can't defeat them...]

[I must run!]

Tan Tan turned around, and broke into a run!

But, a 'whoosh' sound came.

A red-robed man had already appeared in front of him! His eyes were deep-red, and he was tensely looking at Tan Tan. Moreover, an intense look of eagerness was reflecting from his eyes!

Tan Tan raised his head as he turned around to dash towards another direction. But, a white-robed man had already appeared in that direction, and was now standing in front of him.

So, he again turned around. But, a silver-robed man blocked his

way with a 'whoosh' sound!

The formation of these three men had blocked all the exits for Tan Tan. And, the six eyes were flamingly looking at Tan Tan at this time.

Tan Tan's heart became ice-cold! He couldn't help but cuss, "A good dog doesn't stand in the way. What are you three corpses doing here?"

It was evident that they were Tan Tan's enemies since they had blocked his way, and weren't letting him walk away. Moreover, he didn't have any hope while facing such a formidable enemy. Therefore, Tan Tan decided to make an effort to cuss them to death before resigning to death...

However, Tan Tan didn't even dare to think about informing Master Meng...

It can't be said that it was impossible to inform Master Meng about these three people. But, Tan Tan would never do it!

[These three are strong and unfathomable. In fact, I think that Master wouldn't be a match for them even if he comes here! It would be alright if I die. But, why should I involve the old man in this?]

[Master will still have Chu Yang if I die.... So, I think that he won't be too heart-broken. But, Chu Yang will remain all alone if Master and I were to die... And, he will feel too lonely if that happens...]

Tan Tan's unpleasant voice and cussing didn't provoke them to attack him in a crazy manner. This was contrary to his expectations. Instead, those three people became somewhat astonished and uncertain, and drew back a step. Then, the three of them sized Tan Tan up; they had faint traces of excitement and doubt in their eyes.

Tan Tan was startled in his heart. [Could it be that these three

men don't have any evil intention?]

So, he thought of trying it out, "Step aside! Let me pass!"

However, nobody moved...

Tan Tan blinked and scratched his head. Then, he turned towards one of them, and rushed over to him. [Um. I will walk past from his side. None of them seem to be giving off murderous aura from their bodies; nor do they give out a feeling as if they are ready to attack. So, they should let me pass, right?]

But, he found that the white-robed man still stood in front of him when he rushed over. Tan Tan became angry when he saw this. He tried his best to go past as he shouted, "What's the matter? Do you want to fight?"

Tan Tan grabbed the white-robed man's collar. Then, he exerted his entire strength to lift this man... But, the man didn't budge!

Tan Tan tried to toss him to a side... but, the man remained motionless!

He tried to push! Hit! Pull! Hold his neck and wrestle. He even tried to bite him...

Tan Tan had angrily tried out every possible method. But, that man had remained motionless. Moreover, he had remained standing as erect as before. In fact, he had stood as straight as a thousand-year-old tree. He even let Tan Tan exert his strength and try out all the methods. But, he still remained unshakable like a mountain!

Tan Tan sat down in the snowy ground. After all, he was tired. He then spoke-up in anger, "You don't hit back when I hit you! You don't fight back when I try to kill you! You don't draw back if I try to push you back! Why are you blocking my way like this? Do you have nothing better to do?"

Tan Tan felt wronged after he had spoken this. [You have nothing better do, but I still feel hungry...]

However, those three people were still quietly looking at him. Moreover, they still hadn't said a word... as if they had been neatly counting every strand of hair on Tan Tan's body.

Tan Tan suddenly had his hair stand on end. So, he lifted his head and looked. And, he saw that there was a symbol of a radiating sun on the forehead of that red-robed man. But, it was only similar to a copper coin in size. The white-robed man had the symbol of a crescent moon in the same spot on his forehead. And, the silver-robed man had a symbol of a star on that spot!

Moreover, the red-robed man was giving off a fiery Sun-like feeling; the white-robed man was sending out a cold and gentle feeling like the Moon. And, the silver-robed man was sending out a mysterious and profound feeling like the stars...

These three individuals were quite distinct. But, all three of them had the same expressions in their eyes — excitement, doubt, fears, longing, and worry...

It seemed quite complicated!

"What are you guys up to?!" Tan Tan was angry. He shouted, "What exactly do you want? Stop your nonsense, okay? At least tell me whether you'll let me go or not? Are you fu*king playing some trick?"

Their complexions suddenly changed a little. And, they revealed look of excitement in their eyes... at the same time...

Tan Tan was greatly surprised by this. So, he scratched his scalp and asked in a suspicious manner, "Do you guys like to get cussed? Have you stopped me because you want me to cuss at you? Sss~~~"

He sucked in cold air. Even he felt that his guess wasn't too logical.

The four of them were left in a state of deadlock for a while. And, there remained a silent for a while. However, Tan Tan eventually couldn't endure it. So, he started to cuss, "What exactly do you

three bastards want? Why the fu*k do you want me to speak like that? Motherfu*kers, is it alright if you don't speak anything? It won't be good if you don't put your nonsense away. Just fu*king say something! Are you three dead?"

The complexions of these individuals three finally changed after Tan Tan cursed out in rage. They then glanced at each other. And, each of them exposed an expression on their face that made it seem as if they wanted to speak. However, they still hesitated. In fact, it seemed as if it was difficult for them to open their mouths. It felt as if they didn't know how to start the conversation. They felt embarrassed and awkward...

Moreover, a myriad of moods had appeared on the faces of these three individuals — fear, fright, expectation, fanaticism, worry about gains and losses... In fact, it felt like these three were performing dramatic change of attitude and expressions for a moment.

The only expression they didn't expose after getting cussed... was that of anger!

Moreover, these three were clearly urging each other with their eyes...

[You speak first!]

[No, you speak first!]

[No, it's better that you speak first.]

...

Tan Tan became confused. He noticed that these three wanted to speak but weren't able to. In fact, it was clear that they had a thousand words to say. But, they still weren't able to say a single word. Tan Tan suddenly felt his blood run cold. A frightening guess took control of his heart, and he nearly pissed his pants. [Is it possible that these three saw me... found me handsome... and fell in love with me?]

Tan Tan's face turned ashen as soon as this thought crossed his mind. [Fu*k me! You are men! This is highly unacceptable for me.]

"Hey..." Tan Tan shivered and said, "Don't tell me... you three have fallen in love with me?"

The three of them looked at each other, and their faces turned gloomy.

...

Chapter 571: King?!

"I'm only interested in women..." Tan Tan's face twitched. He was almost about to cry, "So, you and I won't be appropriate... I'm genuinely not discriminating or anything... But... it won't be a problem for you guys to find someone else with your strength... but, this won't do with me. In fact, you three should just make do with each other..."

The three of them were flabbergasted as they looked at Tan Tan. In fact, it seemed as if they had discovered some freak-show...

However, Tan Tan became more certain in his heart. And, he couldn't help but cry in grief. Tears started to fall like rain from his eyes, "Which point about me did you take a fancy to? I will change it! This isn't good..."

"No... it's not like that. We..." It seemed that not explaining things was out of question at this point. The red-robed man's complexion had turned somewhat hard-pressed. Even his hands had suddenly started to shake. Then, he slowly started to explain. However, his diction and accent were somewhat strange.

"You won't?" Tan Tan felt relieved. Then, his brain again took a turn as he thought of yet another possibility. Then, he scratched his head and said, "You don't... But, is it possible that your daughter has taken a fancy to me? So, have you come here because you think that I'm a good match for her? Do you want to take me with you and perform the wedding rituals?"

An increasing number of possibilities arose in his mind as he continued to think. He couldn't help but swallow his saliva. He then said while daydreaming, "Well, is your daughter... pretty?"

He suddenly felt somewhat proud of himself. [I'm very charming!]

He was in a very cheerful mood. However, this made that

incomplete mark on his forehead to glow up. And, the faint golden light fiercely glittered as a result.

The bodies of the three men shook at the same time. Their blood suddenly pumped frantically and excitedly in their bodies. Suddenly, they became excited as they opened their mouths. Their eyes brimmed with tears of excitement as they said, "King! You have genuinely returned...?"

Fervent tears flowed out of their eyes. Their eyes had filled with the radiance of extreme excitement. And, their hearts had filled with fanaticism! The faces of these three had turned thoroughly red. And, their bodies had started to shiver!

"What...?" Tan Tan sat down on the ground. He was at a complete loss. He asked while being in a puzzled state of mind, "What?"

The three of them took a step forward to take a good look at that semi-mark on Tan Tan's forehead. They were extremely excited. In fact, one of them had even choked with emotion.

Tan Tan looked at them as they shed tears while looking at his head. However, this made him even more frightened. So, he hastily covered his forehead with his hand. Then, he retreated in panic, "What are you doing? What are you doing? What are you doing? There isn't enough meat on this forehead even if you're hungry..."

His heartbeats fastened as he saw that those three were drawing nearer and nearer. He then circulated his martial power and said, "Don't come near me! I won't hold back if you come any closer..."

Those three still had the same look, and it seemed as if they hadn't heard him.

Tan Tan said, 'ha', and launched a punch. Wind and thunder sounded along with this punch. And, a crown suddenly rushed up in the sky.

This fist firmly landed on the chest of the red-robed man with a 'bang'. However, the red-robed man didn't even flinch. In fact, it seemed as if he had felt nothing. He only lifted his head and looked up at the crown in the sky, and began to shed fervent tears like his two companions!

The sun was positioned in the middle. The crescent moon was on the left, and the star was on its right side!

They silently looked at the crown. They were foolishly looking at it as if this crown was some treasure that they hadn't seen since tens of thousands of years; this seemed like some fascinating scenery to them. In fact, they seemed to be obsessed and entranced by it. They then simultaneously exposed lustre of brilliance in their eyes. And, it seemed as if pilgrims had reached their destination...

"King!" those three called out in unison. In fact, they even choked with emotions while speaking.

Tan Tan became nervous. He was looking here and there in bafflement as he said, "Don't you think that you've got the wrong man? I... I'm your king...?"

He spoke till here, and suddenly felt wronged for some reason. He then sadly said, "I haven't even been a prime minister in my life..."

The red-robed man wiped his eyes and resolutely said, "All the living beings of the world can mistake in recognizing you... But, we can never make a mistake in recognizing our king!"

The other two nodded their head one after another.

However, Tan Tan was still at a loss. It was very hard for him to grasp the situation. He had strangely come out here on his own. Then, he had somehow run into these three strangers. And, they now-so-very-goddamn-strangely were treating him as their king!

This... this was truly a very strange experience. And, it had left

Tan Tan's melon-seed-like small mind unable to react.

"Well... what are the benefits... of being your king?" Tan Tan rolled his eyes. He had decided to exploit this once in a blue moon opportunity to scam them.

"King, you can rule the world! King can demand for anything from lower to upper Nine Heavens! Whatever king wants! The ten generations of whosoever would dare to go against the king would be slaughtered. Even their pets wouldn't be spared!" the white-robed man solemnly replied.

Tan Tan became scared when he heard this. He hopped up and asked, "Ah... what about beautiful women?"

"The king can demand all the beautiful women of the world, and he can ravage them!" the silver-robed man had a serious expression on his face.

Tan Tan thought about it, and felt that it was unrealistic. [I think I've run into three psychos, right? Moreover, it looks like that their sickness isn't light either.]

"Forget it. I don't want to play with you. I am going back," Tan Tan became listless.

"King, the human world is very dangerous. This race is extremely treacherous. King... it would be better that you return to our race and slowly awaken your true form," the red-robed man took a step forward and hurriedly said.

"You mean to say... that I'm not human?" Tan Tan raised his eyes.

"Yes. King, you are..."

However, the red-robed man was suddenly interrupted by Tan Tan, "Nonsense! It's you who isn't a human!"

How many cold gazes had Tan Tan received in these past years? He had been mocked by many people because of his weird

appearance. But, this was the most disgusting thing he had heard so far... [They are abusing me by saying that I am not a human!]

Therefore, he flipped out as soon as he heard this.

The red-robed man looked at the others in amazement. He stammered, "What the king is saying is right. We're not humans either..."

"I... Fu*k me!" Tan Tan rubbed his temples since he had a headache. He then turned around, and started to leave, "Don't follow after me! I will kill myself if you follow me!"

Tan Tan's little head had run very quickly this time around. [They consider me their King... So, they will become worried if I threaten to kill myself.]

And, it was true. Their complexion greatly changed as soon as these three heard this. Moreover, they hurriedly got out of the way with a 'whoosh' sound.

Tan Tan's eyes lit up. [This suicide threat was very effective!]

He slowly and leisurely walked away. And, those three didn't dare to block his way again. But, they blindly followed after him instead.

Tan Tan turned his head to catch them several times. Their complexions seemed very conflicting. But, they didn't leave.

Tan Tan became angry. And, he felt hungrier as well. In fact, his stomach had started to make rumbling and growling sounds.

"King, you're hungry," the white-robed man politely said.

"Shut up, you motherfu*ker!" Tan Tan had already put on a 'kingly' air. He glared at him and said, "Does a filled belly make such noise? Anyone can tell that I'm hungry. I haven't gotten anything to eat yet. You know, these things here don't have the nutrition of a damn ounce..."

The white-robed man's face turned ashen. He repeatedly said,

"Yes. Yes." He turned around and hurriedly went away. He hadn't gone too far away when a long and loud cry was heard. However, this strange cry was like the howl of a beast...

It wasn't too long when silver rays of light swiftly rushed over while issuing whistling sound. The silver rays surged up for a while. In fact, a lot more of the rays were coming from faraway places.

Tan Tan's knees went weak, and his eyes popped out of his head.

[Oh my fu*king god! So many wolves! So many Howling Moon Silver Wolves...? What kind of a howl has this bastard issued? I'm finished this time. It seems like I – the newly announced 'king'– am going to change into the meat inside the bellies of these wolves. And, I will later change into their shit...]

Tan Tan went weak in his knees...

The pack of Howling Moon Silver Wolves turned up more and more violently like waves... it could be seen that more than ten-thousand of them had appeared in a very short time...

[These Howling Moon Silver Wolves are fifth grade spirit beasts! Only two Howling Moon Silver Wolves can easily contend against a King Level Expert! Then, what could more than ten-thousand of them do?] Tan Tan didn't even dare to imagine!

However, the white-robed man suddenly shouted. And, those Howling Moon Silver Wolves neatly crawled to the ground, and became motionless thereafter.

Then, the silhouette of the white-robed man suddenly moved into action for mass-killing while Tan Tan was still dumbfounded! His sword slashed like moonlight. And, a lot of blood flowed out after some 'swoosh' sounds. Then, the silhouette changed into a white light, and continued onwards to slaughter four or five-hundred of the Howling Moon Silver Wolves. He then took out the inner cores from the heads of the corpses...

Meanwhile, these more than ten-thousand Howling Moon Silver Wolves only crawled in fright. They even issued low and deep 'wailing' sounds out of their throats. But, none of them dared to move!

Instead, they simply allowed him to slaughter them!

In fact, it seemed that several tens of thousands of wolves had come here to throw away their lives...

The white-robed man seemed to have obtained enough number of inner cores in a short while. Then, he issued a low howl, and the pack of the remaining wolves immediately scattered loose in tides. Only mutilated corpses of wolves were left behind.

The white-robed man tore a piece of his clothes, and made a bundle of it. Then, he put the inner cores in it. He then came over to Tan Tan and said, "King, these are five-hundred inner cores of Howling Moon Silver Wolves. These should be enough to satiate your hunger for a while."

He was a bit nervous as he hurriedly explained, "King, you still haven't awakened. So, you can't eat the inner cores of higher levelled beasts. So, here are the inner cores of fifth grade spirit beast... I, I hope you don't feel offended."

Tan Tan opened his eyes wide. He was blown away by this, and he unconsciously received that bundle of the inner cores. He then looked at this white-robed man as if he were looking at an immortal. Then, he suddenly let out a strange scream, turned around, and ran away.

[The beautiful me has been scared to death! This bastard has such terrifying capability...]

[And, I... yelled at him?]

[Fu*k...] Tan Tan wiped the cold sweat while madly rushing away. Then, he disappeared without a trace in the blink of an eye.

However, these three didn't chase after him this time. They only

kept standing in their places and looked at Tan Tan's back profile slowly fading away...

"The king has just started to awaken! So, he can't accept us just yet," the red-robed man said, "We... knew that there was a possibility of the king' existence. Don't disturb him for the time being... so as to avoid the attraction of calamities on him."

The white-robed man nodded and said, "That's right."

The silver-robed man hesitantly said, "Should we send a few experts to protect king in secrecy...?"

"We shouldn't!" The other two opposed him at the same time. "The journey of a king always starts with killings. He continuously has to be in adverse circumstances. Only then will the king awaken as quickly as possible. We may spoil important matters if we get involved in it. And, we won't be able to atone for our sins even after facing ten-thousand deaths if the awakening of king gets delayed!"

"You are right." The whole body of the silver-robed man burst into cold sweat.

"Let's go back and deliver this good news to the Elders in Upper Three Heavens... I think they will get very excited after they get this news!" the red-robed man said.

"Yes. Let's go quickly!"

The three men turned around to leave. The red-robed man waved his hand while passing through the corpses of wolves. The snow and ice rose from everywhere as a result, and buried the corpses of the wolves deep along with the bloodstains. And, the scene on the ground immediately became tranquil and was no longer gory...

The figures of these three slowly disappeared in the wind and snow. Only a few faint words remained behind to echo, "King has finally appeared after ninety-thousand years... I must go and offer sacrifices to the ancestors... boohoo..."

"I hadn't expected that the 'crown' of king will suddenly appear in this Northern Wilderness... He has arrived for good this time... boohoo..."

Their voices seemed to be weeping and mourning in the wind...

...

Chapter 572: Super Spendthrift

Tan Tan had lost his head, and couldn't select the right way to go back in the rush. He was as anxious as a stray dog, and as restless as a fish that had barely escaped the net.

He nearly returned to the cave soon after. However, he suddenly had a realization. So, he turned his head and confirmed that those three weren't following him. This made him groan. Then, he sat down on the ground, and gasped heavily for breath.

[That was scary! That white-robed man... was so frightening!]

[Why didn't that large pack of silver wolves dare to fight back?]

Tan Tan wiped his cold sweat. He still had a lingering fear in his heart. He thought for a very long time about the prowess of that white-robed man. However, only the word 'scary' could do justice to his description.

[Damn. I was lucky that those three psychos mistook me as their king for some reason. Otherwise, I would've been in a big trouble...]

He suddenly felt that he had something in his bosom. And, it felt somewhat heavy. He took a look to know what it was. And, he found that it was the bundle of the inner cores of silver wolves. He didn't know when he had conveniently taken advantage of a crisis for his personal gain...

"Crap! I made a fortune!" Tan Tan shouted in excitement. But, he then covered his mouth. Then, he stealthily stuck his head out, and looked everywhere. And, he contently held his face in his arms once he was certain that those three men hadn't been chasing after him...

Tan Tan hadn't given serious attention to the matter that those three men had called him their 'king'. [I'm an ordinary man. Wouldn't the words of those crazies have been the greatest insult

to my wisdom and supernatural IQ?]

[I don't even know who my parents are. So, how can I know who their king is? This is bullshit...]

He took out an inner core of the Howling Moon Silver Wolf and threw it into his mouth. He suddenly felt a kind of comfort in his whole body... as if each hair on his body was dancing in joy! In fact, this sensation felt to be life's greatest enjoyment!

Young Master Tan continuously moaned for a while. In fact, it sounded as if he was having an orgasm, "Oh~~ Ah~~ oh~~" Then, he again untied the bundle, and ate three more of the inner cores. And, a feeling of hunger-satisfaction welled up in his stomach as a result. So, he sighed in satisfaction as his cheek streamed with tears, "I can finally eat my fill..."

Then, he thought for a while, and opened the bundle again. He divided those approx. five-hundred Howling Moon Silver Wolves inner cores into three small bundles. He put one of them into his bosom. He hung another one inside his clothes by pinning it under his crotch. And, he kept the last one on his back. Then, he conveniently caught two snow chickens, and put them on the top of the third bundle.

"Hey, I can't do anything about it. Master, I'm not deceiving you on purpose..." Tan Tan sighed in grief, "It's just that you won't let me eat these..."

He hopped after he was done hiding them. And, he was able to confirm that there was no influence impact on his crotch. This made him feel relieved. Then, he walked away...

...

Meng Chao Ran was sitting when Chu Yang came back. However, Master Meng was fiercely glaring and interrogating Tan Tan...

"What did you do?" Meng Chao Ran strictly asked.

"I..." Tan Tan moved his eyes here and there, "I only went out to

have fun in the snow..."

"Enjoy the snow?" Meng Chao Ran sneered, "Did you enjoy the snow?"

"Yes, yes..." Tan Tan nodded like chicken pecks rice. "I saw that it had suddenly started to snow. So, I became very excited. I wanted to write a poem. I wanted to sing songs... This pure white snow... this fluttering snow... this beautiful snow... this... this fu*king snow..."

Meng Chao Ran's complexion turned more and more grim. He coldly glared at his disciple.

"Oh, by the way, Master... check out the two chickens that I killed and brought back for you. They are fat and tender. Both of them are female..." Tan Tan hastily lifted the snow chickens as if he was presenting a treasure to Meng Chao Ran and flattered, "Master, you will be full after you eat them..."

Bang! Meng Chao Ran slapped both the chicken away to a side. He nodded and said, "What's that?" He had obviously seen the bundle on Tan Tan's shoulder.

"Eh... these are the inner cores of the spirit beast that I hunted..." Tan Tan forced a smile and laughed a bit. Then, he hastily grabbed the bundle, and placed it on the ground very carefully, "I hunted so many. There were so many..."

"Take them all out! You have more!" Meng Chao Ran remained unmoved.

"I only have this many..." Tan Tan started to become meeker as he continued to speak. And, he was eventually defeated by Meng Chao Ran's gaze. Then, he took out the small bundle from his bosom. It seemed as if he was about to cry, "Master, this is it... I haven't hidden any more in my pants... under the crotch ..."

"Take them out! Hurry up!" Meng Chao Ran coldly shouted.

"I don't have more... I don't have any in the crotch of my pant..."

Tan Tan tightly clamped his legs together.

"Huh?" Meng Chao Ran gloomily snorted, "Are you taking them out or not?"

"I will take them out..." Tan Tan hung his head dispiritedly, and opened his legs. He lifted up his robe. He stood in a horse stance now. Then, he held the bundle in his hand at first. After that, he separated it from his waist, and put it on the ground.

"I don't have any more..." Tan Tan softly said.

"Well, I'm convinced that you don't have any more of them," Meng Chao Ran nodded.

"Master, how do you know that?" Tan Tan was flabbergasted, "I had slyly put these things in more than one places. This was an excellent strategy..."

Meng Chao Ran couldn't control his desire to laugh. However, he forcibly controlled it and scolded loudly, "Good Tan Tan! You have learned to tell lies now?! See how I teach you a lesson!"

"Master, forgive me!" Tan Tan broke into a run. But, he bumped head-on with Chu Yang who was rushing over here along with the snow and wind.

The unsuspecting Minister Chu wasn't guarded in the least. And, he was left to feel that he had been hit by a train engine. In fact, he was sent out flying, and fell down on the snowy ground in a battered and exhausted state.

Tan Tan was also sent out flying. And, he bumped into Meng Chao Ran. But, Master Meng was standing with his arms wide open. So, Tan Tan got caught on the spot. He then got beaten up very fiercely with crackling and rattling sounds! He repeatedly howled in grief because of the beating as tears streamed down his face.

Chu Yang hadn't imagined this even in this wildest dream. He had heard his master and junior martial brother talking from far

away when he was returning in high-spirits. So, he entered the mouth of cave, but got bumped into Tan Tan very violently. In fact, it had seemed as if he had bumped into a black bear...

He would've been broken by this collision if his cultivation wasn't too good.

He then went in with a dizzy head. Meng Cho Ran appeared right before his face and said, "So, you still remembered to come back...?"

Minister Chu became dumbstruck for a moment.

...

A long while had passed. Meng Chao Ran had also let out his anger by now. And, he finally felt relieved in his heart. Meng Chao Ran looked at both his disciples bowing their heads with drooping faces. And, he couldn't help but expose a smiling expression from the corner of his eyes. Then, he snorted.

Then, he told Chu Yang about the things that transpired after he had left.

"He ate spirit beast inner cores...? Ninth grade King level Expert...?" Chu Yang was stunned. He opened his mouth wide. Then, he turned his head to look at Tan Tan. Tan Tan's face had already become like a pig's head because of the beating. Tan Tan exposed a smile on his face. But, it was uglier than crying...

Chu Yang became puzzled. [How can Tan Tan level up so quickly?]

[I'm the Nine Tribulations Sword Master. But, even I'm only a fifth grade King Level Expert. Tan Tan's foundation has been inferior to mine. He has never been as good as me. So, how did he surpass me so suddenly?]

[This doesn't conform to common sense...]

He hurriedly asked Sword Spirit about it. But, Sword Spirit also

opened his small eyes wide in awe. He too didn't know...

"Then... what else do you want to eat when you're hungry... besides spirit beast inner core?" Chu Yang asked.

"I don't feel like eating anything else... I can't eat anything else..." Tan Tan swallowed his saliva as he pitifully replied.

"And, what happens after you finish eating the spirit beast inner cores?"

"I don't feel like eating anymore. My belly feels full. Would you eat after having a full belly if you were in my place?" Tan Tan rolled his eyes.

Meng Chao Ran and Chu Yang looked at each other in dismay. They both felt that this fact was too bizarre.

"Master... I think that this shouldn't be an issue." Chu Yang cautiously explained, "The spirit beast inner cores are used for promoting the spiritual power. Tan Tan's consumption of them... seems to be harmless. The problem is that he has digested an inner core of a ninth grade spirit beast — the first one that he ate. However, these ones are the inner cores of low level spirit beasts..."

Chu Yang concluded, "Moreover, let him eat since he doesn't feel like eating anything else. Also, his strength has grown so quickly after eating these... So, this is a good thing."

"Good thing...?" Meng Chao Ran snorted and said, "How would I provide him so many spirit beast inner cores to eat? Or... do you want to provide for him?" Meng Chao Ran's eyes lit up while he spoke this sentence. [Don't tell me Tan Tan is 'that' kind of person?]

"Um... this isn't impossible." Chu Yang knew that he was financially strong. So, raising such a junior martial brother was seemingly nothing for him.

"Tan Tan, how many of these do you eat in one meal?" Chu Yang touched his head. Then, he turned his head to ask Tan Tan.

"Three... of fifth grade..." Tan Tan sighed, "Nine will do in one day."

"Nine inner cores of fifth grade spirit beast... One costs two-hundred-thousand silver taels..." Chu Yang hissed, "You will eat stuff worth 1.8 million a day?!"

Tan Tan scratched his head and naively smiled.

"Who the fu*k would be able to raise you at this rate?!" Minister Chu stood up all of a sudden. "That would be 1.8 million a day... 18 million for ten days... and 54 million for a month. And, it would be... 648 million for a year?! That would be the ration of you alone?!"]

Chu Yang shouted, "Moreover, this was the calculation as long as you don't level up and demand the inner cores of spirit beasts of sixth grade, seventh grade, eighth grade... This... you..."

Chu Yang was speechless.

[He will need sixth grade ones if there's no effect after he eats the fifth grade inner cores... those things cost one-million each. So, that would be nearly ten-million a day. Then, it would be over four billion a year...]

[Moreover, the price is astronomical if he starts asking for Seventh Grade ones. After all, one costs ten-million. So, it would be 40 billion a year...]

[And, the eighth grade ones don't even have a market price...]

[About ninth grade...]

Chu Yang felt dizzy. In fact, he was on the verge of a collapse...

[By the time this chap has eaten the ration for twenty to thirty years in this manner... a hundred-billion? Or would even one-trillion be enough?]

"I can't afford to raise him! I can't raise him in any case! Master, how did you accept a disciple who is such a super spendthrift?"

Chu Yang repeatedly shook his head. He hastily pushed this headache outwards, "Master, I will let Tan Tan stay with you. Teach him more. That would be a good thing."

Meng Chao Ran snorted. He felt very helpless in his heart. [You feel no shame in saying this about Tan Tan... which one of my disciples isn't a Super spendthrift...?]

Sword Spirit was in an excellent mood that night. He even prepared a complete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill. And, Chu Yang made Meng Chao Ran pop it down.

Its effect was very remarkable.

The injury that Meng Chao Ran had received by the Melting Meridians Hand healed in an instant. Moreover, his meridians expanded, and his cultivation rose dramatically from first grade Emperor Level to sixth grade Emperor Level!

Moreover, his mental cultivation and his comprehension of the heaven's way rushed to ninth grade Monarch level in one fell swoop!

Meng Chao Ran was surprised to the extreme by this. He pulled both of his disciples to have a chat on the same night. Chu Yang had put out wine for the celebration of his master's heroic achievement. And, Meng Chao Ran became intoxicated without hesitation. He took the hands of both of his disciples, and talked endlessly about this-and-that for the entire night.

However, Chu Yang felt that there was something wrong when he woke up the next morning. He looked at his side, and saw that Tan Tan was snoring whilst being sprawled out on his back. He was grinding his teeth from time to time in a way that could make one's teeth ache. And, he was blowing whistles too...

He would turn around from time to time, and would fart loudly with rumbling sounds...

Chu Yang covered his nose and got up. He then walked away

from the entrance of the cave while heaving deep sighs. He grabbed some snow. He washed his face, and he rinsed his mouth with it. And, he became a little clear-headed as a result...

Master Meng's injury had been healed. Chu Yang had also felt happy when he saw that his master was happy because of it. So, Minister Chu hadn't cheated his master while getting drunk with him. He had been truthful, and had genuinely put his guards down...

He was about to return to the cave, but something suddenly attracted his attention. So, he stayed at the mouth of the cave...

...

Chapter 573: Master and Disciples Part Ways

There was a poem written on the mountain wall at the entrance of the cave. It was written in bold and cursive calligraphy. The calligraphy seemed smooth and beautiful. Moreover, the writing on the wall seemed extremely tranquil and carefree. It was Meng Chao Ran's handwriting...

"Chu Chen quickly disappeared like morning dew,

It is difficult for the heaven to meet the earth now;

I will erase the Ye Clan from the Nine Heavens,

Embracing life or death in my arms!"

Meng Chao Ran had left a message for Chu Yang under the poem, "Chu Yang, you are a very steady person. You can think about everything thoroughly. Your master feels very relieved to leave Tan Tan in your care.

"Take care of your junior martial brother. You must keep him alive in any situation whatsoever!

"It has been so many years that your teacher has been taking care of you two. But, you two have finally grown up. So, your teacher also wants to go on sightseeing. I also wish to be relaxed for once. You two are no ordinary persons. You are destined to lead extraordinary lives. Moreover, you shouldn't stay in the shelter of your master any longer. A young eagle that wishes to conquer the sky must fall from the top of the cliff first. A rock that wishes to transform into a fine jade must go through immeasurable pressure!

"Your master will wait for you to shine... for the news of your name shaking the Nine Heavens!

"And, your master would be drunk when that time comes. I would be smiling no matter wherever I would be!

"A man will inevitably come across many affairs in his life that he must deal with. There will come many responsibilities that he must undertake. After all, no one's free from the cycle of birth and death. Moreover, he has to confront everything by himself. And, he mustn't regret even if he sees dead-end in front of him.

"Your master has left. Don't try to look for me!"

This message of Meng Chao Ran's was just like himself – indifferent and carefree. He hadn't been punctilious about the minutiae of his wordings. He had written everything directly and straightforwardly. Even Tan Tan could understand it by looking at it...

Chu Yang was taken aback when he looked at that stone-wall. And, a strong feeling of listlessness suddenly welled up in his heart.

[Master has left?]

Master had genuinely left this time. Tan Tan had kept him bound in the past. Therefore, Meng Chao Ran hadn't been able to leave. But, he was very reassured for both of his disciples this time.

The fact that Tan Tan now had Chu Yang to look after him had made Meng Chao Ran feel even more at ease.

Therefore, he had left. He was going to do what he had always wanted to do, but hadn't been able to. He was going to accomplish the things that he hadn't been able to do so far...

"Master... you can't, ah!" Chu Yang rushed out. He was extremely anxious, "Tan Tan... I can't raise him!" However, the empty mountain remained silent. No sound echoed in reply...

Chu Yang naturally knew what Meng Chao Ran wanted to do. He had certainly gone to look for Ye Chu Chen. He had gone to look for the dream of his heart! Meng Chao Ran was now an Emperor Level Expert, but he was still weak and insignificant as compared to the Ye Clan!

[How would he be able to get her?]

[Wouldn't going there be equal to throwing away his life?]

Chu Yang yelled out the countless reasons that he came up with for the master to come back. But... Meng Chao Ran didn't reply to any of them. Or, it could be said that he had already left this place, and had gone far away...

A long while passed. Chu Yang became disappointed, and sat down in the snow. He muttered, "Master, you must take care of yourself!" He resolutely punched on the ground. And, a big section of the snowy ground evenly shook out as a result. He gnashed his teeth, "I will raze the Ye Clan to the ground if any harm befalls you. I won't even spare the fowls and dogs!"

Meng Chao Ran's message seemed to be ordinary, but there was a strong determination in it. Moreover, he had made clear that he wanted to confront his troubles on his own, and that he wouldn't allow anyone else to get involved in his affairs. Chu Yang honoured his master. So, he wouldn't interfere. However, he couldn't help but become worried...

Tan Tan was woken by his yelling cry. He rushed out of the cave, and saw the message that Meng Chao Ran had left behind. He stared blankly, and kept standing there for a long while. Then, he suddenly burst into tears...

At a distant place... in the dense snow

Meng Chao Ran's whole body had dyed in white because of the dense snow. He gave a very deep and meaningful glance as he stood calmly on the summit.

He was listening to Chu Yang's shouts and Tan Tan's loud cries as they were faintly coming through the wind and snow. Meng Chao Ran slightly smiled. He also had a faint glitter of tears at the outer corner of his eyes.

"My disciples, you must take care of yourselves. You must live

strong!" Meng Chao Ran silently said in his heart, "Just like I have mentioned in my message — a real man gets many responsibilities to carry on his shoulders throughout his life! There are many things that he must do in his life!"

The expression in his eyes became abstruse. They filled with feeling of longing. Then, he slowly raised his head, and looked at the horizon into distance... of the direction in which the entrance to the Upper Three Heavens was located!

"Chu Chu, I am coming for you," Meng Chao Ran said in a low and deep voice. He felt a slight shiver in his heart. He muttered, "... are you okay?"

He gave a final and heartfelt look towards the direction of that cave. Then, he murmured, "You two... I didn't inquire about it, but you two are my disciples after all. How could I not understand? The things that have happened lately have made me realize that Chu Yang is the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master of this generation. And, Tan Tan is a man from the Divine Clan. Both of you will have your own struggles. I will be a burden on you both if I still stay with you as your master. Moreover, I will also slow you down."

"I – Meng Chao Ran – have only received three disciples in my life. I had never imagined that the eldest one would turn out to be a rebel, the second one would be the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and the third one would be a person of Divine Clan... None of them are to be trifled with. I am indeed very lucky."

Meng Chao Ran smiled in self-ridicule.

"I have got two such incredible disciples in my life. What else can this old man ask for?!"

Meng Chao Ran turned around without hesitation. He took large strides and walked ahead. His sleeves rose upwards. His silhouette floated as he carefreely moved forwards alone. He quietly drifted

away, and slowly disappeared in the wind and snow. And, his footprints got slowly covered in the heavy snow. He didn't turn back his head again...

This master had never said anything. But, he had seen everything clearly, and had understood everything thoroughly. He had spent half of his life in fostering his two disciples. But, he had chosen to leave them when they both grew up and became adults.

It seemed that he no longer bore their responsibility. However, leaving them was exactly like bearing the most heartfelt responsibility!

[I will walk on my road!]

[You two have your own journeys!]

[And, I have my own!]

Meng Chao Ran left...

....

"Master is gone..." Tan Tan was upset and frustrated. It seemed as if he had suddenly lost his dependence. It seemed as if his parents had abandoned him. He had a kind of pain as if he had been separated from a blood-relative.

"I am still at your side. Tan Tan, cheer up already. You mustn't disappoint Master!" Chu Yang said while comforting him.

"Yes... you're still here..." Tan Tan exposed an expression of confusion in his eyes as he turned back and looked at Chu Yang's face. He then suddenly burst into loud laughter, and took a somersault. "Yes, Master never let me look into the mirror. He never let me be 'shocked'. He never let me boast about myself. He never let me compare with others... Sometimes, he wouldn't even allow me to speak... But, everything will be fine now! Chu Yang, you tell me... am I handsome or not?"

"Very handsome! As handsome as a dog's poo!" Chu Yang became

sullen. He felt that consoling such a brainless guy was his biggest mistake!

"You're talking rubbish!" Tan Tan became angry and annoyed. Then, he thought for a while and suddenly said with a 'shocked' expression on his face, "Now? What about now...? Do I look handsome now?"

Chu Yang looked at Tan Tan's expression. It seemed that he had made this expression with full enthusiasms. So, he weakly sighed in his heart, "Yes! You look very handsome now!"

"Wa-ha-ha..." Tan Tan proudly took a somersault. He again happily changed his expression, "Do I look handsome now?" he was extremely busy in fishing out a small mirror while he had said this. He looked at his image from the left, and then from the right as he threw flirty winks at the mirror.

Chu Yang wanted to cry. He profoundly lowered his head and said in a dull voice, "You look even more handsome now!"

"Wa ha ha ha... and what about now?" He again changed his expression.

Chu Yang collapsed...

Meng Chao Ran would've held Chu Yang's hand if he were here. He would then have said while gleaming with tears, "Chu Yang, you finally understand my pain now..."

....

Chu Yang and Tan Tan kept roaming around in the east and west for the next several days. They frantically looked for spirit beasts to fight with, and hunted them for their inner cores. They looked for people of big aristocratic clans, and robbed them. They crazily consolidated their current cultivation.

The Great Northern Wilderness was soon filled with reign of terror.

It wasn't because of these two alone. There were four more individuals who were crazily attacking. So, there were six lunatic attackers in the Great Northern Wilderness all together. Moreover, these were six crazy robbers!

Everybody wore masks that looked almost same, and only had minor differences!

Heavenly Armament Pavilion!

The situation had become such that everyone would panic at the slightest of sound even in a widely expanded place like this Northern Wilderness. There were many people who had thought of retreating in advance. They had made preparation to return. Also, there were people who would run away if they saw anyone with mask on.

There were two particular individuals who were totally insane. One of them would inconsiderately and insanely shout 'Ahwooh Ahwooh'... lest others wouldn't know that it was Wolf Sword King Luo Ke Di. One of them would speak some foreign language, and would never stop shouting 'Dog Aunt'... lest others wouldn't know that it was the Second Young Master of the Ji Clan – Ji Mo.

These two didn't know what madness they had succumbed to. They had forgotten why they had joined the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. After all, they had worn those masks to hide their identity. However, they would rush over like mad dogs whenever they'd see some people. And they would then commit all kind of crimes in order to loot those people!

Moreover, they would attack fiercely without being afraid of death!

They were extremely valiant!

This made the people who had heard of them whisper in their hearts, [It... isn't much like that. I have heard that those two are very slick and crafty fellows. How can they be so bold, powerful,

and valiant?]

Furthermore, there were two Sword Kings and a Saber King in the Heavenly Armament Pavilion!

And, these three people were the fiercest ones. Especially those two Sword kings... They'd sometimes mount sneak attacks out of nowhere.

But, the Saber King was better in some respects. After all, he would attack people with self-respect!

It was because this Lord Saber King didn't have any worries. He would deal with his targets in a group of three or five. Sometimes, he would even deal with a team of dozens of people. However, he would majestically stand in front of them with a large saber on his back!

Then, he would defeat them with his strength, and would make a clean sweep!

This was at least better than being attacked sneakily. After all, the victims would have a reason to comfort themselves after their defeat...

However, the one who made people the most dumbfounded was the last lunatic!

This madman's behaviour couldn't be measured using common sense. He wouldn't only loot people, but he would also become rich by illegal means! He would chase after people until they had hunt down a spirit beast. And then, he would loot those people again...

He also had another way — he would spray some scent on people's body. Then, he would leave you for a while if he'd see that he couldn't make any ill-gotten profit from you. However, he would come back to loot you later. Moreover, he would scold you in case you still hadn't gained anything. In fact, his scolding would be so ruthlessly that even your ancestors might jump out of their coffins...

Everyone who had been looted by this madman three or more times had left this Northern Wilderness in tears...

[Just kill me... at least that wouldn't be as mortifying as this!]

This madman had another trait – Let's say that he encountered an expert, and the gap between both sides wasn't too wide... That expert would have a bad luck if something like that were to happen!

He was a King Level Expert, and was at ninth grade. He could deal with higher level experts, but only of first grade and second grade Emperor Level at the most... And, this guy would escape faster than a rabbit in case he encountered someone stronger than that!

However, he would fight with anyone who was only slightly stronger than him. Moreover, he would shamelessly stick to them afterwards. This guy was very sturdy to make matters worse. He would act as if nothing had happened even if a first grade Emperor Level Expert were to hit him. The fact that he had the cultivation of a King Level Expert didn't seem to make a difference. In fact, he would even let out a loud fart... as if to show that nothing happened to him.

...

Chapter 574: Brothers, I'm Proud of You!

Then, this lunatic would continue to fight with you. He would be unwilling to leave you alone, and he'd stick to you like ants to sugar. He'd follow his target if they were to try and leave. And, he'd beat his targets if they'd stop. In fact, he'd even sit and watch from the side-lines if someone were to start eating their meals. Then, he would hold some unknown thing in his hand, and he wouldn't feel hungry after he had put that item in his mouth.

Then, he would very politely wait for his targets to finish their meal. After that, he would beat them...

Until... they would collapse! Or until he would prove himself superior them!

An Emperor Level Expert of some clan was targeted by this guy in one instance. He became very scared, and begged for forgiveness saying... [I admit that you're stronger than me. Please, let me leave...]

However, this chap flew into rage and replied, [Stop your fu*king nonsense! I've only started to beat you up. Don't you resort to flattery so quickly! How can you be so cheap...?]

He then chased after that second grade Emperor Level Expert. He neither overlooked, nor spared him. In fact, he continued to annoy and fight with him for a week. However, that Emperor Level Expert couldn't do anything about it. So, he pretended that he couldn't beat him. And, he deliberately got beaten and kicked by him. Moreover, the lunatic even spat saliva on his face...

However, that Emperor Level Expert endured this tragedy!

What else could he do while facing such an undead monster? He couldn't kill this freak. The strength of his palm was completely exhausted. And, beating this guy anyway felt like he was beating a rubber ball. He even sent this freak flying, but this freak came

rebounding without having a single scratch on his body!

Moreover, this lunatic had a Heavenly Armament in his hand. And, he would cut the opponent's sword into two with a 'swoosh' sound if someone were to dare drawing a weapon against him. And, what if one still wanted to fight? Nonsense! One would certainly lose one's life in that case...

Also, he would beat a person up if they were to obediently yield to him. Then, he'd take his leave. However, he would also spit saliva on their face... But, the said-victim wouldn't feel insulted since no one else would get to see this... This lunatic rushed out of this Northern Wilderness at a very fast speed after this 'second grade Emperor Level Expert' affair was done. And, it was heard that he had gone to live in seclusion since then...

Disturbance in the world of Jianghu was a dangerous thing. And, this had been proven this time. However, the most frightening thing was that there were too many abnormalities...

One day, Tan Tan finally ran into a person who was his match.

He had been having too much fun ever since he had parted with Chu Yang. Moreover, he had a soul fragrance on his body that could be sensed from five-hundred kilometres. This had been given to him by Chu Yang since it would allow them to find each other with ease. After all, they intended to meet each other every once in half-a-month.

However, Tan Tan had finally run into a person who was his match! He had been chasing after an Emperor Level Expert for three or four days. But, he soon realized that he had come way too far. Moreover, he had lost direction as a result.

Tan Tan had run into a youngster who was wearing ragged clothes at this juncture. Tan Tan first stepped forward to fight with him. Then, he beat this guy up. He then asked him for directions.

However, he found that he had returned to the same place by following the directions that this youngster had given him. But, the most awful thing was that he realized that the spirit beast inner cores had been stolen from his body. Moreover, he didn't know when they were stolen...

Tan Tan obviously got very furious!

...

Chu Yang had been secretly watching the progress of his brothers these days. He had previously said that his brothers weren't allowed to save or help each other. However, he had only meant it for the sake of saying it. But, they had no other choice but to depend upon their personal desperation and their sensibility to promote their strengths. But, there was no way Chu Yang could let go of them from his heart...

[I will secretly observe them without letting them realize. My secret observation should be fine and shouldn't affect their mental state in any way. Otherwise, how would I be able to take the pain of regret for my whole life if something happened to them by any chance...?]

He secretly nodded while watching over Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang. These two were very clear about the path they wanted to walk on. And, they had been moving forward on it with a steady pace. In addition, they were tough and tenacious by nature. So, they kept on fighting in spite of all setbacks. Their use of the spiritual power, their comprehension power, their skills, and proficiency — everything had enhanced by leaps and bounds of late.

Chu Yang also discovered that these two had deliberately supressed their spiritual power, and hadn't broken through on purpose. Therefore, he felt completely relieved about these two — [These two understand the importance of laying the foundation! Their foundation would be unsteady if they blindly make

breakthroughs during this period of time. And, that's because towering buildings are built up on strong foundations. Therefore, an unsteady foundation would only make them suffer later on!]

[However, they've obviously realized this point.]

Therefore, Chu Yang turned around and went to watch over Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di instead.

However, Chu Yang couldn't help but tremble in his heart when he looked at them. These two had once been the dandy and useless young masters of two aristocratic clans. However, their current situation could only be described as –'a tragic sight'!

Ji Mo was dressed in ragged clothes. He was being besieged when Chu Yang had arrived here. Ji Mo didn't even look like a man from his form and shape. Chu Yang resisted his desire to save Ji Mo as he saw him crazily fighting with a group of King Level Experts. After that, Ji Mo somehow dodged the earth-shattering attacks of the enemy. But, he sustained injuries. Then, he got up and stormed out of this tight encirclement...

Then, he chased after the people of this group one by one. He attacked them unceasingly with his scarred body until he had slashed down all the experts of this group with his sword. Then, he finally breathed a sigh of relief...

The skin and flesh of his whole body didn't seem to be his own. He had sustained near-fatal injuries. However, the Second Young Master Ji – who had always trifled with the rules of the human world without respect – still stood tall. In fact, he stood perfectly straight! His brows didn't wrinkle for once while he applied ointment and bandaged his wounds.

The Nine Tribulations Pill that Chu Yang had given him was kept in his bosom. But, he wasn't ready to take it by any means!

He must remember this pain!

He must remember that he had tumbled. This lesson must go

deep inside him, and ought to reach his very bones. He must endure this so that he doesn't repeat his mistakes later in life! This was how he was growing up!

He would forget the past pain once the wounds would heal. However, the experience would remain. Ji Mo knew his nature. So, he knew that wouldn't remember a thing if these wounds were to heal in the blink of an eye. This optimistic nature was inborn in him, and he couldn't do anything about it.

Therefore, he must keep these scars.

Chu Yang's eyes became somewhat moist as he looked at Ji Mo. Even his heart was left to tremble!

These two would often get caught into some hopeless situations. And, these two would often have their strengths exhausted. However, they would fiercely roar in such situations, "We brothers will ascend to the top of the Nine Heavens together!"

Then, they would jump up to battle crazily... as if they had eaten aphrodisiac! And, such a crazy will to fight would leave their enemy to shiver in fright!

Chu Yang clearly remembered the exact words that he had said to his brothers when he was in the Lower Three Heavens, "There will come one day when I will rush to the top of the Nine Heavens with you guys! And then, the entire Nine Heavens will write legends about us!"

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had memorised this in their hearts. This was also the initial goal of the brothers of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. In fact, it was their biggest dream!

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had finally realized that there had come a disparity between themselves and their brothers. And, this was the reason why they had to put too much effort to keep up. After all, they didn't wish to fall behind. And, they didn't wish to pull their brothers down either!

Therefore, they needed put all their effort to catch up to their brothers! They must fight with all their might, and they must promote themselves at all costs. This was necessary to achieve the ultimate goal — [I must stand on the peak along with my brothers and smile proudly at the Nine Heavens!]

They would rather die fighting in the process of promoting themselves than to be eliminated!

Ji Mo was facing seven King Level Experts during the fight a while ago. He could've died in such a situation! But, he then crazily attacked the enemy like a mad devil, and killed them. Even his shouts were as loud as thunderclaps!

"I will make my brothers proud of me!"

"I won't let my brothers die because of me! I won't let them feel ashamed because of me!"

"I may become a legend someday. But, my brothers will inevitably be there in my legends!"

"And, I will inevitably be there in their legends if they achieve that success someday!"

"I will be there at your side when you stand on the peak! And, I will also overlook the world with you! We will rule the world together!"

"I will be there for sure! I will be there for sure!!"

These were the words that Chu Yang had told him before. And, Ji Mo had remembered it without missing a single word. His energy would suddenly erupt whenever he would shout out these words. In fact, it seemed as if these words were some kind of a wonder-cure! They would give him endless courage, and endless fighting spirit...

Chu Yang could sense that Ji Mo's heart would well up with unwilling grievance every time he would shout! Moreover, his heart would fill with the thirst for becoming strong!

In fact, Ji Mo's heart would well up with tears whenever he would shout these words...

[I mustn't fall behind my brothers...] Ji Mo yelled in his heart! And, Chu Yang had clearly heard this even though Ji Mo hadn't spoken these words out loud.

Could Ji Mo be blamed for the difference in innate talent between him and his brothers? [Why does innate talent make people different?] Ji Mo was shouting this in his heart!

Therefore, he had staked everything. In fact, he had crazily staked his life into this! [My innate talent can't be compared to that of my brothers...? So, I will make my hard-word make up for the deficiency! I will do this even if the training kills me!]

[I don't have that kind of transcending innate talent. So, I have no other choice but to rely solely on my hard-work, my sweat, and my desperation! I will catch up with them, and I will go beyond!]

Luo Ke Di was also in a similar state.

Luo Ke Di's whole body was riddled with scars. It was the result of several dozens of fights that he had fought. A murderous aura was surging around his whole body. And, an acute vigour was emerging out of his body! Luo Ke Di seemed to be a different person now...

He too would crazily yell while fighting madly.

The same words that Ji Mo had shouted could be heard from the mouth of Luo Ke Di as well! That aggrieved shout, that kind of intent to disobey the heavens and the earth, and that urgency to pledge his life in order to rush to the top... everything was same!

[I won't let my brothers hold back because of me. But, I am weak. So, my brothers can be harmed because of me! They can even die because I'd be a burden on them!]

[I will also go on our journey if they move forward! I will also go on for sure!]

[It's fine if I die! But, I will keep on rushing up if I don't die! And, I will be alongside my brothers!]

[I will make my brothers proud of me!]

[I'm not a useless person!]

[No one would be able to look down on us again. No one would be able say that we don't have any future!]

[Not even a Supreme Expert!]

Consequently, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had completely transformed in barely over a month's time period. Both of them had always lived like pampered princes since they were the juniors of aristocratic clans. They had always been like people who would merely eat and wait for death. But, they had suddenly turned into two rough and unyielding warriors! Where could a playboy's aura be found on their bodies now? Where did they have those bad habits anymore?

They were valiant now! They were had iron blood! They were fierce, and didn't fear death!

Their fighting spirit made it seem as if they wouldn't hesitate to wipe out the entire world in order to rush to the top!

[I can do it! I will do it for sure!]

...

Chu Yang quietly left. However, he felt his chest throb when he left. He felt agitated. And, he had tears in his eyes!

[My brothers, I am so proud of you! Do you know that?]

...

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang would also come and see Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo from time to time in between the gaps of their fights. Chu Yang had been worrying about Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di. So, how could Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang be at ease?

However, they would also leave as quietly as they would come. They would have worry on their faces whenever they would come. And, their faces would be tainted with heaviness when they would leave. However, they would also have tears in their eyes, and an air of pride over their being!

[Brothers, you will succeed!]

[Brothers, we are very proud of you! You deserve success!]

[Our lives won't go in vain after having such brothers!]

Then, Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing would again immerse themselves in life-staking fights. They would even go and attack spirit beasts if they didn't find any human opponents!

[We can't wait for Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di to catch up. After all, it will only make us brothers feel shameful even if they catch up and be at the same level as us!]

[Our brothers are staking their lives. So, we must also work hard!]

These two Sword and Saber Kings would break out their full potentials, and would get caught up in crazy fights as a result...

...

Chu Yang had quietly left. However, his heart had remained heavy throughout the way. He was feeling sorry and gratified at the same time. These four brothers had become pretty good now. In fact, they had become excellent. Therefore, he could finally feel relieved to some extent. [I better go and take a look at Tan Tan now. I don't know how my junior marital brother has been...]

...

Chapter 575: Tan Tan and Rui Bu Tong!

Chu Yang had used his agility skill to cover his whole journey very quickly. Moreover, the number of battle he had fought this month wasn't too many. He had used most of his time in collecting herbs and consolidating his cultivation.

It was because Chu Yang had discovered that there were a lot of ice-attribute elixirs in this Northern Wilderness. Moreover, no one had excavated them! So, this was like a natural storehouse of medicinal herbs.

There were one or more elixirs in every few miles under the mysterious ice. These elixirs couldn't be seen from the outside! Therefore, no one besides Chu Yang had dug here in this region!

Consequently, Chu Yang had been obtaining a pot full every day during this period of time. Chu Yang had quickly collected a lot of precious treasures from underground using his fastest speed!

The Sword Point of Nine Tribulation Sword had 'detection' ability. But, Chu Yang was slow at collecting the things that the Sword Point pointed at using its ability. So, Chu Yang could only collect half of them. No. It could be said that what he had collected was even less than half of the stuff detected by the Sword Point...

The most surprising thing for Chu Yang was that he had also dug out a piece of star-shaped substance from under the mysterious ice. This was a good material that had never appeared in this continent. Even Sword Spirit also clicked his tongue in wonder after Chu Yang put it into the Nine Tribulations Space. He fiddled with it several times, but couldn't make out what it was...

Chu Yang bathed into the Soul Quenching Spring once in every three days.

It had been exactly one month today. So, it was the end of the first phase.

Sword Edge and Sword Spine of the Nine Tribulations Sword also flew out from the Soul Quenching Spring, and entered into Chu Yang's Dantian. Only Sword Point remained soaking inside. It had stayed to make up for losses incurred while helping Chu Yang in detecting the elixirs of late...

Sword Spirit had also completed the phase of bathing into the Soul Quenching Spring. So, he would have to wait till Chu Yang had risen to Monarch Level before he could quench his soul again. Then, he would be able to soak with Chu Yang again...

Chu Yang clearly felt that the three segments of the Nine Tribulations Sword had already changed a little. In fact, it seemed as if their spiritual intelligence was increasing, and was getting more and more sufficient. It was even more effortless and efficient to use them.

The murderous aura and evil presence of Sword Edge and Sword Spine had increased significantly! It seemed that the sharpness that had remained buried for ten-thousand years had been restored after soaking into the Soul Quenching Spring. In fact, it seemed that it had completely awakened...

The Sword Spirit's body had become no different from that of an actual person! In fact, Chu Yang would sometimes curiously touch him to feel it. However, his hand wouldn't go through the void in Sword Spirit as it used to. Instead, he would be left with a strange sense of realness now.

Sword Spirit was extremely pleased with his current situation. He would laugh every day, and wouldn't shut up. The Nine Tribulations Space was also filled with various resources. It had Vitality Spring, Soul Quenching Spring, Mysterious Ice Jade Ointment, Mysterious Yang Jade Essence, countless Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal, and Mysterious Yang Jade. It also had Jade Snow Spirit Ginseng, and 'Sea of Fire Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom'. Moreover, it had the countless elixirs that Chu Yang had obtained from under the Mysterious Ice...

There were countless of rare metals and forging materials as well...

Sword Spirit would count all of them every day like a scrooge. And then, he would smile in satisfaction. [This guy has collected so many things here... Even the previous eight Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword hadn't obtained all these...]

[This kid is a freak!] Sword Spirit looked at Chu Yang, and silently said in his heart.

Chu Yang swiftly flew and reached to the place that Tan Tan had informed him about...

He had barely arrived here...

...

Tan Tan was angry right now. But, he had his hands bound, and he was unable to do anything!

It was because this place seemed to be a natural battle array. So, it seemed that a novice like Tan Tan wouldn't be able to do anything without anyone's guidance if he were to go inside.

Tan Tan had been there for two consecutive days. So, Tan Tan was hungry, and his legs had gone limp. But, there was still no soul in sight...

The blame was on his strange physical constitution. This guy was unable to eat normal food. In fact, he didn't feel like eating even if he would starve to death. Moreover, his consumption of spirit beast inner core had also increased... it had increased from three per meal to four per meal!

This was even more tragic!

He had been starving for two days in a row now. So, how could he keep going on?

Tan Tan leant on a boulder in daze on the third day. He looked around with his shiny eyes, and they clearly belied his longing for

a spirit beast to pass from here... In fact, it wouldn't have mattered if it was a ninth grade spirit beast... Tan Tan would've bravely fought a decisive fight with no thought of personal safety to take its inner core.

But, there was none — not even a third grade spirit beast was around!

It was finally night time, and Tan Tan didn't even have the strength to cuss.

That hateful thief finally showed up at this time. He looked at Tan Tan with a wily expression from afar. He had a look of pride and 'thrill after revenge' on his face.

This guy was Rui Bu Tong!

Moreover, this natural battle array in the Northern Wilderness belonged to the masters – Stealing God and Thieving Ghost. It was said that the two masters had accidently entered here in the past. Then, they had obtained a rare secret book from here. Moreover, they had practiced here, and had then returned to the Middle Three Heavens to become famous in the Jianghu.

Even the name 'Stealing God and Thieving Ghost' comes from this.

However, the masters must return to this place once in every two years. But, they had brought Rui Bu Tong with them this time. After all, they wanted to make their darling disciple upgrade his strength.

Rui Bu Tong was also depressed. It had been several months since he had arrived here. He had been incessantly making preparations. And, he had been incessantly enhancing his condition. Moreover, he was waiting for the right time to open the seal so that he could upgrade his strength.

However, who would have imagined that he would come out of the battle array that day, and would be captured and ferociously

beaten up? And, the one beating him would be a ninth grade King Level Expert?!

This beating had made Rui Bu Tong so miserable that he was unable to speak anything. He had almost made preparations to make adjustments to his body, but he had got beaten up instead. This had obviously interrupted matters. So, the aura within his body was now in a great mess!

[You want to beat me up? Fine! Then, get over with it, ok? Anyways, I won't be getting internal injuries or I wouldn't be able to make adjustments for several days.] But, who knew that the guy who had just beaten him would ask for directions right after beating him?

Wasn't his demeanour abusive?

Therefore, Rui Bu Tong had conveniently pointed towards a direction. Then, he had taken advantage of the time when this fool was delightfully walking away. And, he had then taken advantage of the crisis for personal gain. He acted as a petty thief, and stole the belongings on Tan Tan's body.

[I can't beat you. But, I can make you lose a fortune!] Rui Bu Tong hatefully thought.

However, Rui Bu Ting discovered that he had made a fortune once he had robbed that guy!

He had become very rich!

There were inner cores of fourth grade and higher spirit beasts inside. Moreover, there were more than a thousand of them! [This is such a great fortune...]

However, the next thing was even stranger for Rui Bu Tong: [This guy hasn't brought food with him? Moreover... it seems that he doesn't eat food?]

[Does he want to starve himself to death here?] Rui Bu Tong thought this, and felt strange.

[Crap! Such a man exists on this earth? He's indeed the number-one fool in the world.]

There were no high grade spirit beasts in this place at present. But, there were some ordinary snow-rabbit, snow-chicken, snow-sheep etc. So, it was unbelievable for Rui Bu Tong that a ninth grade King Level Expert was genuinely starving to death despite having so many things to eat around him.

Rui Bu Tong could only sigh after he had confirmed this thing. [This world is full of strange mysteries...]

Rui Bu Tong came out from behind the stone when he saw that this fellow was hungry and powerless. "Hey! Why don't you eat anything? Are you dumb?"

Tan Tan's vision had blurred due to hunger. He heard these words, and became very angry. But, he didn't retort. Instead, he weakly cussed, "You're dumb! Motherfu*ker, wouldn't I have eaten if there was food around? Do you think that I am as brain-dead as you are?"

He opened his eyes wide after he said this, and he saw this man's face. Then, he suddenly became angry and shouted, "So, it's you! Bastard, give me back my bag!"

Rui Bu Tong shrank his neck. He found that this guy to be increasingly amusing. [His legs have gone limp due to hunger. And, this guy still dares to show his power to me?]

"I won't give it back. What will you do?" Rui Bu Tong snorted. He had noticed that this guy hadn't come over. So, he had become bolder in his heart.

"You won't give it back...?" Tan Tan retorted, "This is obviously my stuff. Why wouldn't you give it back?"

Rui Bu Tong revealed his whole body from behind the boulder. Then, he sat on the stone and put a leg over the other. Then, he replied in an instant, "Yes. This stuff belonged to you when it was

in your hands. But... it is in my hands now. So, it has become mine!"

He sulkily looked at Tan Tan, "You said that this stuff is yours. Do you have any proof of it? You call out to them. And, I will give them to you if they reply!"

Tan Tan almost blew his top, "Bastard! These are non-living things. So, how can they reply? Do you think that they breathe and talk nonsense like you do?"

"Then, you can't prove that these things are yours." Rui Bu Tong burst into loud laughter. He took out the bag and swung it. Then, he again stuffed the bag into his bosom.

Tan Tan became very angry. He fiercely stood up. Then, he pounced over to him like lightning with a 'shua' sound.

However, Rui Bu Tong was from the true lineage of the Stealing God and Thieving Ghost. So, his agility skills were quick and skilful. Moreover, Tan Tan was hungry. So, he had chased after Rui Bu Tong with a weakened vitality.

Rui Bu Tong's body whirled, and he went more than a hundred feet away. Then, he mischievously laughed.

"Idiot! I will return this bag to you, but only if you kneel down in front of Lord Rui and kowtow three times on the ground. You must also say that 'I made a mistake'; three time at that!" Rui Bu Tong proudly laughed.

"Stop your fu*king nonsense! I will never kneel down in my life!" Tan Tan was very angry.

Tan Tan looked up and deeply sighed due to anger, "It is hard to imagine that I – the most handsome man in the world... smart and carefree, and extremely beautiful man – would suffer such an insult in this Northern Wilderness!"

"What...?" Rui Bu Tong suddenly tumbled and fell to the ground. He then lifted his head from the snowy ground, and looked

towards the extremely ugly Tan Tan in disbelief. It could be said that nothing about this statement seemed correct to Rui Bu Tong. He stammered, "You? You're the most handsome man in the world? You're a smart and carefree, and extremely beautiful man?"

"What?!" Tan Tan raised his head, "Do you think that this Sir Tan isn't handsome?" Sir Tan had obviously forgotten that he had been hungry while taking about the matter of being ugly and beautiful. After all, starving to death was a trivial thing to him. But, reputation was the most important one! [Who wouldn't dare to call me a 'handsome' man?]

"Wa ha ha ha ha..." Rui Bu Tong uttered a loud cry. He laughed so hard that tears nearly came out of his eyes. [Such an ugly man dares to say that he is the most handsome in the world!]

[This was comical on a whole new level!]

However, Rui Bu Tong was suddenly met with a shock, "What are you surnamed? Sir Tan...? What Sir Tan?"

Rui Bu Tong recalled. [Big Brother Chu's junior martial brother is named Tan Tan... Moreover, his nature is also quite... narcissistic. He too shamelessly shows off his good looks.] He had heard this name countless times when he was Chu Yang. So, it could be said that it was a well-known name for him.

Rui Bu Tong had heard that this ugly and extremely narcissist guy say that he was surnamed Tan. So, he couldn't help but feel far from good. [He wouldn't be the junior martial brother of Big Brother Chu, right?]

"This Sir doesn't change his name or surname in any condition! My given name is Tan, and my surname is Tan. The most handsome man in the world! The carefree and smart Tan Tan who is mentioned in the legends! That is me! I am the most handsome man in the world, carefree and smart Tan Tan as given in the legends!" Tan Tan straightened his neck and loudly stated. His face even filled with arrogance as he said this. He looked disdainfully

out of the corner of his eyes, and even managed to strike a proud pose. In fact, he didn't look like a man who had been starving for three days!

"It is you for real!" Rui Bu Tong jumped up in fright. He suddenly felt embarrassed.

[Shit! It's Big Brother Chu's junior martial brother!]

[What do I do now...]

Rui Bu Tong scratched his head, and repeated these words while scowling miserably, "It is you for real."

"Do you recognize me?" It was Tan Tan's turn to be surprised. "You have also heard my famous name as a handsome and carefree man?" he shook his head and suddenly became proud of himself, "I'm a real legend. Even the savages of this Northern Wilderness have heard of my famous name!"

...

Chapter 576: I Will Also Achieve it if you Guys Have!

Rui Bu Tong didn't know whether to laugh or cry. [I haven't heard about you being handsome, carefree, and whatnot... But, I've heard that you're super narcissist and shameless. And, I have been looking forward to meeting you for a long time.]

"Is Chu Yang... your senior martial brother?" Rui Bu Tong touched his nose and asked with a stammer.

"Of course! Chu Yang is my martial brother! He's only a little less handsome than me. So, he can be considered the second most handsome man in the world," Tan Tan snorted as he pointed his nose upwards and said.

"This is... a misunderstanding." Rui Bu Tong had enthusiasm on his face. He burst into loud laughter and came over running to him, "So, you're a family member. Ha ha ha ha."

"Give me my bag first!" Tan Tan again felt hungry as he watched Rui Bu Tong running over. In fact, his figure appeared to be doubling in front of Tan Tan's eyes. Tan Tan didn't even feel thankful as he said.

"You still think that I won't return this bag? Come, come, come, have meal with me first," Rui Bu Tong greeted him with a smile, "I am sworn brother of your senior martial brother... um, don't you know that?"

"How can I have a meal with you when you won't give me my bag?" Tan Tan lied on his stomach on the ground. Then, he swayed his head, "Give it to me, first!" the words he had said to Rui Bu Tong didn't reach his ears.

Rui Bu Tong felt funny and amused.

[Big Brother's junior martial brother is a miser. In fact, he's a big one! He's still thinking about the treasures in his bag!]

[I have even said that 'you still think that I won't return this bundle?'. Won't you die if you don't eat food first?]

A sound echoed at this moment, "Eh? How come you two are together?"

A dark shadow fell on the ground like lightning. Chu Yang had finally arrived!

"Big brother!"

"Senior Brother!"

Both of them called out at the same time.

"Big brother... he-he, this is a misunderstanding!" Rui Bu Tong embarrassedly laughed.

"Chu Yang, Senior brother! This bastard stole my bag. And, he also wants me to starve to death. Boohoo..." Tan Tan burst into tears. He felt extremely wronged.

Both of them tried hard to rush over to Chu Yang first. And, Tan Tan bumped into Rui Bu Tong in the midway. They then started to push-and-pull at each other.

"Big Brother, it's not like that. This... this junior martial brother of yours is talking nonsense..." Rui Bu Tong's heart also filled with the feeling of being treated unjustly. "He's the one who beat me up without any reason first... I..."

"But you can't steal my stuff for that... didn't I only beat you up a bit?" Tan Tan shouted since he felt wronged. Then, he felt a pain in his heart, "I – the most handsome and carefree man – haven't eaten for the last three days. My face has become so skinny due to hunger... Senior Brother, you have a look... Haven't I become skinny?"

Chu Yang didn't know where to laugh or cry.

"Well, well... talk one be one, and speak slowly. Isn't it only a misunderstanding? So, I will be the mediator since I'm here

now..." Chu Yang raised his hand, "Where's the bag? Take it out first."

Tan Tan snatched the bag, and opened it as quickly as possible. Then, he grabbed a fifth grade inner core and stuffed it into his mouth.

He didn't even care to chew it. He simply stretched his neck, and swallowed it down to his belly.

Then, he took out another one, and again stretched his neck...

Then, third one...

Then, fourth one...

Then, fifth one...

Rui Bu Tong was about to give an explanation when Tan Tan had eaten the first one. But, he had instead been left to open his mouth and eyes wide in fright. In fact, he had even forgotten the explanation he was about to blurt...

[No wonder he didn't eat anything. So, this is his food?]

[Crap... is this normal?]

Rui Bu Tong only felt his head spinning. [How can someone eat inner cores of spirit beasts?]

[I've never heard something like that before!]

[This is a miracle!]

Rui Bu Tong hadn't noticed that Chu Yang's smile had changed into shock when Tan Tan was swallowing the fourth inner core. Even the color of his face had faded.

Chu Yang's mouth had unknowingly gotten opened wide when Tan Tan was swallowing the fifth inner core. His face had also changed into dead-grey...

[It has only been a few days, right? How did Tan Tan's appetite increase so much? Shit! It has risen to five inner cores per meal?

That means... one inner core of two-hundred-thousand. Five per meal... that is one million! So, it will be three million in one day...?]

Chu Yang groaned. [Tan Tan will soon start eating ten cores in one meal if his appetite continues to grow at such a terrifying speed... And, it will cost six million a day...]

[Moreover, fifth grade inner cores won't be able to satisfy his hunger if he levels up once more. And, he will need sixth and seventh grade inner cores... And, that will make us bankrupt!]

Chu Yang thought of this, and felt his head spinning. He then sighed in grief, "Master... you avoided this problem by walking away from it. You must be so relaxed and happy. But, you left behind such a moocher for me... I... I will go bankrupt even though I'm the Nine Tribulations Sword Master. I can't take care of his food expenses..."

However, Tan Tan was stuffing sixth one in his mouth at this time...

After all, Tan Tan had been awfully hungry since the past few days! So, he still didn't feel full even though he had been eating nonstop...

Minister Chu's eyes turned white when he saw the sixth one going down to Tan Tan's belly!

Minister Chu's whole body shivered when he saw the seventh one going down the belly. In fact, he wished he were dead...

Tan Tan then tried to stuff the eighth one... And, the grieved howl that had been inside Minister Chu's heart finally burst out to his mouth, "Master... you old man... you fu*ked me up..."

Chu Yang nearly collapsed in fright. However, he wasn't the only one. Rui Bu Tong had also collapsed... as if he had seen a ghost or something...

Tan Tan had stuffed his mouth, and he felt full. So, he

hiccupped, and put the eighth one back. Then, he stroked his belly, and sat on the ground with his legs stretched. He felt extremely satisfied, "I am stuffed! This food was delicious."

Chu Yang fiercely rubbed his temples. He felt that his head would explode due to headache.

He had never thought that he would have to worry about food expenses... He had never imagined that he would be forced into a dead-end situation by the food expenses of just one person...

Tan Tan suddenly shouted out loud in a tragic hurry. Then, he jumped up at a lightning speed. He then grabbed Rui Bu Tong with a fast movement of his hand, and threw him on the ground. Rui Bu Tong was already stunned, and wasn't guarded in the least. Then, Tan Tan got on his body, and started to beat him up in a crazed manner.

"You brat! You dared to steal my stuff!"

"You little bastard! You dared to starve me!"

"And, you even laughed at me!"

"You dared to say that I'm not handsome!"

"You..."

Rui Bu Tong was only a second grade King Level Expert at present. What strength did he have to resist the ninth grade King Level Expert Tan Tan? So, he was only screaming with a 'boohoo'. He was continuously crying for help amidst those screams. His whole body had instantly been turned black-and-purple by the punches, pinches, slaps and twisting of Tan Tan's...

"Tan Tan!" Chu Yang hastily rushed to stop him.

Tan Tan was very obedient. And, he stopped his hands that very instant. But, he was still sitting on Rui Bu Tong. He then majestically asked, "Are you convinced or not?"

"Yes. I am!" Rui Bu Tong was a hoodlum. But, he miserably took

it lying down.

"Humph! I will still beat you up even if you accept!" Tan Tan rubbed his hands together and stood up.

"Big Brother... you must give me justice..." Rui Bu Tong cried, "I am being bullied very miserably here..."

Chu Yang had a headache!

He pacified them for a while. And, both of them eventually calmed down. But, both of them felt very wronged. And, both of them were glaring at each other, and were eager to beat each other. Tan Tan was a ninth grade King Level Expert now. So, he wasn't afraid by any means.

Rui Bu Tong had also made a resolution in the secrecy of his heart. [I will come and teach you a lesson after this upgradation of mine...]

Chu Yang looked at Rui Bu Tong. He couldn't help but say excitedly, "Sixth Brother, what is your current cultivation level?"

"Second grade King Level Expert!" Rui Bu Tong heaved a deep sigh. He comforted himself in his heart. [I can't be compared with this freak Tan Tan. And, I can't be compared with Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang either. But, I must be stronger than Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Chu Yang!]

However, he fell into an abyss when Chu Yang struck him these words, "Eh, second grade? Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang are fifth grade King Level Experts now. They are fifth grade Sword King and fifth grade Saber King respectively."

Rui Bu Tong suddenly stared back with big and rounded eyes, "What?"

Chu Yang sighed and said, "This will be quite shocking to you... ok? Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di seem to be at the peak of fourth grade at present..."

Rui Bu Tong sat down on the ground. "What?! Big Brother... you, you... you're not lying to me, right?" Rui Bu Tong looked at Chu Yang giving a meaningful glance of affirmation. And, he went into a daze as a result. He muttered, "What the heck... how did I fall behind by that much?"

Chu Yang sighed, and it seemed as if he was bemoaning the state of the universe and pitying the fate of mankind. He then said, "Ahm, ahm... I'm also... a fifth grade Sword King now..."

Rui Bu Tong's eyes rolled back. His whole body shivered and twitched. He wanted to cry, but had no tears, "Big Brother... could you not give me shock after shock like that...? And, here I thought that I was advancing at a very good speed these days... boohoo..."

This was certainly Rui Bu Tong's true thought. He had repeated leveled up during these days, and he had reached the peak of the second grade King Level as a result. This had made Rui Bu Tong immeasurably satisfied with himself. But, he had suddenly realized that he was the weakest amongst his brothers. Moreover, his strength wasn't the weakest by a small margin either.

He had particularly come across a great opportunity in this Northern Wilderness. And, he could upgrade by a wide margin here. In fact, he could easily promote his cultivation by one grade at the very least. And, this would be a terrific thing. Therefore, Rui Bu Tong had thought that he would come back after this upgradation, and would flaunt his strength to his brothers. He had also thought that he would teach Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing a lesson if possible...

However, Rui Bu Tong was left very frustrated and sad after he heard that barrage of news from Chu Yang's mouth...

The most unimaginable thing for him was that Chu Yang was now a fifth grade King Level Expert. This was too big a blow for Rui Bu Tong to endure!

One must know that Chu Yang was merely a Martial Great

Master when they had last met...

[Such a big difference ah! He's so far ahead of me now? Moreover, the difference is of three grades?] This had left the self-satisfied Rui Bu Tong to feel very depressed...

"I'm also very disappointed..." Chu Yang heaved a deep sigh, and proceeded to shock him again, "You see my junior martial brother was much inferior to me last year. But, he's a ninth grade King Level Expert now..."

Rui Bu Tong painfully clutched his hair, "Ah, ah, ah... Am I dreaming?"

"You don't need to be so disappointed..." Chu Yang sighed since he knew that the lost time can't return. He said, "We have only started to upgrade. But, do you know how much we have sacrificed for this? We have faced the crisis of life and death several times every day. In fact, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di are still continuously fighting blood-soaking battles..."

"How much did we sacrifice? And, how much did you sacrifice? That's the difference! Therefore, you don't have to balance out the difference in your heart..." Chu Yang hypocritically consoled him. But, he was provoking him by making negative remarks in reality. "We've staked our lives in battles..."

Rui Bu Tong's eyes turned red as he jumped up. "It's not good! Do you think that I can't achieve this if you guys can? We are the same, brothers! We're not afraid of anyone!"

"Don't... don't be too impulsive!" Chu Yang pacified him.

"I can't be premeditated anymore!" Rui Bu Tong flew into rage, "I won't come out without promoting to the utmost this time — even if I die inside!"

Chu Yang jumped up in fright. He quietly thought that his idea of provocation by making negative remarks had motorized into 'overkill', "What... do you mean by 'this time'?"

"I have come with my two masters to upgrade my strength..." Rui Bu Tong explained thus and so. Then, he paused for a second. He then further said, "Humph! How can leveling up by one grade be enough? I will level up by two grades! Three grades! Four grades! Five grades!"

He fiercely yelled, "I must increase my strength, ah!"

Chu Yang's whole body got covered in cold sweat.

...

Chapter 577: Rui Bu Tong's Breakthrough!

Rui Bu Tong had clearly become somewhat impetuous in excitement.

He was making ruckus, and Chu Yang couldn't stop him.

Chu Yang was unable to do anything about it. [It seems that the stimulus this guy received was too big...]

Two silhouettes came rushing as if they had lost their heads out of fear. These two Emperor Level Experts were Stealing God and Thieving Ghost!

"Bu Tong, what happened?"

"Who bullied my disciple?"

The two old men landed on the ground with a 'whoosh' sound. They then glared at Chu Yang and Tan Tan like a tiger watching its prey.

"Master, I want to upgrade my strength! I can't take it anymore!" Rui Bu Tong wept bitter tears.

"Who are they – this man and this weirdo?" Thieving Ghost looked at Tan Tan and Chu Yang. But, this sentence made Tan Tan aggrieved and angry. So, he said, "Old Man, don't you have any manners?"

"This is my Big Brother... and his junior martial brother." Rui Bu Tong hastily introduced them. After all, he didn't want his Masters and Big Brother to have any misunderstanding between them.

"Why are you so irritated?" Stealing God asked.

"My brothers are already fourth or fifth grade King Level Experts..." Rui Bu Tong miserably said, "I am the weakest among them... Master, I won't come out before I've upgraded to fifth grade when I go in this time..."

The complexion of Stealing God and Thieving Ghost changed.

Chu Yang's fine hair also stood on end once he had understood the ongoing situation, and he was left to suck in cold air.

There was a strange space in this natural battle array. Thieving Ghost and Stealing God had been chased by two personal enemies of Martial Warrior Level in the past. They had rushed in here by mistake, and found that the insides were a completely different world.

There were vestiges of ancient time in here. There were three human-skeleton inside of it as well. And, there was a sheep-skin book that had clear theories written in it.

They found a Core Martial Cultivation Method in that book, and they also found this strange battle array could gather the world's spirit energy once in every ten years. This spirit energy could then get instilled into a human's body. Stealing God and Thieving Ghost had used this method to upgrade their cultivation to King Level in a very short period of time.

However, their root foundation had already taken shape at that time. Also, they were old. So, they couldn't upgrade their cultivation further after they had promoted to the third grade Emperor Level.

Moreover, this strange battle array seemed to be gradually losing its effect since they had been using it for a very long time. And, it had eventually issued a warning — [Only one person can be allowed now. Moreover, that person will only have one last opportunity to upgrade their strength!]

They obviously wanted to give this last opportunity to their favorite successor...

The two masters were overjoyed once Rui Bu Tong had returned to the Middle Three Heavens. Moreover, the advancement of Rui Bu Tong's cultivation had been very quick. So, he had met the standards that were required here.

Therefore, both of them had brought their disciple here while being full of joy and expectations.

Chu Yang listened to this, and felt a chill in his heart. [It is unknown how much this strange battle array can help people in upgrading their strength upon its activation...]

[In short, the spirit energy will keep on getting instilled into the person's body as long a person is inside of it!]

[Stealing God and Thieving Ghost would never insist on ending the instillation of spirit energy... Never!]

[But, this is the last opportunity, and Rui Bu Tong has seriously been provoked because of me...]

Chu Yang felt that this matter was somewhat going to go out of hand.

"Well, ahm, ahm, Sixth Brother... you must come out without delay if you are unable to persist!" Chu Yang touched his nose, and took back the words that he had spoken a while ago. "Life matters the most."

"It won't do!" Rui Bu Tong snorted. He had stubbornness on his face.

Chu Yang was helpless. He had to take out an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill to adjust Rui Bu Tong's physical capability to the optimum condition. However, he had no other choice but to trust the destiny... so that he wouldn't have to say that he had regrets in his heart at a later date.

However, a point must be mentioned — Tan Tan's system had changed. So, all the herbs and the other items were completely ineffective on him. In fact, the Nine Tribulations Pill didn't have the least bit of effect on Tan Tan...

...

Stealing God, Thieving Ghost, and Chu Yang were waiting while

tightly holding their hearts. The time had finally come...

Five people were present there in the big space inside that Great Array. They were standing on the opposite of a smooth stone platform. Rui Bu Tong would need to stand on the stone platform once that strange battle array was activated. And, he would then have to let all the spirit energy instill into his body till the point he could endure it.

Nobody could interfere as long as Rui Bu Tong didn't come down of it. The battle array would change Rui Bu Tong and that person into ashes on the spot if someone tried to meddle!

Only Rui Bu Tong could make a decision!

However, Rui Bu Tong was in a very crazed mode at present...

The three people broke out into cold sweat in their heart.

"I blame you for this!" Stealing God looked at Chu Yang while panting. His rat-mustache curled up from the corners of his mouth.

"Sigh..." Chu Yang sighed.

A humming sound echoed. Suddenly, a dazzling light came out from the surface of the stone platform. And, a whirlwind started to blow from the surface of that stone platform; it then spun and dashed upwards.

Suddenly, seven colors appeared in the sky. And, dense spirit energy hovered in the sky. Then, it slowly changed into a green-ish color that could clearly be seen with naked eyes. And, it gradually became denser and denser...

"The opportunity has finally come... Bu Tong... you must come out if you can't bear it," Thieving Ghost clenched his disciple's hand and warned repeatedly.

"Master, don't worry! This disciple won't let you down!" Rui Bu Tong firmly replied.

"Sixth Brother..." Chu Yang shouted.

"Big Brother..." Rui Bu Tong turned around.

"You must come out alive... No matter what happens!" Chu Yang deeply looked him in the eyes.

Rui Bu Tong passed a gentle smile and replied, "Big Brother, do you still remember the words that you had once said?"

"What words?"

"You once said... you wish to have us on your side when you become a legend someday. And, you must be a part of it when we become a legend."

Rui Bu Tong deeply said, "Big Brother, you don't know what we have been feeling since you have said those words... For how long the Nine Heavens have existed? How many people could become legend? And, how many people have the ability to carve their names inside legends?

"But, Big Brother, we brothers have been striding forward towards this goal since you've said this!" Rui Bu Tong took a deep breath, "Big Brother, let's say that you become legend someday and I am alive at that time. However, I'm not standing at your side... or... I'm not capable of standing at your side... Do you know that my life would be worse than death if that happens?

"There's only one scenario in which I'm not by your side when you become a legend. And, that's a scenario where I'm not longer alive." Rui Bu Tong firmly said, "We are brothers. You guys also won't feel good if I don't come up with you at the peak. There is no doubt that I'd be defeated at that time. But, you guys will also have regret in your hearts.

"This is my opportunity, and I can't let it go at any cost!

Rui Bu Tong took a step forward. And, he firmly walked towards the stone platform.

He suddenly turned his head when he arrived at the stone platform. He then spoke with a smile, "Big Brother... you will certainly be there in my legends!"

Then, he jumped up and stood in the middle of the stone platform!

The flow of whistling spirit energy suddenly increased at this moment. It issued a sound similar to the loud roar of a mighty tsunami. And, Rui Bu Tong's figure instantly drowned in the overflowing deep-green spirit energy!

Vast and mighty purple-green spirit energy suddenly started to fall downwards from the sky above the stone platform. It took a conical shape, and fiercely plunged towards the overflowing deep-green spirit energy!

It seemed it would occupy Rui Bu Tong's heavenly spirit!

Rui Bu Tong's whole body trembled. His face contorted, but he didn't say a word. He stubbornly closed his lips tightly, and kept his teeth clenched!

"Whiz~~~"

The spirit energy in the sky suddenly extruded and rolled. It continuously turned into purple-green spirit energy, and crazily instilled towards this place!

Chu Yang clutched his fist tightly. His fingernails dug deep into his flesh. Then, he silently said in his heart, "Bu Tong, Sixth Brother! Stand firm! I want you... to be at my side when I become a legend someday!"

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost had also tightly clenched their fists. They had look of concern on their faces. Their mouths were opened as they were looking at the green light shrouding their dear disciple. The muscles of his whole body had tightly stretched. The cold sweat was seeping out little by little from his body...

"The longest time that I've been able to maintain this... has been

half-an-hour."

Stealing God wiped the sweat from his face. He somewhat had lingering fear in his heart.

"The longest time I've stayed in there wasn't even half-an-hour... I was able to break through and increase my strength while I stayed here. But, that feeling was... it was worse than death!"

Thieving Ghost had unconsciously spoken this while looking at the whirlwind of green light. It seemed as if he was recalling those feelings from the days of the past. Even his soul trembled at this sight, "It has been so many years. But, I feel like shivering every time I see this thing. I would prefer to die, but I would never wish to go in there ever again... not even once!"

"Yes... I upgraded one level back then," Stealing God sighed.

"I had also upgraded one level at that time," Thieving Ghost lowered his head.

"This kid is better than both of us. But... I'm afraid that he might die," Stealing God and Thieving Ghost anxiously looked at each other.

"He will be successful!" Chu Yang looked at that swirling green light as he firmly stated.

"I hope so..." both the old fellows sighed at the same time.

"We also hope that our disciple can achieve something. You both are sworn brothers. So, it's obviously your business. We are very gratified that he has so many good brothers. But, we also don't want Bu Tong to be inferior to his brothers..."

Stealing God forced a smile, "Being inferior to one's enemy can breed hatred. But, being inferior to one's brothers can leave a man to develop an inferiority complex. And, that inferiority complex can become more hideous than hatred if it continues to grow..."

Chu Yang deeply said, "My brother will never have this

inferiority complex! Never!"

He had spoken this so resolutely and decisively that it couldn't be questioned!

Time gradually passed, and it had been fifteen minutes...

It had soon been half-an-hour!

That green light suddenly shook. Then, it created ripples which shook and surged around one after another.

"He's about to break through!" Stealing God's complexion turned serious.

Chu Yang didn't say a word. He only looked that whirling green light.

The trembling of that whirling light was getting more and more violent... It eventually exploded with a silent 'bang'. Then, a typical aura of breakthrough spread out from the whirling light!

Rui Bu Tong had broken through. He was a third grade King Level Expert now!

The green light returned to its normal position even though it had trembled so much. Then, it continued to maintain the density...

Rui Bu Tong stood amidst the halo with his eyes closed. One who'd see him at this moment would've been left shocked by the sight of it. In fact, they won't be able to bear it!

His whole body was trembling. And, each of his meridians seemed to be destroying and recombining with every jerk. Each vein was twisting and bulging out...

His facial muscles were already seeping out traces of blood.

However, he had somehow clenched his teeth, and wasn't saying a word!

This was surely the upgradation of strength, but it was also a test

of a person's willpower! It was true that such an advancement was extremely painful. But, further upgradation would be a walk in park for one since they had passed through this pain!

The spirit energy didn't stop injecting into him. And, the time of the second breakthrough had come soon! However, the spirit energy in the sky was still gathering and increasing without letup!

...

Chapter 578: Magical Nirvana!

Half-an-hour had passed. That aperture of green spirit energy trembled again. It was getting denser and denser...

However, Rui Bu Tong was still enduring the torture of his body being torn and bones being crushed amidst the aperture!

But, this stubborn youth had clenched his teeth, and wasn't making any sound. He knew that his Big Brother and masters would worry if he were to groan even a little!

[I can't make a sound.]

[They will think that I can still persevere with it if I don't make a sound!]

It had soon been one hour. And, he had promoted by two grades!

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost looked at each other. Rui Bu Tong had upgraded more than they ever had in one attempt. But, Rui Bu Tong still hadn't come out yet. In fact, there had been no noise from his side. Was it possible that he could still keep going?

Now... it had been one-and-a-half hours!

The spirit energy in the sky was increasing without letup. Immeasurable amount of spirit energy was rushing over from faraway places, and was gathering here like clouds and winds!

The green aperture started to tremble again when it was about to be two hours. It became denser and spread out... And, he made another breakthrough!

3 hours had passed soon enough!

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost had started to shiver by now. They had despair written over their faces. They nearly wanted to cry, but couldn't do so! [Bu Tong... why aren't you coming out now?] Both the Emperor Level Experts were endlessly regretting this now. They were regretting because they had sent their dear

disciple in this place of death with their own hands!

There shouldn't be any hope... after 3 hours...

Chu Yang deeply wrinkled his brows. He was about to move into action. But, the Sword Spirit ferociously stopped him, "Don't move! Don't interrupt him!"

"Huh?" Chu Yang gawked.

"Don't go there!" Sword Spirit said these words, and didn't say anything further. Then, he put on a solemn look and slowly said, "If I have guessed right... this must be..."

[This must be... what?] But, he didn't speak any further. He was only in doubt and confusion. He then said, "But, how on the earth can it still be preserved in this world?"

...

Rui Bu Tong's entire body had distorted inside the aperture....

There came a huge pressure this time. And, the breakthrough brought a lot of pain along with it! In fact, it had seemed as if his whole body would collapse and change into meat-pulp!

The body that had been standing tall and straight until now was slowly being compressed and crooked at this time...

Sounds of bones breaking were continuously coming through. And, blood was violently spurting out of the seven orifices of his head...

An explosive sound of a sudden thunderclap was heard from the dense and converged spirit energy in the sky at this moment. It was a rumbling 'bang' sound... like that of a thunderbolt! And, the entire Northern Wilderness ferociously tremored in its wake!

The spirit energy that had gathered in the sky suddenly turned purple!

Then, that purple spirit energy was suddenly pressed downwards when everyone was in indescribable shock. And, it then entered

this strange battle array.

A majestic voice slowly spoke from the sky over the battle array, "Nirvana!"

The green spirit energy on the stone platform also changed into purple aperture of spirit energy with a 'bang'. And, the range of the aperture suddenly expanded to double! The fire of the purple spirit energy surged up, and ignited the outer part of the aperture. Then, it swept across the entire hall, and burnt the top layer of it. And, it got destroyed as a result...

The flames then surged upwards, and changed one half of the sky to purple.

"Nirvana!" Sword Spirit heaved a sigh, "It is the Nirvana of the Phoenix Race! I had never imagined that I would see this magical formation again in ninety-thousand years! Chu Yang, you don't need to be worried."

However, Chu Yang wasn't worried about it anyway. Instead, he was excited and happy. In fact, he had nearly jumped in happiness!

[Rui Bu Tong has had such a fortuitous encounter!]

The Nirvana of Phoenix Race indicated that Rui Bu Tong had received the recognition of the Phoenix Race. Therefore, Rui Bu Tong had nearly become an immortal! And, Chu Yang was simply going crazy with happiness! After all, such an enormous and good thing had happened to his brother!

Meanwhile, he was also doubtful in his heart, [It is possible that Rui Bu Tong has the bloodline of Phoenix Race? What's it all about?]

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost also smiled in excitement after they had listened to Chu Yang's explanation. In fact, they had look of relief on their faces now.

...

However, Rui Bu Tong didn't feel as relieved inside the aperture.

He only felt that a mountain-like pressure was crushing him down! And, down...

Finally, his body couldn't endure it anymore! The flesh and blood of his right calf suddenly ruptured along with a soft sound! His bone also changed into powder within a split second!

Rui Bu Tong let out a groan of desperation as he fell down on the ground. Then, he surprisingly discovered a purple flame rising up from under his foot. It then started to burn his crushed right calf.

Rui Bu Tong felt severe pain in his soul along with the combustion! In fact, he felt as if his soul was being cut from his body with a knife! [No! This is much more painful than before...]

He tried calling out, but couldn't.

The purple flame suddenly got merged into him. Then, it vanished. Rui Bu Tong was in acute pain when he suddenly realized that his right calf was still complete!

He blinked with all his strength, and looked at it again. [That's right. It's still there!]

However, Rui Bu Tong was at a loss...

[What is this about? It had changed into ashes a short while ago...]

However, a crazy amount of pressure suddenly pressed him down in a ferocious manner while he was thinking this! And, his left calf also exploded in the same way.

Then, the same purple flame again swept up on it...

However, Rui Bu Tong wasn't startled this time. He only tried hard to endure the world's cruelest torture, and stay clearheaded.

Right knee! Exploded!

Left knee! Exploded!

Right thigh...

Left leg...

Waist... buttocks...

Then, Rui Bu Tong lower backbone suddenly exploded along with his neck. And, the pain he received was the highest at this time...

Rui Bu Tong's consciousness became blurry. And, he groaned in pain...

The purple flame swept on his body, and remodeled it!

But, it didn't vanish instantly this time. Instead, it suddenly ignited his whole body after it had finished the remodeling process.

The spirit energy in the sky suddenly issued a thunderous sound!

That majestic voice again said, "Nirvana~~!"

The entirety of that purple spirit energy in the sky ferociously slammed down with a rumbling sound. Moreover, it had rushed down towards the purple flame on the ground in such a madden manner. And, Rui Bu Tong's head burst open!

Then, the thick purple spirit energy dashed downwards! It then shrouded his head!

The Purple Phoenix Flame combusted and changed the spirit energy in the circle into a soaring purple fire.

The purple fire soared high up in the sky. In fact, it rose up to ten-thousand feet!

Anyone who'd see this flame could estimate that it was about ten-thousand feet high. But, nobody would know that it was precisely 9990 feet high if measured!

The temperature had also increased. So much so that Chu Yang, Stealing God, and Thieving Ghost had to leave this hall and go

about a thousand feet away from here...

However, the marks on Tan Tan's forehead and chest flashed in a ferocious manner along with those mild golden traces on the tip of his eyebrows when he was rushing back. Apparently... these marks had increased a little in size at this moment...

Tan Tan knitted his brows, and looked at the purple flames that were surging in front of him. Then, a blurring tint flitted across his face. And, he muttered, "It looks very familiar... Why does it feel that I have seen these flames somewhere?"

Then, his whole body fiercely shivered. And, the expression in his eyes suddenly changed into pitch-black. He then unhurriedly said, "Nirvana infuses with the Northern Dipper, and it comes down from the highest heaven. The flames ignite the sky, but precisely up to the height of 9990! Phoenix, you are also in there?"

However, Tan Tan's accent had become very majestic while he had spoken these words. It wasn't like his silly talks in the least. Moreover, these short words were filled with the might of a Monarch who looks disdainfully at all the living creatures of the world!

Suddenly, an inexplicable aura of maturity fiercely erupted from Tan Tan's body.

But, it disappeared as suddenly the next moment. Tan Tan's also restored their normal color. Then, he shouted, "Such a big fire!" And, he fled outwards in a terrified manner...

However, his transformation wasn't seen by anyone.

The large fire remained ignited for 3 hours.

And, Rui Bu Tong remained inside the array for 7 hours in total!

The big fire slowly started to die off. It reduced from ten-thousand feet to a thousand feet... and then to a hundred feet... and then to thirty feet...

Then, it suddenly vanished.

In fact, the flame had disappeared from the hall in a split second; the flame had changed into twinkling stars, and had disappeared without a trace.

Rui Bu Tong's naked appeared in front of everyone; he was as bare as a newborn baby!

Then, Rui Bu Tong slowly stood up with a perplexed expression on his face. He stretched his body. Then, he walked down while swaying, and took a few steps. However, he had a realization, and couldn't help but jump in excitement. He burst into loud laughter and exclaimed, "I succeeded. I succeeded... wa ha ha ha..."

Chu Yang, Stealing God, and Thieving Ghost became sullen!

Tan Tan opened his eyes wide, and looked at Rui Bu Tong. Then, he traced the crotch of his pant with his hand. And, he said in an unconvinced manner, "More or less the same."

Rui Bu Tong jumped up, and rushed over to Chu Yang. He pounced over, and excitedly hugged Chu Yang. Then, he smiled and bounced, "Big Brother, I succeeded..."

Chu Yang had already been left dumbstruck. So, he wasn't guarded in the least. Consequently, the strong and fierce momentum left him to fall on the ground with his face upward!

Rui Bu Tong's shiny and fair body had pressed his body down. And, the other three people were left to watch his two white and smooth butt-cheeks wiggle...

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost had felt somewhat jealous at first. [Little bastard, I raised you for so many years. But, you went to hug your big brother after you succeeded? Are we lesser to your big brother?]

However, their jealousy disappeared when they saw this extremely unsightly and chilling scene.

They looked at each other, and felt glad in their heart. [Luckily, he didn't come to hug me first... Otherwise... how the fu*k would I have endured this...]

Chu Yang became furious. And, he firmly patted with a 'smack' sound. In fact, he had smacked on the smooth butt-cheeks. Then, he shouted, "Get off!"

Rui Bu Tong suddenly felt that something was wrong. So, he touched his own body, and jumped up in surprise, "My clothes... where are my clothes?"

He glanced to the left and right...

Tan Tan stroked his chin, and mischievously smiled, "It is quite sexy..."

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost rushed over, and covered Rui Bu Tong with a robe. This hid the embarrassment of their disciple. Then, the two old men started to beat their disciple, "Little bastard! You scared this old man to death..."

Chu Yang also got up as swiftly as a fish. And, he also joined them in beating Rui Bu Tong...

Tan Tan let out an 'Ahwooh' as he also rushed over to join them.

...

Rui Bu Tong had become a sixth grade King Level Expert after these breakthroughs. He had become the strongest among his brothers in terms of cultivation. Moreover, his physique had also changed very greatly! In fact, he could rapidly recover even if he were to get cut by a blade...

Moreover, he had become the only one who wouldn't need to use Chu Yang's Nine Tribulations Pill to heal his wounds.

This outcome had obviously stimulated Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo...

These brothers would get together from time to time over the

following two months. Then, they would scatter far and wide... They used to wear their masks in the beginning. However, they had soon discovered that there was no use of wearing these fu*king masks... After all, everyone already knew who they were.

So, what was the use of hiding faces?

[We will blatantly show our identities in the open! This is how we roll, got it?]

...

Chapter 579: Vent the Anger

[People have been offended... Yes, we have offended millions of people! You people can come and look for us! Come and look for us, and we will show you whether we are the persons you are looking for or not!]

The Northern Wilderness had been extremely chaotic... And, more and more clans had decided to return home as a result...

After all, who could stand running into such a group of lunatics...

...

Two masters were teaching one apprentice...

And, the story continues thus — Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya had accepted an apprentice. And, they had been so happy the entire way that they were unable to conceal their happiness. Both the Supreme Experts saw future glory in this apprentice... since she possessed the best talent the world had seen in ages. In fact, the names of both these Supremes would fly out the window if they weren't able to teach such an apprentice well.

They liked her more every time they gazed upon their apprentice. They had taken care of her very gently the whole journey. In fact, they had kept her in their arms for the fear that she might fall and break apart.

Mo Qing Wu had made a request to go home so that she could check on her family. After all, she wanted to bid them farewell. Both the Supreme Experts complied, and personally accompanied her there. In fact, both of them were accompanying her! After all, neither of them wanted to let the other accompany her alone. And, neither of them was ready to stay even a single step behind.

The whole journey was filled with clouds and mists. It would take two months for a normal person to complete this journey. But, these two Supreme Experts had covered this journey in only

two days, and had reached the Mo Clan.

However, this two days' time had been very long.

Both these Supreme Experts had lived for more than ten-thousand years, and were very experienced. They wanted the little girl to open up to them. But, that wasn't too easy. However, she eventually opened up after a long time, and revealed the bitter experiences of her past.

They heard that her family's main goal had been to nurture her. However, her Three Yin Meridians got destroyed later. So, the clan gave up on her. It was very pitiful. This clan had then decided to give away these two Supremes' adorable apprentice to someone in the form of a concubine. And, that too to a person who practiced some evil technique. So, the little girl was forced to leave home. Her story was inhumane and sorrowful through the through...

[Things would've become too horrible to contemplate if it wasn't for Elder Brother Chu Yang...]

The little girl had chocked with sobs while she had spoken of her grievances. And, her tears had fallen like raindrops on pear blossom...

Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya had become very angry. Their hair had also stood on end.

Their rage had gone off the charts!

They hadn't expected that they would find about so many heaven-scaring things while chatting with their apprentice! This was the most provoking thing that the two Supreme Experts had ever heard in their entire lives! [My apprentice had to suffer so much because of these people... Ah. How should I make the deaths of the culprits more miserable when I send them to hell...]

[This damned Mo Clan dared to bully my treasured apprentice!] The eyes of both the Supreme Experts had turned red in anger...

Bu Liu Qing had straightaway indicated that he wouldn't even

spare the fowls and dogs of the Mo Clan!

However, it had made Mo Qing Wu jump in fright. [Eh, why did I speak so much...? Oh no... This is bad.] Then, she hastily pleaded and comforted him. In fact, she almost started to cry. However, the two Supreme Experts were unwilling to forgive the Mo Clan. One of them had become furious, and the other one was cussing while pointing towards the sky. One of them was rolling his sleeves for battle, and the other one was eager to get into action... as if preparing to have a hand-to-hand fight. [I will try my best to teach them a lesson... so that I would make an impression in front of my apprentice...]

Mo Qing Wu didn't wish to think about this. However, both of these Supremes were the most suitable persons for the title 'number-one in the world' at the end of the day. And, both of them had elegance in handling matters. They were obviously very angry right now. And, they even wanted to wipe out the whole Mo Clan. However, how could they show it so openly like some street rowdies?

Moreover, this concerned the life experience of a ten-year-old little girl. So, the two Supreme Experts only needed to say a few sentences, and they evoked the entirety of her grievances and tears out of her heart. The two extremely kind masters were surely digging deep for more details while comforting her... However, they also knew what they should say, and what they shouldn't...

They obviously made a clean breast of things. And, she shared everything with them.

Therefore, the two Supreme Experts were angry as well as cherishing the pleadings their apprentice offered in a soft voice. But, they were acting stubborn like spoiled brats nonetheless. However, they still felt happier than they had ever felt before...

...

Tragedy had also befallen Mo Tian Ji.

He had reorganized the entire Mo Clan using all his strength over the course of this time. He had eliminated every malpractice in the clan. And, he had also banished the elements that had been causing instability. He had used the Iron-Fist method, and had reorganized the clan very vigorously. And, he had also made good relations with various influential clans one by one. He had even activated economical passages with them. Moreover, he had harvested the channels which had been active at Mo Tian Yun's time.

However, he would simply eliminate them if he was unable to assimilate them.

He had used a thunder method. And, the Mo Clan's atmosphere had changed beyond recognition as a result!

Mo Clan had barely regained a little vitality today. However, it was about to welcome two super-experts after having faced the strong winds of late. Moreover, these two super-experts were coming over to settle an account!

A thunderclap resounded in the sky, "Mo Clan's people... get ready to die by my hands!"

Several of the buildings of the Mo Clan shook by these words, and collapsed with a bang...

Mo Tian Ji was greatly surprised. He endured that 'buzzing' sound in his ears. And, he came out from the inside to take a look. But, he only saw three people standing in the air. In fact, they seemed to be stuck there. Two of them wore wide robe with big sleeves. And, they were floating in the air like immortals. However, they had angry looks on their faces.

There was a very little figurine in the middle. She was dressed in red, and her cheeks were snow-white. It was his little sister — Mo Qing Wu.

He couldn't help but stare blankly...

[What's going on?]

Mo Tian Ji saw his little sister, and couldn't help but ask, "Little Wu, these people are..."

"Second Brother, these are my masters..." Mo Qing Wu signaled with her eyes.

Mo Tian Ji understood the meaning in an instant. [It seems like Little Wu's masters have come to vent the anger for their apprentice?] He couldn't help but force a smile. [It's impossible now...]

[I would've kept the culprits alive if I had known this earlier. And, I would've allowed her masters to vent their anger. But... it seems that only one culprit has remained here now. And, it is my own father...]

[But, who are these two? They seem fu*king awesome from their appearance...]

However, how could Ning Tian Ya be willing to pay attention to Mo Tian Ji's polite greetings? He had already readied his throat to call out, "Where is this bastard Mo Wu Xin? Where is that son of a bitch Mo Tian Yun? Where are they... all of you must come out! Have you grown that much hair on your balls? Are your brains rotten or what? You people dared to bully my apprentice! I won't leave until I kill three-hundred-and-sixty-six people!"

Bu Liu Qing held back the smile from appearing on his face. [This old guy is ready to commit all kinds of crimes to flatter our apprentice. He's very shameless. He has gone to such extremes that he's calling out to a bunch of meager Emperor Level Experts despite being a Supreme Expert...]

Mo Tian Ji's face turned dark.

"Um. Senior... these people... are already dead..."

"Dead...?" Bu Liu Qing became angry, "Who allowed them to die? I've come to vent my anger for my disciple. How can they die? How can those two disgraceful and senseless people die like that...?!"

Mo Tian Ji was rendered speechless.

[Do others need your permission to die?]

Both the Supreme Experts eventually calmed down after Mo Tian Ji's mediation and Mo Qing Wu's pleading. Then, the two of them came to the Mo Clan's courtyard, and drank tea while cursing.

Both the Supreme Experts were quite depressed since they hadn't been able to vent their anger. So, they called for Mo Xing Chen, and rebuked him firmly. They even pointed fingers at his forehead one by one. They came staggering over to him one by one, and spat on the face of this ex-clan lord of the Mo Clan.

Mo Xing Chen was in such a difficult situation that he couldn't bear it.

But, he came to know about the identity of these two masters. And, he was rendered so scared that he didn't know what to do. He was then taught a lesson and given a scolding. Then, he waved at them and the others, and went back in a daze.

[Good Gracious! Little Wu has two Supreme Experts as her masters... I, I, I... I will have a heart attack...]

"Where is my disciple's saber? Take it out! You snatched a little girl's play-toy of a saber in the name of your clan's future prospects? Do you have any respect towards the kids of your own clan? You stole the future of this child! What are you people looking at like foolish birds...? Do you want this old man to get angry? You people are very irritating!"

Ning Tian Ya roared like thunderclap. So, Mo Tian Ji personally went to his room, and brought the saber that he had kept safe for his little sister. In fact, Mo Tian Ji didn't try to defend himself even once using his eloquence during the courses of these events.

It was because both these Supreme Experts were enraged and self-involved. So, they weren't giving others any chance to speak out. Ning Tian Ya was raining curses, and Bu Liu Qing was

complaining. "What kind of tea are giving to us – your guests? This is so unpleasant to drink for this old man. You're lucky since you're the family member of my apprentice. Otherwise, I would have put you and your nine generations in this tea pot. I would've exterminated all of you... It's too cheap! It's too low-quality! It's too useless... How can someone possibly drink this?"

Mo Tian Ji almost vomited out blood. [This is our unique and unmatched 'Heavenly Secret' tea. The 'Heavenly Secret' tea is second to none if all kinds of tea in the Middle Three Heavens were to be ranked... No one can dare to say that theirs is the best. And, you're degrading it to such an extent...]

Bu Liu Qing and Ning Tian Ya had learnt that Mo Qing Wu cared about that saber very deeply. However, they hadn't given much importance to it. They had thought, [What kind of Heavenly Armament can be present here? It can be an attractive-looking sword at the most. And, that's why this little girl likes it.]

However, they immediately overthrew their previous opinion after they saw the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber'! These two old men had an experience of ten-thousand years. However, they thought for a while saw this saber, but could only describe it with the word 'perfect'. It gave off a dreamy vibe when slashed. It was as dazzling as a starry sky... it had a sharp edge that could cut iron like mud. In fact, the two Supreme Experts had exclaimed in astonishment when they saw it.

[It's not surprising that those dead pimps had snatched it. It is a very good item... Luckily, it's in the hands of my disciple now. Hmm, Mo Qing Wu and the saber are indeed meant for each other.] Mo Qing Wu held the blade that she cherished so much, and it seemed that she was unwilling to part with it. She was beaming with joy. And, both the Supreme Experts left relieved when they saw her like that.

The two Supreme Experts didn't stay for long. They took their leave after Mo Qing Wu had bid farewell to her mother and her

brother; she had seemed very reluctant to part with them. They then took the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' Saber from Mo Tian Ji's hands, and left while carrying Mo Qing Wu along with them.

Mo Xing Chen had imagined that the two Supreme Experts would give them a lot of good items... But, that didn't happen.

This could've happened, but the Mo Clan had been very unfair towards Mo Qing Wu. Therefore, it's prospects had vanished in thin air...

One of the elders had even taken an indirect approach, and had made a courageous mention about it. But, Ning Tian Ya had looked at him from the corner of his eyes, and had cussed in reply, "You should be glad that I'm not killing you people this time. But, you still want more benefits? You don't even have the guts of a mosquito! And, your Mo Clan is so shameless that this old man has seen such shameless people for the first time in my experience of more than ten-thousand years! You're so thick-skinned... you're rascals! This is the height of shamelessness! Your Mo Clan would be invincible if it ever faces upwards to the Upper Three Heavens. But, that's because you can block every attack by using your thick skin alone! In fact, it's fu*king calamitous... that I've even said so much to you pieces of garbage..."

He even spat out after he was done raining the curses. Then, both the Supreme Experts picked up their apprentice in their arms, and disappeared without trace.

The members of the Elders' Assembly of the Mo Clan madly vomited out blood.

The auras of the two Supreme Experts had kept them under pressure. So, it wouldn't have been good if they hadn't circulated their martial power. But, circulating their martial power for so long was even worse. Therefore, they all started to vomit out blood after the two Supreme Experts had left.

Everyone looked lifeless. They deeply regretted! They were

ashamed as well as regretful. [We had nothing to do with this...] They couldn't dare to bear grudge against Ning Tian Ya. So, they could only vent out their angers on the two devils – Mo Wu Xin and Mo Tian Yun... In fact, those two would've been eaten uncooked by everyone if they had been alive. [Our Mo Clan lost a very good opportunity to make a fortune because of you two bastards...]

....

Chapter 580: Who is Creating Chaos?

Mo Qing Wu and her masters had left. Only the crowd of Mo Clan was left behind. The Mo Clan's people looked at each other in dismay. They then heaved a sigh, and regretting that they had hit the wall!

[Dammit! Who would've had the balls to offend the Young Miss if we had known that she had such badass behind-the-scene supporters...? In fact, it would've been too fu*king late to get anything even if Mo Wu Xin and Mo Tian Yun were here...]

However, Mo Tian Ji's attitude was very steady as compared to the other people of the Mo Clan in terms of regret and sense of loss.

"Would you be able to preserve the good stuff if they had given you any?" Mo Tian Ji snorted, "How will we be able to survive if we rely on others? How will we be able to become formidable?"

"We only have to rely on ourselves!" Mo Tian Ji heavily said, "We only have to rely on ourselves!"

"Isn't it enough to only rely on ourselves?! Consider that Mo Clan is done for if you are only thinking about depending on Supreme Experts like that!"

Mo Tian Ji brushed his sleeves after he spoke the last words. And, he then turned and left abruptly towards the study room of the Clan Lord. Only a crowd of Elders who were sinking into contemplation was left behind.

Mo Tian Ji received news the next day. [The Ou Clan is making some move in secret these days. They are making close relations with other great clans...]

Mo Tian Ji instantly smelled a hint of conspiracy.

He had been well-known for his strong sense of scheming and trickery. His first reaction after learning about such news was – [Is

the Ou Clan planning to make a move? But, who is the target of this movement in the Ou Clan?]

Mo Tian Ji pondered for a while. And, he issued an order after he had reached a decision, "Investigate! Investigate what Ou Clan has been up to these days! With whom it is making contact? How is it making those contacts? The more detailed... the better!"

The Mo Clan's information network was set into action with full strength!

Many papers got stacked on Mo Tian Ji's desk in only one day's time!

"They are plotting against King of Hell Chu... thirty experts haven't returned yet?" Mo Tian Ji had only finished reading the first report when he was left to suck in the cold air with a 'hissing' sound. Then, he started to open the other papers. And, he became increasingly astonished as he continued to look further.

Then, he closed his eyes and started to ponder. He gently tapped his thigh with his fingers...

"Gao clan? Black Devil Clan? Tian Clan? Tu Clan? Meng Clan? Zhao Clan? Li Clan? It seems like Ou Clan wants to deal with this matter right now? Or are they... giving rise to chaos to safeguard themselves?"

Mo Tian Ji stood up, and started to pace back and forth in the room. Then, he tightly wrinkled his brows, "However, there is a possibility that our strength would be weakened after this chaos... Especially, because the Black Devil Clan and the Meng Clan are involved. So, it would be impossible for our Mo Clan to stay out of this. We should take the initiative to attack instead of taking a passive defensive stance...

"We would want to start the chaos first if a chaotic situation has to develop..." Mo Tian Ji quietly and carefully analyzed the relative strength of both parties. He had been continuously formulating a

plan in his mind. And, his mind had filled with schemes and calculation in an instant.

"Guards, come in!" A light flashed in Mo Tian Ji's eyes after fifteen minutes. He had made a decision.

Two bodyguards of the clan came in, "What instructions does the Clan Lord have for us?"

"I will write a few letters. You have them delivered!" Mo Tian Ji started to write the letters as he solemnly stated, "Deliver them to Luo Clan, Ji Clan, and Dong Clan..."

"There would be a meeting in the Mo Clan seven days later, and I'm inviting every young master. This matter is very urgent!"

Mo Tian Ji finished the letters at one stroke. Then, he saw a few people going out. After that, the sounds of horses' hooves came from outside and gradually faded into the distance.

He returned to his room. He was still frowning.

A long time passed like this. He then finally held a pen in his hand, and wrote another letter. He personally folded it properly, and called out for a man. Then, he ordered while handing it over to the man, "Deliver this letter to the Ao Clan as quickly as possible! Deliver it to the Clan Lord of Ao Clan with your own hands if you don't find Young Master Xie Yun."

"Yes."

Mo Tian Ji again muttered to himself for a while after this man had walked away. However, he still felt not too secure. So, he again took up his pen, and started to pour out the words of his mind onto a letter. "This letter is for Dark Bamboo. I must prepare this in advance even if there's no conflict later..."

Then, Mo Tian Ji gathered the experts of the Mo Clan, and set them up one by one in one go. The person in-charge for the financial resources of the clan was called by Mo Tian Ji after the setting up of the experts had been done. He had done this so that

all the dispersed forces of the Mo Clan would be unified in the same place. And, this would allow them to become stronger like a clenched fist.

[The revenue generated from the business transactions in each shop, and each warehouse owned by the Mo Clan shall be collected in the headquarters on the same day from this day onwards. It must not be delayed!]

All the arrangements had been finished within a short while.

"The Ou Clan... wants to create chaos. How can we let it happen so easily? This young master will show them what it's like to cause real trouble..." Mo Tian Ji stood in front of the courtyard with his hands clasped behind. He had exposed a gentle and faint smile on his face.

"You want to play tricks before the eyes of this young master... So, I will make you see how such tricks should be played..."

...

Seven days later...

Luo Ke Wu, Dong Wu Lei, Ji Zhu, Xie Dan Xiong as well as a minister of the Gu Clan had arrived at the Mo Clan. Moreover, everyone had come very quickly!

What Mo Tian Ji had written in the letters was too serious!

Xie Dan Qiong had arranged a flying spirit beast after spending a lot of money. And, that's how he had been able to rush over so quickly.

"Brother Mo, what's the matter?" Dong Wu Lei asked, "We felt that the matter is very serious after we read what you had written in the letter... In fact, it seemed as if our clans are going to be exterminated or something...?"

Dong Wu Lei seemed to be complaining. After all, he had come from a bit too afar. But, he had reached here quite early. After all,

this guy had jumped up in fright after he had seen Mo Tian Ji's letter. So, he instantly dropped everything, and had rushed over. He had mounted on two fine horses. In fact, his thighs had also been covered with bloody blisters due to the friction.

"And, let me tell you... I was still sleeping when I received your letter..." Ji Zhu rolled his eyes. He looked at Mo Tian Ji with a somewhat displeased look, "I got scared. I had to break off my beautiful dream and rush over. Younger cousin, you have overdone it this time."

Ji Zhu was older than Mo Tian Ji. So, he addressed him as 'younger cousin'. But, he had never dared to look down on this 'younger cousin'. In fact, he admired him very much.

Luo Ke Wu was somewhat embarrassed. After all, his Luo Clan used to have enmity with the Mo Clan in the past. They had made Mo Tian Ji eat too many losses. But, he didn't dare to neglect Mo Tian Ji this time. It was because he deep down knew that the matter must've been very important if Mo Tian Ji had said so...

"How can I dare to deceive the young masters of great clans..." Mo Tian Ji said jokingly at first. But, his expression then turned serious. And, he sternly said, "I'm afraid our clans will vanish in a puff of smoke if this matter isn't handled properly. So, we have to deal with it now! These aren't mere frightening words meant to scare you alone!"

"Huh?! Is it that serious?" Various young masters of great clans turned pale in fright. They then became serious as well.

These few words from Mo Tian Ji had allowed everyone to pay strong attention to him. So, Mo Tian Ji heaved a deep sigh and said, "Let me tell you that this matter doesn't involve my Mo Clan in a direct manner. This matter has been brought upon by your brothers. But, it also makes Mo Clan get involved in this. So, I don't have a choice!"

Mo Tian Ji had meant – [This is your business. But, it will cause

trouble to our Mo Clan. But, I will clear up your mess... So, you people should appreciate the kindness.]

Dong Wu Lei leapt up, "Wu Shang? Did something happen to him?"

Dong Wu Lei always felt that Dong Wu Shang had been growing stronger and stronger this past year. He had now gained the potential to easily accomplish things. And, there was no one who could match him in the younger generation across the entire Middle Three Heavens. So, he was the most powerful candidate for the clan lord's position.

Dong Wu Lei had spent countless of nights in worry. He even felt that this younger brother was a big threat to his own ambitions!

Dong Wu Lei even had made some family decisions that were directed against Dong Wu Shang. He had continuously tried to trim down his influence. In fact, he had secretly played small tricks against him. In fact, he didn't even know how many he had played by now...

But, he felt a kind of crunch in his heart when he thought that something might have happened to Dong Wu Shang. A kind of deep and unendurable concern had arisen in his heart. He felt as if his heart had been clutched tightly.

However, he realized that he had lost self-control after he had spoken out these words. So, he sat down embarrassedly. He then secretly sighed in his heart. [He is a threat. But, he is my own flesh and blood... this feeling still moves my heart. It is hard to discard. I can't let it go...]

"There has been no accident. But, they've created a huge trouble." Mo Tian Ji gave a meaningful look to Dong Wu Lei and smiled. Then, he said, "Everybody, please come with me."

He then led everyone into his study room after he said this. He then instructed that no one was allowed to come in even if the sky

came crashing down!

Those few eldest young masters felt heavy in their hearts when they saw Mo Tian Ji being so cautious. [It seems that the matter is very grave.]

Everyone entered the study, and found that a huge map was hung on the wall opposite to the door!

Not too many labels were marked on this map. However, there were many red arrows on it.

"Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, and Chu Yang — these five were heading on the road to the Northern Wilderness. They happened to have a conflict with the Ou Clan! So, they beheaded five Emperor Level Experts and thirty King Level Experts of the Ou Clan!"

Mo Tian Ji's tone was solemn. But, he didn't mention that his younger sister was also with them.

[Beheaded five Emperor Level Experts?]

[And, thirty King Level Experts?]

Dong Wu Lei and Luo Ke Wu sucked in cold air! Ji Zhu was spread out on the chair like mud, but he also fiercely stood up at this moment. That minister of the Gu Clan was a King Level Expert, but his eyes became like little bells. This was too shocking for him.

Xie Dan Qiong suddenly opened his eyes wide. Then, bean-sized beads of sweat seeped out from his forehead.

He had obviously heard about this matter. But, he had only heard that many King Level Experts of the Ou Clan had died. He didn't know that five Emperor Level Experts had also died.

Xie Dan Qiong only felt glad in his heart at this moment.

He had obviously understood the reason... and, better than anyone else. It was because Ou Du Xiao had reached an agreement

with him that Chu Yang would first go to the Xie Clan, and then to the Ou Clan. So, this matter had spread out after Chu Yang had left the Xie Clan.

Xie Dan Qiong carefully thought, [The Ou Clan probably wants to double cross. They want to incite rebound against Chu Yang and the others!]

[Luckily, my clan wasn't blinded by the greed. We didn't sell our souls for gains. Instead, we sincerely made friends with them. I'm afraid my Xie Clan would've been done for if we had also suffered such a loss...]

"The Ou Clan's strength has greatly reduced after sustaining such a great blow! Meanwhile, they've grown firm hatred towards Gu Du Xing and the others!"

Mo Tian Ji picked up a pen, and marked the Ou Clan's position on the map.

He then solemnly said, "Therefore, the Ou Clan is afraid of taking revenge from Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others. Moreover, it is also afraid that Gu Clan, Dong Clan, Luo Clan, and the other clans will join hands to deal with it. Therefore, the Ou Clan has started to establish big contacts in order to protect itself. The Ou Clan wants to throw the situation in chaos. Meanwhile, it is sparing no opportunity to strengthen itself."

Mo Tian Ji gradually started to discuss the problem. Everyone present there straightened their bodies, opened their eyes wide, and erected their ears.

"The Ou Clan is making contacts with several clans one by one." Mo Tian Ji pointed out on the first arrow with a small wooden stick. "The first is Gao Clan. Ji Zhu, you must be clear about the reason."

Ji Zhu's nose was covered in sweat.

How could he not understand? After all, his younger brother Ji

Mo had snatched the fiancée of the Gao Clan's young clan lord... So, it would be too bizarre if he said that he didn't know the reason...

...

Chapter 581: Tian Ji's Strategy!

The thin wooden stick was pointed at the second red arrowhead. Mo Tian Ji's voice was calm and composed, "The Li Clan would be the second ally of the Ou Clan. Young Master Xie, I think you understand the purpose of Ou Clan making relations with this clan."

Xie Dan Qiong awkwardly coughed. His face had turned somewhat red as he said, "You know it. What else do I need to add?"

Everyone looked at him curiously. They didn't know what was making this Jasper Flower worry...

Mo Tian Ji gently said, "Brother Xie, we need to understand these clans' mindsets towards their respective enemy clans. That would allow us to have a better understanding of the present circumstances. So, it would be better if you personally explain it to everyone."

Xie Dan Qiong's face flushed. He then faintly recalled the events of the past, and angrily said, "The hatred between my clan and Li Clan was developed back when I had turned seventeen and reached marriageable age. I had accidently met the Young Lady of Li Clan – Li Meng. This name 'Li Meng' is pleasant to hear. But, she was unpleasant to look at. Um, she couldn't be considered too ugly. But, she was blind in one eye. I had heard she was stabbed..."

"This Li Meng... started liking me after we met," Anger dawned upon Xie Dan Qiong's feminine face, "The Li Clan visited my home after I returned, and proposed for an alliance by marriage. But, how could I agree for such a marriage? I'm not very good-looking... but, how could I let the future Clan Lady be a one-eyed person?"

"Ha ha ha..." Ji Zhu, Dong Wu Lei, and Luo Ke Wu swayed to-and-fro as they laughed hard. Mo Tian Ji was usually tranquil and carefree. However, he also faintly smiled.

Ji Zhu said while laughing aloud, "Brother Xie, perhaps she could've been a charming person on the inside even though she was one-eyed. You never know..."

The laughter became louder as he said this.

Xie Dan Qion's face flushed. He became extremely angry. He spared no effort in cussing, "Fu*k off! Don't act like you know this, Ji Zhu?" [What does he mean by this so-called charming on the inside... ahm ahm ahm... humph.]

Xie Dan Qiong scolded at first. Then, he calmed down and further said, "Therefore, I categorically declined. But, this Li Meng and her younger brother Li Hu took advantage of me going out. They wanted to capture me and strong-arm me into marriage..."

"Wa ha ha ha..." Ji Zhu started laughing uncontrollably while jerking his hands and feet. "Brother Xie's charm is indeed infinite. Hmm... So what did you do... to prevent... Li Hu from gift-wrapping you for that woman...?"

Laughter echoed in Mo Tian Ji's study room as soon as this remark was made.

Xie Dan Qiong's face turned pale in anger. He retorted, "Ji Zhu! You bastard!"

"Go on, go on... continue speaking. You don't need to pay him any heed. Ha ha..." Luo Ke Wu had been sipping tea. He had spurted it out due to his laughter. So, there was tea everywhere. But, he still urged Xie Dan Qiong to continue.

Xie Dan Qiong hatefully looked at Ji Zhu and said, "Then finally, I... I half-intentionally and half by mistake... killed both the sister and her younger brother... Therefore, we became enemies. It can be said that Li Clan and my Xie Clan are mortal enemies..."

Nobody laughed after he said this. They had obviously understood the gravity of the matter.

Indeed, it was unlikely to breed any enmity and hatred if he had

killed any ordinary person. But, he had killed the daughter and son of the Clan Lord... This hatred was so deep-seated that it couldn't be resolved!

"I assume that everyone has understood. The Li Clan will fight to death if they attack." Mo Tian Ji smiled. He then concluded, "Any clan that stands with the Xie Clan will make a mortal enemy out of the Li Clan! Both sides will keep quiet unless they've moved into action. But, there's no doubt of a 'you die or I die' situation if there's a battle!"

The Eldest Young Masters slowly nodded. The Gu Clan's minister was sweating while he was busy taking notes.

"The Ou Clan's third target will be to make relations with the Tian Clan. Brother Dong, you aren't unfamiliar with the Tian Clan, right?" Mo Tian Ji looked at Dong Wu Lei.

Dong Wu Lei's complexion sank. He wasn't merely familiar with them. After all, the Dong Clan and Tian Clan harbored such a deep enmity that it couldn't be resolved in several lifetimes. They would deadly battles every time they'd meet.

Dong Clan had Dong Wu Shang in this generation. But, a similarly matchless talent had appeared in Tian Clan as well – Tian Bu Hui! He was known as 'Heaven Can't Compare or Tian Bu Ru'!

It means that even Heavens weren't comparable to him.

So, one could well-imagine the strength and domineer of this person!

[It is needless to mention that the Tian Clan will fight to the death if they enter this fray!] Dong Wu Lei's countenance had become ugly.

"The fourth clan that Ou Clan will want to make relations with is the Zhao Clan." Mo Tian Ji smiled and looked at Luo Ke Wu. Eldest Young Master Luo's complexion suddenly turned ugly, "Brother Luo, the Luo Clan has kept the Zhao Clan suppressed for more than

two-hundred years if this little brother of yours remembers things correctly..."

Luo Ke Wu coldly snorted.

Mo Tian Ji politely smiled, "My Mo Clan and Zhao Clan would've already become allies if the distance between our clans hadn't been this great. Even more so because our clan is far away from the Luo Clan..."

Luo Ke Wu's complexion became even uglier.

Luo Clan and Mo Clan didn't have peaceful relations in the past. In fact, they had been shouting 'kill' at each other every day for dozens of years. The relations had improved a bit only recently...

"The Ou Clan will also have relations with one more clan... And, that is the Tu Clan!" Mo Tian Ji sighed, "Gu Du Xing defeated and changed Tu Qian Hao beyond recognition; and, that too in front of the world's heroes. Such kind of hatred... is no less than the hatred of getting one's father killed..."

The fingers of that Gu Clan minister trembled. And, a big blot was smeared on the paper by the pen he held.

"Your clans will have to reap what you have sown." Mo Tian Ji seemed very depressed as he sighed, "But, the most troublesome and intolerable thing is that our Mo Clan has nothing to do with any of this. And yet, this goddamn Ou Clan is making relations with the Black Devil Clan!"

Dong Wu Lei, Ji Zhu, Luo Ke Wu and Xie Dan Qiong broke into a schadenfreude-like smile when they heard this. [No wonder you have come looking for us in such a hurry. So, your Mo Clan is also involved in this mess.]

However, it was a great relief for them at the same time. [Mo Tian Ji can't stay out of this since Mo Clan is also involved. So, we will have Mo Tian Ji's plans and schemes on our side... And, that will be the greatest help.]

Mo Tian Ji had brought them on the same page in a matter of a few sentences. Moreover, he had highlighted his position to be prominent and independent. Mo Clan had become weak very recently, and should be pleading others for help. However, his speech had made Mo Clan an entity worth to come pleading to.

"Moreover... the Ou Clan had also contacted the Meng Clan." Mo Tian Ji forced a smile.

Everyone present there emitted radiance from their eyes.

Meng Luo's 'Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique' was a thorn in everyone's heart. Therefore, everyone rolled up their sleeves for battle after they heard that Meng Clan was also participating in this alliance.

"We will certainly face unprecedented severe consequences once the Ou Clan successfully makes these connections..." Mo Tian Ji had instigated the hearts of these Eldest Young Masters with this demonstration. So, Mo Tian Ji now threw out his main objective, "If Ou Clan, Tu Clan, Tian Clan, Meng Clan, Black Devil, Zhao Clan, and Li Clan... form an alliance to deal with any one of our clans..."

Mo Tian Ji deeply looked Xie Dan Qiong in the eye, "Even your formidable Xie Clan... will break down in one strike! You won't be left with the slightest of luck on your side!"

Xie Dan Qiong's complexion became deathly white. It was because... the Xie Clan was located nearest to the Ou Clan!

"Our clans will get wiped out from the Middle Three Heavens if we give them the opportunity to strike us one by one!" Mo Tian Ji's voice was cold and deep. He looked at the faces of Dong Wu Lei, Luo Ke Wu, and Ji Zhu one by one.

Everyone's faces became serious. Their gazes flickered. And, a killing intention was slowly forming in their eyes. The atmosphere of the study room had suddenly become stifling and heavy.

Everyone knew that Mo Tian Ji's words wouldn't be an exaggeration if this matter were to really happen! How could a single clan withstand the union of seven great clans?

Mo Tian Ji softly chuckled, "I am not very interested to be a part of this mess. However, I will have no choice but to join-in if the Black Devil Clan joins that alliance. It would no longer matter whether I am willing to meddle in it or not. So, we're on the same boat now!"

[That's right. You guys have enmity with them. Our Mo Clan is being dragged in without having any enmity with anyone. What do you guys think about this?]

[Who can think of staying out of it? Who would dare to stay out of it?]

A light flashed in Dong Wu Lei's eyes. He slowly stood up and looked at everyone. Then, he said in a serious voice, "Brother Mo is right. This is indeed a very big crisis. I'm afraid we will be exterminated if we don't work together!"

The tone of Dong Wu Lei's voice was serious. He extended his hand and raised it upwards. He then said, "My Dong Clan is the first to recognize the status of our association! Whoever wants to acknowledge me as their ally may please put your hand forward!"

Xie Dan Qiong put his hand forward without hesitation.

Then, Luo Ke Wu also put forward his hand. The minister of the Gu Clan hesitated a little at first. He then said, "I am willing to represent the Gu Clan, and agree to become an ally. However, I would need to go back and report to the Clan Lord as far as the concrete position of the clan is concerned."

He put his hand forward while saying this.

Ji Zhu remained silent for a while. He threw a meaningful look at Mo Tian Ji. Then, he put his hand on others' hands with a 'thump' sound.

Mo Tian Ji smiled. He extended his hands to gently hold that group of hands, and said, "Let's discuss and plan out our next step."

Mo Tian Ji's words had amplified this matter of life and death, and had touched the hearts of these young masters of the aristocratic clans. The clans that were earlier in a state of disunity were now firmly tied together.

Moreover, it was the strongest type of bond!

Everyone laughed out loud. They then sat down one after another. The unfamiliar feeling and discomfort that had been among them in the beginning had disappeared without a trace.

"I think I should have the right to speak since our next step is to plan and make arrangements," Luo Ke Wu forced a smile and said, "I didn't have friendly relations with Young Master Mo Tian Ji a few years ago. To be honest, I am very embarrassed! I – Luo Ke Wu – could never occupy the winning side no matter what plans I made... or how much I considered my arrangements!"

"I've been nearly killed and nearly captured by the hands of Young Master Mo many a times..." Luo Ke Wu laughed in self-ridicule. Then, he pointed at himself, "I don't wish to hide this from anybody. So, let me tell you... I have ten scars on my body. And, nine of them have been given by this fellow Mo Tian Ji."

Everyone laughed out loud.

Luo Ke Wu then said, "Brother Mo's name as 'Master of Calculation and Manipulation' resounds through the whole world. So, I believe that the director of our association should be none other than Young Master Tian Ji in this matter."

"That's right. My younger cousin is very wicked when it comes to scheming. I haven't been benefited once by his brilliance since childhood." Ji Zhu mischievously laughed.

Ji Zhu's mother was the first wife of the Ji Clan's Clan Lord. And, Mo Tian Ji's paternal aunt had been madly in love with the clan

lord of the Ji Clan back then. She had married him even though she had to become his small concubine. Then, she had given birth to Ji Mo. Ji Zhu couldn't call Mo Tian Ji his 'younger cousin' by normal standards. But, he had always considered Ji Mo his blood brother. In fact, they had treated each other as if they had the same mother. Therefore, Ji Zhu also acknowledged Mo Tian Ji as his 'younger cousin' along with his younger brother.

Xie Dan Qiong and Dong Wu Lei looked at each other. They had no objection.

Mo Tian Ji smiled and said, "This proposal is improper!"

...

Chapter 582: The Terrifying Master of Calculation and Manipulation!

Everyone was startled by this, "Why is it improper? Do you think that there is someone craftier than you among the people present here?"

"I can act as a trusted advisor at the most. Planning the strategies, determining victory over the vast battlefield, analyzing the enemy's plot, and quietly carrying out counter strategies... I can do these things. I am obligated to do so!"

Mo Tian Ji said with a smile, "However, I'm not cut for being the decision-maker and battle commander. Instead, I have some other man in mind for that role!"

He paused for a while, and further said, "Every man among us has enough leadership abilities. Moreover, we all have great capability if we talk about controlling ordinary situations. But, we are not as good as that one person I have in mind. Therefore, the most I can do is offer advice until that person arrives. Then, we will cause a commotion, and make our enemy tired of constantly running for their lives. This would be good."

"That person? Who is it...?" everyone asked in unison. [This is strange. Does such a person exist who even Mo Tian Ji admits being inferior to? How can there be such a mystery man?]

"That person's strength once made everything turn on its head in the entire Lower Three Heavens when he was merely a Martial Master! He once led the Iron Cloud Nation at a time when it was on the verge of being destroyed. But, his matchless wisdom and planning even left Diwu Qing Ruo's formidable military strength to suffer a crashing defeat... Also, this man has been bringing drastic changes in the Middle Three Heavens ever since he has arrived here. In fact, he has changed the state of Middle Three Heavens without outside help..."

"King of Hell Chu!" Mo Tian Ji hadn't said his name. But, everyone else called out this man's name at the same time by chance.

"Yes, it's him." Mo Tian Ji slightly sighed. "I can't admire the wisdom and planning skills of King of Hell Chu enough. His calmness leaves me to see only the dust as he rides ahead. And, I feel that I have no hope of catching up!"

He gently sighed and continued, "Each one of us can command an army. But, it will still be impossible for us to get through it when it comes to commanding at the front line and seeking ways out of an impasse when death is fast approaching... And, this is when even our thinking is clear! But, King of Hell Chu has done these many things without breaking a sweat."

"Calm...?" Luo Ke Wu couldn't help but smile as he said, "Brother Mo, when did King of Hell Chu display his calmness? How come I haven't heard this?"

Mo Tian Ji smiled, "Would you have been able to achieve all the things that King of Hell Chu accomplished if you were in his place when he had barely arrived at the Iron Cloud?"

"Umm... No." Luo Ke Wu honestly admitted. Iron Cloud's reversal had indeed been a miracle!

"He turned defeat into victory under an entirely disadvantageous situation. And, he did it bit by bit. Can someone achieve it without being calm?" Mo Tian Ji very lightly asked. Then, he gently smiled, "I can ask myself honestly. Well, I couldn't have achieved those things if I were in King of Hell Chu's place."

"Indeed! King of Hell Chu's composure is out of reach for an ordinary person!" Xie Dan Qiong recalled Chu Yang's performance in the Xie Clan. He couldn't help but blush with shame. He thought, [Motherfucker! He out-drank my entire clan alone, and still didn't get drunk... I'm afraid there's no man on this earth who deserves to be called 'calm' if he isn't...]

"That's right." Dong Wu Lei quickly nodded. Luo Ke Wu also nodded. Both of them had seen Chu Yang. Moreover, their brothers had been following Chu Yang, and had been journeying with him. Even they could've never tamed their brothers like Chu Yang had done...

"Moreover, we lack a few strong commanders! Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang would deserve to be at those positions!" Mo Tian Ji confidently smiled and said, "We can at most bring it to a draw if we firmly join our powers right now. Any victory would only be a tragic one. And, we would lose the ability to have hegemony in the Middle Three Heavens. But, the situation would be entirely different when Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and the others would return..."

"You want to rely on those five people?" Dong Wu Lei somewhat snorted disdainfully. [King of Hell Chu can be considered an important player. But, it is somewhat excessive that Mo Tian Ji is looking so highly on those five.]

"Yes, that's right. We must rely on those five!" Mo Tian Ji faintly smiled. He squinted a little bit and said, "Brother Dong, those five have killed five Emperor Level Experts and thirty King Level Experts at once... could we do it if we were at the place of those five?"

"God knows what crafty schemes or tricks they must have used..." Dong Wu Lei muttered.

"That's right! They must've used some crafty schemes and tricks! But..." Mo Tian Ji heavily said, "I could never think of such crafty schemes and tricks. Knowing such kind of crafty schemes and conspiracies is one kind of strength in the Middle Three Heavens! After all, even Emperor Level Experts can be killed with such schemes. Not to mention that we would have more chances of dying if we encounter these tricks!"

"Knowledge of schemes is the supreme strength of a military

force!" Mo Tian Ji insipidly said.

Everyone silently pondered over it.

Xie Dan Qiong gave this a serious thought. He carefully sorted out the pros-and-cons of both the sides. However, he increasingly felt that there was something wrong. So, he said, "Brother Mo, this matter doesn't seem to be as simple as it looks like from the outside. The Ou Clan has formed alliance with so many other clans. They shouldn't have done it to aim at us alone, right?"

"Brother Xie is indeed brilliant." Mo Tian Ji slightly smiled.

He took two steps. Then, he slowly said while thinking, "Ou Du Xiao owed a large amount in gambling debt after the contest of Mt. Dingjun... I calculated back then..."

Everyone looked at Xie Dan Qiong with a strange vision. And, Xie Dan Qiong's face flushed with shame! After all, it wasn't just Ou Du Xiao who had owed a large amount in gambling debt...

"Let's assume that I'm the Ou Clan's Clan Lord. The first thing I would want to do after I hear that such a God of Wealth — pay off the gambling debt to protect the clan's reputation. Secondly, I would think of killing the man, and seizing his wealth!"

Mo Tian Ji placed himself in the position of Ou Clan's Clan Lord. And, he slowly started to explain as everybody bent an ear to listen.

"Now, King of Hell Chu returns from the tour to Xie Clan. And, I suddenly discover that King of Hell Chu's financial abilities are at a shocking degree. Therefore, I can't help but become excited. How strong would my Ou Clan become if I secretly killed King of Hell Chu? Moreover, King of Hell Chu is only a King Level Expert. And, I have heard that there's no Emperor Level Expert in their team. But, we have more than one in our Ou Clan. So, wouldn't we become secretly rich as long as no one came to know about it?"

Mo Tian Ji continued to analyze, "...besides, he wasn't even

guarded when he entered the Xie Clan. Would he be guarded when he enters my Ou Clan? So, how would things not go my way once they've entered?"

Xie Dan Qing and the others secretly nodded. Mo Tian Ji was analyzing Ou Cheng Wu's way of thinking, and it was absolutely accurate. The fact is that things had started to deviate from this point onwards.

"Therefore, I start to plan the deployment after they arrive. But then, I find that the opposite party has taken precautionary measures, and only one person has come. So, I think of eliminating them at one stroke. Therefore, we will eliminate all of them in one fell swoop once Chu Yang joins the others after leaving from the clan. This requires intelligence, and a few experts to follow their tracks. Therefore, I must send people I trust, and we will definitely track them down.

"But, I mustn't send too many people. After all, I'm afraid my targets won't reunite if they figured out my plan. Moreover, they will take different roads in that case. And, my Ou Clan wouldn't be able to get to all of them if that happens. Therefore, I will only send one Emperor Level Expert to track them down... Two Emperor Level Experts at the most!"

Mo Tian Ji spoke till here, and smiled. Then, he continued, "It would be impossible to kill five Emperor Level Experts in one go with the cultivation of King Level even if you use crafty schemes and tricks. Therefore, one would need to strike them one by one. And, Chu Yang must've first killed the Emperor Level Expert who was following their tracks! There may have been two Emperor Level Experts as well. However, there couldn't have been three or more Emperor Level Experts in the tracking team. After all, I wouldn't have sent three or more Emperor Level Experts to follow someone's tracks. I would only have sent such a powerful team to exterminate them with a single thunderous strike!"

Chu Yang would've prostrated himself in admiration if he were

present here...

Mo Tian Ji's calculations had been correct... whether it came to the thought process of Ou Clan's Clan Lord... or about the course of events.

"Then, I receive the intelligence report, and my large military troop proceeds towards them. I must use the thunder method, and I must eliminate the future trouble at one fell swoop. But, I then get to know that the experts I had sent have been defeated. So, I immediately realize that I have attracted a huge trouble. Moreover, my Ou Clan has lost so many experts. So, it would be an imminently dangerous situation if I were to face the retaliation of these many enemy aristocratic clans...!

"I want to protect myself under such circumstances. So, I will have to make alliance with other powerful clans. Therefore, I will aim at these family juniors who are involved in this, and create a fuss with the opponents of Gu Clan, Luo Clan, Dong Clan, and Ji Clan. Moreover, King of Hell Chu has just formed an alliance with the Xie Clan. So, Xie Clan is also an enemy now. And, I will make connections with the Li Clan to deal with that threat. Besides, the Black Devil Clan always seeks nothing but profit. So, it will also be of a good use. Moreover, the Meng Clan is powerless to defend itself at this time. So, I will also give the Meng Clan a helping hand, and they would eagerly catch this opportunity! And, I will stir up hatred in these clans as long as they accept the proposal of alliance and reach to a common understanding. And, I will accomplish the goal of saving my clan from danger in this manner!"

Mo Tian Ji spoke till here, and stopped.

Xie Dan Qiong, Dong Wu Lei, and Luo Ke Wu discussed in whispers. Ji Zhu also changed his sloppy posture, and emitted sharp lights from his eyes as he calmly listened to the others with rapt attention.

"But... my mentality suddenly changes after I've reached this situation!" Mo Tian Ji's voice suddenly became serious, "I've united these clans. But, I've suddenly realized that my present strength is going to skyrocket very shortly! Moreover, the Ou Clan is weak at present. Moreover, there's an additional danger of being annexed inside this alliance. Therefore, I will provoke a dispute, and I will initiate an attack on Gu Clan, Xie Clan, Dong Clan, and the other clans!

"It's because I will be able to build dominance in the Middle Three Heavens after I've attaining the strength! And, our Ou Clan will take advantage of the situation in case these several clans get destroyed. We can even restore our strength if that happens. In fact, we will become stronger! This is a heaven-sent opportunity!"

Mo Tian Ji stopped for a while after he had spoken till here. Then, he thought a little and said, "This ought to be the mentality of the Ou Clan's Clan Lord..." He wrinkled his brows, and firmly said, "It shouldn't be wrong!"

It must be said that Mo Tian Ji had simply gone into Ou Cheng Wu's mind. In fact, it seemed as if he had seen all the veins and the insides of Ou Cheng Wu very clearly...

Xie Dan Qiong and Dong Wu Lei frowned as they pondered.

Ji Zhu habitually raised his leg, and started to scratch his foot. Then, he lazily said, "This should be correct. They become greedy at first. Then, they become regretful, and then scared. Then, they will increase their strength after they've made the connection. Then, they will bring-about their wild scheme... this seems quite normal. Tian Ji's theory should be accurate!"

Everyone nodded one after another. Everyone felt this to be logical. They were about to praise, but they suddenly smelled a hard-to-describe stench...

Even a mouse would be poisoned if it were to smell such an odor...

Everyone turned their head, and became angry. It turned out that Ji Zhu had taken off his shoe, and was scratching his feet. He continued to pick it for a while. Then, he drew it near to his nose, and sniffed it...

These people were obviously fond of cleanliness. So, they almost vomited at the sight of it...

"Fu*k! You bastard! Quickly wear your shoes!"

"Get out!"

...

A shout and a 'bang' were heard. Ji Zhu didn't know who kicked him and sent him flying out...

He came back in after a long while. However, he was covered in dirt.

Mo Tian Ji stopped smiling and said, "However, this isn't enough to bring chaos in the world! Therefore, the Ou Clan and the other clans will certainly use an additional trick... it would be a follow-up trick. And hence, it will be more deadly..."

"What kind of a trick?" everyone asked in unison. These five had already begun to admire and adulate Mo Tian Ji's conjectures!

...

Chapter 583: Wouldn't It Be Quick?!

"The Ou Clan wants to seize this opportunity to rise quickly! However, the first concern is the Ao Clan. Everyone knows that the Ao Clan is the number-one clan in the entire Middle Three Heavens!" Mo Tian Ji subtly said, "Ao Clan is a colossus! Ao Clan is impossible to move. No one can dare to say that it can be replaced!

"Therefore, the Ao Clan is certainly a part of the Ou Clan's plan." Mo Tian Ji's eyes flickered. Then, he thought in his heart. [How would I sink the Ao Clan if I were an ally of the Ou Clan?]

"Then, there's Dark Bamboo as well!" Dong Wu Lei puckered his brows.

"Dark Bamboo... the Ou Clan can at most exploit coincidences. The rise and fall of the great clans of Middle Three Heavens doesn't matter to the Bamboo's people. Moreover, Jun Xi Zhu has always been unreasonable. So, the Ou Clan won't have the guts to exploit the Dark Bamboo." Mo Tian Ji shook his head and said, "Ou Clan and Dark Bamboo can never be placed on a par. So, the most critical element is the Ao Clan!"

"Ao Clan..." Everyone looked pensive.

"Ao Clan has consistently been a millennium aristocratic clan. It is unquestionably the number-one clan! More and more heroes and geniuses have emerged in the Ao Clan generation after generation. And, Ao Clan has abundance of geniuses in our generation as well! Ao Xie Yun seems to be the only core of the clan in the younger generation. But, there are several dozens of youngsters in the Ao Clan who can't be underestimated."

Mo Tian Ji thought for a while, and then said, "Ao Xie Yun is spearheading the Ao Clan's strength at present. This is the ground Ao Xie Yun has been setting to be the next clan lord.

"Therefore, the Ou Clan will have to start with Ao Xie Yun if they

want to pull the Ao Clan into this mess!"

Mo Tian Ji began to sound increasingly reasonable as he continued to talk, "But, Ao Xie Yun is extremely intelligent and clever. His wisdom is no less than mine. His military strength is no less than those of Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang's. His actions are careful, and without any loopholes. Therefore, it would be useless if the Ou Clan openly and blatantly puts forth the alliance invitation towards Ao Xie Yun. After all, Ao Xie Yun won't join their group at any cost!

"Therefore, the Ou Clan only have one way if they want the Ao Clan to be involve in this mess," Mo Tian Ji's voice slowly became heavy.

"Ao Xie Yun's assassination?" The others got scared out of their wits. They felt a chill in their entire bodies.

"That's right. The Ao Clan will surely fly into a rage if Ao Xie Yun dies! And, the Ao Clan would certainly render revenge against whoever kills Ao Xie Yun!"

Mo Tian Ji thought for a while and said, "This would be a big risk, but this is the only effective method to push the Middle Three Heavens into chaos in one fell swoop!"

Everyone remained silent!

"Brother Xie, you must be careful. I'm afraid that you will fall in danger in case Ao Xie Yun meets a mishap!" Mo Tian Ji said to Xie Dan Qiong in a serious tone.

"Why me?" Xie Dan Qiong was stunned by this.

"I don't have the skill to pull it off. The Dong Clan is too easy to read. Gu Du Xing of Gu Clan isn't present here. Luo Clan doesn't have the ability. Ji Mo isn't here when it comes to the Ji Clan. And, there's no point in talking about killing Ao Xie Yun when it comes to Ji Zhu. Perhaps this guy will be too lazy to kill Ao Xie Yun even if Young Master Ao extended his neck and put it on his blade..."

Mo Tian Ji exposed a faint smile, "Therefore, the Ao Clan will have no other choice but to shift the blame on someone if they want to pull the Ao Clan into this mess. And, they can only choose you – Jasper Flower – to shift the blame on!"

"The suspicion would turn to you if Ao Xie Yun dies, Brother Xie. Ou Du Xiao has been friends with you for many years. And, he knows your style like the back of his hand. So, shifting the blame on you would be very easy for him if he uses one of yours methods as disguise along with the untraceable poison techniques of the Ou Clan to kill Ao Xie Yun! Thus, the Ao Clan will dispatch its troops in a rage. And, we won't stand a chance if that happens. In fact, it will basically end up in our defeat."

Mo Tian Ji solemnly said.

Xie Dan Qiong became terrified, and shook inside!

Everyone thought carefully over this matter. This felt bizarre at first. But, they started to feel that there was a big possibility of this assumption coming true as they thought it over. In fact, this was the only way for the Ou Clan to make an alliance with Ao Clan.

"Then, what should we do now?" Xie Dan Qiong was worried. After all, this could turn out to be a big disaster, and could easily destroy his clan!

"I have already sent a letter to the Ao Clan. Consider that he's already familiar with the situation." Mo Tian Ji's complexion became heavy. He continued, "I've already sent a letter to the Dark Bamboo so that we can prepare for the storm in advance.

"The second step would be to exploit the Meng Clan. The biggest mistake that the Ou Clan has made in this matter... is that they have contacted the Meng Clan." Mo Tian Ji indifferently said, "The Meng Clan's evil technique has already offended the majority of Jianghu. Therefore, we must take advantage of this blunder...

"We will issue a declaration to the entire world, and we will

denounce the Meng Clan's evil technique! We must exaggerate the harm of this evil technique to the maximum level. But, we must remember one thing — we have to be sure to not involve the other aristocratic clans while denouncing the Meng Clan. We must shake the entire Jianghu first!" Mo Tian Yun stated in a dark tone, "The Meng Clan's evil technique has already been exposed, but the impact wasn't very big. It wasn't satisfactory for us..."

"Well, how should we go about it?" Luo Ke Wu asked.

"Do I need to teach you this too?" Mo Tian Ji coldly snorted and said, "We would have to sacrifice some people to achieve this. Some small clans as well..."

"I have a plan. Listen carefully." Mo Tian Ji suddenly sat straight. He then looked at everyone present with his bright eyes.

"We cover our faces to begin with. Then, use poison or some psychedelic fragrance. First, take the little daughters of small clans, and exterminate the whole clans. Plunder the whole property of those clans, and leave nothing! Moreover, this must be done in absolute secrecy!"

Mo Tian Ji's first step left everyone startled.

"Secondly, collect those slum girls who roam around and beg. And, in large numbers! This thing should be done in secrecy as well."

Mo Tian Ji indifferently continued, "These two things shouldn't be too difficult. And, I believe that you can accomplish them!"

Everyone was in shock.

"Third, the one among you who's nearest to the incident must rush to the scene after this incident takes place. And, you must start an on-the-spot investigation. Then, you must spread the news in all direction. The news would be that it's probably the Dark Bamboo's job."

"Dark Bamboo...? Why Dark Bamboo?" Xie Dan Qiong was

puzzled.

"Let me first finish what I'm saying! Then, the investigation would be continued, and questionable points would soon be highlighted. After all, the clans that would've suffered the calamity would be very wealthy. Moreover, there would be young girls in these clans... Unite that with the fact that these little girls would've gone missing by then. And, the girls who used to beg in the markets would also have been collected for this matter... So, we'll let others raise questions and point to the Meng Clan by using these clever tricks...

"After all, Meng Luo needs little girls to practice his technique... So, it will arouse anger in the people of Jianghu! We will calmly wait for some good-willed righteous people to come forth in large numbers to serve justice. And, we will reluctantly agree to do the difficult job once they come to our clan and ask us to take the lead. Do you understand?"

"Wonderful!" The young masters laughed heartily in unison. In fact, they even clapped while laughing, "The forces which are scattered in the Jianghu will spontaneously focus their attention on us if this happens. Moreover, it wouldn't cost us any effort. Those who would plead to us will also go everywhere to gather more support... Brother Tian Ji, this strategy is indeed ingenious."

"Yes." Mo Tian Ji slightly smiled. "We will take the initiative to attack. We will take the initiative to bring together experts under one umbrella. The people with high aspirations will be passively pushed forward towards our cause in the name of general public's greater good. They won't be vigilant of us. Moreover, the leadership will obviously fall into our hands. And, no one will refuse to accept it... because it would be what they had asked us to do in the first place. So, who would dare to refuse accepting it? Therefore, this will simultaneously avoid the envy of some people, the disapproval of some people, contention for power from some people, and other problematic matters... This is the best plan in

these circumstances.

"Of course, we will pretend how difficult it is to handle this matter. We will set up a few propagandas to manipulate the atmosphere. We will let them plead. Then, we will become 'helpless', and we will agree to help. Consequently, the people who would come to plead to us will shed tears of gratitude... After that, we will make them join our troops. Then, we will instigate and manipulate their psychology."

"Fourth step would be... We will begin to investigate this matter after we will be chosen to lead them. And, the outcome of the investigation must be much of an 'unexpected discovery'. And, that would be that Meng Clan has already formed alliances with... Ou Clan, Tu Clan, Li Clan, Zhao Clan, Black Devil Clan, and Tian Clan!"

Mo Tian Ji exposed a faint smile. He had put a lot of stress on the words 'unexpected discovery'. "Thus, the speculation would be shifted to the aspect that those small clans were exterminated by poison. And, it was done by the Ou Clan...

"Remember, the announcements must have effects like of...'sudden happenings', 'thunder from the clear sky', and 'earth-shattering'! Moreover, we must leave behind too many wild and fanciful theories in the minds of the people. But, we might as well hint towards the worst ideas...

"Why would the Meng Clan want to form an alliance? Is it possible that they want to publicize their evil technique in order to dominate the world? Wouldn't it bring great suffering to the Middle Three Heavens?" Mo Tian Ji sinisterly smiled, "Every person in the Middle Three Heavens will be affected if this is true. Everyone in the Middle Three Heavens will feel insecure! And, we won't need to instigate anyone when that happens...

"They will automatically gather under our banner from everywhere.

"We won't need to do these things secretly. We will only need to ensure that nothing leaks out. And, it must look 'very' unexpected. Our planning steps must not be very hard to believe. But, there must not be... two ways about this matter. The other will begin to speculate if we can do this, and that will cause a sensation. Then, we will repeatedly investigate in details. And, the genuine speculations will reveal the frightful outcome... And, that would be perfect.

"Therefore, we will perform the so-called 'investigation of justice' step by step. Then, we will be chosen passively by the masses. And, we will gain more public support after they've discovering the so-called 'terrible truth'. Moreover, we will stand tall on the peak of righteousness and justice!

"We will be the warriors of justice!" Mo Tian Ji mischievously laughed, "And, those clans will represent evil! Justice will sweep away the evil. It has always been the norm of the world. It is the will of heavens, and the will of the people. It will enjoy popular confidence, command public respect, and will stand high in popular favor!

"There's no such thing as obvious justice and evil in the Middle Three Heavens. But, it can't be denied that people would feel content if they believe that they are doing the right thing. Besides... the public will ultimately face the brunt if this evil isn't rooted out. So, they will swarm en masse... And, the entire Jianghu would be abuzz when the big moment comes. They will then crusade against those clans..."

Mo Tian Ji gently smiled and continued, "Our clans can obviously gain the biggest advantage or benefits out of it. Whether we absorb the troops or split them up. Whether we use emotions, or emotionally scar them. Whether we show concern, or we tempt them with gains... obviously there will be too many experts of the Jianghu that will be our subordinates...

"Our clans can emerge as true powers after this matter ends.

Also, those clans will collapse for forever!

"There's no doubt that it's their opportunity. But, is it not the biggest opportunity for all of us as well? In fact, we will catch all of our enemies in one net if we are able to make good use of this opportunity. And, it will also make the strength of our clans to expand to several times...

"We will achieve dominance using the wild schemes of our enemy!" Mo Tian Ji gently lifted his head. His black hair was fluttering on his forehead. He looked at everyone with his sharp eyes. Then, he very gently and insipidly said, "Wouldn't it be quick?!"

...

Chapter 584: Kill Yun!

Not a sound was heard in the study room after Mo Tian Ji finished speaking! In fact, it was so quiet that even the sound of a pin dropping to the ground could be heard very clearly...

Dong Wu Lei, Luo Ke Wu, Ji Zhu, Xie Dan Qiong, and the others looked at Mo Tian Ji as if they were looking at a deity. Everyone felt a chill in their hearts. They only felt a chill rising up from their buttocks and reaching to their core ...

[Too malicious! Too fierce! Too shady! Too...]

Sweat was repeatedly dripping from Luo Ke Wu's forehead. And, he was repeatedly wiping it.

[Damn it! He's too ruthless...]

[I've been fighting with Mo Tian Ji for many years, and I haven't been taken down by him yet. I've been very lucky... The Luo Clan would've been exterminated by now if he had used such a plan on me...]

"They want to frame someone. But, we will be one step ahead of them!" Mo Tian Ji said, "The Ao Clan wouldn't suspect Xie Dan Qiong even if Ao Xie Yun dies... as long as we are ahead of the enemy. And, we will have sufficient time to figure things out and plan out countermeasures as long as there's enough time cushions..."

"Wonderful!" the young masters' head were sweating. However, they raised a 'thumbs up' at the same time, "This is an excellent plan!"

"Everyone must set into action if that's the case," Mo Tian Ji smiled and spoke in a cultured manner, "King of Hell Chu's return would be the time of a collective attack! And, that would be the time when we overtake our enemy."

"Good!"

"I assume that no one is going to be careless regarding the various properties of the big clans that will be lying bare in front of us after this crisis subsides. But, I don't need to remind you guys about this, right?" Mo Tian Ji smiled. Then, his expression suddenly turned cold, "However, I don't want there to be any unfair distribution of benefits between us.

"I believe that none of us would be happy if that were to happen. It isn't impossible for an internal conflict to arise among us because of the unfair distribution... And, we may easily get pulled apart by the enemy in case we have an internal conflict..."

Mo Tian Ji continued very carefully, "I am warning everyone... this isn't only about spoils of war. This is a matter of life and death for us!"

"That's right. We must keep this in mind. So... we will gang up against the person who will try to keep everything for himself and swallow up the benefits of other clans!" each of the young masters nodded one after another. In fact, they had nodded with their full strength. They had begun to admire Mo Tian Ji more and more.

Mo Tian Ji had planned everything out in a matter of several words. He had formulated the direction. He had formulated the implementation of the plan. In fact... he had clearly planned the escape routes, and had eliminated any potential future troubles.

The plan was already set. Therefore, the young masters left the Mo Clan in such a hurry that it seemed as if their butts were on fire. They whipped their horses, and rushed off to get things done. Each of them was a talented person, and none of them wanted to idle around. Xie Dan Qiong was particularly burning with impatience since he might have to bear the brunt first...

Mo Tian Ji looked at these people as they rushed away like the wind. He was standing alone at the entrance to the Mo Clan. He then muttered with a smile, "Chu Yang, you have cured my younger sister, and you have even given her to two Supreme

Experts as their disciple. I – Mo Tian Ji – am sincerely grateful. I can't pay you back enough for this. So, consider this as the beginning of my repayment to you!

"It will be beneficial for you, for me, and for everybody else. Wouldn't everybody be delighted and satisfied? There would have to be sacrifices, but nothing can be done about that. Innocents have had to shed rivers of blood for their king's victory over his enemy. This has been the norm since time immemorial. Would it even be possible to do anything in the world if one starts considering every innocent in the world?"

Mo Tian Ji's white robe was fluttering. He had a solemn expression on his face. He looked up at the white clouds as they unhurriedly floated in the sky. Then, he muttered, "Diwu Qing Rou... I wasn't able to fight with you in the Lower Three Heavens. You don't know how much I'm looking forward to having a grand showdown of wits with you in the Upper Three Heavens... This Mo Tian Ji won't even have any regrets if I die at that time...

"After all, I would've participated in such a supreme showdown. It would be an epic shadow, and its impact would be eternal! I believe that we will become legends as long as we fit in one another..."

He smiled and turned around. Then, he slowly walked inside, "Depending upon this occasion to break into the Upper Three Heavens won't be enough for the Mo Clan. But... there will always be more opportunities. In fact, there will be many of them."

His tall figure disappeared into the gate...

Mo Tian Ji's strategy was going to push the entire Jianghu into an atmosphere of rising winds that'd forebode the coming storm. He was like a small stone that could give rise to ripples in a peaceful lake when tossed into it...

A rainstorm would rise! A thunderstorm would be birthed! A crisis would arise!

...

The Ou Clan was also discussing matters with its allies while Mo Tian Ji was doing his planning...

They had set into action before Mo Tian Ji had, but they were still a step behind him.

After all, the Ou Clan had to go to the clans one by one, and had to plead to them to form an alliance. However, Mo Tian Ji had gathered all the clans in stroke by using the 'life and death crisis' as pretext!

The Ou Clan was sitting together with the major clans, and they were discussing the matters. However, it was already a previously unimaginable happy occasion for the Ou Clan.

"This alliance is firstly for self-protection, and secondly for setting up dominance!" Ou Cheng Wu had put his hands on the table. He heavily said, "I suppose everyone understands that our situation is bleak. The rising power of the Gu Clan, Dong Clan, Xie Clan, Luo Clan, and Mo Clan is impossible to resist! And, they are standing in our opposition. Geniuses are constantly rising in those clans... So, pay heed respectable clan lords — this situation is already a crisis of life and death!"

These words left every clan lord present to sink in contemplation.

Gu Du Xing had recently risen to fame, but he had firmly shaken the heavens. Dong Wu Shang embodied such aggressiveness that he could sweep away the entire Middle Three Heavens. Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had also risen to fame very abruptly. These developments had already aroused their vigilance.

Then, Ou Cheng Wu informed everyone that these boys had killed some Emperor Level Experts. And, it made everyone even more afraid!

"Everyone should also know that Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang,

Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo are sworn brothers! This indicates that they've joined together long ago. Moreover, their big brother had singlehandedly overturned the entire Lower Three Heavens. He's a man with matchless wisdom – King of Hell Chu!

"However, they also have the Master of Calculation and Manipulation — Mo Tian Ji — in their team! And, the Jasper Flower Xie Dan Qiong who uses that troublesome flower attack has also been added to their team. The Xie Clan's strength can also be considered as incredible!" Ou Cheng Wu added fuel to the fire, "So, we would have no choice but to resign ourselves to extinction if they reach their full potential!"

"But, there will be no turning back once we stir chaos in Jianghu!" The Li Clan's clan lord Li Jue wrinkled his brows. He pondered for a while, and then slowly spoke-up, "We can maintain the balance of power at present. However, only one side will be able to emerge to power in case the balance breaks. And, the other one would perish. In fact, the losing side wouldn't even get the chance to struggle-on whilst at death's door..."

"We must forge ahead. There's no need to back down!" The Young Master of Tian Clan had come. His had bushy-black brows. His eyes were as slender as a blade. He would sweep his vision around once in a while. He'd have a murderous look about him as he'd look disdainfully out of the corner of his eyes. He slowly said, "I've wanted to test out what kind of a hero this Dong Wu Shang is... After all, he has apparently swept away the entire Middle Three Heavens!"

"Young Master Bu Hui, your wish will certainly be fulfilled. I believe that your fierce fight with Dong Wu Shang will shake the world!" The Zhao Clan's clan lord was a stout middle-aged man. He smiled as he shot a blow of flattery. After all, the Tian Clan's strength was far mightier than the Zhao Clan's. Moreover, the distance between these two clans wasn't too much. And, the Zhao Clan had always admired the superior lifestyle of the Tian Clan.

Tian Bu Hui coldly snorted and indifferently said, "Dong Wu Shang is willing to serve someone as his 'big brother'. He has already lost the loftiness of his character! Such a weakling has no qualification to be called an 'outstanding person' in front of me!"

Tu Qian Hao had come to represent the Tu Clan. He squinted and darkly said, "That's right! That Gu Du Xing is also the same. He is the first successor of a major clan in the Middle Three Heavens. He has acknowledged a puny individual with no power as his big brother! It makes me want to laugh out loud. It is a shame for us to be identified as equals with this man and his likes! It will be difficult to vanquish the anger in my heart if I don't kill them."

Everyone remained silent for a while. Some of them thought, [You got crushed on Mt. Dingjun by these people. So, you've already lost the qualification of being called equal to those people. What level of shamelessness do you possess to be saying that...?]

However, they obviously couldn't say these words out loud.

After all, these two radicals had spoken this on the behalf of their great aristocratic clans. So, they had promoted this alliance in doing so.

Meng Clan's Meng Luo sat still on one side. He slowly said at this moment, "Yes, our hearts won't be at peace if we don't wipe out these clans!"

There was a youngster seated in the middle. He wore only black clothes and a mask. He spoke-up in a neutral manner, "How would this matter be executed? We must put forward some rules whether we're overturning the enemy or defending ourselves. Making empty promises won't destroy the enemy at this point."

This youth was this generation's Black Devil of the Black Devil Clan! Nobody knew his name... or what he looked like. But, his words had managed to offend Tian Bu Hui, Meng Luo, and Tu Qian Hao even though they had only urged the discussion further.

The three of them angrily glared at him!

The young Black Devil suddenly raised his head. The look in his eyes was similar to the ominous glow that's emitted from the dark of night, "You don't need to take offense. I will give each of you a chance to prove me wrong after this matter is sorted!"

Ou Du Xiao also coldly snorted this time.

However, Ou Cheng Wu hastily smoothed things over and furthered the discussion.

These great clans had gathered together. Chu Yang would've probably been startled if he were here. After all, five out of future twelve influential figures of the Middle Three Heavens had gathered here! Moreover, they were on the enemy's side...

Black Devil, Dark Bamboo, Gu Du Xing, Ou Du Xiao, Tian Ji, Li Xiong Tu, Dong Wu Shang, Qian Hao, Ao Xie Yun, Meng Luo, Xie Dan Qiong, and Tian Bu Ru.

And, Black Devil, Ou Du Xiao, Qian Hao, Meng Luo, and Tian Bu Ru were present here.

Gu Du Xing, Tian Ji, Dong Wu Shang, Xie Dan Qiong were present on the other side... besides Chu Yang himself! Moreover, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were also evenly matched, and roughly comparable!

However, this opposition would make Chu Yang sigh for sure. After all, these twelve influential figures from his past life couldn't live under the same sky!

Therefore, some would inevitably have to step on the skeleton of the others.

"The Ao Clan is indisputably the number-one. The Ao Clan is unshakable. What should we do to involve it? Wouldn't it be like throwing away our lives for nothing if Ao Clan gets involved and takes the other side by any chance?"

The Zhao Clan's clan lord Zhao Wu Ji raised this issue of concern before everyone.

"This is the issue that I'm about to discuss with everyone." Ou Cheng Wu mischievously laughed and said, "It is quite easy to make the Ao Clan enter this fray in a crazed state!"

"Ao Xie Yun?" The young Black Devil raised his eyebrow. A black lightning-like lustre suddenly burst forth in his eyes.

"That's right. Ao Xie Yun!" Ou Du Xiao solemnly stated, "I am a hundred-percent sure that I can shift the blame of Ao Xie Yun's sudden death on Xie Dan Qiong!"

The eyes of Tian Bu Hui, Tu Qian Hao, Black Devil, and Meng Luo lit up at the same time!

Ao Xie Yun had firmly occupied the first position among the young experts of the Middle Three Heavens for a long time. But, this was a generation of proud and arrogant youngsters. So, how could anyone be willing to be pressed down by Ao Xie Yun?

Who among those present here couldn't reach the top position if Ao Xie Yun were overthrown?

"This plan is too risky. But, we will secure the victory if we succeed," Ou Du Xiao swept his eyes across the faces of everyone with a sharp gaze. Everyone held their breath.

"We need such and such... coordination... from everyone." Ou Du Xiao slowly explained everything in one-go. And, everyone's eyes lit up. This seemed like a flawless and malicious plan. In fact, it was simply impeccable and invulnerable!

And, it instantly aroused everyone's confidence.

"This mission will be called...'Kill Yun'!" Ou Du Xiao spoke one word at a time.

....

Chapter 585: Panic Permeates!

"Kill Yun!"

Ou Du Xiao has spoken these words out loud. Everyone silently puckered up their brows and pondered. Everyone's eyebrows were tightly knitted, but a light of brilliance were flashing in their eyes.

It was quite obvious. 'Kill Yun'... this plan had raised everybody's interest. It had also evoked everyone's wild ambition.

[Ao Clan has been dominating the Middle Three Heavens for over a thousand year. We would provoke the Ao Clan to dispatch troops in Jianghu if we harmed Ao Xie Yun. And then, we would frame those enemy clans... This is undoubtedly a heaven-sent opportunity for the clans present here.]

[The Ao Clan might even go all out against our enemy clans, and both sides could mutually wound each other. This is also very probable...]

[How wouldn't we have an opportunity to replace the Ao Clan if that happens?]

"The most crucial thing in this matter isn't 'killing Ao Xie Yun', but to keep things confidential between us! Our clans will make a rapid advancement in no time if we can accomplish this. But, we all might vanish like a puff of smoke overnight if this matter gets exposed!"

Tu Qian Hao sighed while speaking this. He was sighing while warning the others, but he still had an ominous glint in his eyes as he looked at everyone present.

It was evident that everyone would turn against the person who tried to leak this information.

Everyone remained silent.

"This matter is extremely important," Ou Du Xiao said with a

smile, "But, we might as well establish a blood oath on this matter! That would be a good way to win the trust of everyone. The contract would be written in our own blood as a certificate. Then, it wouldn't matter even if someone was to tell this secret to Ao Clan, and this plan was to get exposed as a result of it. After all, the traitor would be powerless to defend himself!"

"How dare you! What nonsense is this?" Ou Cheng Wu pretended to be displeased as he chided his son.

Zhao Wu Ji gently chuckled and said, "Clan Lord Ou needn't be angry. I think that Young Master Ou's words make sense."

"That's right. That's right."

"Please continue to speak, Young Master Ou."

Ou Du Xiao's spirit roused up as he said, "We must take a serious oath if we want to keep our secret from leaking. So, we must take an oath in the names of our ancestors and later generation descendants – our ancestors of eight generations will suffer forever if we reveal this secret. They will forever burn in hell. And, the descendants of the future generations will behave like scoundrels... generations after generations!"

The room fell silent as soon as these words come out!

Such an oath was extremely vicious. It's one thing to be wicked beyond redemption, and to have no respect for the supernatural beings. But, who would dare to make fun of their ancestors of eight generations and their descendants of the future generations?

There was a moment of silence. Then, the young Black Devil slowly raised his head. He swept his blade-like sharp vision towards everyone. Then, he said in a deep voice, "Why fear taking a blood oath if you don't plan to do anything wrong? Could it be that you guys are a bunch of cowards?!"

There was a dense murderous intent mixed in this voice. Tu Qian Hao and Tian Bu Hui patrolled their eyes back and forth at the

same time.

"Right! It should be this way!" Zhao Wu Ji took the initiative to answer.

"That is right," Tian Bu Hui also said these words, and it was already equal to making the final decision!

Therefore, everyone shed their blood for the oath. They swore to heaven and earth, and took the oath. Each one of them wrote down the oath's contract using their blood essence as ink. They then wrote their names on the contract!

Everyone had an inexplicable feeling in their hearts as they looked at their names in deep red on the white paper. But, one thing was clear in their hearts... [It would be impossible to draw back even if I wanted to!]

[We will be on the peak if we succeed. But, we will be consigned to eternal damnation if we lose!]

"Excellent!" Ou Cheng Wu looked at everyone writing down the oath with their blood. He felt happy and relieved in his heart. Then, he said, "We have no time to lose. We must carry out the mission."

"Ao Xie Yun is still in the Northern Wilderness, and he's currently in search for the blood essence of ninth grade spirit beast. We can calmly rob and kill him on his way back home!" Ou Du Xiao faintly said, "There's one thing that I want to propose. Everyone please pay attention..."

Ou Du Xiao pondered in his heart and said, "There are at least three or four Emperor Level Experts on Ao Xie Yun's side for his protection. Moreover, Ao Clan certainly has to have some people to protect him from the dark. No one must ignore this thing... by any means. We must remember one thing while setting about the task — you must compare the strength of both the sides... It would be better that you don't attack if there's no surety of success. Also,

you mustn't let them know your whereabouts."

"We can use the 'wheel' battle tactic." Tian Bu Hui faintly smiled. He then casually said, "Besides, we have the best assassination expert here – the young Clan Lord of the Black Devil Clan. So, I think that nothing would go wrong," there was some mystifying feeling in his voice.

The Young Black Devil snorted. His voice had suddenly become eerie, "Tian Bu Hui, wait until Ao Xie Yun is dead. Then, you and I will have a mortal combat!"

Tian Bu Hui wildly laughed. "Very well. First, we will win over the whole land. And then, we will decide who it will belong to with a battle of life and death!"

Tu Qian Hao mischievously laughed, and sarcastically said, "We will see which clan would rule this beautiful world..."

Everyone became silent.

A long while passed. Then, they started to discuss the details of this operation. Everyone knew the importance of this operation. They would be consigned to eternal damnation if they showed any negligence! Therefore, everyone racked their brains. And, everyone came up with various kinds of treacherous, murderous, and crafty schemes...

They made the final decision after two hours.

"It will go like this! Everyone will make separate preparations. The journey from Northern Wilderness to Ao Clan is ten-thousand miles. Ao Xie Yun must be attacked and killed when he steps out of the Northern Wilderness!"

...

A bloody storm suddenly rose in the Middle Three Heavens after seven or eight days...

The Cang Lan Battlefront had initially been the center of

everyone's attention. However, it had suddenly become of no interest to anyone. The strength of the various great aristocratic clans had already been recalled from the Cang Lan Battlefront. However, many invisible messenger-falcons were flying to the Great Northern Wilderness. The content was the same – [The matter is urgent. Quickly come back!]

Three small clans were suddenly exterminated one evening!

And, this caused a modest undulation in the Middle Three Heavens. After all, these clans may have offended many people. And, how could those people have been saintly...? Moreover, such incidents were ordinary in the Middle Three Heavens. Anyway, the three small clans that were wiped out were no saints either. They had many old accounts that needed to be settled. They had also done evil things again and again. Therefore, some people approved of the extermination of those clans. Some even clapped their hands. But, everyone still discussed about it.

However... three similarly small clans were also slaughtered in silence three days later!

Six small clans had been massacred in a row. So, this had gained a lot of attention.

Then, wise people investigated and researched the matter. And, they shockingly found — These six clans were very different from each other. But, there was one thing that was common among these clans. That was... there were a few thirteen to fourteen-year-old daughters in each of the six clans. Moreover, their innate talents were pretty good...

Moreover, the men of the clans had died violent deaths. But, the women — especially those young girls — were missing instead. In fact, not even one of them was found!

Then, the young beggar girls also got reduced batch after batch in the Middle Three Heavens. Moreover, these incidents had taken place in extreme secrecy! In fact, they would've gone unnoticed

unless someone was to observe carefully.

The 'wise people' of the Middle Three Heavens immediately opened their eyes wide.

But, there were no new signs of activity for ten days this time. However, some people still didn't become lazy.

But, something incredible happened after half-a-month. Seven small clans had disappeared overnight. The entire manors were burnt down by fires that had raged to the skies...

After that, the young girls who begged on the streets of a certain area disappeared with a poof.

And, this also happened in extreme secrecy.

Everyone felt that an undercurrent was surging up violently! Moreover, these were the rising winds that forebode the coming storm!

The smart people again investigated the matter, and discovered one thing – majority of the clans that met the disaster were the neighboring clans of... Dong, Luo, Mo, Ji, Gu, and Xie clans! These clans were surely a bit far away from them. But, this similarity could be noticed after a finer analysis.

These big clans also seemed to have carried out investigations during the same time period. But, they were investigating very cautiously, and it seemed as if they were dealing with a big enemy...

Again, six more clans disappeared from another direction in one night. And, young girls of a certain area also disappeared on a large scale...

Middle Three Heavens was finally in a mess!

It seemed as if a very big chunk of stone had been thrown in a still lake, and the whole lake had slowly boiled up because of the disturbance.

A strange sense of crisis had shrouded everyone's heart.

The Luo Clan took the initiative, and set into action. The martial masters of the clan dashed out like a tide. They scattered everywhere, and faded without a trace.

However, the 'smart people' who had been watching these developments knew that the Luo Clan hadn't been able to hold their anger in. And, this was probably whey they had started to investigate into this matter!

Soon, the Gu Clan, Dong Clan, and Ji Clan... set into action as well.

However, Mo Clan was still observing calmly. In fact, it hadn't shown any abnormalities.

However, the smart people knew that these secret attacks would cease to exist if the new Clan Lord of the Mo Clan – Mo Tian Ji — used his capability. So, they assumed that he had perhaps begun to carry out operations in secrecy. However, it couldn't be said for sure...

The idle crowd of Jianghu calmly watched the movements of the great clans. Days passed by. And, the people of the great clans had started to wear uglier and uglier complexions with every passing day. They had been imperceptibly telling everyone the same thing – [the enemy is very dreadful. No clue is coming out from the investigation...]

Thereupon, some people who were rejoicing in others' misfortunes also came out. [See...? Aren't these great aristocratic clans fu*king awesome? They can't do anything except suffering in silence!]

However, some of the knowledgeable and experienced people were worried. [Nothing has come out so far... despite the abilities of these great aristocratic clans. Doesn't it mean that the gravity of the matter has become extremely serious?]

Then, some experts died in the hotels that very night; this also happened very silently. Moreover, some of them even went missing. In fact, they had disappeared without a trace.

People kept disappearing for several consecutive nights. In addition, no sounds of fighting were heard before they disappeared. Some people simply woke up in the morning, and found that their neighbors had died... or gone missing...

Moreover, there were no traces of fighting on the scene...

And, such incidents didn't just happen in one place... Similar news was transmitted from everywhere...

An indescribable panic shrouded the hearts of everyone!

Everyone had finally realized – [This matter isn't that simple! It seems that someone is trying to unify the stance of Jianghu. Nothing is happening to us today, and we're lucky for that. But, how can we be sure that we won't become a target in the future?]

Therefore, the panic spread very quickly. And, more than half of Jianghu had spiraled into chaos after constant efforts of several days.

Mo Clan's clan lord Mo Tian Ji went out with a calm face on this day. The smart people discovered that Mo Tian Ji's guards had increased by fourfold from their usual numbers!

[What is the meaning of this?]

Several other clans had also showed similar stances. But, everyone remained silent. They didn't say a thing. They weren't making on comments on this matter...

However, people felt that this matter was a top-secret since no one was talking. And, it made everyone more nervous. It made them more anxious and more worried...

Finally, some people were unable to remain calm any longer.

....

Chapter 586: The Strong Wind Blows and Causes Ripples in a Spring-Time Pond

Mo Tian Ji immediately realized that he had miscalculated one thing after his plan had been implemented. And, this aspect was the current state of humanity's apathy.

Nowadays, people were too indifferent towards the incidents of people's deaths and extermination of clans. They didn't care as long as they weren't the ones dying in peril. In fact, many people were jumping around. They were enjoying watching the show, and were taking pleasure in others' misfortunes.

The information Mo Tian Ji had collected for his plan had indicated that there were 40-50 small clans that met the requirements. The first task had been to eliminate the three wicked ones.

Mo Tian Ji had assumed that the elimination of these three clans ought to cause some sort of reaction. However, people had only showed 'indifference', and this had gone against his expectations.

Consequently, Mo Tian Ji quickly realized his own mistake. He then ordered to exterminate three more clans. Moreover, the operation of gathering the young beggar-girls was also being carried out in a synchronous fashion. And, this eventually set off some waves...

However, it was still far from meeting his expectations. Therefore, Mo Tian Ji gave another order, and had seven small clans slaughtered in one fell swoop. The gathering of young female beggars was also intensified. It was being aggressively carried on in secrecy.

It was seen that the people of Jianghu had begun to flare up after several days. So, Mo Tian Ji exterminated six more clans. And, he added more oil to the already raging inferno by doing so.

And, he also had the most apathetic fellows of JiangHu eliminated one by one!

The least amount of manpower deployed in these operations was – Revered Martial Artists, a team led by Martial Emperor, and a certain number of King Level Experts...

And, the scene that Mo Tian Ji had anticipated finally emerged at long last...

He was stopped up in the restaurant when he went out on this day...

"Mo Clan Lord, aging man has something on his mind that he wants to trouble you with. May I ask if the Mo Clan Lord would be willing to listen to my words?" an old man with white hair and white beard humbly asked.

The old man was named Mo Ruo Shui. He was also surnamed Mo, but he wasn't a member of the Mo Clan. He was old, but he was a Ninth Grade Martial King. Moreover, he was a solitary expert who operated within the control range of the Mo Clan. He had always been a lone operator who complied with the Mo Clan's administration. However, he had never pledged loyalty.

He was basically a free man who was beyond the bounds of rules and regulations. And, Mo Tian Ji was targeting this kind of people to be precise...

"What's the matter, Old Mo? Please don't hesitate to speak. It's no problem." Mo Tian Ji stood up with a smile on his face. This smile clearly seemed 'forced' on his calm face. And, it made people feel that the situation was serious.

"Clan Lord Mo, may I know your opinion on the recent incidents of extermination of the clans in the Jianghu? Everyone is very much puzzled. Would you please point us in the right direction?" Mo Ruo Shui first expressed gratitude to Mo Tian Ji. Then, he impatiently raised the issue.

"Well..." Mo Tian Ji faintly knitted his brows into a scowl. Then, he resumed a smile that was as brilliant as the radiance of spring on his face, and solemnly said, "This affair... Isn't this... a rather common thing in the Middle Three Heavens? He-he, this shouldn't be a big deal. Old Mo needn't worry. Everyone, you may disperse."

However, people believed his words even lesser as he continued to talk. They didn't disperse. Instead, they stood firm there. They didn't go anywhere...

"Mo Clan Lord mustn't underestimate the gravity of this matter... I'm afraid this matter may turn out to be extraordinary." Mo Ruo Shui stroked his white beard and said, "I am certain that Clan Lord Mo has a certain degree of idea. This old and senile man wouldn't dare to pry too much. I might be speaking out of turn here, but I only wish to ask one thing — what was the outcome of the investigation of the exterminated clans?"

Mo Tian Ji's complexion sank. He indifferently said, "Old Mo, you don't need to worry too much about this case. You have grown too old now. You should spend the remaining days of your life in leisure."

There was no trace of politeness in this sentence, but everyone on the scene was left shocked in their hearts.

[Mo Tian Ji's attitude seems to be plagued by pain. It seems as if someone has poked his sore spot? His reaction gave off a vibe... as if he had been ashamed into anger? Doesn't this mean that he has secretly tried to deal with the perpetrators, but doesn't have any proper means to deal with them?]

[But, all of us will have to suffer if these big clans wouldn't take care of this... How can we not worry?]

Mo Rui Shui didn't take offense. Instead, he sincerely and earnestly said, "This old man has a humble theory..."

"Hm...?" Mo Tian Ji looked at him without changing his voice or

expression. He then asked, "What's your theory, Old Mo?"

"I went in the vicinity of the scenes where those clans were exterminated in the past few days. And, I visited the sites where those clans were destroyed... However, this old man discovered that the blood was flowing everywhere, and the corpses were piled up like mountains. The method of assassination was too horrible to look at. The scene was quite messy, but this old man also found something else from there..."

He somewhat smiled in self-satisfaction while he spoke. He took out a piece of blue jade brick from his bosom. The brick was tightly wrapped up. Then, he uncovered it layer by layer. And, everyone suddenly discovered that a corner of the brick was made of purple-black color.

Mo Ruo Shui pointed at the purple-black spot on the brick, "The murderers have done a good job cleaning after themselves. But... this piece of brick clearly has traces of poisonous blood... Such a bloodstain can only be formed from the wounds of a recently poisoned person... or from their vomits. Moreover, it can exhibit fierce toxicity if it is sprayed on blue jade or white jade. Moreover, no traces of this kind of poison are found after one dies of this poison..."

Mo Ruo Shui took a step forwards, and spoke in a soft voice, "This should be the poison of... the Poison Spirit... Ou Du Xiao... assuming this old man doesn't have blurred vision..."

"The poison of Poison Spirit?" Mo Tian Ji couldn't help but cry out in alarm. However, he instantly lowered his voice, and warned in a serious tone, "Old Mo, you can't make irresponsible remarks like that."

Mo Ruo Shui became somewhat depressed. [Weren't you the one who allowed me to talk freely? Can't you see that I've stepped forward and lowered my voice to tell this to only you? But, you became so frightened that everyone has heard you... However,

you're warning me instead now? This is madness...]

Mo Tian Ji grabbed the blue jade brick, and fiddled with it to take a good look. However, his complexion turned uglier as he continued to examine it. Then, he moved it close to his nose, and gently sniffed it. After that, his complexion turned extremely gloomy.

He had called this out in alarm, and everyone had heard it very clearly. And, it had turned awfully silent there as a result. [The poison of Poison Spirit? The Ou Clan? Is there Ou Clan's hand in all this? But, why...?]

Mo Ruo Shui's complexion became awkward. He felt trapped. He remained startled for a while, and then his complexion turned resolute. He then spoke-up as if he was ready to make any sacrifice, "Clan Lord Mo, there's one more thing. I don't know if Clan Lord Mo has found it yet or not... The nineteen clans that have been exterminated... were known for having talented daughters of fourteen to fifteen years...

"Moreover, those girls have going missing... particularly young girls..."

Mo Ruo Shui clenched his teeth and said, "In addition to this... a lot of experts have also disappeared mysteriously..."

Mo Tian Ji frowned. He pondered for a long time. Then, he shook his head, "I know what you're talking about. But... that is too outrageous. They can't possibly have such big courage? It's akin to highly overestimating their capabilities."

Mo Ruo Shui heavily said, "It's better to be safe than sorry."

Mo Tian Ji hesitated for a while. He had a look of struggle and contradiction on his face. It seemed as if he was uncertain about something...

"Clan Lord Mo, only a great and powerful clan like yours can deal with this mess. Only you can save us. We'll have no other way to

survive if you don't..."

Mo Ruo Shui looked very pitiful as he said this. Two of his old friends had gone missing within a few days. And, one more person was killed right away. This had left him with a sense of crisis.

"I'll reconsider... this matter! I will think about it carefully, and I will see how the wind blows... After all, this is not a trivial matter." Mo Tian Ji said while comforting him, "Old Mo, you don't need to harbour groundless fears. You're a person of virtue and prestige, and possess excellent martial power. They won't dare to put their hands on you."

Mo Ruo Shui opened his eyes wide, "Clan Lord Mo, you... why do you still need to consider...?" [What I said was so clear... What else do you still need to consider?]

Mo Tian Ji had stood up by now. He said with a smile, "Old Mo doesn't need to be worried. Um, let's do it like this. I will go back first. Besides, they are only two clans... So, they can't give rise to any big storm. It's no big deal."

He brushed his sleeves after he said this. Then, he turned away and left abruptly.

Mo Ruo Shui stood there in a daze.

However, the others in the vicinity swarmed around him, "Old Mo, what did you say? We didn't understand it well..."

"Old Mo, please explain. You said 'poison of Poison Spirit'. Is it Ou Clan?"

"Also, what relation does it have... with the matter of little girls?"

...

Mo Ruo Shui's facial features were withered. He heaved a long sigh and said, "It is obviously the Meng Clan... The Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique of the Meng Clan's young master had created waves some time ago. Everyone must know this by now.

The Meng Clan and the Ou Clan have done this in collaboration if this old man has guessed right.

"Jianghu will fall into chaos... Everyone, let us be safe out there." Mo Ruo Shui deeply sighed. His eyes were filled with an expression of unwillingness, "This old man wants the Mo Clan to step in. We... the scattered people of Jianghu can only save one or two. But, it seems that the Clan Lord of Mo Clan is still indecisive... sigh."

Everyone instantly started to discuss in high spirits. [Yes. That's right. These great clans are the safest right now. But, Mo Tian Ji clearly doesn't want to step in. What can be done about it?]

Everyone sighed and dispersed.

The news was spread the next morning – [Seven more people died in the inns at night.]

Moreover, Mo Ruo Shui suddenly and mysteriously met with an enemy attack last night. He somehow rushed out of danger in desperation. However, he got covered with bruises and cuts, and almost got killed...

The terror of dark clouds dawned upon everyone. And, everyone started to feel insecure. However, no one dared to speak-up due to danger on their lives...

Then, more news was passed on – [Ou Clan and Meng Clan have formed an alliance. And, they want to dominate the entire Jianghu along with some other great clans...]

A lot of people gathered around Mo Ruo Shui after they received this news. Mo Ruo Shui pondered for a long while. Then, he waved, "Carry me to the Mo Clan's courtyard. This old man will head-butt the Mo Clan's clan lord if he doesn't show interest in this matter... Besides, this is a major event of Jianghu. The Mo Clan can also be exterminated if these clans succeed. I can't believe how the Clan Lord of the Mo Clan is so calm..."

This group of people started to protest immiadeitely after in Mo Tian Ji's courtyard.

"Is this news true?!" Mo Tian Ji fiercely stood up. He had an expression of being in excessive shock. Then, he hurriedly paced for a few steps. His complexion was exceptionally ugly. Then, he waved his hand and gave an order, "Investigate! I want the accurate information..."

It wasn't long before the 'accurate' information came before Mo Tian Ji. And, Mo Tian Ji heaved a long sigh when he saw it, "I hate the fact that the people are Jianghu are in a state of disunity, and can't cooperate. The will of the people isn't even. Otherwise... alas..."

He heaved a weak sigh. And, it made the people of Jianghu lower their heads. They felt ashamed in their hearts. [Why would the Mo Clan take our matter on their own shoulders?]

However, these people soon set into action... And, more and more people started to flock towards the Mo Clan from the radius of several hundred kilometres...

The scene was the same in nearly every region at this time.

Those scared people of the Jianghu whose courage had been shattered had winded around every great clan while clasping their heads in frenzy and calling out in pain. And, it was inevitable that the decision was made 'to take on the difficult task' under this extremely 'desperate' situation — [A joint investigation will be performed by the clans!]

The investigation was carried out, and the 'truth' about a 'conspiracy that would startle the heavens' came into picture. TheIt was that Ou Clan, Meng Clan, Tu Clan, Zhao Clan, Li Clan... were eliminating the dissidents to proclaim themselves the hegemon of the Jianghu!

Suddenly, the entire Jianghu was in an uproar!

This news was like the strong wind that had created ripples in the spring-time pond of the Middle Three Heavens!

...

Chapter 587: Homeward Bound!

Chu Yang had been trying hard to suppress his strength during this period of time. He had promoted his strength so rapidly at firs that repercussions had come up.

It must be mentioned that he hadn't been a King Level Expert of such a high degree even in his previous life. Therefore, he had been promoting his strength crazily in this life. In fact, he had been helping his brothers in promoting theirs as well.

Sword Spirit had been using his suppression to his utmost. And, he too was trying his hardest to help improve Chu Yang's strength.

Until he broke through to the fifth grade of King Level...

Chu Yang finally understood why Sword Spirit had been suppressing him this entire time!

Fifth grade of King Level resembled a great breakdown of energy that had blown up his self-confidence like a pig's bladder. His self-confidence had gone off the charts. However, self-confidence no longer remains 'self-confidence' once it exceeds a certain limit. Instead, it becomes 'arrogance'...

Moreover, this form of self-confidence seems to occur automatically along with exceeding the limit. Then, it takes the form of an inner demon. And, one virtually can't guard against it...

It was possible to be able to brave through it by relying on one's own strength. However, Chu Yang felt that no one possessed such strength... except Meng Chao Ran.

Chu Yang was particularly shocked when he found himself recalling the glorious images of those Supreme Experts proclaiming 'I am the number-one in the world'!

People would scold one for being arrogant if one has excessive self-confidence in peaceful times. But, the world of the Middle Three Heavens followed the law of the jungle. Therefore, having

excessive self-confidence was like courting death around here.

Therefore, Chu Yang had been crazily enriching himself these days. He had been frantically focusing on consolidating his strength, and tempering the skills he had mastered before. In fact, he had been fighting using his basic skills to further squeeze out the very essence of them in order to absorb them better.

He hadn't been forcing himself alone; he had also been pressing Rui Bu Tong and Tan Tan. Meanwhile, he had also summoned Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang. And, he had been ruthlessly training and suppressing them as well.

Chu Yang knew that it wouldn't be good if this kind of egotistical self-confidence started to take over one's head and dominate one's temperament... And, that's because it wouldn't matter if it was Gu Du Xing or himself... they'd all be done for!

"This is the period of corrections! The juniors of the big clans are usually sent to people with slightly higher strength than their own once they reach the fifth grade of King Level. And, those people then ruthlessly defeat the said-junior! In fact, they are thrashed a second time if they don't do well the first time. And, they are thrashed a third time if they don't do well the second time... Even ten times in some cases! In fact, they'd be thrashed until they let go of their arrogance in its entirety!"

Sword Spirit continued to explain, "The reason why everyone in the Middle Three Heavens is so arrogant has a lot to do with this threshold of the fifth grade of King Level. And, that's because there aren't too many people here who know of it. And, the ones who know of it but don't know how to avoid it or rectify it are even fewer.

"This threshold is called the 'collapse phase'! That's because there are many collapses in this phase. Firstly, one's self-confidence gets hit and collapses. Then, it breaks and re-establishes. Secondly, the person also collapses when the self-confidence collapses in this

way!"

Chu Yang deeply thought about it...

[Collapse phase indeed deserved its name!]

Chu Yang and his brothers would occasionally go out for hunting. However, they would basically spend the rest of the time having hand-to-hand fights.

They had gotten rid of their weapons. They had been fighting by using the power of pure human flesh!

Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, Tan Tan, Rui Bu Tong... and even Chu Yang would be riddled with scars every day. They would have purple and blue bruises over their entire bodies. And, they would lie down in pain every day. Their bodies would be in extreme pain each day. And, their arrogance gradually started to get erased from their hearts as a result of this.

However, they became more skillful in the end. Moreover, they felt very harmonious and transparent. They were previous a stone that was only good to show-off its abilities. But, they had slowly changed into the rudimentary form of a fine jade now. Therefore, they were ready to blossom with dazzling colors.

No one's cultivation level had gone up during these days; it had stayed at the same place. But, all of them seemed to have a feeling — [I've become entirely different from before.]

Consequently, these people had declaratively passed through this 'collapse phase' with a calm mental state and by being reserved.

It had already been three months by now...

Chu Yang and his four brothers had changed beyond recognition by now. Then, they went to look for Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di.

However, Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, and the others were gob-smacked when they saw each other!

[Is... is this the same dandy and useless Luo Ke Di? Is it the same

lazy Ji Mo who wouldn't feel a need to move the whole day?]

Luo Ke Di's face was solemn and cold. His body was as straight as sword. He had an expression of cold and acute thirst of blood in his eyes. He stood there like a sharp sword covered in blood. He was emitting a frightening murderous aura! Moreover, he was a fifth grade King level Expert now!

The expression in Ji Mo's eyes was somewhat dull. But, the imposing aura on his body was extremely violent. It seemed as if he had gone to a battlefield leading an army, and his army had gotten defeated on the battlefield; he was the only one left, and he had been fighting millions of enemies by himself. He had the kind of boiling blood that would force him to fight until death... that would leave him unyielding till the very end...

He stood there in a manner that his frail body seemed to be as deep as sea and as high as mountain. In fact, a single man appeared like a mountain pass that ten-thousand men couldn't force open!

He had become a fifth grade King level Expert as well!

These two were fifth grade King Level Experts too. But, they were different from Chu Yang and the others. They didn't need any 'collapse phase' because they were the 'pursuers'! They had always had an inferiority complex in their hearts. And, they had pursued with their all might under such circumstances. So, how could they have had any time to be arrogant?

In fact, these two would perhaps never get a chance to think that they were terrific in front of these extraordinary men...

"I've seen you before!" Tan Tan suddenly became pleasantly surprised and called out. He pointed towards Luo Ke Di, "He helped me at that time. This guy is very kind. I like him."

"So, it is you." Luo Ke Di also smiled. The cold and solemn aura suddenly disappeared as he smiled. Then, he regained the appearance of the former Luo Ke Di. He winked and asked, "How

are things? Did you succeed in getting hold of that Young Miss Xie?"

Tan Tan heaved a deep sigh, "I've succeeded in obtaining her heart... but not yet in person."

"You're useless!" Luo Ke Di disdainfully squinted, "Want me to teach you a trick?"

"What?" Tan Tan's eyes lit up.

"First, let's talk about it." Luo Ke Di spat out saliva as if he hated Tan Tan for not meeting his expectations, "You first make her belly bulge if her family doesn't consent under any circumstances. Won't they agree then? Fu*k! How can they not agree? In fact, you can be like... humph, humph, you people want your daughter to get married quickly? Well, I will have to think about it first..."

"Great idea!" Tan Tan shook his brows up and down. In fact, he was so happy that he was grinning from ear to ear.

"Also..." Ji Mo had also heard about such a topic. So, how could he be willing to stay silent? He came close to them like a cat goes after sniffing a fishy smell. Then, he secretly blinked, "This thing needs technique. But, you're still young. So, you don't understand these things. So, you will mess up very easily. Wait until we return. Then, I will teach you a few tricks. This is a very important matter of life. You mustn't be sloppy! You won't stand a chance if you don't have perfect mastery over the technique."

Tan Tan repeatedly nodded. His eyebrows bloomed, and eyes smiled, "You two are very good people..."

"We derive pleasure from helping others. We are chivalrous people who serve righteousness!" Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo put arms around each other's shoulders.

"What nonsense are you speaking?" Gu Du Xing bellowed, "Do you two need some spanking?"

Both of them smirked. They then pulled Tan Tan to teach him

their experiences, and give him some man-to-man talk.

However, Luo Ke Di's sound was still vaguely audible, "Ji Mo, how do you appear to have such experience? Is it possible that you and Aobo... have already been to the bridal chamber?"

Ji Mo retorted in an angry voice, "Children mustn't ask about such matters."

Luo Ke Di smiled in a strange manner. That smile was full of ridiculed intentions. Then, sounds of chasing and beating were heard...

"It seems like it didn't go smoothly for this guy." Dong Wu Shang deeply said, "After all, this guy would've bragged about it non-stop if it had gone smoothly..."

Gu Du Xing nodded and generously said, "That's right. My understanding of Ji Mo leads me to think that he would've told us about every position very clearly... this chap is shameless."

Chu Yang and Rui Bu Tong looked at each other in amazement. It wasn't because it didn't go smoothly for Ji Mo. Instead, it was because it was extremely rare to see Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing ridiculing someone. And, the rarest thing was that they both were doing it together.

....

All the people's shadows had basically disappeared from the Northern Wilderness by now. So, Chu Yang was also planning to go back along with his brothers. He again searched for some elixirs in the final three days. After that, Chu Yang and his six brothers gathered together, and set foot on the way back home in full vigor!

Six Martial Kings of the Gu Clan... or so to say 'six members of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion' had gone back with the people of Dark Bamboo Clan long ago. So, these seven brothers had no cares on their journey. Therefore, they were moving at a lightning speed.

However, Chu Yang turned his head, and gave a glance back while leaving this Northern Wilderness.

[This is where two Supreme Experts took away my Qing Wu!]

[This is where my master left me!]

[How is Little Wu doing now?]

[How is my master doing now?]

Chu Yang deeply inhaled the unique cold air of this Northern Wilderness. After that, he exerted his strength, and exhaled it out... as if he had exhaled all the indescribable sorrow from his heart. Then, he solemnly said, "Let's go."

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di proposed to push forward while carrying weights as they stepped out of the Northern Wilderness. Chu Yang turned his eyes towards his brothers. And, the seven brothers then carried a thousand kilograms of Star Iron on their back!

The weight had doubled compared to last time!

However, these seven brothers were still trying to overtake each other. They were happy and excited. Everyone secretly had a competitive feeling in their heart even though they wouldn't speak of it. [Let's see who gives up on carrying this first!]

[It won't be me in any case!]

Each one of them thought that they would be able to carry the weight till the end.

The curtains to an entirely new and unique competition opened from here. However, the seven brothers hadn't anticipated that a huge storm was waiting for them a thousand miles away.

They were cracking jokes and having fun along the way. This journey was a long and difficult trek. And, they had been going neither too slowly... nor too recklessly...

Dong Wu Shang was thinking, [Should I have a conversation with my elder brother after going back home? But, how should I go

about it...] Dong Wu Shang was carrying a thousand kilograms of Star Iron on his back, and was dripping with sweat while thinking about this...

Gu Du Xing was thinking; [Should I consider getting married to Sister Xiao Miao ahead of time after I get back? Um, what would I say to her?]

Ji Mo was thinking... [Should I get on top of Aobo after going back? Sss~~~... But, that girl is tough and sturdy. I'm worried that I might not be able to tame her. What if I am one who gets turned over...? I will be done for... Um, should I consider using a psychedelic fragrance or aphrodisiac...?]

Tan Tan was tweaking his ears and scratching his cheeks... [The things they said... these seem very... well, you know... he-he... Should I go back and look for an opportunity to find Young Miss Xie Dan Qiong in order to practice those techniques?]

Rui Bu Tong was thinking... [Dammit! I must look for someone. How did they become couples without me finding out? But, where do I look for that someone? This is a headache. I will just steal someone's if I can't find one of my own...]

However, Luo Ke Di was somewhat worried... [Should I talk about it? Would Big Brother help me? This matter is very weird. It doesn't grow hair... Also... alas, what to do...? This is very troublesome. Would Big Brother laugh at me if I tell him about it...? But, I will be very embarrassed, and I won't be able to show my face...]

Chu Yang hurried along the way while thinking... [I should find the Lake of Despair after I go back to the Middle Three Heavens this time. And, I must look for the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword...]

...

Chapter 588: Ao Xie Yun's Escape

Ao Xie Yun was desperately fleeing at present! His embroidered moon-white robe – which had made him look very graceful and elegant in the past – was already torn and tattered. Moreover, it was also covered in bloodstains...

His body was also riddled with scars. His hair was a bit messy. His lips were dry, and his eyes had sunken deep into the eye sockets.

Ao Xie Yun had never been in such a difficult situation. After all, he was an heir to the clan that was recognized as the top clan in the Middle Three Heavens. He was the direct line of descents of the Ao Clan, and the top contender for the Clan Lord's position.

Moreover, he had never been hunted down like this. Nor had he fled from danger like this before!

He had been escaping for more than three months by now!

He had been attacked and forced to flee ever since he had left the Northern Wilderness. And, he had been forced to struggle for his life every day over these more than three months of time. He had found himself on the verge of death several times a day! Moreover, this Evil Young Master had lost a whole lot of people...

Many enemies had continued to appear from god knows where. All of them would be clad in black clothes, and would be wearing masks. One group of attackers would appear after regular intervals. Moreover, he would face an ambush at every strategically advantageous spot!

This whole journey had been riddled with fights and bloodbath. The fear of death had left them scared witless.

The enemy had used a stealthy poison mist in the very first wave of contact. And, they had thus eradicated most of Ao Clan's people at once. The four Martial Emperors had done their utmost to

protect Ao Xie Yun. But, the other King Level Experts had perished in this attack.

In fact, the entire team would've been annihilated if not for Ao Xie Yun who had constantly been on his guard against sneak attacks from the Black Devil Clan.

However, things had become even worse since the invisible falcons they used to communicate with the Ao Clan had also perished in that poison-mist attack! And, this had pushed them into a state of absolute isolation and helplessness.

There was a long road ahead. And, there was danger at every step...

After that, an unceasing wave of enemies had begun to appear in order to harass, attack, slaughter, and hunt down...

Only two Martial Emperors remained at Ao Xie Yun's side as of now. The other two had died in order to protect Ao Xie Yun during an ambush.

It had obviously been a desperate ambush-battle. After all, the enemy had dispatched a total of 8 Emperor Level Experts! And, they had ganged up on Ao Xie Yun's 5-member-team.

However, Ao Xie Yun had suddenly experienced a flash of realization, and had broken through to become a Sixth Grade Martial King in the middle of that battle. Else, he would've turned into a frozen corpse by now.

Ao Xie Yun and his team had been forced to deviate from the route of returning to the Ao Clan. After all, heading back home using the original route would undoubtedly amount to an act of courting death.

[The enemy is hell-bent on attacking us. So, how would they ever be willing to allow us to return safely to the Ao Clan? After all, not a single clan in the Middle Three Heavens could afford to withstand the crazy all-out blows of the Ao Clan!]

[Therefore, we must be extremely careful. We will die during this escape if we show even the slightest of negligence!]

Ao Xie Yun had been extremely careful. However, he had still become extremely tired after being on the run for three-and-a-half months without a break. There were more than 30 severe wounds on his body. And, these wounds were constantly reminding him that he couldn't escape any further! And, that's because he was likely to succumb to his own injuries if he tried to escape further... even if he didn't get captured by the enemy!

The two Martial Emperors at his side were already on the verge of dying. It could be estimated that they would've died by now if it weren't for their strong conviction to protect their Young Lord.

The cultivation of both men could be considered top-notch — Fifth Grade Emperor Level!

This could unconditionally be considered the peak strength in the Middle Three Heavens! However... the issue was that these two Fifth Grade Martial Emperors have had to face the joint attacks of at least seven-eight Emperor Level Experts every day... and that too more than once day. In fact, more than twice on some days!

They would face a dozen or more waves of attacks a day! Even a man of iron would get grinded into molten iron if he were to suffer through this.

"Young Lord, I'm afraid that it's going to be a major event this time," a Fifth Grade Martial Emperor of the Ao Clan – Du Qing Yun – said while panting for breath. His eyes were full of hatred and sorrow.

He was a peak Fifth Grade Martial Emperor. When had he ever been in such an aggravating situation? He had watched his old brothers die one by one at his side. However, he had been forced to flee with his tails between his legs like an old dog. This was far too humiliating!

However, he hadn't dared to engage in a decisive battle! He would love to fight a decisive battle. But, what would become of the Young Lord? Who would protect him?

What would happen to the Ao Clan if it lost its Young Lord?

"Yes, the Jianghu seems to be in chaos," Ao Xie Yun's features looked wan and haggard. There was a look of anxiety in his eyes.

"Young Lord, there's something that I must tell you in advance," another Fifth Grade Martial King – Qin Zhan – said in a serious manner while breathing somewhat heavily, "I'm afraid I may not be able to run away if there's another enemy attack. So, I will go all-out at the risk of my life, and block them. Meanwhile, Young Lord and Old Du must escape as a quickly as possible..."

A gloomy expression appeared in Ao Xie Yun's eyes.

Qin Zhan had been fiercely thrashed and wounded during the escape. There were at least seven stab wounds on his body. He had sustained these in Ao Xie Yun's place while guarding him. This was pretty evident from the tragic appearances of Qin Zhan and Du Qing Yun. In fact, Qin Zhan didn't even need to put that in words...

"Old Qin! Don't give up. We haven't reached that kind of a hopeless situation yet," Du Qing Yun said with some difficulty.

"What is the point of saying these words of encouragement after all this time?" Qin Zhan let out a carefree smile. He said, "Old Du, you and I have traveled around Jianghu throughout our lives. We have had 10,000 human lives under our control. What regret can we possibly have now? I will leave the Young Lord in your protection if the enemy caught up with us again."

Du Qing Yun took a deep breath. He looked up at the white clouds as they slowly drifted on the horizon. Then, he nodded slowly.

"We have been ambushed by Black Devil Clan, and the poison users of Ou Clan on this journey. Furthermore, several others

ought to be the members of the Tu Clan!" Qin Zhan coldly snorted. A killing intent surfaced in his eyes, "This debt of blood shall not be forgotten!"

"There should be other clans involved. They shouldn't have been able to setup such an inescapable net by relying on these three clans alone!" A killing intent appeared in Ao Xie Yun's eyes, "Tian Clan is also involved in this if I haven't misread!"

Qin Zhan coughed a few times, and somehow squeezed out a smile. He then said, "This whole assassination spree is our preordained ordeal. Indeed, some people are trying to hurt our Ao Clan! But, this whole experience will have turned into an enormous boon for the Young Lord if you manage to return. So, it wouldn't matter even if we few people end up dead."

Du Qing Yun forced a smile and said, "Indeed, such an experience is hard to come by in Jianghu. And, it is also a rare life-changing journey. Young Lord, what are your thoughts and feelings about this whole journey?"

Ao Xie Yun's eyes turned a little red.

[These two have always been my personal bodyguards. They're also my own elders. However, their only concern is my 'growth' and my 'realizations' amidst all this bloodshed of life and death!]

[It's because this stuff is what's genuinely needed in this unforgiving and brutal world of the Middle Three Heavens!]

"My thoughts and feelings are very deep... this whole journey of thousands of miles has overturned my understanding of the Middle Three Heavens!" Ao Xie Yun restrained the tears in his eyes with great difficulty as he attentively said, "I was under the clan's protection in the past. I've always had a smooth sailing. It didn't matter where I'd go... there would always be people competing to give me face as long as I announced my identity. I could get anything done with only a few words from my mouth...

"Things have always been too easy!" Ao Xie Yun heaved a deep sigh and said, "They've been so favorable that I've never realized that it was making me somewhat smug and conceited. Then, I effortlessly seized the title of the first rank of the young generation in the Middle Three Heavens. And, that made me even more arrogant.

"But, these assassination attempts have made me fall from the ninth heaven... and straight into the abyss! It has crushed my delusions!" Ao Xie Yun sighed dimly, "I've realized that I was only relying on the name and influence of my clan; that's all. I was just another good-for-nothing young master...

"They didn't reject me or my demands because they wanted to get on good side of the Ao Clan. They only wanted to seek help from the Ao Clan for their selfish interests... or to exploit me to their advantage. But, they attacked me without the slightest hesitation once they determined that they could get even bigger benefits by getting rid of me!

"I considered Ou Du Xiao a friend. But, it's the Ou Clan that has calculated my behavioral patterns to launch a ruthless attack on me! I also considered Tian Bu Hui a nodding acquaintance, and I got along quite well with him as well. However, the Tian Clan is sparing no effort in trying to kill me now. I once had a friendly chat with Tu Qian Hao over a glass of wine in the Lower Three Heavens. But, the Tu Clan is also trying its utmost to kill me now!

"I've also visited the Black Devil Clan once. The Black Devil Clan had welcomed me with open arms. The Young Lord of the Black Devil Clan has always been a mystery for everyone. But, he even made an exception that time, and showed me his true face. That was a sign of extraordinary respect and trust. However, the Black Devil Clan is now dead-set on assassinating me!"

Ao Xie Yun was talking in a low voice. And, the two Martial Emperors were listening quietly.

The mountain breeze was whistling in a calm manner.

"I always believed that I had a wide circle of friends. I assumed that I was rich and generous, and had friends all over the world. However, I never thought that the ones who would entrap me, harm me the most, make me suffer so incredibly... and even try to put me to death would precisely be those so-called friends of the past!"

Ao Xie Yun continued with a desolate smile, "I will consider a 'lesson learned well' if I can return to the clan!"

The two Martial Emperors remained silent for a long time. Then, Du Qing Yun heaved a deep sigh and said, "Young Lord, the word 'friend' can't be used so casually. Similarly, the word 'brothers' can't be used very casually. You have only seen the surface now. But, you still can't see the essence of these two words.

"Benefits! They made friends with you for benefits. And now, they want to kill you for greater benefits! They want to kill you, but not necessarily for the purpose of killing you! There must be some hidden objective."

Qin Zhan tried his best, and pushed himself. He then let out some meaningful and heartfelt words.

"Young Lord... Tu Qing Hao, Ou Du Xiao, and Tian Bu Hui... These people may be your brothers in name. But, they are also your rivals! You may be far stronger and much more talented than them. You may even have managed to take up the title of the rank-one in the younger generation. But, they still won't be convinced about your achievements because you bear the name of the number-one clan! Therefore, you can't be their friend.

"Moreover, there must be a 'core' when it comes to genuine friends or brothers. In other words, there must be a central figure that is admired by everyone. Everyone should obey him! Treating this person as the human core gives rise to sincere admiration. From admiration comes the desire to learn. From learning comes a

deep sense of submission. And, a circle slowly forms around this central figure when one sees the others admiring this central figure as much as oneself. This then takes the embryonic form of a friendship!

"Then, they start doing things together under the leadership of this man. And, they gradually develop mutual sincerity towards each other — they become brothers. And, this brotherhood solidifies if they have survived though a life and death crisis. In fact, it solidifies to such an extent that it can't be shaken by thunder. And, this brotherhood grows even stronger than metal and stones if they constantly survive through such crises of life and death!

"You don't have such friends and brothers! You may have always believed that you did. But, the fact is that those so-called friends of yours have come to kill you now.

"Therefore, the first thing you must learn from this is that — you mustn't trust your friends and brothers unless you don't have enough benefits to provide!

"I've only seen a handful of people in your younger generation who can be called 'true friends'," Du Qing Yun gasped in admiration, "King of Hell Chu, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di!

"These people treat King of Hell Chu as their core. It's because King of Hell Chu can achieve feats which they can't! So, they can only admire him! King of Hell Chu is someone who can topple the entire world with his own strength alone. And, this is something they can't do. King of Hell Chu's cultivation may be a lot weaker than theirs, but he can catch up with them at the fastest speed. And, that's again something they can't achieve! So, they admire!"

...

Chapter 589: Journey to the North!

"Young Lord, could you have achieved the things that King of Hell Chu did in those conditions and circumstances if you had been in his place?" Qin Zhan had spoken these words somewhat impolitely. But, there were good intentions behind them.

"No. I couldn't have done it!" Ao Xie Yun remained silent for a long while at first. Then, he finally spoke up. A trace of pain flitted across his eyes while he was speaking these words. However, he somehow felt relaxed in his heart.

Ao Xie Yun had previously analyzed the events that had taken place in the Lower Three Heavens. And, he had reached a conclusion – [I couldn't do it!] But, he didn't know why he felt that he was very distant from that conclusion at that time. However, the words 'I couldn't do it' had genuinely come from his heart this time.

He had genuinely admitted that he wasn't as good as King of Hell Chu. Ao Xie Yun had said such a thing for the first time in his life.

Du Qing Yun gently inhaled the air, and slowly blended it into his breath. It nurtured his body. Then, he said in a serious voice, "Young Lord, you've said these words in an unpleasant way. Your biggest resource isn't your aptitude. Instead, it is your family background. Tu Qian Hao, Ou Du Xiao, and the others must think that they may not have been worse than you if they had been born in the Ao Clan! Therefore, they refuse to accept you as someone superior!"

Ao Xie Yun muttered, "Could it be that being born in the Ao Clan makes the entirety of my hard work go in vain? Who can know that living in the top aristocratic clan is much more difficult that living in any other clan? Doesn't one need to make several times more efforts if one wants stick out in the Ao Clan?"

Qin Zhan remained silent for a while. Then, he said, "It doesn't

matter how much hard work you do. After all, the first thought others will have would be of the Ao Clan if someone mentions about your achievements. And, they would bring out your name after that only. This is the glory of being born in a great clan. But, this is also the helplessness of being born in a great clan."

Ao Xie Yun pondered and slowly nodded. He then said, "But, I am Ao Xie Yun and a member of the Ao Clan. And, no one can change this fact. So, it is better that I accept it since it can't be changed!"

"That's right. You are you no matter what happens. And, this won't change." Qin Zhan exposed a joyful smile as he said, "Young Lord, I believe that you will leave everyone gob-smacked when you return to the clan."

Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan looked at each other. They both found a trace of sadness in each other's eyes. [That's right. Ao Xie Yun will be a changed man if he can return to the clan after experiencing this hunt. He would be more mature and more sensible. Moreover, his fierceness towards the people of Jianghu will also increase. But, it's unfortunate that the two of us wouldn't be there to see that.]

They sighed at the same time. Then, they slightly smiled. [What difference does it make if we get to see it or not?]

Ao Xie Yun suddenly smiled and said, "I'm not as good as King of Hell Chu, and I can't achieve the things that he can. But, it's not necessary that King of Hell Chu can also do the things that I can! After all, King of Hell Chu isn't a member of the Ao Clan."

He smiled confidently. He was still proud even though he was in a difficult situation. Then, he insipidly said, "Moreover, I have the Ao Clan. And, I have you two. What difference does it make even if King of Hell Chu is extraordinary? After all, there's no conflict between him and us. The state of the entire Middle Three Heavens will change because of the three of us if we escape. And, that's how the matters stand!"

"And, both you uncles will have made the history of the Middle Three Heavens when the time comes!" Ao Xie Yun's eyes shone.

His thoughts were finely detailed. How observant he was? He could obviously see that these two uncles were facing this dead end, and had started to feel that they had nowhere to go. Consequently, they didn't have any fighting spirit left.

[I'm afraid that both of them will sacrifice their lives to protect me when we meet the next attack if they continue to carry this mindset.]

[Therefore, they both wish to educate me in these last moments! They want to teach me about the experiences of their lifetime in this short period of time.]

[But, how can I – Ao Xie Yun – not be a man with a conscience? You both are ready to risk your lives for me. But, how can I watch you die in front of me?]

The fighting spirit of these two men had been constrained by their struggles thus far. So, his current intention was to evoke their pride and a 'sense of mission' first. After all, that could help them in finding a way out of this dead-end.

As expected, a flash of brilliance exploded in the eyes of Du Qing Yu and Qin Zhan after listening to his words.

"Moreover, we may not necessarily be out of options here," Ao Xie Yun calmed down and said, "We mustn't go in the direction of the Ao Clan. Instead, we should go back!"

"Go back?" both of them asked in unison.

"That's right. We should go in the Northern Wilderness's direction once again!" A light flashed in Ao Xie Yun's eyes, "This choice of route would inevitably be far from their expectations. After all, they expect that we must be attempting to take the long detour route back to the Ao Clan. Therefore, we wouldn't be able to make through if we take the detour. And, we anyway can't take

the direct route. So, it would be best to draw back in this situation.

"First, we would be able to buy time if we go back. Second, we would be able to save our lives for the time being. Third... our clan would find out that we haven't reached the clan in scheduled time. So, they will send people to look for us! And, that would be our chance!"

Ao Xie Yun said with a smile, "I believe that the three of us are strong-enough to prevent ourselves from starving to death even if we are in the Northern Wilderness!"

"That's right." The spirits of the two men got aroused.

"I have a plan for today. First, both of you will recover. I'm the Young Lord of the Ao Clan. But, you must know that I will only become a corpse if I don't have you two by my side! What hope would be left for me if you both die and I am left alone?"

Ao Xie Yun sincerely heaved a deep sigh.

"Don't worry, Young Lord. We won't die until we see you out of danger with our own eyes!" The two of them looked at each other, and made up their minds.

[Now isn't the time to die!]

"Um, both the uncles must first drink the two bottles of 'spirit beast blood essence' since we're going to follow this plan," Ao Xie Yun took out the ninth grade spirit beast blood essence from his bosom, and handed it over to them. "This blood essence will anyway be wasted if we aren't able to return for some time. So, you two must gulp it down. You'd be able to restore some strength even if you can't comprehend anything."

However, Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan had conflicting views.

[But, this is a treasure that our clan desperately needs. The main task of this journey was to take back the blood essence of spirit beast. Wouldn't it prove that we had no benefit from this journey if we drink it up right now?]

[But, it will expire after a certain time period if we don't drink it now. It may even get ruined during an enemy attack. Wouldn't that be an even more reckless wastage of resources?]

Du Qing Yun heaved a deep sigh after struggling for a long while. Then, he took the two bottles, and said, "The situation compels us to do this. We have no other choice but to improvise the strategy! So, both of us will drink it along with and you, Young Lord! All of us will drink it in equal proportions. And, the matter of reaching a state of comprehension can only depend on fate. After all, everything depends on luck."

"Very well!" Qin Zhan also straightforwardly complied, "We must save our lives first since this is the case."

None of the three had any objections. So, they each gulped down one mouthful of the spirit beast's blood essence.

All three of them opened their eyes after an hour of drinking the blood essence. But, their complexion was bizarre...

"Sixty-percent of my injuries have gotten healed... But, I was unable to comprehend anything. Nothing has awakened..." Du Qing Yun smacked his lips and scratched his scalp.

"My injuries have healed to fifty-percent. But, I too have achieved nothing." Qin Zhan's complexion looked a little better. But, he was also puzzled.

"My injuries have healed to ninety-percent... And, I also don't sense any other signs." Ao Xie Yun's cultivation level was the lowest among them. Therefore, he had recovered the most with the same amount of the blood essence.

"But, why has nothing exceptional happened?" All the three became extremely depressed. They looked at each other in dismay. They were extremely disappointed.

They obviously didn't know that half of the blood essence of most of the ninth grade spirit beasts in the Northern Wilderness had

already been extracted by Bu Liu Qing. And, the one they had run into was precisely one of 'those' spirit beasts.

This kind of blood essence was capable of healing their injuries. So, it could be considered good. However, it couldn't help one in attaining a state of realization...

All of them sighed. But, Du Qing Yun's complexion suddenly changed a moment later. He then said, "I heard something!"

Everyone became alert.

Birds started to fly in alarm from three directions from faraway in the jungle. Moreover, they were heading towards this direction!

"Run!" there wasn't enough time for sighs or regrets. So, all of them dashed backwards while facing ahead.

"Shua, shua..."

Numerous concealed weapons were suddenly launched from the front. They were beaming with deep blue and purple colors. It was evident that they had been dipped in highly toxic poisons!

Du Qing Yun lightly snorted. His body slid and he appeared in front of his group. He had already taken off the robe he had been wearing. His elementary energy infused into his robe as he wielded it as a shield. All the three of them positioned themselves behind this shield as they dashed backwards like arrows.

"Don't let them get away!" Eight people's shadow appeared flying high in the sky from four directions. These people were moving towards to the middle. Sharp, long, and loud whizzing sounds also started to echo from all directions. These sounds had basically announced that the enemy was here!

The sound of fluttering of sleeves echoed unceasingly.

Du Qing Yun laughed out loud. The concealed weapons shot towards them were enough in number to fill the entire sky. Moreover, they were rushing towards them from all directions

now. Du Qing Yun shook his arms around as he prepared to receive the concealed weaponry on to his robe. He also shot out palm to attack at the same time!

The weapons of these three individuals had already been destroyed over the course of the several besieges they had faced up until now. Therefore, they only had their palms to face the enemy!

A sword-light flashed on the opposite side. A saber-light also began to move unhindered. Two tall and sturdy figures appeared behind the saber-light and sword-light. They were dressed in all black, and had worn masks on their faces. They had abundance of murderous aura in their eyes!

Du Qing Yun and the other two were retreating with everything they had. However, Qin Zhan suddenly stepped up from behind and patted on Du Qing Yun's back with a 'bam'.

Du Qing Yun's body stopped drawing back as a result. Instead, it started to rush forward.

Qin Zhan pulled Ao Xie Yun towards the back of Du Qing Yun. Then, the three of them took advantage of this fleeting moment, and crazily rushed away like tornadoes.

Multiple whistling sounds resounded from behind. However, Qin Zhan suddenly had a stroke of luck in this moment. The long robe behind his body had flown upwards with a fluttering sound during this moment. It had thus spun up behind him, and had obstructed the incoming concealed weapons. Therefore, he simply continued to dash forward without turning his head back. He took advantage of the fact that the people who were coming from the three directions hadn't encircled them yet, and entered into the jungle.

However, Ao Xie Yun's body suddenly shivered when they were about to enter the jungle. Qin Zhan grabbed him with his big hands without the slightest of hesitation. A needle laced with a blue poison had stuck itself to Ao Xie Yun's back. And, Ao Xie Yun started to convulse as a result. However, Qin Zhan carried him,

and didn't stay here. He then rushed towards the back of Du Qing Yun like a whirlwind while ignoring the blood that had started to flow out from Ao Xie Yun's body.

Sharp whistling sounds came from behind. Countless enemies had begun to chase after them...

"Pursue them! Don't spare anyone. Kill them at all costs!" a grim voice firmly ordered. The half-unconscious Ao Xie Yun heard this voice in his state of immense pain. And, he suddenly felt that this voice sounded familiar. But, Qin Zhan gushed out fiercely while holding him before he could think any further. They then leapt into the jungle, and rushed towards the direction of the Northern Wilderness...

....

Chapter 590: Strange Ambush?

The experts were chasing after the three men like whirlwinds with 'whistling' sounds. However, those three had quickly gone far into the jungle. In fact, the forest was fairly silent now.

One person walked out from four different directions each after a long time had passed.

They were Meng Luo, Tu Qian Hao, Ou Du Xiao, and Tian Bu Hui!

"They should be headed to the north!" A trace of caution was flickering in Tian Bu Hui's eyes, "Ao Xie Yun is very cautious. He did the very opposite of what we had expected."

Ou Du Xiao waved his hand and sprinkled white mist in the air. The white mist filled the air at first. Then, it settled on the ground. And, three blank spots appeared on the ground as a result.

"They should've been here a moment ago. They shouldn't have been able to carry on because of their injuries under normal circumstances. But, they've suddenly became vigorous and lively. Something unexpected must have happened here."

Ou Du Xiao looked at the blank spots amidst the white mist. Then, he flipped his hand and sprinkled an odorless black mist. It suddenly turned colorless after it came in contact with the white mist. Then, bright-red bloodstains appeared on the ground. They were needle-tip sized, and were scattered on the ground.

"They've consumed the blood essence of a ninth grade spirit beast!" Ou Du Xiao solemnly said.

The others were startled by this strange and mysterious method. They had once again witnessed the formidable techniques of the Poison Spirit Clan.

No one could hide from this kind of mystical detection method!

"We have joined hands to hunt down Ao Xie Yun. We will become the butt of all jokes if he still manages to escape alive..." Meng Luo smiled in a soft yet devious manner.

"Hunt them down!"

Suddenly, a gloomy voice said, "You will never be able to kill Ao Xie Yun if you're too late to follow them."

A masked man's figure appeared on the treetop along with the voice. He was dressed in black. He was drifting in the face of wind. It was the Young Black Devil! He only sneered once as he soared like a black cloud. And, he headed north to chase after them.

"Humph!" all four of them snorted in unison. Yet, none of them dared to neglect him. They then got up and rushed towards the north.

...

"We'll reach the Chill Wind Forest after we cross this precipitous ravine in front of us!" Gu Du Xing was sweating profusely. After all, he was carrying a thousand kilogram of Star Iron. So, he obviously wasn't feeling light.

"Are we going to look for trouble with the Ou Clan in there?" Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were somewhat eager to pick a fight.

"I don't think we can openly challenge the strength and qualification of an aristocratic clan by solely relying on the strength of us seven people." Dong Wu Shang snorted and said, "You can go if you're itching to do it. But, we won't accompany you."

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di stuck out their tongues in response.

"We don't need to look for trouble with them. Perhaps, they're looking for us instead," Gu Du Xing calmly said, "The Ou Clan wouldn't dare to face our retaliation in a passive manner!"

"That's right," Chu Yang nodded in affirmation, "We must be

careful."

Everyone had increased their vigilance along the way. Anyway, they hadn't anticipated that they would get through the Chill Wind Forest without experiencing any danger on the way. In fact, Gu Du Xing and the others had readied themselves to face the enemy as they advanced in the forest.

"How come there's no sound of activity here? How come there's no ambush here? Does the Ou Clan have no guts? They didn't even dare to attempt an ambush on us?" Luo Ke Di had an expression of restlessness. They had already passed through the Chill Wind Forest, and had arrived in front of a mountain. Second Young Master Luo had felt that his strength was increasing very rapidly these days. So, he was always looking for an opportunity to show off.

"Sigh..." Chu Yan heaved a deep sigh. Then, he firmly glared at Luo Ke Di. "Why do you have to be such a doomsayer?"

Chu Yang received a slight warning from of Sword Spirit just when he was dropping the last word on Luo Ke Di. [There's a massive enemy ambush in the mountain up ahead!]

"Remove your Star Irons weights! Take a rest first, and get ready to fight." Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang became vigilant as Chu Yang waved his hand, "Is there an ambush?"

"There's an ambush!" Chu Yang swiftly halted behind a tree. He then held his breath, "It's not 'just' an ambush. Instead, it's a massive ambush!"

Everyone glared at Luo Ke Di when they heard this.

Luo Ke Di blinked. He felt somewhat confused... [My words can't possibly be this powerful, right? I only spoke a few thoughtless words... and they ended up calling out an 'ambush'...?]

Tan Tan shrugged his shoulders. He raised his nose up and said, "You guys are meager fifth or sixth grade Martial Kings. So, you

shrimps should stay back. See how I blast them away with my fart!"

Everyone would've ganged up on Tan Tan if the present situation wasn't so unusual; they would've beaten him up because of this remark!

"Tan Tan and Bu Tong, you both go over from that direction in a pair. Wu Shang and Ke Di, you both go from that direction. Du Xing and Ji Mo, you both follow me. We will cover the middle. Remember that the ambush should be three-thousand feet away from here. You are free to attack and kill the enemy once you've gotten close!"

Chu Yang commanded without the slightest of hesitation.

Chu Yang would've normally said, [Listen to my orders and act in unison. We mustn't alert the enemy by mistake!]

However, Chu Yang had no other choice but to let his brothers act on their own now.

After all, all of them had molded their respective fighting tactics. So, he would only make his brothers lose their own styles if he were to blatantly constrain them.

And, they would never be able to work independently if they lost their personal style.

Everyone silently looked at each other after they had rested for a while. Then, Tan Tan and Rui Bu Tong dashed away like two cheetahs from the side while issuing 'shua' sounds.

Dong Wu Shang held the Black Saber in his hand. Luo Ke Di had hidden his sword behind his elbow. They then disappeared silently.

Gu Du Xing, Chu Yang, and Ji Mo also set into action. Chu Yang was at the front, and Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo were behind him. However, Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo were left startled after they had advanced more than a dozen steps.

Chu Yang's body had changed into a distorted blue smoke, and had crept forward within the dense forest. But, he hadn't issued any sound along the way.

It seemed as if his body hadn't even bumped into a leaf. It was possible that it may have bumped into a leaf or two, but the sound that emitted out was unlike the normal sound of collision of a human body with the leaves. Moreover, the sound was so feeble that it seemed as if a little bird had landed on the leaf, and the leaf had gently fallen down because of that.

"You must remember this while moving stealthily in a forest. First, each tree has its direction of growth. And, you must align yourself along the direction of that tree's growth as you go forward if you don't want to be discovered," Chu Yang softly said. Then, he silently chopped on two trees on his either side with his palms.

Chips of wood whirled about.

"Both of you must look at this. The pattern of this tree is laterally downwards. Now, look at the leaves on this tree. There are leaves of various shapes and sizes, but one thing is common – the tip section of the leafstalk will certainly be laterally downwards. These leaves will issue very loud sound if they are touched from any other direction. And, the experienced people of Jianghu will become alert from that sound. But, it will only issue a natural sound of falling off if it falls after you touch it laterally downwards along the direction of its growth.

"However, the tree on this side is somewhat spiral or helix. Such kinds of leaves often take more time to fall. Therefore, I will use my strength in a spiral direction when I pass by such a tree."

Chu Yang explained bit by bit, "This phenomenon can be clearly shown by the tree's bark as well."

Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo went ahead on either side, and nodded as they observed carefully.

"The next is your footwork. Don't just think about issuing energy from under your feet. Also pay attention to the direction of the wind, and the growing position of the underbrush. The underbrush at the foot of the tree is bound to be inclined towards the opposite direction of the tree. You must step on while following this inclination, and along the direction of the wind. Consequently, the sound issued wouldn't be much even if you don't issue energy. And, there wouldn't be any sound if you adapt to these directions."

Chu Yang continued, "You must pay attention to the colors of your clothes and to the appearance of the leaves behind you when there's sunlight like this. You must also pay attention to the mottled shadows falling on the leaves to your opposite side.

"You can make use of these aspects to stand in a suitable position if the enemy looks over. Then, your personal appearance will get camouflaged by the forest under these mottled shadows even if you don't have any place to hide. Consequently, the enemy wouldn't be able to spot you even after coming face-to-face!"

Chu Yang had made a movement to demonstrate while speaking this. He had rapidly moved from his original position, and had gone to the opposite side. And, Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo impressively discovered that there were bright and dark patches of shadows over his entire body even though he was facing the sunlight. Chu Yang's black robe seemed to have changed into a big tree under these effects. So, it had become impossible to spot him amidst the trees.

His face was also covered by the shadows of tree leaves under the bright sunlight. He had dark and bright shades on his face. They wouldn't have discovered him if they hadn't previously known that he was hiding in that place.

"It's a common knowledge that the night is the best time for stealth operations. But, the best time to hide in mountainous forests is daytime... when the sky is clear. It's because the bright

sunlight can camouflage almost anything!"

Chu Yang lightly said, "Now, both of you keep pace with me. We will rush at them from the front while they will be looking towards us with their eyes wide open!"

They weren't words of bravery. But, Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo felt their warm blood rush in their hearts as soon as they listened to these words.

It felt as if a murderous aura of blood-thirst had been ferociously revived by these words!

"Let's go!"

The three silhouettes moved as if arrows had been launched by the bow string!

They rushed over to a thousand feet, and then again to five-hundred feet... they were close to the enemy now! And, they were getting closer and closer...

"There are fifty people!" Sword Spirit provided the accurate number.

The illusion created by Chu Yang's figure under the reflection of sunlight was that of a big lizard climbing up to the hilltop as he approached the enemy. He was only three-hundred feet away from the enemy right now.

Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo came up following him. The three of them looked ahead, and were startled by what they saw... [What's going on?]

The three of them looked at each other in dismay. They were unable to make sense of what they were seeing!

Majority of these people were from the Ou Clan. And, there was no doubt about this! After all, the Poison Spirit Ou Clan had a kind of cold and shady aura that no other could imitate.

This was indeed an ambush. Moreover, the troop lineup was

quite vast!

Chu Yang took a quick look around, and felt that it was problematic. [There are at least fifteen or sixteen Martial Kings among them. Also, four of the auras are profound and unfathomable...]

"There are sixteen Martial Kings. And, the rest are ninth grade Revered Martial Artists! Also, there are four Martial Emperors. Two of them are second grade, and two are third grade," Sword Spirit gave a precise report.

Chu Yang wasn't baffled by the fact that there were four Martial Emperors among them.

However, what made him flabbergasted was... [They want to ambush us, okay. But, why are they facing the other direction?]

There were rows of backs and butts lined up in front of Chu Yang...

The experts lying in wait were stretching their necks, and were looking forward. A few of them were sitting cross-legged while being calm and composed. But, their backs were turned towards Chu Yang and the others.

[Can this be regarded as an ambush?] Chu Yang found it too bizarre. [You guys have come to kill us. But, you have turned your butts to us... This is the first time I'm seeing such a strange ambush!]

[Damn! Is it possible that you want to fart together in order to suffocate us to death?]

....

Chapter 591: Pissing Leads to Tragedy!

The three of them looked on the opposite side, and they felt that it was an unfathomable mystery.

Ji Mo moved the corners of his mouth. He nearly laughed. [Dammit! This is the first time I'm seeing an ambush with buttocks.]

A burst of wind blew from the south. And, faint whispers come through along with the wind.

"...Why haven't they come..."

"...don't worry... they must've stopped over on the way..."

"...attention... what is over there?"

"...fu*k me... it's a rabbit..."

"...Fu*k your mother's pu*sy..."

...

The corners of Chu Yang's mouth twitched.

Both the third grade Martial Emperors suddenly stood up. It seemed that they had sensed something. They suspiciously looked around. Then, they shook their heads and smiled as if they were mocking themselves. Then, they went over to the either sides of the division to examine the ambush's set up.

They had a very attentive appearance.

Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, and Ji Mo became even more confused. [We are here... behind your buttocks. Why do you keep inspecting your front?]

They only heard one of the Martial Emperors asking in a sinking voice, "Have you checked the poisonous zone? It hasn't lost its effectiveness, has it?"

A King Level Expert behind a tree replied in a low voice, "Elder,

please don't worry. I have already checked it three times. I have even added twice as much poison in that area. So, this is a sure-fire. There's no issue."

"Um, you must ensure that it doesn't get discovered in advance. Only surrounding them won't be sufficient. These fellows are very vigilant. They will slip away if they sense any sign of trouble. We must ensure that it's done properly this time," this Martial Emperor nodded and reminded.

"Yes."

The two people wobbled their heads, and returned to their original spots.

Chu Yang quietly lay low in the underbrush. He was motionless. So, it was obvious that Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo would also follow suit.

Suddenly, two black-robed men stood up from their ambush spots. They came forth and made a signal.

A Martial Emperor knitted his brows. Then, he shouted in a low voice, "What are you two doing?"

"Eh... going to take a piss."

The Martial Emperor exposed a look of disgust on his face. He waved his hand, and said in a bad mood, "Move away a little further."

The two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists repeatedly nodded and complied. They then walked backwards. Their feet landed on dead leaves, and issued crunching sounds as they moved more than three-hundred feet away. They then stopped at the path that had been camouflaged under forest trees.

One of them said, "Dammit, it has been half-a-month here, and we haven't seen a shadow yet."

The other man sighed as he untied his belt, "Wait, it's good that

they haven't come. After all, who in that damned group would be easy to deal with?"

"Yes, that's true." That previous one opened his zip, and took out his 'chap'. He closed his eyes, held his breath, and was ready to shoot.

Sound of Pitter-Patter came...

Second Master Ji got angry!

He had lain down in the underbrush. So, he couldn't move. But, these two guys had unexpectedly walked towards his direction. Then, they had stopped there. Ji Mo had opened the slits of his eyes, and he could clearly see four legs dressed in black right before him.

Then, an arrow of water had fallen right upon the left side of his face along with smell of urine and steam. Its force was also quite acute.

The warm liquid was splashed drop by drop along with a strong steaming heat. And, it got splashed on the Second Master Ji's cheek.

Second Master Ji blew his top!

Then, another arrow of water fell on the right cheek of Second Master Ji along with the smell of urine...

Second Master Ji couldn't tolerate it anymore! He had been feeling nauseated before. But, the first stream of water was at least glistening white. But, this one was like a yellow river. It looked like the piss of a sick man. Moreover, its smell was even stronger...

Ji Mo felt grief and indignation at the moment. [The three of us are lying in the same place. But, why did both of you have to piss on me alone? Are you trying to bully me or something?]

He got even madder. He finally couldn't take it anymore. So, he stood up with a whooshing sound.

These two Revered martial Artists had closed their eyes, and were taking a piss of satisfaction. They peed to their heart's content for some time. They cleared out the stock that they had held back for a very long time. And, they felt indescribably comfortable as a result. How could they think that they had been showering a living person while urinating?

This was very shocking for them. So, they opened their eyes. Then, their pearl-like eyes popped out of their sockets. And, they became very nervous. The arrows of water had been shot with full strength and urgency until now. However, they had suddenly lost strength. So, the urine went into the crotch of their trousers with dripping sounds. And then, the stream lost its fuel...

They were about to scream. But, the infuriated Second Master Ji had already clutched their throats. A very slight cracking sound was heard, and the napes of their necks were strangely crooked to one side. Second Master Ji's frantic vigour had burst into their meridians, and had sealed the movement of the lower halves of their bodies.

Therefore, the bodies of these two men only shivered twice as they died a violent death.

His hands were still upwards until this moment. And, it seemed as if he had clutched birds in his hands. However, pitter-patter sounds were heard before he could change the position of his hands... The streams which had been interrupted because of their owners getting a fright a while ago... had again ejected since the owners had lost consciousness. So, they continued to spray out...

None of it went waste. All of it got sprayed on Second Master Ji's trouser...

Second Master Ji tilted his head and crooked his eyes. He clenched his teeth in hatred. But, he didn't dare to make a sound.

A voice came from a distant place, "What's going on?" This person had heard the sound of activity from this side.

Second Master Ji was stunned. [How should I reply?]

Suddenly, a low and deep voice angrily answered, "This bastard pissed on my pants." It was the voice of the dead Revered Martial Artist who had earlier spoken first.

Ji Mo was flabbergasted by this. So, he turned his head, but he only saw Chu Yang opening and closing his mouth. It was Chu Yang who had spoken this!

It was a rare sight to see King of Hell Chu imitating the voice of that person so perfectly.

Ji Mo came to realization. So, he hastily and vaguely mumbled to himself, "I wasn't being careless... I didn't do it intentionally... what are you mad about..."

Chu Yang retorted, "Not being careless? Both my trouser legs got wet..."

Ji Mo nearly felt hurt inside. [It's me whose fu*king pants got wet dammit.]

A loud noise came from that side as some people laughed in a low voice. They were taking joy in other's misfortune. That Martial Emperor didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he scolded them. Then, no one uttered a voice anymore.

But, the other people became restless. They then heard a person saying in a low voice, "Why did the guy pee on the other's trousers?" this voice was full of artificial intrigue.

Another person muttered while deeply thinking, "I guess that the urine got diverted."

"But, why would the urine get diverted?" It seemed as if that man was even more amazed than before. In fact, it was as if he simply couldn't comprehend this.

"There can be a couple of reasons behind it..." the other person's pondering voice said.

"What reason?" the amazed voice continued to interrogate in detail.

"Well, one of the reason could be... that he suddenly recalled 'something' before going to sleep last night. But, he clearly doesn't have the right place for doing that here... So, he must've held it in out of distress. An abnormality can easily appear if you hold in for too long... Um, then... he probably must've drunk a lot of water in the morning. And thus, his urine got deviated!"– said the seriously pondering voice.

"Oh, I see! That's such a shame! But, what is the second reason?"

"The second reason is hard to explain... Well you see... some people have to use a bizarre way of peeing when they don't get those means for a very long time. So, they hold their pike in their hands, and charge and breakthrough the enemy lines. They then use various means to wipe out their inner demons... And, they easily become prone to getting tired and weak after wiping out their inner demons. Um, such period of weakness can basically make the urine to deviate..."

"It is such a penetrating insight ah. Still, shame... such a shame!"

"You're flattering me..."

Laughter rose up from everywhere with a bang. No one dared to laugh loudly, but everyone was suddenly in somewhat of an uproar. Many people were silently laughing while rolling on the ground. Their whole bodies were shaking and convulsing as a result.

Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, and Ji Mo were also amazed by this... [This is a group of fu*king talented people!]

[It seems like these guys have been restraining themselves very hard. Someone else is taking a piss over there, and this guy is telling philosophies while giving a long analysis. In fact, it seems as if he's teaching a very important lesson...]

Chu Yang stood up. Ji Mo gently let go of the two corpses.

Then, Chu Yang went forward while issuing whooshing sounds. He mumbled to himself and complained in a low voice, "Fu*k! Look at my trousers. It's wet and cold now. What did I do to deserve this? How fortunate that you guys are still laughing and feeling happy..."

More sounds of laughter were heard as soon as he said this. A few people even turned their heads. "It's obviously because you two have a shitty karma..."

These people had turned their heads, but they only saw the black clothes of Chu Yang and Ji Mo. They didn't see their faces. After all, the faces of both the men were masked in the shade of trees...

Someone even ridiculed them, "Do you two feel such deep emotions towards each other that you take a piss while standing so close to each other..."

Everyone started laughing after he said this.

Chu Yang approached this fellow at the extreme edge with a smile. He was walking and speaking along the way. However, he was imitating the voice so perfectly that no one could discover that it was an imitation. Therefore, nobody paid attention that he had slightly diverted from his direction.

"Damn it. I am telling you that I'm never peeing with him from next time..." Chu Yang softly laughed. He showed that he was somewhat regretting, somewhat humiliated, and somewhat angry. But, he had taken out his sword. He then silently moved toward the nearest guy who was present thirty feet away, and pierced through his ribs. He pierced his heart, and pierced his lungs. And, that man's body got firmly nailed to the ground as a result.

This person hadn't kept his guard up. After all, who would've thought that his own comrade would plot an evil scheme against him? This man had been taking joy in others misfortune and

laughing a moment ago. But, his ribs were aching right now. He was about to shout in pain when blood suddenly gushed into his lungs...

Then, a strong and fierce vitality broke into the meridians of his body. And, it gained control over his central nervous system. Then, his eyes silently stuck out... And, his breath seized to exist.

Chu Yang grinned with annoyance. He then walked while smiling and cussing, "Look at you guys... someone got urinated on his trousers and you guys are laughing instead of getting angry at the one who did it?"

He was laughing out loud while speaking. Then, he calmed his smile and pretended to be somewhat resentful. He had secretly drawn out his sword from the body of the guy he had just killed. Then, he stuck it behind his thigh.

Then, he shook his head, and sighed as he angrily walked towards another person who was behind a rock. He was talking relaxed steps, and each step was landing heavily on the ground. Therefore, it looked like he was walking in his own base camp.

Ji Mo followed behind him. He felt his heart pounding wildly.

[Oh my god, I've truly experienced what is called 'invisible kill' amidst this chatter today. The toughest thing is being genuinely relaxed before and after killing. He doesn't make any effort. He doesn't expose any traces of his murderous aura!]

The man behind the rock was having an intense stomach-ache from all the laughing. He was also the one who had laughed the most.

Chu Yang angrily scolded, "This isn't a fu*king joke. You look like a damn seal while laughing. Is it that much fun to be laughing at me, huh? I will teach you a lesson today!"

Then, he brazenly and swiftly pounced on this man with an intense 'whoosh' sound of the rushing wind.

....

Chapter 592: This is a Misunderstanding!

That man laughed out loud and said, "Fu*k, I am laughing at the banter between you two, and you still can't stand it? You even came looking for trouble with me? You've got quite the nerve..."

He turned around while laughing. But, he saw that a dazzling sword-light had gotten condensed in his face.

It then pierced his throat in a flash!

[One Ray of Cold Light Pierces Ten Thousand Fathom!]

Chu Yang threw himself at the man along with the sword attack. Then, he heavily punched him while issuing a 'bam' sound. Then, he said while laughing out loud, "See how I make you laugh!"

The body of that man distorted in a strange manner. Then, his body convulsed and became motionless. His eyes remained wide open, and there was a look of disbelief in them. It was evident that he hadn't imagined this in his wildest dreams. His companion had been affectionately joking with him. But, how did that man turn into the killer who took his life?

[But, I'm a Martial King. And, this guy is only a Revered Martial Artist. How can he possibly kill me? Moreover, why does he wish to kill me?]

This King Level Expert was left with a myriad of questions. However, he died with an injustice not redressed...

Chu Yang mischievously laughed as he jumped away from the man's body. He then waved his fist, and fiercely punched Ji Mo. Ji Mo got knocked down on the ground. Chu Yang was gasping while issuing 'hu hu' sounds, "You, you... you're also still laughing..."

Ji Mo was a clever man. He performed a kick up, and jumped up high in the air as he said while gasping for breath, "You got urinated over yourself, and I'm not even allowed to laugh?"

He threw himself at Chu Yang while speaking. Then, 'bam' sounds were heard...

Chu Yang screamed, "Then, you laugh properly, ouch... you, you... you're kicking my eggs..."

Everybody burst into laughter. Many of the troublemakers couldn't control themselves. So, they stood up from their positions, and walked towards this side. Everyone had a smiling expression on their faces.

Some people were laughing while walking, "Dammit! He's acting so righteous and valiant even after he got peed on his pants. I'm seeing such a thing for the first time... The pee didn't make you go crazy, right...?"

Chu Yang got angry, "Why don't you try to piss on your pant? This fu*king feeling of getting your thighs dripping wet is so disgusting... Oh my... I will fu*k you... you, you, sss... motherfu*ker... you pissed on my crotch..."

"Ha ha..." there was a burst of laughter. Seven or eight people swiftly came over. Everyone was radiant with joy. And, everyone was in high spirits.

They arrived at the spot, and they only saw that two men dressed in black were rolling on the ground. One of them had covered the crotch of his trouser with his hands while his body was in a curled-up position. And, the other one was punching him and beating him up while lying on his body.

A ninth grade Martial King tried to control his laughter as he said in a dignified way, "That's enough. Get up. See, what a mess you've made!"

He had issued an order. So, both of them obeyed and jumped up.

They had jumped. But, they jumped particularly high, and had gotten separated into two directions.

Two essentially bright lights also shone at this time. And, they

lightened up this gloomy forest with a bright white radiance.

Ji Mo united with his sword. His entire persona changed into a Death God that had rushed out from hell. His body was carrying the sword energy that could conquer every obstacle. He then ferociously charged into three Martial Kings on one side while using this earth-shattering power!

It was like a mountain had fiercely smashed down.

Chu Yang pulled out the Nine Tribulations Sword. He then unleashed 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world!'

This attack was launched outrageously! And, this attack changed into an overwhelming crazy dragon. A burst of sword-light suddenly shot out from this attack. Then, it flew up high in the air, and conveniently hung upside down like a meteor coming down from the space!

The first Martial King who had to bear the brunt had a fully bloomed smile on his face as a chill penetrated through his heart with 'pop' sound. Then, his body split up into pieces. His head flew spinning in mid-air; that bright smile was still on it...

Then, a second Martial King got shrouded in sword-light. He hadn't taken any precautionary measures either. That smiling expression became rigid on his face. And, he was then torn into pieces before he could change his smile into an expression of panic.

The third Martial King also didn't get enough time to scream as many blood holes got formed on his body.

Another Martial King was fourth in line. However, his head had registered the first three deaths. So, this Martial King got enough time to react. He hurriedly unsheathed his sword. However, he didn't have enough time to use any technique. So, he simply swung his sword with all his might in desperation.

The incredible and mighty Nine Tribulations Sword charged forward. And, it broke that sword into pieces with a light crackling

sound. The man screamed as his arm blended to dust. Then, Chu Yang penetrated his sword through the man's bosom. The sword-light scattered everywhere along with countless lumps of flesh. And, a dense red colour filled the air as a result.

However, Chu Yang didn't stop. After all, the power of the move 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world' he had launched hadn't exhausted yet. So, he fiercely directed the attack towards the only remaining King Level Expert. However, that man repeatedly issued sharp screams as he raised his palm, and fiercely spread a black mist. Then, he again raised his palm, and suddenly a white mist was issued!

The poisonous mist of both the colours had spread everywhere in the vicinity in the blink of an eye.

He had frantically used poison attacks. He had used the 'Poison Technique'. He had used every hidden weapon that he could've shot out. He then shouted loudly in panic, and drew out his sword while drawing backwards.

Chu Yang squinted. He unceasingly waved his sword as he broke into the poisonous mist. The sword energy surged about, and spread everywhere inside the poison mist. Chu Yang rushed forward and the glistening sword-light approached this Martial King's chest.

The Martial King let out a loud scream. He suddenly threw away his long sword. Then, he turned around and ran.

He was faced with the incredible might of Chu Yang's sword. And, he had witnessed the horrifying state of his companions. So, he didn't even have the courage to defend himself at this time. Therefore, he directly fled...

Chu Yang put down the Sword Point, and switched the move from 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world' to 'a sharp will buried deep will not change'!

He restrained the sword-light. Then, he soared high up in the air. It seemed that a peerless sword that had been buried deep for ten-thousand years had suddenly dug up and revealed its matchless sharpness!

'Puff'!

Sword-light was still shining in mid-air as the sword energy broke into the back of the escaping Martial King! The entire body of that King Level Expert shivered as a result. He had an expression of despair on his face as he struggled to shout, "Save me..."

However, he had barely spoken out these words when a sword-light pierced through his back like a rainbow. Then, Chu Yang flushed out from the middle of the man's body along with the sword, and landed fifty feet away. The long sword was tilting towards the earth. Therefore, the beads of blood didn't stay on the blade of sword, and slowly dripped down with 'drip' sounds.

The body of this Martial King spilt up into pieces with a 'bang' sound. The expressions of fright and despair were still visible on his face as his big head was sent rolling on the ground. It rolled several times...

Ji Mo collected his sword and stood still on the other side. There was a pile of badly mangled and mutilated corpses in front of him! The two Martial Kings and one Revered Martial Artist hadn't put up their guards. Therefore, they had been slaughtered by the combination of Ji Mo and his sword!

There was silence.

The forest was utterly silent.

There was a dense blood fog in the air. The poisonous mist that hadn't diverged yet fluctuated erratically and fluttered in the air. This was proof of the horrendous incident that had happened here a moment ago.

Who could've imagined that two people would go to take a piss,

and such vicious and merciless death gods would return in their steads?

Eight human lives had vanished in a puff of smoke within the blink of an eye...

"Bastard!" a tall and sturdy man violently bellowed in rage. It was a second grade Martial Emperor. He was so angry that he couldn't control himself. He jumped out from the place he had been hiding in. The muscles of his face twitched, "You... who are you two?"

"The ones who want your life!" a voice coldly replied as a sharp sword-tip suddenly emerged from his chest. Then, it quickly yanked back. He then got slapped on his back in a very vigorous manner.

This Martial Emperor exposed a look of disbelief on his face. His body had been fiercely hit, and he was sent out flying as a result. He still couldn't believe that he had been injured so fatally. He let out a loud scream. He then suddenly drew his sword while being in the air, and ferociously circulated his energy through his body.

Two perfectly round streams of blood ferociously spurt out from his back and chest with a 'puff'. And, the entire strength of his body was evacuated in this moment. In fact, it felt as if a sack was emptied at once, and was left to fall from the sky.

He fell to the ground with a 'thump' sound. He raised his head with all his might, and turned his neck to look behind himself. "Who... are you?"

"It's me!"

A black-robed youth calmly walked over along with a calm and cruel voice. And, a cold and sharp aura impressively spread out as soon as he appeared. In fact, it felt as if a sword had come out in the shape of a person!

It seemed as if it was a humanoid sword!

It was Gu Du Xing!

Gu Du Xing had taken advantage of the time when Ji Mo and Chu Yang were creating disturbance to attract all the attention. And, he had stealthily sneaked into the enemy's formation. He had attacked at the right moment, and had succeeded!

Gu Du Xing's original target of was one of the two third grade Emperor Level Experts. But, their vigilance was too high. Moreover, they had kept their composure. So, Gu Du Xing had feared that he might spoil this important timing if he missed. However, Gu Du Xing could kill this second grade Emperor Expert rather easily. So, how could he let such an opportunity go unattended?

After all, this man was still a second grade Emperor Level Expert at the end of the day! So, killing him would be a big damage to the strength of the enemy's side.

The three brothers were standing in a complete formation on the scene now. Scattered and mangled corpses were lying at their feet.

Several 'whoosh' sounds echoed as the ambushers came over and surrounded the three! They had surrounded these three very quietly. However, none of them could hold back their rage from appearing in their eyes.

These three had appeared out of nowhere, and had killed nine of their battle companions! And, two more had been silently assassinated as well. Moreover, no one believed that the two who had gone to take a piss would've been left alive since it was impossible for them to have survived this sneak attack.

So, proper calculations would suggest that thirteen out of the fifty had died in total!

Moreover, they had died in despicable assassinations and sneak attacks!

"Who are you guys?" The third grade Martial Emperor showed up very quietly. He looked at Chu Yang with intense resentment in his

eyes.

Ji Mo mischievously laughed at first. He then replied in a mocking way, "It's amusing that you are asking this question since you guys are here to ambush us. Weren't you hiding here to kill us? So, do you even need to ask 'who we are' now that we have come? Old Fellow, have you lost your mind?"

The third grade Martial Emperor's anger was soaring to the heavens. But, he still couldn't help but become startled, "Ambush you?" He then suddenly blew his top, "Who the fu*k are you? Do you think that you're so worthy that this old man will come to ambush you?"

Ji Mo was startled by this response. So, he said while stammering, "Aren't you from the Ou Clan?"

"Yes. We are from the Ou Clan!" the third grade Martial Emperor angrily replied, "Who are you lot? Which clan do you belong to? Bastards!"

"You're from the Ou Clan... So, how come you haven't come here to ambush us?" Ji Mo scratched his head. He was totally confused, "This isn't right... Who are you here to deal with?"

The third grade Martial Emperor nearly fainted from excessive anger. He didn't know what to think as he angrily replied, "We've been waiting here to capture Ao Xie Yun. Who the fu*k are you?"

Ji Mo was left gob-smacked. He couldn't help but feel remorseful. He waved his hand again and again, and said, "Oh my my... this matter has turned into a conflict due to a misunderstanding. We've misunderstood. It's a misunderstanding. This is a misunderstanding..."

....

Chapter 593: Others Are Here!

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing were also stunned. [We've been beating and killing these men for quite a long time. And, it turns out that they haven't come here to deal with us...? So, we've been risking being the scapegoat for Ao Xie Yun this entire time?]

[What kind of a matter is this? Dammit, do we even have that kind of friendship with this Ao Xie Yun...]

The Ou Clan's people felt their heads spinning along with a few of their assistants from the Black Devil Clan. [You've chopped so many of our men like melons and vegetables. And, you still have the nerve to give an explanation for it by saying that it was a misunderstanding?]

[It's fu*king insane that he has the guts to explain himself. But, he is even explaining himself in a high and mighty manner.]

Ji Mo puckered up his brows. He then said with a bitter face, "Crap! You see, I'm... seriously embarrassed about this thing. Who is Ao Xie Yun? Who the hell is he...? We don't know. You get it, right? Ahm Ahm... this is a huge misunderstanding!"

He touched his nose, and mischievously smiled. Then, he awkwardly said, "You see... we apologize to you... Um, we're very sorry... But, let's forget about this matter now; okay? So, are we good now? Let it go, okay? After all, it's better to squash enmity than keeping it alive."

Ji Mo's words felt increasingly heartfelt and sincere as he continued to speak.

The third grade Martial Emperor of the Ou Clan nearly went mad out of anger, "What the hell are you talking about?! You've killed our men. Do you think that this matter will be over by a mere 'sorry'? You say it's better to squash enmity than keeping it alive? What bullshit!"

Ji Mo seemed deep in sorrows. He replied in a very serious manner, "Senior, it's said that 'a dead person can't come back to life'. So, please restrain your grief and get over it... After all, even killing us won't bring back the dead... Moreover, we want to show our sincerity so that we can win over your understanding..."

"What sincerity?" That Emperor Level Expert looked at the expressions on faces of the three. And, he was finally a little convinced that this was indeed a 'misunderstanding'...

"You see whether this will work or not..." Ji Mo cautiously spoke-up in a probing manner, "We weren't being careful, and we ended up killing thirteen people of yours... So, we've decided to compensate you with thirteen coffins... We first want the dead to be buried in peace irrespective of what is said or done... After all, leaving the corpses in this wilderness would be too cruel..."

"And then what?" The third grade Martial Emperor heard till here. However, he then saw that Ji Mo had stopped talking. So, he couldn't help but ask.

"Nothing, ah..." Ji Mo replied with a grim face, "You see, we are away from home. So, we only have bare necessities on us. And, we've also become someone else's scapegoat... So, we also feel wronged. What kind of fu*king logic do you use to explain this situation? Do you think that we wanted to kill your men? We aren't homicidal maniacs, you know..."

"You've killed thirteen of our men, and you want to compensate the loss with thirteen coffins? And, you don't have anything else to offer?" The third grade Martial Emperor finally exploded. He bellowed in rage, "You bastard! Are you fu*king with this old man?"

"I wouldn't dare..." Ji Mo pulled a long face, "We really... don't have a choice. We don't have any money. Maybe we can do another thing. We could try this out... those unlucky dead people may have wives and children in their families. And, we can take care of them

on their behalf...! For instance, they may have young and pretty sisters, daughters, or so... And, we will take care of them with ease..."

"Bastard! You're playing with me!" The third grade Martial Emperor flew into a rage. In fact, his forehead had literally started to emit smoke.

"Ha ha ha... old bastard..." Ji Mo laughed heartily. He jumped up, patted his buttocks, and said, "I'm obviously playing with you, you old tortoise! You are lucky that you're still alive despite being so old. Have you gone senile? You're a stubborn old fool with a knot in your brain. You're not open-minded. You're just an old sucker! You're a millennium old tortoise! You deserve to be played with!"

That third grade Martial Emperor's body convulsed with anger. He wasn't even able to take a breath. His lips quivered as he said, "You, you, you... you brat! My name won't be Ou Mu Feng if I don't shred you to pieces today!"

"Ou what Feng? It sounds more like Ou Old Motherfu*ker!" Ji Mo spat a mouthful of saliva. He stood with arms akimbo and said, "Old pimp! Old tortoise! Come on, come on... What are you waiting for? Ahwooh~~ Dog Aunt, Dong Aunt!"

"This is Ji Mo! This is King of Hell Chu's group! That one with the sword is Gu Du Xing!" Someone finally recognized them. After all, the words 'Dog Aunt' had worked as a signboard for him. So, the true identity of Second Master Ji had been exposed!

"Ahwooh~~ That's correct! It's me — your grandpa!" Ji Mo put his hands on his waist, faced upwards, and laughed heartily. "It has been a while since I've appeared in the Jianghu. It is strange that my charm hasn't subsided yet. I had thought nobody would recognize me since it has been so long! But, this is quite comforting in a way. Not bad, brat. You should be rewarded for recognizing me!"

Ou Mu Feng's belly exploded with rage.

A person suddenly jumped out. He looked at Chu Yang and said, "How come only three of you are here? Where are the other people?"

This old man was Ou Mu Feng's elder brother – Ou Jin Feng.

He vigilantly looked around while saying this. He thought, [King of Hell Chu and the others went to the Northern Wilderness together. So, why are only three of them here?]

"The other people are here!" these words weren't spoken by Chu Yang. Instead, two other people had said this in unison.

A shrill and dazzling saber-light came out along with these words. A sharp sword-light also rushed out at the same time!

Dong Wu Shang vigorously and impressively came out like crude iron! He stood in such a way that anyone who looked at him would have the feeling... [A mountain range made up of iron has suddenly appeared in front of me!]

Dong Wu Shang coldly snorted. He waved his big saber, and a Revered martial Artist and a King level Expert got cleaved into four parts on his left. Then, he waved it towards the right side, and smashed it down!

Yes... he had smashed it!

It would feel like the might of his Black Saber wasn't well-described if the word 'smashed' hadn't been used for it. After all, his Black Saber weighed more than 250 kilograms!

Two experts on the right side desperately went all-out to block. And, a snapping sound resounded. Their swords broke, and their heads got cleft from the middle with a 'bang'!

Dong Wu Shang's imposing body was dripping with blood as he fiercely strode forward. Then, he shouted, "Get lost!"

The ninth grade Martial King who was direct opposite of Dong Wu Shang had to bear the brunt. After all, the might of Dong Wu

Shang's saber had slashed towards this man like a thunderbolt. This King level Expert raved, "You get lost!" Then, he brandished his sword in a ruthless manner while staking his life.

A loud sound echoed as he did so. That Ninth Grade Martial King's sword shattered into pieces within an instant. And, he was sent bouncing and rolling like a rubber ball. An 'ah' sound came from the sky; it was accompanied with sprinkles of blood. It seemed that this man had decided to comply with Dong Wu Shang's words –'Get lost!'

Dong Wu Shang didn't move a single jot. His body was as calm like still water, and as lofty as a mountain. He then disdainfully snorted, and strode over.

A fifth grade Saber King had fought against a ninth grade Martial King. And, the ninth grade Martial King was the one sent flying when they went face-to-face. In fact, he had gotten seriously injured. Anyone who'd see this would regard it as a miracle.

That King Level Expert was a ninth grade Martial King. But, Dong Wu Shang was also at the peak of fifth grade Saber King! Moreover, he had been supressing his strength since he didn't wish to make a breakthrough. He would've been an eighth grade Saber King if he hadn't done so!

In addition, the Black Saber of Dong Wu Shang weighed more than 250 kg. Moreover, it had some innate supernatural occult force. However, that King level Expert had wielded a sword which was two or three kilograms in weight. This sword was surely being wielded by a ninth grade Martial King... But, it would've been absurd if this collision had sent Dong Wu Shang flying instead.

Luo Ke Di's sword-light swiftly brushed past three people in quick succession like a poisonous snake while issuing 'hissing' sounds. A thin trace of blood appeared on the throats of those three men as a result. Then, the bright blood ferociously streamed out from those scars like fountains.

The three corpses slowly collapsed to the ground. And, Luo Ke Di firmly attacked another King level Expert as this happened. Luo Ke Di's body somersaulted in the air with a 'dang' sound, and went into the encirclement.

And, he landed next to Gu Du Xing.

The temperaments of these two were somewhat similar in expression as well as in spirit at the moment. They both looked like sharp swords!

However, that they differed to some extent if one were to distinguish carefully.

Gu Du Xing was like a peerless heavenly armament that was talented yet self-effacing. There was a hint of sharpness to him even though he had been standing motionless. It seemed that he was prepared to draw his sword at a moment's notice.

However, Luo Ke Di was like a murderous sharp sword that was entirely soaked in blood. He was giving out vibes of intense blood-thirst from his body!

His ferocity was soaring to the heavens!

"Good! Very good! So, all of you are finally assembled here!" Ou Mu Feng slowly nodded. The murderous look in his eyes had intensified by now, "We haven't caught Ao Xie Yun. But, we will still get great rewards if we take your corpses back to the clan!"

Chu Yang mischievously smiled, "You want to deal with us with these weakened troops of yours? Ou Mu Feng, are you sure you aren't dreaming? Let me remind you that we've killed twenty-two of your men so far. But, your people couldn't even put a scratch on us! You might have to pay a bigger price next. Don't tell me you think that it's impossible for us to wipe you people out here and now?"

The words 'weakened troops' weren't empty words. There had been fifty men in this ambush in total. And, twenty-two of them

had been killed by only five people! It could be said that nearly half of them had been killed by now. Moreover, Gu Du Xing had killed an Emperor Level Expert. And, that man had been an important part of their martial strength.

"You only have five Martial Kings. You're not that big of a deal despite being Saber King and Sword Kings! And, you're no match for an Emperor level Expert no matter what you believe! Moreover, an Emperor Level Expert of Black Devil Clan – Brother Xu Wu Shuang — is also here apart from us two Emperor Level brothers! So, you're going to die even if you grow wings!"

Ou Mu Feng obviously didn't need to say these words in response right now. However, Chu Yang's words had packed a heavy punch, and had acted as a sharp psychological attack! They had landed a heavy blow on the morale of his subordinates. So, it would've been hard to avoid the dispiritedness of some people if he hadn't retorted back.

"Attack! Kill them all!" Ou Ji Feng roared, "Kill them brutally for this old man!"

The first one to attack after this order was issued... wasn't some man from the Ou Clan. It was Chu Yang instead!

Chu Yang would never let go of such an opportunity. His sword appeared in his hand out of the blue. The sword-light spread out. And, the cold light flew to the midway while whistling. Then, it suddenly changed into ten-thousand sword rays and surged forward!

[One ray of cold light pierces ten thousand fathoms!]

Ou Jin Feng shouted. He pulled out his sword and rushed forward. But, a man's shadow flashed before his eyes. However, this figure stood calm and stationary like an iron tower as it awaited to meet Ou Jin Feng's attack. Then, a black light changed into a lightning thunderbolt on the top of Ou Jin Feng's head, and ferociously slammed down!

It was Dong Wu Shang!

Ou Jin Feng could only listen to Dong Wu Shang saying, "Old Fool! Second Master Dong is the one who will send you on your way to afterlife. So, don't try to look for other people since you've decided to take this road to hell. After all, you'll become a silly ghost if you don't follow my advice! And, it will be a humiliating matter for an Emperor Level Expert if he were to become a silly ghost... In fact, it wouldn't even matter who'd kill him in the first place!"

Ou Jin Feng shouted in fury. Chu Yang had already turned his body over by borrowing of the power of 'One ray of cold light pierces ten thousand fathoms'. He had then flown up in the air to the utmost height. He then turned around. After that, he shot an extremely swift and fierce sword-light!

[What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world!]

...

Chapter 594: Collision with the Domain!

The Revered Martial Artist who was nearest to Chu Yang didn't get enough time to react. His chest was bombarded by the thunderous sword-light. And, his whole body got torn to pieces. The sword-light that was being carried along by Chu Yang issued a sharp whistling sound as he charged towards another enemy like a whirling lightning.

Gu Du Xing shouted loudly in the field. He brandished his sword as if he was the best lone swordsman of the millennium. He then went to face Ou Mu Feng with the air of loneliness in its truest sense!

Luo Ke Di issued a loud scream, "Ahwooh... Xu Wu Shuang — this Second Master Luo has come. And, you still haven't groveled in front of me?" He was going up against a second grade Martial Emperor; head-on!

Ji Mo shouted and turned over. He united with his sword and crashed into a group of Revered Martial Artists.

This was precisely the plan these three people had long decided with their super-strong tacit understanding. [Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, and Luo Ke Di will engage the three Emperor Level Experts with their entire might. Meanwhile, Ji Mo and Chu Yang will decisively get rid of the lackeys.]

[Then, they would turn around and come to besiege the Emperor Level Experts together.]

Chu Yang launched the attack 'One ray of cold light pierces ten-thousand fathoms' without thinking of anything. Then, he unleashed all the twelve moves of the Nine Tribulations Sword one after one!

His brothers were dealing with Emperor Level Experts on their own. So, they wouldn't be able to last long. Consequently, he

wanted to end this in the shortest time possible.

How sharp was the Nine Tribulations Sword?

Chu Yang was a first grade Martial King when he had taken advantage of a ninth grade Martial Emperor being non-vigilant, and had assassinated him. However, Chu Yang was already a fifth grade Sword King now. Moreover, he had suppressed his strength. He would've been an eighth grade Sword King if he had let go of the suppression.

And, he was attacking a bunch of Martial Kings and Revered Martial Artists with his present a cultivation level. Moreover, he also had the strength of such a divine sword and such incredible sword moves. This was simply overkill...

Blood splashed wherever Chu Yang was seen going; limbs went flying randomly, and heads rolled here and there!

[One ray of cold light pierces ten-thousand fathoms... What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world... A sharp will buried deep will not change... Gather wind and cloud to rule over all... Wind and cloud move unhindered from east to west!]

Over and over again!

Minister Chu had gone berserk!

Everything collapsed wherever this pair of man and sword went; even the trees in their line of sight didn't remain upright. In fact, even the earth was left to shake and rumble for a moment.

Ji Mo also looked as if a tiger had entered a flock of sheep. He was chopping down and killing the enemy without restrain. He was continuously shouting 'Ahwooh Aowooh'. Luo Ke Di had also been shouting 'Ahwooh Ahwooh Aowooh' on another side...

It seemed like a pack of wolves had gathered together!

Most of the people had been already cleaned out before long had passed. Only four King level Experts remained alive at the

moment. Chu Yang and Ji Mo rushed towards those four King Level Experts from two directions without the slightest of hesitation.

Ou Mu Feng and the others were staring in anger from the other side. In fact, it seemed as if they would explode; they were spouting smoke through the seven orifices.

They had been forced to watch as their subordinates weren't able to come up with the strength to resist this massacre. Their subordinates had drawn their weapons, but hadn't been able to use them. And, this had made them extremely sullen.

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and Luo Ke Di were moving here and there at will. In fact, they had been moving-about like butterflies. Ou Mu Feng was battling with Gu Du Xing one moment. However, a big saber came stabbing slantingly at him the next moment, and hacked downwards! Then, he found himself facing Luo Ke Di the next moment...

These three people were cooperating with tactic understanding. Moreover, they were also quite slippery. They hadn't been getting near their enemy. Instead, they had been scuttling-about as much as possible while fighting. However, these Martial Emperors would be met with the non-fatal attacks of these three if they'd think of rushing out to help their subordinates. But, these Martial Emperors would realize that those three slippery fishes had again backed off by the time they'd turn around to face them...

The three Emperor Level Experts could only yell out in anger as a result. After all, they didn't have any means to end this fight.

Ou Jin Feng looked at one of his subordinates getting killed by Chu Yang's sword during this fierce battle. And, he couldn't help but fly into rage. He then furiously bellowed, "Domain!"

Ou Mu Feng and Xu Wu Shuang faced upwards, and let out a loud cry. Suddenly, all three Emperor Experts gathered together in the same place. They then stood in a battle formation. And, all three of

them acted in unison.

Domain!

Suddenly, a dense worldly aura spread out. And, a large-scoped domain was formed within the radius of several hundreds of feet!

They had thought of using this method on Ao Xie Yun to capture him once they had found him. However, they hadn't expected that they wouldn't find Ao Xie Yun, and would have to use this method on these kids instead.

The domain drew a fundamental bifurcation between King Level and Emperor Level! And, this was also the best way to distinguish between them.

They could control everything on a whim within this domain!

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and Luo Ke Di didn't get enough time to retreat. They felt that their bodies had suddenly become rigid. It felt as if their bodies had suddenly been dipped in an extremely thick and viscous liquid. In fact, they found it extremely difficult to even turn their bodies...

"Brats! I'm coming to take your lives!" Ou Mu Feng heartily laughed out in pleasure. Ou Jin Feng and Xu Wu Shuang also slashed their swords.

Dong Wu Shang soundlessly bellowed as he looked at the long swords rapidly slashing down. Then, he suddenly faced upwards and roared. And, a violent aura surged out from his chest!

Then, he struggled to move with all his might, and threw himself towards Gu Du Xing.

Gu Du Xing also had the same intentions. He too struggled to move with everything he had. His Black Dragon Sword unleashed an intense sword-light within the domain. He struggled to break free since he was unwilling to give up. Then, he dashed towards Luo Ke Di and kicked him!

The Emperor Level domain was impossible to guard against. So, they would undoubtedly die in the present circumstances!

They would die anyway. So, they must die while giving the biggest contribution! Therefore, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had chosen to sacrifice themselves in order to force their brother out of this domain!

Dong Wu Shang arrived right when Gu Du Xing had kicked Luo Ke Di. He then pushed Gu Du Xing on the back with everything he had.

They couldn't speak inside the domain. They couldn't hear what the other was saying. But, they could see each other's movements very clearly...

Luo Ke Di was kicked out of the domain with a peculiar sound... as if a silk cloth was torn open. However, he became grieved and indignant the moment he went out of the domain. Then, he looked upwards and screamed as teardrops streamed out from of his eyes...

"Second Brother! Fourth Brother..."

Dong Wu Shang had thrown himself on Gu Du Xing. He had fiercely pushed out Gu Du Xing using his full strength! He then felt a cold sensation on his back. Two out of three sword attacks had slashed on his back! They entered into his body, and made their way into his bones. And, blood ferociously spattered out as a result...

The sword would've pierced through his heart. But, it had gotten deviated from its original target because he had selflessly thrown himself to help others! Thus, this misfortune had somehow proved out to be a great fortune!

[One can sometimes obtain a slim chance of survival when they save their loved ones without thinking about their own fate in the face of certain death!]

[Therefore, one mustn't hesitate in a life and death crisis!]

Dong Wu Shang was truly finding these words to be reasonable in this moment.

However, he was still feeling a lot of pain! After all, the sword energy of Emperor Level had broken into his body. Moreover, it was continuously destroying his body and his meridians. Dong Wu Shang suddenly raised his head in pain. His resolute face was fiercely convulsing. But, he tightly bit his lips. He didn't issue any sound!

[Can't shout! Can't shout out! Gu Du Xing would rush back if I shouted. And, he would also die if that happened!]

Chu Yang had finally killed the lackeys by now. So, he desperately rushed up whilst brandishing his sword! [What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world! Don't restrain the blade when beheading the entire world!]

These two moves could overwhelm the world of swordsmanship. And, they crashed into the Emperor Level Domain at the same time.

This was the first time that Chu Yang had firmly shaken an Emperor Level domain; and, that too a triple domain!

Meanwhile, Gu Du Xing had united with his sword. A hazy black energy soared indistinctly on the Black Dragon Sword as he shouted out loud in grief and indignation. Then, he selflessly changed into sword-light along with his sword. And, he also crashed into the Emperor level domain!

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo also rushed back from another direction.

Dong Wu Shang was still inside the domain when he saw that his brothers were clashing with the domain without caring about of their lives. He exposed a gratified and concerned smile on his face. His eyes fiercely lit up. It seemed as if he had realized something. But, he passed out...

...

Chu Yang roared when he saw this. He changed into a raging thunderbolt along with his sword, and frantically collided into the Emperor Level domain.

[What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world!]

His lifelong cultivation had changed into this one concentrated strike.

Meanwhile, Gu Du Xing, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo separated into three directions to avoid the spot where Dong Wu Shang was. Then, they collided with the Emperor Level domain like a meteor.

King Level Experts were firmly shaking the Emperor Level domain in a head-on collision; no one had ever thought of this before. In fact, no one had ever dared to think this before! But, four youngsters were displaying such a heroic scene for their brother at this time. It looked like a meteoric collision. And, something like that had never happened before!

This domain had been laid out with the collaborated efforts of three Martial Emperors. However, it finally caved-in with a 'bang' sound when it came in contact with the final-desperate attack of these four people. And, the ferocious powers of these three Martial Emperors and four Martial Kings collided with each other.

This domain had lost half of its power since Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, and Luo Ke Di had already damaged it to some extent beforehand. And, it was hit so fiercely this time that it got shattered to pieces almost instantly.

An explosive sound was heard. It was so loud that it could've frightened the heavens. In fact, it seemed as if several hundred bombs had exploded at once.

The seven men issued stuffy groans as they were sent flying by the blast.

Gu Du Xing crazily rushed over. He threw away the Black Dragon

Sword with his first action even though he considered it as precious as his own life. Then, he held Dong Wu Shang in his bosom. He arched his back, and firmly protected his brother with his own body.

Then, a fierce explosive sound was heard, and a powerful shock wave spread out. Something had suddenly struck Gu Du Xing's back! It seemed as if Gu Du Xing had been struck by thunder. Blood fiercely spurted out from his mouth. But, he kept on enduring firmly on the ground with his waist bent. And, he kept holding Dong Wu Shang even as he was blasted away by the shock!

He had used the entire strength of his cultivation to the front in order to protect his unconscious brother. And, he had only put a meager amount of his elementary power to cover his own back!

Suddenly, a few snapping sounds were heard. His backbone had been brutally fractured by this impact. Gu Du Xing again spurted out blood from his mouth. He had tightly grasped Dong Wu Shang with his remaining consciousness. However, he did his utmost to turn over, and placed his own body underneath Dong Wu Shang as they flew for a distance. Then, they heavily fell to the ground...

He exhausted the last bit of his strength and thrust Dong Wu Shang's body upward in one fell swoop as they fell on the ground. Then, Gu Du Xing passed out in silence. Dong Wu Shang was still in his arms. But, Dong Wu Shang rolled out from his arms right when he fainted. However, Gu Du Xing had counterbalanced the gravitational force which had resulted from falling from a high altitude with that last second thrust. Consequently, Dong Wu Shang had fallen on the ground as lightly as feather. Then, he rolled over a few times. But, he didn't sustain the slightest of injury in this process!

Chu Yang had also lost consciousness after the explosion. Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo were also sent out flying like rubber balls.

The three Martial Emperors also fluttered in three directions like

fallen and withered dead leaves. They didn't have the strength to resist, and were sent out flying. Their internal organs had also been inflicted with serious injuries.

These three were barely conscious. In fact, they couldn't even move their fingers right now.

However, the three men still felt a cruel sense of happiness in their hearts. [Look at these guys. They have clearly lost consciousness! This means that we three can easily recover before them because we are still conscious. And then, would they not be like fish on a chopping board? Wouldn't they be ready to be butchered?]

[We must capture them alive. We must give these bastards hell so that they beg for death! But, they won't be able to die even if they beg for it!]

A cold light suddenly flashed through the air when these three were feeling happy. Xu Wu Shuang had been painfully smiling when he suddenly screamed out loud. After all, his upper body had been separated from the lower half! He looked around with his remaining consciousness, and saw a skinny youngster jumping over while issuing whizzing sound. Then, this youngster went towards Ou Mu Feng, and yelled, "You three old tortoises! Die!"

....

Chapter 595: Wu Shang's Epiphany!

This person turned towards Ou Jin Feng, and approached him like a meteor. He then recklessly shouted, "It's my turn at last! This has been choking me to death... you fucking old tortoises... you dared to harm my brothers!"

This man had fantastic oddities of every description. One of his eyebrows was pointed to the heavens, and the other one was pointed to the ground. His voice sounded as if a hungry and ravenous wolf was howling at its max while having his way with a male duck who was screaming out while being choked...

Xu Wu Shuang finally lost consciousness. His last thought was... [Motherfu*ker! These bastards had prepared an ambush... This voice itself can kill an Emperor Level Expert...]

[The blast didn't kill me. But, this is too unbearable...]

Tan Tan and Rui Bu Tong effortlessly smashed the remaining two Emperor Level Experts into meat patties. Then, they hurriedly rushed back to their brothers.

These brothers had already discussed about the countermeasures of the situation. The enemy was ambushing them. So, they obviously knew about Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo. But, Rui Bu Tong and Tan Tan had met them in the Northern Wilderness itself. So, nobody knew about them.

Therefore, Rui Bu Tong and Tan Tan couldn't show up from the very beginning.

These two would rush out and set into action to fix the situation only when both sides were in a lose-lose situation!

This strategy had still worked well even though the opposite party wasn't here to ambush them... In fact, this strategy had brought about the best result! After all, they were able to win the fight in one fell swoop!

The first thing the both of them did next... was hurry to Chu Yang's side. One of them braced his chest, and the other one pressed against his back. They then mobilized their martial power, and gave first aid to Chu Yang.

Both of them knew that Chu Yang had wondrous medicines with him. So, the other brothers would be alright as long as he was awake. However, everyone would be finished if they were to save the others before Chu Yang and something bad happened to Chu Yang in this time period...

Chu Yang heavily coughed and spat out blood clots. He then slowly woke up. He took a quick glance and saw Tan Tan. He instantly felt relief washing over him. He forced himself and struggled to stand up. Then, Chu Yang hurriedly took out four incomplete versions of Nine Tribulations Pill, "Make them take it; one pill per person."

Then, he took out one for himself, and popped it.

Rui Bu Tong was burning with impatience. So, he took the pills and rushed over. He first went to check on Gu Du Xing. And, he couldn't help but jump in fright when he saw him. It was because the entire frame of Gu Du Xing's body had nearly fallen apart. So much so that he wouldn't be able to get up even if somebody helped him up...

Tears welled up in Rui Bu Tong's eyes. He first gave the Nine Tribulations Pill to Gu Du Xing. Then, he gave the pills to Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo...

A long while passed before Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di woke up.

However, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were still unconscious. Chu Yang had also recovered a bit by now. He was able to support himself now. So, he checked on the people around him.

He could clearly see that the injuries of the two unconscious men

were healing at a slow pace... In fact, he could clearly see the changes in their muscles; the way they were twitching and getting repaired was visible to the naked eye!

Gu Du Xing eventually opened his eyes after a very long while had passed. He blinked. It seemed that he was feeling dazzled due to the sunlight above his head. Then, he closed his eyes and asked, "How is Wu Shang?"

"I am fine," these words had been spoken by Dong Wu Shang. He had barely regained his consciousness at this time. He then said, "Second Brother, how are you?"

"I'm okay," A rare smile appeared on the cold and serious face of Gu Du Xing. He tried to move his hands first. Then, he lifted his arms. Then, he tried to sit up. And, he was able to sit up for real!

He couldn't help but become greatly surprised. [I clearly remember that my backbone got fractured. So, how is it not broken now? How come I only feel intense pain on the spot of injury and nothing else?]

Rui Bu Tong and Tan Tan set up a tent, and moved everyone into the tent so that they could rest properly.

It was almost dusk by now. Chu Yang had noticed that the restoration of Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had stopped by now. The Nine Tribulations Pill had tremendous medicinal efficacy. But, their injuries were too severe. It was certainly a wonder drug, but it was still insufficient to help them make a completely recovery. Therefore, Chu Yang again took out two pills, and made Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang pop them.

And, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang nearly made full recoveries as a result.

"I had a realization!" Dong Wu Shang was leaning against Ji Mo. His voice still sounded somewhat weak, "Everyone must pay attention."

Chu Yang and the others shivered when they heard this. They knew that he was the Saber King of their generation, and he had just faced a death crisis! And, he had suddenly realized something. So, this realization must be the most precious. In fact, such kind of realizations could sometimes make a Saber King upgrade his strength! Therefore, such a realization was extremely precious to everyone. And, it must always be kept a secret. But, Dong Wu Shang was obviously sharing it with his brothers...

"The Emperor Level domain is indeed not a trivial thing. Moreover, that one was a collaboration of three Emperor Experts. So, it was even more complicated... I knew that I was going to die! Therefore, I chose to sacrifice myself so that my two brothers could exit the domain."

Dong Wu Shang's words made it seem as if he was bragging for what he had done. But, everyone knew that he wasn't being boastful.

"So, I started to burn my spiritual power with everything I had. And, I found out that Ke Di and Second Brother had also chosen the same course of action. But, my Black Saber is heavy. Therefore, I took a step preceding others.

"The three of us knew that we were certainly going to die. And, each of us wanted to make our brothers go out. Therefore, the situation of our sudden death changed within an instant!"

Dong Wu Shang exposed out a faint smile. And, a deep radiance was exposed on his face. "The domain should've caused our doom. Now, add our charges in the equation. The domain was still the same in that moment. But, the targets got deviated from the intended direction as a result of our charges! In fact, it forced them to change their sword attack midway... and hence the direction.

"Therefore, Luo Ke Di was kicked by Second Brother, and went out. And, Second Brother also got out of the domain when I bumped into the. But, I end up lying down because this collision.

And, this made the two adversaries to change the direction of their sword attacks once again!

"The two swords were supposed to have pieced through my back and chest. But, they didn't hit any vitals!

"The three of us were supposed to die. But, all of us were saved! And, it was simply because... we didn't think of saving ourselves in that situation! It would've been impossible to achieve this if we had thought of ourselves! But, we didn't die since we were selfless!

"Selflessness... is my realization!" Dong Wu Shang softly heaved a sigh of relief. His eyes had a trace of recollection and emotion. It was as if that final moment before death was still echoing in his head. He recalled the desperate appearance of his four brothers as they disregarded their own lives and rushed over to save him. Then, he warmly smiled, "One discovers the truth at the time of death! One comes to this realization only at the time of death. And, one can't reach this epiphany if one isn't thrown in front of death! Then, one wouldn't have brothers for life...

"My saber art will stand renamed from now on. Its new name would be 'Deathtrap Life Force'! The saber way of Wu Shang!" Dong Wu Shang's eyes lit up. He said, "Life force can be easily discovered in the deathtrap! It's because our life force is too ordinary the rest of the time. So, we don't pay attention to it.

"Deathtrap Life-force... it's like the darkest hour before dawn! We have been born. So, we will die too. Everything that is born has come from death. Therefore, we have the urge to grow and expand without limits while we are alive. And, we are always filled with excitement and emotions!"

Dong Wu Shang remained silent for a moment. Then, he said, "There will be times when you make sacrifices for your brothers with your heart and soul. But, you will find that you aren't making sacrifices in doing so. Instead, you're reaping! And, you reap more as you make more sacrifices!" Dong Wu Shang's eyes lit up as he

continued, "These are my most profound feelings!"

"There will be times when you make sacrifices for your brothers with your heart and soul. But, you will find that you aren't making sacrifices in doing so. Instead, you're reaping! And, you reap more as you make more sacrifices..." the other brothers slowly repeated after him in unison by chance. All of them had pensive looks on their faces.

Dong Wu Shang sighed in satisfaction. He slowly closed his eyes and said, "Big Brother, I don't need to suppress my strength anymore. This realization has changed my mental state to a great extent. And, I will perhaps break into Saber Emperor Level after this!"

[Break into Saber Emperor Level?!]

[Dong Wu Shang is going to break through so many levels after facing death!]

Chu Yang, Ji Mo, and the others exposed a look of contemplation on their faces. But, they didn't say anything. They pondered about these words of Dong Wu Shang, and felt that they were quite deep.

Gu Du Xing's eyes fiercely lit up. They emitted a dazzling radiance, and it seemed as if he had suddenly comprehended something. Then, he suddenly started to laugh in a hearty manner. He said while brimming with happiness and pleasure, "So that's how it is!"

He and Dong Wu Shang had been through a similar experience. So, he had understood what Dong Wu Shang was trying to convey.

Luo Ke Di was still pondering. He hadn't genuinely understood much. It seemed as if a thin barrier had appeared in front of him. Moreover, it seemed as if this barrier was nearly transparent, and he only needed to extend his hand and it would pierce through this barrier. But, he couldn't touch it. So, he couldn't help but sink into contemplation for a long time...

Ji Mo had been thinking carefully as well. He had been carefully trying to have the realization. He also somewhat half-understood it... And, it seemed as if he had touched its sides, but couldn't touch the main essence.

Rui Bu Tong muttered. He stared blankly to the front as he did his utmost to understand this philosophy.

Tan Tan had an emotionless look in his eyes. It seemed as if he had understood nothing... But, one would find that a light would occasionally flash in the depths of his pupils if they'd look carefully... It seemed like a candle's flame was flickering with the wind in the middle of vast grasslands in the pitch-black of night!

This flame certainly had the power to burn down the grassland...

That strange mark on his forehead was also faintly shining, and it seemed as if it had been flickering in contemplation as well. Moreover, this flickering seemed to be slowly intensifying...

Tan Tan suddenly held his head. He suddenly felt a strong headache. It felt as if he had been struck by lightning. This headache rose abruptly. He wasn't prepared for such a headache. So, Tan Tan couldn't help but groan in pain. And, his eyebrows got tightly wrinkled...

Chu Yang was startled by this. He asked, "Tan Tan, what happened to you?"

Tan Tan didn't reply. He took deep breaths, and clenched his teeth tightly.

Chu Yang and the others suddenly felt a sort of hegemonic aura from ancient prehistoric era crazily emitting out from Tan Tan's body.

It seemed as if an ancient monarch had suddenly appeared at this moment in this generation to rule the world again!

However, this aura suddenly disappeared while the brothers were terrified and startled...

A few scattered and broken images appeared in Tan Tan's mind...

It seemed as if he was seeing some other world from a very long time ago... He felt as if he also used to have a group of such brothers. Such long-absent warmth suddenly overflowed his heart...

However, such a feeling was making him feel even more overwhelming pain. A sudden and dense bitterness also rushed within him at this time. And, he suddenly felt very sad in his usually carefree heart. It felt as if his heart was being clutched to ache...

He felt as if the sky was collapsing and the earth was sinking in deep darkness... But, he needed to defend too many people. Moreover, these people were standing in front of him. And, they were shouting to him — [King! You must quickly leave...]

Then, they collectively charged into that desperate situation even though the sky was collapsing and the earth was sinking. And, they fought for him till their last breath. They struggled for him till the very end without hesitation. Their honor didn't even allow them to glance back. They were duty-bound to not turn back...

Until their blood and flesh suddenly exploded... and scattered...

Tan Tan painfully groaned...

....

Chapter 596: Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor

"Brothers..." Tan Tan clasped his head, and suddenly murmured this word. The pitch of his voice had seemingly varied as he had said this. It hadn't sounded anything like his unique voice. Instead, it was full of sentiments, full of sadness, and longings... It seemed as if he felt emotional...

Extreme grief!

It seemed as if this word had come straight from his heart. It contained all his emotions, and it had turned into a shout that sounded like a groan... It seemed as if this shout had spanned through tens of thousands of years, and had spanned across the various transformations of the world through the ages... as if this call had come from the entirety of his very being...

"Bro... thers..." Tan Tan again called out in a low voice as a sudden and crazy explosion occurred in his head. Then, his mind went blank...

He wanted to say, [I'm ashamed that I couldn't be a true King to you all. Ah... have you guys been blaming me for all these years?]

However, he still hadn't spoken out when those anxious faces of his brothers disappeared with a flash... They had disappeared in an instant... as if they had faded away in the sky like the clouds...

Suddenly, Tan Tan let out a big shout, and spouted a mouthful of blood. The world turned dark before his eyes, and he lost consciousness...

...

Seven days after that fight...

There was absolute silence late at night. Only the cicadas could be heard singing. This entire setting had a dream-like silence to it.

One would feel as if their fickle and impatient heart had turned peaceful. Their mind's chatter had silenced down... and had left them to feel blissful...

A life-force suddenly exploded amidst this intense darkness. It then slowly filled the air. An aura of breakthrough also burst out along with the explosion of this life-force.

Chu Yang walked out of the tent while carrying his hands behind his back. Then, he started to stroll under the starry sky...

It was precisely on this evening that Chu Yang had risen by four grades in succession, and had broken through to the Ninth Grade Sword King level in one go! In fact, there was still room for further promotion; thanks to the suppression of these past days. However, Chu Yang had decidedly halted.

[It would be unwise to promote my cultivation to the Emperor Level before I've found the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword. Moreover, it would be far more difficult if I were to try coordinating with the Nine Tribulations Sword before having consolidated my current cultivation level. In fact, it would be detrimental.]

Chu Yang's mind was in chaos. [Tan Tan has been sitting inside his tent ever since that day he fell into that coma-like state. He doesn't say a word. It's like he's a puppet.]

[His physical state doesn't help in guessing as to what has happened to him.]

Chu Yang was very worried. [Strange things have been happening with Tan Tan's body of late. First, he suddenly ate the core of a ninth grade spirit beast. Then, he got a high fever. Then, he stopped eating normal food, and started to eat beast cores instead... Now, something inexplicable has happened again...]

[What's going on?]

Chu Yang was pacing back and forth with his hands behind his

back. He was constantly thinking about this matter, [What outcome would Tan Tan's current situation bring about?]

...

It wasn't long when a breakthrough aura erupted. Then, a vast and mighty saber energy surged in all directions. It went straight into the sky, and smashed the clouds!

The Saber Emperor's domain-field dispersed the clouds, and the sky became clear.

Then, Dong Wu Shang calmly walked over.

"Big Brother," Dong Wu Shang's physical appearance looked even more burly and tall now. One could tell that his usual bold and majestic aura had turned somewhat elegant and profound.

Traces of his overwhelming power and grandeur could still be found in his movements. However, those traces were very faint. Instead, the embryonic form of an unparalleled expert had already appeared in him to some extent! Anyone would immediately imagine a bewildering scene when they'd see the current Dong Wu Shang — One person is going against all the heroes of the world with his saber! It would be a type of heroic and blood-boiling scene that was so incredible that it could make one go nuts!

That sort of grandiose was as imposing as a mountain, and vast like the ocean!

Saber Emperor! The Emperor of sabers!

Ten-thousand sabers would bow before him!

The first purest Saber Emperor to appear in the Middle Three Heavens in the last 300 years!

The first Saber Emperor under the age of twenty to appear in the Nine Heavens over the past thousand years... a merely nineteen-years-old Saber Emperor!

"You broke through?" Chu Yang didn't turn his head. He slowly

kept moving forward as he asked in a soft voice.

"Yes!" Dong Wu Shang nodded without hurt, and followed beside him whilst stepping on the dark-green grass. He walked onward in silence at first. Then, he deeply sighed and said, "Big Brother, my dream was to make a breakthrough into the King Level before I had met you. I could only use my clan's secret Black Saber Cultivation Method back then, and continue to practice and fight.

"I experienced a change for the first time after I met you. You made Second Brother help me realize that there are countless saber-ways out there. This opened a road of saber cultivation in front of me. And, my journey has been very smooth as a result of that.

"However, I've experienced my happiest breakthrough tonight!" Dong Wu Shang smiled gently. He shook his head and said, "It's because this breakthrough belongs to me; and me alone. My predecessors have had this kind of epiphany in the past. However, this epiphany has resulted entirely from my own contemplation.

"Therefore, I'm very happy!" Dong Wu Shang revealed a blade-like sharp flash in his eyes, "This is Dong Wu Shang's saber way! The Saber Way of No Injuries! First grade Saber Emperor!"

"Excellent!" Chu Yang praised him. Then, he asked, "The Saber Way of No Injuries...? What is this The Saber Way of No Injuries?"

"A saber that causes no injuries!" Dong Wu Shang said proudly, "It straight-up causes death; that's all!"

"The Saber Way of No Injuries huh..." Chu Yang smiled softly, but didn't speak anything.

[The Saber Way of No Injuries is obviously not for the purpose of death! And, it certainly isn't a saber-cultivation for the purpose of slaughtering! Dong Wu Shang might be aware of this point, but he doesn't understand it. He will be able to comprehend it on his own only when he reaches a different realm!]

[And, Dong Wu Shang's Saber Way of No Injuries would be far from being a small achievement when that happens.]

However, Chu Yang didn't explain this to him. After all, he wanted Dong Wu Shang to realize this on his own... so that he could comprehend the true Saber Way of No Injuries!

"Du Xing is about to break through!" Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, "It can be said that we brothers have become capable-enough of defending ourselves in the Middle Three Heavens!"

"This capability has come entirely because of you, Big Brother!" Dong Wu Shang stopped his footsteps, and looked at Chu Yang's back profile. An unconcealed look of gratitude and admiration had appeared in his eyes.

"I wish to take you all to a magnificent future!" Chu Yang mildly said, "In addition... you guys must have confidence in yourselves. You must have the spirit to keep striving for self-improvement. You guys can rise to the top of the Nine Heavens even if there's no Chu Yang in this world someday! This is my desire..."

"Even if there is no Chu Yang...? Big Brother, what do you mean by that?" The look in Dong Wu Shang's eyes turned cold. He narrowed his eyes, and an intense light suddenly condensed in them. A faint but dangerous aura also emerged from his body.

Saber Energy filled the entire sky!

"It's only a notion; that's all. There's no need to get worked up." Chu Yang chuckled and said, "I should have said it like this... Each one of us must be capable of reaching the top of the Nine Heavens... even if the others have left this world! Then, he must write down the saga of our current adventures after he has reached the summit!"

It was hard to say why Chu Yang had been experiencing an inexplicable feeling ever since his last breakthrough. He felt as if a mass of dense fog had formed in front of him. He couldn't see

where he was headed. And, he didn't understand why this was happening...

Dong Wu Shang raised his brows at once. It seemed as if two peerless and precious sabers had suddenly leapt up into the sky. His voice sounded dull, "Big Brother, this Dong Wu Shang would have nothing left to cherish his life if something were to happen to you."

He had said these words lightly. But, they had contained an intense brotherly affection. In fact, it seemed as if this brotherly love had instantly filled the grassland that was spread in a range of thousands of miles.

The two looked up at the same time, and raised their heads to look towards the sky. Many stars were twinkling in the sky.

Chu Yang's heart felt touched by this sight. He couldn't help but sigh softly. He then said, "I wonder what kind of world is hidden beyond this starry sky..."

Someone replied in a soft voice, "We brothers will gladly accompany you if you've set your aspirations towards the sky, Big Brother. What do you say?"

This had been said in a rather cold voice, but there was a strong sense of uncontainable excitement in this voice. It was the sort of infinite excitement that one would have when their long-cherished desire had finally been fulfilled.

Both of them looked back at the same time. And, they saw Gu Du Xing's black robe fluttering under the starry sky. His tall and straight figure was walking over. His figure was like an elusive divine sword. He was still giving off the same old cold and lonely vibe. There was still a sort of aloofness about him. However, there was now an insane addition of the Emperor's aura to all of it!

It seemed as if all the swords in the world must bow before him!

First Grade Sword Emperor!

[I must rush toward my goal of becoming a Sword Emperor. Then, I will get Sister Xiao Miao out of imprisonment so that I can marry her!]

This had been Gu Du Xing's lifelong goal! Even Chu Yang hadn't expected that Gu Du Xing would be able to achieve this level of cultivation at such a young age.

The gazes of Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing bumped. And, there was an invisible flicker of electric light between them.

It seemed as if a peerless saber had suddenly clashed with a matchless sword! Brilliant sparks had been issued in that moment!

"Congratulations, Second Brother. You've become the first pure Sword Emperor in the Middle Three Heavens in the last three hundred years!" A boundless fighting intention erupted in Dong Wu Shang's eyes, "Wanna fight me?"

Gu Du Xing smiled gently. He then shot a cold glance at Dong Wu Shang's face. And, Dong Wu Shang immediately felt an acute pain... as if his face was being pierced by a sharp needle.

Gu Du Xing's eyes gradually became as cold as ice. Then, he lightly said, "A fight... that's fine with me!"

The sword energy stormed to the heavens in the wilderness as soon as he said this.

Dong Wu Shang issued a stuffy bellow from his throat. He took a quick step back to evade the attack, and brandished the big saber in his hand. And, the saber energy covered everything!

The ripples of sword energy and saber light clashed heavily into each other. A collision between their invisible imposing auras also occurred as this happened. A collision between their cold and murderous energies was next to follow! And, it suddenly seemed as if the sounds of these collisions would cut-apart the silent night into pieces!

Chu Yang was observing his two brothers battling to their heart's

content from the sidelines with his hands crossed behind his back. He couldn't help but sigh in his heart, [This pair of Saber Emperor and Sword Emperor is indeed different from ordinary Martial Emperors! There are too different!]

[An ordinary First Grade Martial Emperor would lose within a stroke when going up against a Saber Emperor of the same level!]

Dong Wu Shang's Saber Emperor was somewhat different from Ye Clan's Saber Emperors who were present in Chu Yang's recollection.

Those people were at higher grades than Dong Wu Shang. However, they lacked very significantly when it came to the purity of saber way. This was because those people had begun to give importance to the 'way of the saber' once they had reached a certain point in their cultivation journey.

However, Dong Wu Shang had kept the 'way of the saber' on his mind since his childhood. There was no other thing for him except the 'way of the saber'! Therefore, he had focused the entirety of his mental and physical efforts on mastering the way of the saber since his childhood. And, the same could be said for his wisdom, and his strategies!

Therefore, Dong Wu Shang's was a very pure Saber Emperor!

And, the same was true for Gu Du Xing!

Chu Yang still remembered how fanatic Gu Du Xing had seemed when he had seen his sword after arriving at the Heaven Armament Pavilion.

And, this kind of fanatical nature could be clearly seen in Dong Wu Shang as well.

The two people had already brandished their saber and sword respectively. However, Chu Yang was still lost in his thoughts.

Their shadows crisscrossed everywhere. The saber light and the sword shadows filled the night sky!

It wasn't known when Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had come out. They were also watching the battle between Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing with admiration.

Chapter 597: Please Kill Me if That Day Really Comes!

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had also broken through. Moreover, this had been a kind of skip-type breakthrough for both of them!

They had broken through to the ninth grade of King Level!

This achievement was enough to look down on the world. However, it turns to 'only' the ninth grade King Level in front of outstanding people like Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing!

They had such cultivation level at such young age... They would be considered geniuses even when placed in the Upper Three Heavens. However, both of them still felt depressed in their hearts.

Rui Bu Tong had dropped his head down in grief... It seemed as if he had been mourning his deceased mother. His breakthrough was the lowest among his brothers. He was an eighth grade Martial King now...

This had made Rui Bu Tong so depressed that he was on the verge of going nuts!

He had reached the seventh grade Martial King while the others were only fifth grade Martial Kings until a few days ago. Therefore, he used proudly show off his strength. However, he hadn't anticipated that those good days wouldn't last even for a month. After all, he had now become inferior to the others once again.

How would it not make Rui Bu Tong depressed?

Tan Tan walked over shaking and swaying. Then, he sat crossed-legged next to Chu Yang. He had been unconsciously chewing a grass root. The look in his eyes was somewhat hazy... as if he was at a loss. It was as if he wasn't even seeing the fierce battle between the two evenly matched powerhouses that was going on in front of him.

"How are you? What's up? What happened to you that day?" Chu Yang asked.

Tan Tan seemed to be staring into nothingness. In fact, it seemed as if he hadn't even heard Chu Yang's words.

A long time passed like this...

"Senior Martial Brother..." Tan Tan lowered his head, and whispered in a hoarse voice.

"What's wrong? Tan Tan?" Chu Yang was somewhat taken aback. He felt as if his heart had suddenly frozen. He had never seen Tan Tan so dispirited and downcast even in the most difficult of times.

Moreover, Tan Tan had called him 'Senior Martial Brother' a moment ago. Tan Tan always called him by his name. But, he had said 'Senior Martial Brother' this time. This was proof that the matter was very serious. And, Tan Tan was also very serious about it...

A loud 'clang' sound came from the field. The Black Saber and the Black Dragon Sword had fiercely clashed into each together. The sword-light was shot high in the sky, and went straight to the ninth heaven like a dragon. Meanwhile, the saber-light spread across for thousands of miles in the sky like a galaxy.

The two had clashed with each other, and then separated. Then, they were at it again. The saber-light and the sword-shadow changed into a white light and a black energy respectively, and then entangled again.

This was the first battle between these two men after they had broken through to Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor respectively. So, it was obvious that they would fight to their heart's content. Both of them had been gradually exploring the mysteries of the Emperor Realm! They would inspect and verify one step. Then, they'd consolidate their insights. And then they'd move to the next step...

However, Tan Tan's complexion became increasingly darker under the shines of the sword and saber lights.

"What's the matter?" Chu Yang's countenance had gradually become very serious as well.

"Senior Martial Brother, do you think that I've been somewhat abnormal since childhood?" Tan Tan smiled whilst mocking himself. His deep and low voice made Chu Yang feel somewhat bitter.

"It may be true that you're not very normal. However, you're my good junior martial brother no matter how you are. And, you will always be my good junior martial brother!" Chu Yang hesitated for a while. Then, he slowly said, "Moreover, aren't we living in the kind of world where there's no need to care about what others think of us? One must live one's life care-freely and happily. Isn't it better than caring about everything else?"

Tan Tan was serious at this time. So, Chu Yang had also become serious as well. It must be mentioned that Tan Tan wasn't an idiot even though his behavior was strange. His behavior had always been somewhat abnormal. And, Tan Tan also knew this. In fact, it would've hurt Tan Tan if Chu Yang had told him that he was completely normal.

"I also know that I'm not normal... However, I don't know what's going on..."

Tan Tan sighed and continued, "I've felt that I'm somewhat abnormal ever since Master had adopted us. I was an infant when Master had adopted me. Master had carried me out from a cave. He had later told me that I had been abandoned. I know that it would've been impossible for Master to find me if he hadn't gone to rest in that cave when he had ventured to that precipice to pick up herbs. However, an average person wouldn't go to such a place if they wanted to abandon a child. Nor, can someone throw a child onto such a tall precipice. Therefore, it is evident that I wasn't

abandoned..."

"Huh? How... do you know this?" Chu Yang was left shocked by this. In fact, he had goose bumps. [Tan Tan would've never come to know about this matter unless Meng Chao Ran had told him about it. And, Meng Chao Ran never did. So, how does he know?]

"Master has been very good to me. He has always made me have fantasies in my heart. He has always made me fantasize that my family exists somewhere in this world. Master had always told me that they cared about me even though they abandoned me... Master was always very kind," Tan Tan said in a deep and low voice.

Chu Yang felt sad in his heart. Tan Tan had correctly guessed Meng Chao Ran's intention. Meng Chao Ran had always been making silent arrangements for his disciples' sakes to the best of his ability. He had been worried about the life of both of his disciples even ten years ago. However, he had never spoken anything.

"I didn't know about it at first. And, I don't know what has happened in the last few days. But, I've understood it. In fact, it feels as if I've had a dream. The dream was about my time as an infant. I was held by Master. Then, we returned to the Purple Bamboo Forest. There was already a child there who was crawling on the ground. That child must've been two years older than me... it was you! Finally, you went down the mountain at the end of the dream. And, I was with Master on the mountain. Master and I were chased by Diwu Qing Ruo's men..."

Tan Tan continued with a strange expression, "This was very strange because I knew that this dream was real after it ended... And, that's because many things happened afterwards in that dream. And, we have experienced those things in real life."

Chu Yang was shocked!

He stared at his junior martial brother with a dumbfounded look

on his face. It was hard for him to imagine that such a bizarre thing could happen in this world...

"This dream continued until I had entered the Middle Three Heavens. Then, it abruptly ended. However, I later realized that it wasn't a dream since I wasn't even asleep at that time... Instead, I was meditating!" Tan Tan's expressions became increasingly bizarre... It seemed as if he had seen a ghost or something.

"I know that you've always been good to me. I know it from that dream that you've been trying to amuse me since the beginning... even when you were only a two-years-old child. You would fulfill all of my requests... Chu Yang, my Senior Martial Brother..." The rim of Tan Tan's eyes became somewhat red. "You have been good to me. And, I will remember it forever!"

Chu Yang opened his mouth, but he didn't know what to say. He could only take in a deep breath. Then, he deeply exhaled that breath. He felt overwhelmed with emotions...

Yes. He indeed cared very deeply for Tan Tan. He also cared a lot about his Master. It had been this way in his previous life as well. He had decided to take the heartless sword way, and walk on the path of revenge precisely because Tan Tan had died an accidental death, while Meng Chao Ran had gone missing in his previous life...

"I've looked like this since childhood. I've always been entirely different from you. I also know that I'm very ugly!" Tan Tan chuckled. "I know that I look unattractive... at least in the eyes of normal people like you. But, you know that I've believed that I am very handsome for so many years. And, I don't believe it to show off alone!

"I genuinely believe that I am handsome! Even being handsome in this way... gives me strong self-confidence! And, no one has ever been able to bring down my self-confidence!" Tan Tan mischievously smiled, "In fact, I would continue to think that I was

very handsome even if people scolded me viciously!

"This isn't blindness. And, this certainly isn't some disease!" Tan Tan said in a serious manner, "Instead, I genuinely believe that there's no one more handsome than me in the entire world!"

Tan Tan's expression was very serious! His voice was very serious as well. He wasn't cracking jokes.

Chu Yang gradually became more solemn.

"Therefore, I feel that I'm different from the other people of this world!" Tan Tan said with difficulty, "I have always felt that I don't belong in this world! As if... this world isn't for me...

"I can say this with confidence that I'm very handsome. Because... I've never viewed myself from the perspective of this world!

"However, I've been feeling as if there's something inside my body of late. Something is stirring restlessly... something is awakening..." Tan Tan sighed in frustration, "I don't know what it is... But, I have a feeling that it is very dangerous..."

"Where is my world if I'm not from this one?" Tan Tan turned his head. He looked at Chu Yang with a sharp gaze. There was a sense of loss, sadness, and fear in his voice. It was the fear of the unknown...

Chu Yang firmly looked at Tan Tan. He felt scared in his heart at this moment!

It was because he had discovered that there was something in Tan Tan's pupils. It seemed as if... it was another world. Moreover, a dazzling sun, a crescent moon, and starlight had suddenly emerged in this desolate world...

"Clang!" a sky-shaking sound came from a distance!

The fight between the Saber Emperor and the Sword Emperor had turned white-hot!

However, these two martial brothers remained silent at this side.

"Don't indulge in flights of fancy." Chu Yang patted on Tan Tan's shoulder. Then, he said while consoling him, "You're you. You're Tan Tan; my junior martial brother. You're my own brother! All of us have our bitter experiences. You've always treated me as your blood brother. And, I have always treated you as my blood brother... Tan Tan, you must pull yourself together!"

"But... I can feel that it's real! It's real." Tan Tan somewhat helplessly looked at Chu Yang, "Can't you see? I ate the raw inner cores of ninth-grade spirit beasts, and didn't explode! I had a high fever, and it reached to such an extent that I was able to melt stones. But, nothing happened to me... And now, I don't eat normal food. I can only eat the inner cores of spirit beasts..."

Tan Tan sorrowfully looked at Chu Yang, "Senior Martial Brother, Chu Yang... I, I... can I be considered a human?" A light of extreme devastation flickered in Tan Tan's eyes...

[Can I be considered a human?]

Chu Yang remained silent for a while. [The current Tan Tan can't be considered humanly in any respect... apart from the fact that he possesses a human body...]

However, how could Chu Yang say this to Tan Tan?

"Don't over-think." Chu Yang pulled Tan Tan's face, and looked him in the eye. He then earnestly said these words, "Tan Tan, think about me. Think about Master. What would we do if something happened to you? How sad will Master be? Do things you like. Practice martial arts! Don't you want to dominate the entire world in the future? Don't forget that Master and Master's wife have been separated for many years. We must complete his wish!

"I wish to rush to the top of the Nine Heavens! You're my brother. So, it is your responsibility to help me in fulfilling my

wish as well!" Chu Yang anxiously said, "Tan Tan, you must help us! You mustn't do anything stupid by any means!"

Chu Yang had felt a sharp pain in his heart on seeing the despair in Tan Tan's eyes. So, he had no other choice but to tie him to a responsibility. He wanted to comfort him at first. He would try to find a solution for his problem as time would pass.

Tan Tan looked at Chu Yang in a daze. He slowly nodded after a long while. Then, he said, "Chu Yang, I feel that I'm very dangerous. And, I'm afraid that I'll harm you... But, I will leave if I'm in my senses in case such a time ever comes. And, you mustn't try to look for me!"

He paused for a while. Then, he said, "But, if I'm not in my senses... then you... you... have to kill me!"

He looked Chu Yang in the eye. Then, he suddenly knelt down to kowtow. Then, he knocked his head on the ground three times in a row with tapping sounds. After that, he straightened up in the kowtow position, "Senior Martial Brother, I beg you. You have to promise me! Please kill me if such a day comes! Just kill me!"

Chu Yang's entire body shuddered. He had been struck dumb!

...

Chapter 598: Emotional Swordsman's Heartless Sword!

"He he ah..." Chu Yang forced himself to laugh twice. He tried to be clear-headed and calm. But, his voice choked as if a red-hot charcoal had been stuffed inside his throat.

He could tell that Tan Tan wasn't kidding.

'I will leave if I'm in my senses in case such a time ever comes. And, you mustn't try to look for me!'

'But, if I'm not in my senses... then you... you... have to kill me!'

'Please kill me if such a day comes! Just kill me!'

Then, the sound of Tan Tan tapping his head on the ground was heard.

Chu Yang felt dizzy. Those few sentences and the thumping sound of Tan Tan tapping his head on the ground echoed in his mind. And, he became absent-minded as a result...

He remained in a daze for a while. Then, he finally sat down on the ground.

[I can kill people. I can kill anyone in this world!]

[But, this is my brother... my own family! How can I hurt him?]

"Kill you... he-he..." Chu Yang felt as if he would simply drift away. He felt powerless... as if he had nothing to rely on. Then, he faintly said, "Tan Tan... Let's assume that you were in my position and I was in yours. Would you have killed me if we had fallen into such a situation?"

Tan Tan was startled by this, "How can I kill you?"

"Exactly! How can I kill you?" Chu Yang stretched out his hand, and hugged his junior martial brother. Then, he said with a sigh, "You are my brother. So, how can I kill you? Do you know how

cruel it is of you to make such a request?"

Tan Tan remained disappointed and frustrated for a long time. Then, he said, "But... I might harm you. I can feel it. Sometimes, I look at you... and an intense killing desire arises in my heart. I try my best to suppress it. But, it doesn't go away..."

"Don't talk like that!" Chu Yang had become calm. He resolutely and decisively said, "Such a day shall never come!"

Then, he said in his heart, [I would rather get hurt before harming you if such a day comes when you truly want to hurt me!]

[I am your elder brother. I will bear it if I have to! But, I will never harm you!]

Tan Tan heard Chu Yang's resolute and decisive words. And, he couldn't help but feel somewhat calm in his heart. But, his heart was palpitating with fear at the same time. He wanted to tell him something. He wanted to tell him about those three men that had appeared out of the blue, and had started to call him 'King'. But, he suddenly started to feel a pain in his brain. Those fragmented and distorted images started to appear in his head once again. And, he couldn't help but frown as a result...

"Well, it will pass soon enough. This is like a nightmare. Everything will be okay after you've woken up!" Chu Yang's thoughts were turbulent. So, he couldn't pay attention to Tan Tan's facial expression. He patted Tan Tan on his shoulder, and said while consoling him, "The most important thing for you over the coming few days is eating and getting good sleep! You don't have to think or do anything! You don't even need to practice martial arts. We have to prevent these bad thoughts from invading your heart and pushing you on to the wrong path of martial cultivation."

Tan Tan said 'hmm', and then lowered his head without speaking anything. He was resisting the acute pain in his head with all his strength. He had lowered his head in order to hide the painful

expression on his face from his senior martial brother. After all, he didn't want Chu Yang to worry about him.

Chu Yang sighed. He stood up, and looked at the stars in the distance. Then, he silently asked, "Master, what would you have done if you had come across this matter?"

He couldn't help but sigh while having this thought.

Meng Chao Ran wouldn't have cared about his life if he were to face this matter since he was a calm and indifferent person. He had always been that way. He would merely close his eyes and embrace the end if that day were to come when things would come to a head.

This was Meng Chao Ran's nature. He was indifferent to an extremely passive extent.

However, Chu Yang was different. Chu Yang was carefree as well as stubborn. He would think of every method to prevent it or fix it since he knew of it in advance. He would find some way to make things right even if it did happen someday. He would try everything!

The fight between the Saber Emperor and the Sword Emperor had come to an end.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had blended the essence of their realizations into their fighting styles without taking great pains. They had done so in order to provide a better understanding of their current 'artistic conception' to their brothers who had been watching the fight. They had been using their surging fighting spirit and vitality as well as their newly-attained dense cultivation realm so that Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and the others could use this as reference for their own breakthroughs...

A loud 'clang' sound suddenly resounded. A dazzling ball of light exploded in the middle, and dispersed everywhere.

Gu Du Xing's black robe was fluttering in the air. He was calmly

standing with his sword sheathed.

Dong Wu Shang had put his Black Saber on his back. He stood firm on the ground. His long legs seemed to be carrying his towering body to the starry sky.

Both of them were sweating profusely! However, they had a happy smiling expression in their eyes.

They had stabilized their cultivation level at the first grade Emperor Level during this fight.

After all, which Saber Emperor that had just broken through would get to clash with a Sword Emperor that had also broken through a moment ago? Likewise, which Sword Emperor that had just broken through would be so lucky to have a newly-anointed Saber Emperor as his opponent?

This had basically been a night of concurrent miracles!

Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Rui Bu Tong had already accepted this in their hearts. Moreover, they had received great benefits by watching this fight. So, they had closed their eyes a long time ago. In fact, they had sat down to meditate in order to comprehend what they had perceived.

"Your saber is very strange."

"Your sword is very strange."

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang opened their mouths, and spoke at the same time after their breathing had become uniform. They had incidentally said the same thing to each other. So, they both smiled at the same time.

"You speak first," Gu Du Xing said.

"Well, I can feel that your sword is filled with loneliness. It indeed has the proper aloofness of a swordsman! I can understand that a sword must have pride. But, why is it full of fervency as well? This is the thing that I can't understand," Dong Wu Shang

was somewhat doubtful, "It wouldn't have been so difficult for me to resist your sword if your sword techniques had only been aloof and prideful. But, the level of your sword gets enhanced significantly when the fervency is added to the equation. What is this about?"

"Swords are ruthless, and also proud! Swords have been the weapons of gentlemen since the ancient times. Gentlemen are polite and courteous. But, the air of aloofness that surrounds them always repels people. Hence, they are reclusive!"

Gu Du Xing said slowly, "But, I'm a man — not a sword. Therefore, I have feelings. I have brothers. I have a lover. Therefore, I'm sentimental. A sword and a man are different. Sword is sword. And, I am me. Therefore, the unification of the man and his sword brings about a unique swordsmanship."

He couldn't help but feel a tide surging in his heart after he had spoken this. It was because he had been thinking about his love for Gu Miao Ling and his friendship with his brothers at the time of his breakthrough. He had broken through to the Emperor Level with these feelings in his heart. 'A man wields a sword. It's not the other way round'. Chu Yang had always taught him this point.

Therefore, he had achieved such a unique swordsmanship after he had broken through to Sword Emperor Level. It had pride as well as fervency. No one had ever seen such a unique swordsmanship!

This was the artistic conception of his sword!

Gu Du Xing heavily said, "I call this swordsmanship – Emotional Swordsman's Heartless Sword!"

"Emotional Swordsman's Heartless Sword?" Dong Wu Shang muttered this to himself... It seemed as if he had realized something.

"Your saber is also very different. It issues an intense deathly

aura after it has been brandished! It gives off the vibe of a wild aggression that's eager to destroy the entire world! This should be the combination of your saber and you. It should be the result of the power of your saber and your imposing aura. But, there's a suppressed life-force within this deathly aura. This life force gave off a wonderful feeling. Your saber looked as if... it was alive!"

Gu Du Xing gave his honest view to Dong Wu Shang.

"My saber way is the Saber Way of No Injuries! So, my blade doesn't cause any wounds — it only kills!" Dong Wu Shang repeated the words that he had said to Chu Yang. Then, he concluded, "But... I can feel that this isn't the highest realm that I can reach! There are many levels beyond this realm."

A light flashed in his eyes as he repeated himself, "There are many!"

...

The night was quiet. Chu Yang looked towards the sky whilst being lost in thoughts. Tan Tan had lowered his head, and was sitting on the ground. He was motionless.

Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Rui Bu Tong would sit and mediate for a while. Then, they'd stand up and practice with each other. And, they'd repeat the process afterwards...

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were sitting on the left and right sides of their brothers in order to protect them.

...

Ao Xie Yun was crazily shuttling through the mountain forest. He was desperately trying to escape. He jumped down from the mountaintop. His feet stepped on several rattans until he grabbed one that was sticking out from the mountain wall. Consequently, his body arrived in front of the cliff with a swing. He then slid down along the smooth slope, and jumped into the water beneath. He had plucked a reed before he had entered the water.

He was lucky that the reed tube was completely hollow. He kept it in his mouth, and started to swim under the water. He was swimming downstream.

He hadn't expected that the enemy would chase him even after he had turned northwards. Moreover, this chase was on a much larger scale!

However, he also understood that the enemy wouldn't back down now. They wouldn't stop until he was dead. However, their plan would be done for if the Ao Clan moved into action by any chance!

Therefore, he continued to flee!

He would expose their plan if he managed to run away alive. Then, he would be able to demand the proper price for the death of his people! But, his corpse would eternally stay submerged under the snow if he were to die an unjust death right now. Moreover, his death would become a tool his pursuers would use to achieve their goals.

He didn't have any tears in his eyes!

Ao Xie Yun hadn't shed tears even when Du Qing Yun had pushed him out of that encirclement a moment ago.

Qin Zhan had died in a battle half-a-month ago! He and Du Qing Yun had been struggling to run away while carrying Qin Zhan. But then, Qin Zhan had said these words, "Young Clan Lord... must... live!"

Then, he had struggled down from Du Qing Yun's back, and charged into the enemy.

He had sacrificed himself even though he could stop the enemy only for a split second!

After that, Du Xing Yun had fled away along with him. Du Qing Yun would teach him his experience of escaping whenever they'd get leisure time. And, he'd particular stress on methods of escaping alone. He had taught him what he needed to pay attention to, and

what he needed to be careful of... how to hide from the enemy... how to make use of every little thing that he had with him...

It seemed as if Du Xing Yun had foretold that he wouldn't live for long. So, he simply focused on one thing — teaching Ao Xie Yun his lifelong experience! He did it so that he could make Ao Xie Yun the master of the art of escaping alone!

He had used his own life for training Ao Xie Yun on the basis of these experiences!

This respectable old man had laughed heartily when he was about to die. He had shirked Ao Xie Yun's hold, and had shoved him away using all of his martial power. After that, he had charged into the swarm of enemies while laughing. His last words had echoed in the night sky, "Ha ha... I feel content!"

...

Chapter 599: The Ultimate Escape Limitation

The rims of Ao Xie Yun's eyes became red while he was thinking this.

All of his protectors had died. He was on his own now; he had lost all support.

Moreover, his home was too far away!

He was only a man now — just Ao Xie Yun. He wasn't the Eldest Young Master of the Ao Clan. He wasn't the number-one master of the younger generation in these circumstances. And, he wasn't the outstanding and elegant Evil Young Master.

He was only a man on the run now. And, there were several thousand people... several thousand experts after this young master. They had been chasing and besieging him. And, they desired to capture and kill him.

Ao Xie Yun had discovered his true potential in these extremely harsh circumstances!

It had been fifteen days since Du Qing Yun had bravely sacrificed himself. Ao Xie Yun had thought of crying out loud countless times during these fifteen days. But, he knew that he mustn't cry. After all, the smell of his tears wouldn't stay hidden from Ou Du Xiao of the Poison Spirit Clan even if he wept in silence.

Therefore, he had no choice but to abandon everything — including his anger and sadness. He had to escape with all of his strength. He had to rush out, and seek his own way of survival using the entirety of his knowledge.

These fifteen days had felt like fifteen years to him... or maybe even more than that.

He had taught himself how to spend his physical strength with

care while escaping... how to cover his body odor... how to hide his entire body amidst grass... how to exploit the characteristics of mountains and water... how to make use of the reflection of sunlight to camouflage himself in order to avoid being surrounded...

He had never thought about these things before.

He now knew that Ao Clan was no longer threatening like before even though it was the number-one clan. There was nothing extraordinary about the Ao Clan, and there was nothing extraordinary about him.

Ao Clan would become another set of ruins if it were to be destroyed. And, Ao Xie Yun would become another rotten and smelly corpse if he were to die... In fact, he would be no different from the beggars who kneel down at other people's feet every day.

Everyone is equal in front of a coffin!

Ao Xie Yun had suffered over a hundred siege attacks during these fifteen days. And, he had thought that he was going to die at least a dozen times. But, he had managed to make narrow escapes every time.

He was feeling the warmth and coolness of the river water on the wounds on his body at this moment. And, a kind of 'secure' feeling finally arose deep in his heart regardless of the fact that this feeling of security might collapse at any moment...

He finally had the time to think about a few matters.

Ao Xie Yun felt extremely sad on recalling the fights in which Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan had died. [Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan shouldn't have died so early. But, they died without hesitation. Why...?]

Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan had known that they were going to die when he had diverted his way to the north in order to escape the enemy since the other party was still chasing them on a large

scale.

And, they had wanted to impart their wisdom onto Ao Xie Yun before dying.

Moreover, they knew that three people couldn't escape as easily as a person alone could.

They wished that Ao Xie Yun would continue to escape for as long as he could!

However, Ao Xie Yun would've been virtually dependent on them as long as they were at his side... even if he didn't wish to do so. And, that would've prevented the full stimulation of his potential. Consequently, they would've had no way out at the time when they would've gotten completely surrounded by the enemy. And, all three of them would've been done for!

Therefore, Du Qing Yun and Qin Zhan had used actual combats and autonomous escape technique. They wanted Ao Xie Yun to improve himself by practice! Ao Xie Yun's chances of escaping alone would be ten-folds more than escaping along with the two as long as he could comprehend and grasp the true essence of these skills.

Therefore, Du Qing Yun had chosen to sacrifice himself even though he didn't need to do so!

And, he had left the Young Clan Lord by himself by doing so...

[It would be disloyal of us to abandon you when there's still hope. But, we would be fulfilling our responsibility if we abandon you to go on your own at a time of absolute helplessness.]

[Your soul will be ignited by our warm-blooded sacrifices. And, your potential will be stimulated by our deaths.]

This was what the two old men hadn't said, and would never be able to say. But, Ao Xie Yun was hearing this in his heart at the moment.

Tears were silently streaming down, and blending into the water. Ao Xie Yun had finally allowed his tears to flow without worry on such a night and in such an environment...

Shedding tears had become a kind of luxury in such an escape!

The river was flowing with gurgling sounds of water. Ao Xie Yun was trying his hardest to relax himself. He was trying his utmost to heal his injuries, and regain his physical strength.

Suddenly, a feeling of danger struck his heart. So, he immediately held his breath. Then, he noiselessly slid down under water. He felt something hard under the tips of his toes. It seemed that he had touched a big stone under water. Ao Xie Yun's heart moved. He silently swam down, and put out his hand out to touch it. It was a big stone. There was an empty hole below it. And, a whirlpool had formed there. The river water was continuously swirling, and flowing downwards in waves.

Ao Xie Yun cautiously controlled himself. He took advantage of the flow of water, and very carefully squeezed his body under that big stone. Then, he carefully extended the reed only slightly out of the water's surface. After that, he remained motionless.

The water at this place would sooner or later become shallow since the river water was slowly flowing downwards. And, he would certainly be dead if he was found. Besides, the sky would be bright during daytime. So, he would be a sitting duck in the river water when the morning would come.

He had barely hidden here when a few rustling sounds were heard. Several people had arrived at the shore of the river. The sounds of their sleeves being brushed over by the wind echoed. It seemed that a few dozen people had arrived here.

"Did you find him?" someone asked in a low and deep voice. This sound passed through the river, and reached Ao Xie Yun's ears. This voice sounded very strange. But, Ao Xie Yun had still heard it. Whose voice is this?

[Black Devil!]

[It is the voice of the Young Black Devil!]

"So it is you!" Ao Xie Yun was under the stone in the water at this time. He had secretly clenched his teeth. But, he didn't dare to move even one bit. In fact, he had also slowed down his heartbeat.

His mortal enemies were right on top of his head at the moment. So, he would certainly die if he was found.

"We didn't find him," another person replied. His voice was full of suspicions. Ao Xie Yun could imagine that this person was perplexed and astonished. In fact, he could sense that this person had frowned even though these people were away from the river.

[Ou Du Xiao!]

Ao Xie Yun's heart convulsed in rage.

[He used to be my friend once... my companion...]

"Didn't you say that this strategy is foolproof? How long would it take?" A person snorted.

[Meng Luo!]

"This is very strange! I would sprinkle 'Thousand Days Marker' on Ao Xie Yun's body from time to time when we were together. The traces of this marker don't stay for a thousand days. It is obviously an exaggeration. However, its smell doesn't vanish for at least a year. Moreover, the target is unable to sense that smell... We have used that smell to wipe out his people during these days. But, I don't understand how Ao Xie Yun managed to lose this smell?" Ou Du Xiao doubtfully said.

Ao Xie Yun nearly vomited out blood.

[So, this was all because of me!]

[So, Ou Di Xiao has been plotting against me for so long. Such scheming... such long-term plotting...]

[No wonder he would always meet me by chance, and then do a few things with me... I had thought that we had been brought together by fate... Moreover, Ou Du Xiao would behave very sincerely towards me whenever he would appear. He would blindly follow me everywhere. He always gave me importance. Therefore, I used to invite him to every good event. For instance, in the gambling event on Mt. Dingjun...]

[He had behaved in a very understanding manner after we had suffered a loss in that gambling. And, he never doubted me!]

[I can't even imagine all this. He turned out to be so heartless that he trapped me in this chase! All those coincidental encounters, and those pinpoint besieges during this chase... the root of all of this is these words of Ou Du Xiao – I would sprinkle 'Thousand Days Marker' on his body from time to time!]

[So, it was me all along! I've brought tragedy upon everyone!]

[Now that I think about it... It seems that the pursuers would quickly catch up with me every time I would think of fleeing.] Ao Xie Yun's heart almost bled in regret! [Why did I not think of this earlier?]

He then heard a voice saying, "You're indeed the Poison Spirit. Ao Xie Yun is truly blessed to have a friend like you! I see... so... Brother Ou wasn't flattering Ao Xie Yun this entire time, right? Ha ha, Ao Xie Yun has always been so proud of his wisdom. But, he couldn't have imagined that he was being played by Brother Ou for all these years. Perhaps, he still hasn't found out. Ou Brother is indeed very talented!"

This voice was somewhat wild. It was the voice of the Young Clan Lord of Tu Clan – Tu Qian Hao.

Ou Du Xiao replied in a somewhat angry voice, "Nonsense! Is there anyone in a position such as ours that doesn't guard themselves? Our entire clans could get destroyed if we make even one inattentive move! Who dares to handle matters recklessly?

Moreover, only you know that I have secretly plotted against Ao Xie Yun... But, can you say with confidence that he has always considered me his brother?"

He continued in an angered tone, "We are standing together at this time. But, would we dare to show our back to each other? Tu Qian Hao, what is the meaning of what you had just said?"

Tu Qian Hao snorted. He was about to speak something when Meng Luo joined the conversation, "Brother Ou's words are fully understandable. After all, we are doing everything for the sake of our clans. Besides, it's Brother Ou's unintentional act of planting a marker on Ao Xie Yun that is making our hunt so smooth. So, Brother Ou has given a lot of contribution to our cause."

After that, Tu Qian Hao didn't speak anything further.

Ao Xie Yun gently sighed underwater. He laughed at himself. [Ou Du Xiao, I didn't regard you as a real brother. But, I had been sincerely wanting to bond with you for some time...]

"But, Ao Xie Yun has disappeared now. Brother Ou, you understand this 'Thousand Days Marker' the most. Under what circumstances do these 'Thousand Days Marker' disappear?"

Ao Xie Yun listened to Ou Du Xiao saying, "One has to either obtain the antidote... or stay in water for at least a day to get rid of it! And, that's because its smell penetrates deep into the flesh, and blends with the person's own smell.

"Another method is to simply stay submerged in water. The clear water isolates the smell, and stops it from spreading. Ao Xie Yun hasn't gotten the time to soak in water for a day since we had started to chase him. Moreover, Ao Xie Yun had slid down from that hillside as per the various traces that we have found. After that, he must have fallen into water... There is a river here. And, Ao Xie Yun should be in this river. But, I've lost track of him because of this..."

Ao Xie Yun's heart fiercely jumped whilst he remained underwater. And, his complexion also turned deathly pale!

....

Chapter 600: Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter

"This river is very long and wide. Do you want our people to jump in and look for him?" it was Tu Qian Hao's voice. Ao Xie Yun almost wanted to jump out and kiss him on hearing him say this.

"I obviously won't make you jump into it and look for him!" Ou Du Xiao had a card up his sleeve as he said, "This is a river... Ao Xie Yun will obviously drift with the current, and go downstream if he has jumped into it. After all, he will be able to escape from our encirclement at maximum speed in that manner.

"It shouldn't have been even half-an-hour since the time he would've jumped into the river. Therefore, he wouldn't have gone too far. We will make our people drop a fishing-net to the bottom of the river in order to block it. And, we will constantly pay attention to it. He will have nowhere to hide once the dawn comes!"

"Moreover, I will use another poison that will chase after him for 50 kilometres in the water. It will force him to come out!" Ou Du Xiao confidently smiled, "After all, it is impossible for Ao Xie Yun to escape underwater for 50 kilometres in his current condition."

"For 50 kilometres underwater...?" everyone questioned to examine in detail.

"I will use 'Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter'" Ou Du Xiao said this word by word.

Everyone shivered in fright and moved a few steps back on hearing this name!

'Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter' was the most vicious and the most potent poison of the Ou Clan. In fact, its might was greater than the strongest of plagues!

Ou Du Xiao cautiously put on his deerskin gloves. He then

circulated his martial power, and suddenly jumped. He had jumped towards the river.

He sprinkled a dusky-ash mist with his hands on the entire stretch of the river's surface while he was in mid-air.

The ashy-mist descended towards the river's surface. But then, Meng Luo shook his hand, and the rope that was tied around Ou Du Xiao's waist tightened. Consequently, Ou Du Xiao was pulled back from midair the very next moment.

The ashy-mist came in contact with the river's surface. And, an incredible picture appeared in front of everyone the next moment.

The river-water suddenly started to churn... In fact, it seemed as if it was boiling. Countless big and small fishes rose to the surface of the river while wriggling fiercely. They then flipped and revealed their white bellies. Then, they became silent and motionless.

More fishes continued to pop-up on the river's surface. They then drift downstream along with the river's water.

The green grasses on the shores turned black. After that, they changed into ashes.

This poisonous tide extended downstream, and soon filled the entire river with the corpses of fishes, water-snakes, water-shrimps, and other water organisms. A shiny white colour could be seen everywhere on the river's surface at the moment.

The sky was dark at this time. However, this sight still felt gloomy and frightful!

Everyone remained silent for a while. All of them were frightened by the potency of this poison. This poison was definitely worthy of its name. It didn't matter if it was a plant or an animal... it had poisoned everything.

"This 'Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter' produces a turbulent current in water that poisons the water up to 50 Km. But, it

disappears after 50 km," Ou Du Xiao insipidly said, "It can make any humans and livestock within the radius of a thousand miles vanish if it is released at a high altitude in a place of human habitation!"

Everyone's complexion changed. They were naturally thinking about what they would do if Ou Du Xiao were to release this poison on their clans...

Ou Du Xiao swept his eyes around. He then revealed a meaningful smiling expression on his face. Then, he looked at Tu Qian Hao and said, "For instance... the territory of Brother Tu's clan is surrounded by mountains. So, it would be very suitable for Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter."

Tu Qian Hao's complexion changed. He withdrew a step, and heavily said, "But, the mountain forest of my Tu Clan only has many nameless skeletons buried in its depths!"

Ou Du Xiao burst into laughter.

The rest of the people were looking at the surface of the river that was filled with dead fishes and shrimps. This scene had made their hair stand on end. [Ou Clan is indeed a dangerous clan!]

The river-water surged down in a flash. And, all the corpses of fishes and shrimps got flushed away. But, a large number of dead bodies of fishes and shrimps had accumulated on the lower reaches of the river...

"Ao Xie Yun will die if he has been hiding in this water!" Ou Du Xiao exposed a fierce and cruel look in his eyes. However, he thought in his heart, [Ao Xie Yun, you must die... Otherwise, how would this guilt get removed from my heart?]

He and Ao Xie Yun had been good friends. But, he had come to entrap Ao Xie Yun now. Therefore, he was more desperate to entrap him than anyone else! And, this was the reason for his present behaviour! His friendship of the past had given rise to the

mentality of a traitor in his heart...

Many people felt strange. After all, Ou Du Xiao and Ao Xie Yun had been good friends... or at least loyal affiliates. So, these people couldn't understand why Ou Du Xiao had betrayed Ao Xie Yun so thoroughly. It was simply ridiculous. Could it be that Ou Du Xiao hadn't thought of his old friendship? However, it was like this, [We would be the kind of enemies that can't live under the same sky since I've betrayed you. So, my heart will remain restless if you don't die.]

[An old friendship is hard to forget. So, this betrayal should be thorough.]

This had nothing to do with Ou Du Xiao's nature in particular. This was about human nature in general.

The closest friends could become the most dangerous enemies! These words aren't false. One always has an opportunity to handle the situation if an enemy comes to deal with them. But, a friend who has turned into an enemy can easily put one in a situation that is impossible to recover from!

Ao Xie Yun's entire body had been sweating even though he was underwater.

His hiding position was aligned with Ou Du Xiao's position on the shore. So, the ashy-mist that had been sprinkled by Ou Du Xiao had naturally fallen far away from him. Moreover, Ao Xie Yun had backed off upstream by an arm's-length distance. And, this had helped him in evading the poison.

Ao Xie Yun had seen countless dead fishes and shrimps merely three feet away from him. So, he had closed his mouth, and was constantly swallowing saliva. He was extremely frightened!

Ao Xie Yun stayed in the water for some time. Ou Du Xiao and the others were on the shore, and were only twenty to thirty feet away from him. But, nobody was able to see him.

Finally, dawn broke out.

The people that had been assigned to capture Ao Xie Yun immediately moved into action.

Ou Du Xiao examined the river all over. He wrinkled his brows tightly. There was no smell from across the river. There wasn't even a trace of it. The tracker suggested that Ao Xie Yun had escaped to this place. So, he should've been hidden in this river.

However, no sound of activity had been heard from the river even after a large amount of 'Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter' had been scattered on it.

"Nothing has been found downstream. Ao Xie Yun isn't hiding downstream for a range of 50 Km from here. However, there's no trace of his smell from across of the river too. So, the only place where Ao Xie Yun could be hiding is in this river! He must be somewhere in the area from the place where we're standing right now to somewhere upstream. This deduction is accurate without a doubt!"

Ou Du Xiao indifferently said, "Our men can now go into the water and look for him since the sun has come up. Our experts will stand at intervals of a few hundred feet. We must dig out Ao Xie Yun even if we have to overturn this river!"

Ao Xie Yun felt a chill in his heart. He thought in his heart, [I've finally reached a situation of hopeless!]

...

Chu Yang and his brothers were getting ready to set out on a journey. It was early in the morning, and the sun had just risen from the east.

Everyone's dazzling vigor had become reserved after they had let their cultivation settle down over the last several days. However, they were in high spirits since Tan Tan had regained his original state after several days of being in depression.

The reason why they had woken up so early was Tan Tan himself. It was because Tan Tan had finally 'recovered'. In fact, he had become noisy and messy like before.

He had woken up from sleep, and had discovered that he had become 'normal'. After that, he became extremely happy on seeing just about everything. He especially wanted to make fun of Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Rui Bu Tong...

Moreover, those nightmarish images and that feeling of being subtly nervous had also stopped emerging in his mind.

And, this was great news for Tan Tan.

Tan Tan had stared blankly at the void for a second when he discovered that he had recovered. Then, he came to his senses. Rui Bu Tong had been living in his tent, and was walking past him at this moment. So, Tan Tan seized him and asked, "Am I handsome? I have remained silent for so many days. Do I look handsome now?"

Rui Bu Tong looked miserable and depressed. In fact, he seemed to be suffering from extreme distress these past days. He immediately knelt down. Then, he scowled miserably... as if he had been mourning his deceased mother, "Uncle Tan... please spare me... I'm already depressed. I have hit the wall..."

Tan Tan moved his eyebrows up and down. Then, he flew out of the tent without saying anything further. He then decided to break into Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di's tent. He had thought of going into Chu Yang's tent at first. But, he had held a very serious conversation with him a couple of days ago. Therefore, Tan Tan felt a bit embarrassed at the thought of going to him...

Thereupon, he energetically went inside Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di's tent. It was early in the morning. So, Ji Mo and Luo Ke were sleeping like dead pigs. Tan Tan took the blankets off from their bodies, and threw the blankets out of the tent. Then, he winked at the two naked young men, "Am I handsome? I'm handsome or not?

You two tell me..."

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di burst out on the spot!

After all, they had been sleeping in peace. However, the blankets covering their bodies were suddenly snatched away. Moreover, both of them had a habit of sleeping naked. So, they were obviously more startled when Tan Tan took the blankets off their bodies. After all, they were scared that they might have a morning erection...

Consequently, they cried out in alarm. Both of them jumped up, and covered their 'important place down there'. They were obviously in a state of panic. However, their eyes also reflected a rage that soared to the heavens...

They then saw two eyebrows going up and down. A voice was repeatedly asking them a question. However, this voice sounded like the quacking of a duck that was 'busy' with a howling wolf, "Am I handsome? Am I handsome? Am I handsome?"

They became extremely angry as a result. They couldn't bear it any longer.

"I will make you handsome!" Both the young masters rushed over to Tan Tan with their bare buttocks. Both the ninth grade King Level Experts collaborated and knocked down the unprepared Tan Tan. Then, they started to beat him up with punches and kicks...

Tan Tan miserably screamed... again and again. How could he have thought that asking this question would beget such maltreatment from them?

In fact, the noise was so loud that Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing, and Dong Wu Shang rushed from their tents in urgency. They identified where the sounds were coming from. Then, they broke into Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di's tent.

They entered and saw what was happening. Chu Yang had always been calm and decisive; Gu Du Xing had always been indifferent

and keen. And, Dong Wu Shang had always been majestic and as steady as a mountain. However, the jaws of these three youngsters dropped to the ground at this sight. In fact, the six eyeballs nearly fell out of their sockets and smashed on their shoes...

Four shiny-white petal-like asses were flickering before them in the tent — Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were completely naked, and they had pressed down the well-groomed Tan Tan. Moreover, they were laughing and cussing while kicking and punching him...

"What... what... what is going on here?" The three of them had been left stunned by this sight. In fact, they had become more dumbstruck than a wooden statue...

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di cried out in alarm. They stood up at a tremendous speed, and turned back. Then, they found their trousers, and quickly wore them.

Tan Tan shamefully lifted his eyebrows, and crawled up from the ground. He was somewhat embarrassed. When had the majestic and great Young Master Tan suffered such an insult?

He looked at Chu Yang, and he couldn't help but go over to him. Then, he opened his swollen eyes... that had also turned black and red. He then asked, "Chu Yang, you see... do I look handsome today?" He had also become fiercely 'shocked' while saying this.

Chu Yang felt that his eyes had become somewhat moist. He remained in a daze for a while, and didn't speak anything. Then, he suddenly yelled and kicked Tan Tan. After that, he threw himself at Tan Tan, and cussed, "You bastard! I will make you handsome! You scared me to death for the past few days..."

Chu Yang then ruthlessly beat him up; he didn't show the slightest bit of mercy. However, the concern that he had kept suppressed in his heart for the past few days had now vanished...

[Brother, you've become normal again!]

[You finally asked me if you're handsome...]

[You don't know how worried I've been for the past few days because I didn't get to hear your narcissism.]

...

Table of Contents

- Transcending the Nine Heavens
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 501: Cruel and Ungrateful!
  - Chapter 502: Worse Than A Beast!
  - Chapter 503: Mo Clan Starts a New Day, and Lets Go Off The Past
  - Chapter 504: Crap, I Made a Fortune!
  - Chapter 505: Deal! Deal! All Deals Are Finalized!
  - Chapter 506: Chu Yang Promises!
  - Chapter 507: The Real Jasper Flower
  - Chapter 508: Challenges the Entire Clan Alone!
  - Chapter 509: Break through at the Same Time!
  - Chapter 510: Breakthrough to Fourth Grade Sword King!
  - Chapter 511: She Would Be the Masked Sovereign!
  - Chapter 512: Lan Mei Xian is Shocked!
  - Chapter 513: Murderous Intentions and Conspiracies!
  - Chapter 514: Seeking Riches and Honor in the Middle of Danger!
  - Chapter 515: Returns with a Full Load!
  - Chapter 516: Please don’t Hold Back!
  - Chapter 517: Ambushes the Emperor Level Experts!
  - Chapter 518: Emperor Level Experts Can Be Killed! A Notion!
  - Chapter 519: I will become Sister-in-law, Ok?
  - Chapter 520: Who is the Hunter? Who is the Prey?
  - Chapter 521: Three Stars Divine Clan? Star Race?
  - Chapter 522: Ji Mo’s Trap!
  - Chapter 523: Use Poison against Poison!
  - Chapter 524: Decisive Battle with Emperor Level Experts!
  - Chapter 525: Fight for Life and Death!
  - Chapter 526: Hatred and Kindness in the Heart
  - Chapter 527: Chu Clan’s Chu Fei Long
  - Chapter 528: My Sworn Little Brother is Very Ferocious!
  - Chapter 529: Son? This Can’t be Said so Casually!
  - Chapter 530: Transcending the Nine Heavens… Starts from Today!
  - Chapter 531: Tan Tan and the Divine Chi Gathering Fish!
  - Chapter 532: Young Master Yu’s Misery!

Chapter 533: Heavenly Orchid!
Chapter 534: Super Doomsayer!
Chapter 535: Is it Worth it to Trade Gold for Steamed-bread?
Chapter 536: Saying ‘Don’t Want’ Won’t Work!
Chapter 537: This is a Tragedy
Chapter 538: Two Great Gifted Scholars!
Chapter 539: It’s Your Problem Even If You Regret!
Chapter 540: What is the Way of the Sword Master?
Chapter 541: Heavenly Yin Body, Innate Spiritual Meridians!
Chapter 542: The Goal is Accomplished!
Chapter 543: Green-Rainbow-Blood Snake!
Chapter 544: Indescribably Strange!
Chapter 545: Reforms the Heavenly Armaments!
Chapter 546: Experts Gather!
Chapter 547: So Powerful!
Chapter 548: Unexpected Arrival of Supreme Level Experts?
Chapter 549: The Anger of Supreme!
Chapter 550: Stroke of Luck!
Chapter 551: I’ve Decided to Receive this Apprentice!
Chapter 552: Wind Fox Acknowledges its Master!
Chapter 553: Little Girl Becomes an Apprentice
Chapter 554: Heavenly Armament Pavilion’s Influence Rises in the Wilderness
Chapter 555: Dragon Meat Falls From the Sky!
Chapter 556: I am Looking for a Wife, Not Meat to Eat!
Chapter 557: Kill People in a Way That No One Hears a Sound!
Chapter 558: This Sword is the Best of Ancient and Modern Times!
Chapter 559: I Will Handle Them!
Chapter 560: Behead the Whole World Without Intention, Slaughter the World For No Reason!
Chapter 561: Spare None!
Chapter 562: The Pain of Love
Chapter 563: Tan Tan’s Transformation
Chapter 564: A Wisp of Sword Spirit!
Chapter 565: Battle of Sword Spirits!
Chapter 566: Soul Quenching Spring
Chapter 567: Previous Life and This Life
Chapter 568: Undoes the Knot in His Heart, and Breaks Through!
Chapter 569: The Astonishment of Meng Chao Ran
Chapter 570: Three Strangers!

Chapter 571: King?!
Chapter 572: Super Spendthrift
Chapter 573: Master and Disciples Part Ways
Chapter 574: Brothers, I'm Proud of You!
Chapter 575: Tan Tan and Rui Bu Tong!
Chapter 576: I Will Also Achieve it if you Guys Have!
Chapter 577: Rui Bu Tong's Breakthrough!
Chapter 578: Magical Nirvana!
Chapter 579: Vent the Anger
Chapter 580: Who is Creating Chaos?
Chapter 581: Tian Ji's Strategy!
Chapter 582: The Terrifying Master of Calculation and Manipulation!
Chapter 583: Wouldn't It Be Quick?!
Chapter 584: Kill Yun!
Chapter 585: Panic Permeates!
Chapter 586: The Strong Wind Blows and Causes Ripples in a Spring-Time Pond
Chapter 587: Homeward Bound!
Chapter 588: Ao Xie Yun's Escape
Chapter 589: Journey to the North!
Chapter 590: Strange Ambush?
Chapter 591: Pissing Leads to Tragedy!
Chapter 592: This is a Misunderstanding!
Chapter 593: Others Are Here!
Chapter 594: Collision with the Domain!
Chapter 595: Wu Shang's Epiphany!
Chapter 596: Sword Emperor and Saber Emperor
Chapter 597: Please Kill Me if That Day Really Comes!
Chapter 598: Emotional Swordsman's Heartless Sword!
Chapter 599: The Ultimate Escape Limitation
Chapter 600: Thousand Souls Perish and Scatter